

Princess Kunyi (Rebirth)

Author : Let's Play the Qiang Flute

Copywriter :

" If he dares to have someone else, I will divorce him! "

However, there has never been a queen who divorced peacefully in history.

The Queen's first maid was when she was twelve years old.

It was sent to her by His Majesty the Crown Prince.

He said he had found a useful man for her.

It really is necessary to use it. She has been using it till now.

Her maid had an heir.

I just found out that this person's real name is Zhang Jinyu,

She was the daughter of a criminal who had his family and property destroyed during the reign of her maternal grandfather, Emperor Yuanhe.

The woman knelt down and kowtowed, " Empress, I ask for nothing. Your Majesty and I have known each other since childhood. I only ask to serve Your Majesty and repay your kindness. "

The queen, who always had a bad temper, chewed over these words, remaining calm.

The queen was reborn as a sixteen-year-old.

At this time, she was still the Princess Kunyi who was favored by the emperor and loved reading storybooks.

Compared with the storybook, Zhang Jinyu, who had her family destroyed and endured being a maid, seems like a likable heroine.

And she, a princess of noble status, domineering and jealous, always seems like the villain who stands in the way of the heroine at every turn.

If she were to live again, she would be tolerant and dignified to be loved by others ...

She has to exercise self-discipline to gain fame ...

What a joke, she doesn't!

What kind of rebirth is it to live as the most annoying person!

" Brother Prince, I want to marry the top scholar Lu Chenan, you have to make the decision for me! "

The gentle smile on the prince's face froze instantly.

Long eyelashes cover his drooping eyes,

He raised his eyes and said slowly:

" You can't. "

The princess still smiled.

" I can. "

I am the most honorable princess of Dayin, of course I can.

Content tags: Palace Marquis, love, rebirth, growth

Search keywords: Main character: Xie Jiayi | Supporting characters: Xu Shixing, Lu Chenan | Others :

One sentence introduction: [End of the text] Want to lie flat, finally reach the top

Concept: Women should be strong to have the right to choose

## Chapter 1

The heavy snow had been falling for three days and two nights, and there was no sign of stopping. The accumulated snow made the branches tremble, and the next moment there was a "snap" sound, and the snow broke the dead wood.

The Zhaoyang Palace, which used to be the busiest palace, has become unusually deserted in the past half month. The palace servants who passed by the Zhaoyang Palace quickened their pace, as if they were afraid of breaking some taboo. No one cleared the snow outside the Zhaoyang Palace, and the magnificent Zhaoyang Palace actually felt like a cold palace.

Heart-wrenching coughs were heard from Zhaoyang Palace, one after another, and the coughing could not be stopped, making everyone who heard it feel their throats itchy. If the coughing continued like this, I was afraid that all the internal organs would be coughed out. Nanny Chen, who had just come back from seeing the doctor, quickened her pace when she heard the cough. She paused at the door of the inner room, wiped her eyes with her hand, and calmed herself for a moment before turning into the inner room. She heard the young woman on the couch ask during the pause in her coughing: "Why haven't I seen Caiyue and Caixing in the past two days ..." After she finished speaking, she coughed violently again.

Nanny Chen was afraid that Ruyi had said something wrong, so she stepped forward and said with a smile: "Those two girls are sick, and I didn't let them out. If your Majesty has anything to say, I'll go and call them." Nanny took the teacup from Ruyi's hand, slowly fed the girl two sips, and then lifted the pillow behind her a little higher for the young woman to lie on.

The young woman was the empress of the Great Yin Dynasty, the most favored princess during the previous emperor's time, and was given the title of Kunyi. From the title alone, one can tell how favored the woman was back then, and it is no exaggeration to say that she was the pearl of the Great Yin Dynasty. Her mother, Princess Pingyang, was the only legitimate daughter of the previous emperor, Emperor Yuanhe and Empress Xiaoyi, so her nobility needed no further explanation.

Nanny Chen looked at her young master. Although she had a smile on her face, her heart was in pain. Her young master was only 22 years old. She became the Crown Princess at the age of 16 and the Queen Mother at the age of 18. She was the most noble person in the world, but now she was bullied by a dog in a fallen state. Queen Mother? She was just a little doctor in the palace, who gave acupuncture and foot washing to Princess Pingyang. Now she was openly insulting her young master.

Twenty-two-year-old Xie Jiayi leaned against the pillow with half-closed eyes. Her palm-sized face was sunken in the pillow, looking even smaller. She was shrouded in yellowish air and looked haggard.

Nanny Chen gently waved to Ruyi who was standing on the side, and took him back. The queen was busy until the fourth watch yesterday, coughing non-stop, and now she finally got a chance to sleep for a while, let her have a good rest.

In the front yard of Zhaoyang Palace, a young eunuch of about seventeen or eighteen was slapping his body angrily. Ruyi knew at a glance that he had fallen. "You are so old, but you are

still as unstable as a child. You only follow our master. If you were with another master, you would have been beaten to death countless times. " Eunuch Bubu was the youngest and the most rebellious. No matter how many times Ruyi taught him, he would not change.

Bu Bu felt wronged, " I am so old, but I still don't know the rules? It's all because of those villains, seeing that our Zhaoyang Palace has lost its power, they bullied me, their grandfather ..."

Ruyi was nervous, " You fought back? "

Bu Bu shook his head, tears falling. He had always been the only one who laughed at others, but today he was bullied and laughed at by so many people. If he was not afraid of causing trouble to his master, he would have fought with them long ago. They were all worthless, so who was afraid of who? He would beat them to death and bite them to death.

Ruyi's heart was relieved, " It's good that you didn't fight back. Just be patient for a while and wait for His Majesty to come back. " Caixing was beaten to death by the people of Shoukang Palace for being unruly because of her talk back. Sister Caiyue, a steady person, just begged for mercy, but her face was smashed. Now she was shrinking in the room, afraid that her master would see it. In such a cold day, she refused to use charcoal.

Everyone knows that there is not much charcoal left in Zhaoyang Palace. The charcoal we have now was exchanged for gold and silver utensils.

When Ruyi thought of this, her gentle face almost twisted. What a joke, on such a cold day, the queen's Zhaoyang Palace couldn't even get charcoal, saying " the queen is extravagant, reflect on her own mistakes " , but it was just Shoukang Palace that mistreat people.

When Bu Bu heard Ruyi mention His Majesty, he looked up blankly: " Will it really be okay if His Majesty comes back? "

Your Majesty had not set foot in Zhaoyang Palace for half a year before he left for the war, which is why the palace servants dared to blatantly desecrate Zhaoyang Palace after your Majesty left. Of course, it was because of Shoukang Palace's instructions, but if your Majesty really loved her, how could they dare to be so presumptuous ...

Ruyi was a few years older than Bubu, and she understood the relationship between His Majesty and the Empress better. She said firmly: "Your Majesty will definitely not be so heartless to the Empress. " Although the Empress contradicted His Majesty in court and later broke up with His Majesty, His Majesty will definitely not be so heartless to the Empress. They have been together since they were six years old, and it has been sixteen years since then.

" Of course not. " Ruyi looked at the white snowflakes that had just stopped falling and then began to fall again. His voice seemed to be a little vague in the falling snow. But, could his queen still wait until His Majesty came back ...

The gate of Zhaoyang Palace, which had been quiet for a long time, suddenly became noisy again.

The two looked at each other and knew that it must be bad.

As expected, it was the new eunuch in charge of Shoukang Palace, De Lu, who came with his men. When he saw Ruyi, he said with a fake smile: " Isn't this Ruyi, the chief steward of Zhaoyang Palace? How come his waist can be straightened again? And his legs can still walk? As expected of a chief steward, he is just lucky. "

Bu Bu gritted his teeth and stared at the snowy ground. A bastard like De Lu was not even worthy of carrying his brother Ruyi's shoes, but now he was shaking with the help of Shoukang Palace. Just because he was the first person who dared to attack the people of Zhaoyang Palace, Shoukang Palace reused him. This was a signal to the people of Hegong. Fortune is sought in danger, and now they, the slaves, want fortune, so they reach out to Zhaoyang Palace. The ground where Ruyi passed by was left by her broken left foot, which was now covered by the falling snow. Six months ago, Ruyi's waist and legs were broken by Delu and his men. This was a signal from Shoukang Palace to everyone: the Queen Mother did not like the Queen. They wanted to make this clear to all the palace people.

The Empress had not wanted to see His Majesty for a long time, so she went to His Majesty's palace again and insisted on severely punishing the palace maids in Shoukang Palace and beating De Lu to death. His Majesty rewarded him with precious medicines and an orthopedic doctor, which was the best thing in theory. After all, people of their status were not worthy of using an orthopedic doctor, especially an orthopedic doctor serving His Majesty, and they were not worthy of using such precious medicines. If it were any other young eunuch in the palace, he would have died long ago with such injuries and burned clean.

Of course De Lu didn't beat him to death, this was for the Queen Mother's sake. Your Majesty is kind and filial, how could you beat the Queen Mother's face.

Ruyi lowered her eyes and ignored Delu's words. Only her good legs stepped firmly into the snow, leaving deep marks.

De Lu sneered. The eunuch Ruyi, who was fawned upon by everyone in the past, now has to linger like a dog. Not to mention breaking his waist and legs, he will kill him sooner or later. The Queen Mother dislikes the Queen, not just because the Queen favors the only one without an heir. Although the Queen dares to challenge His Majesty and even dares to attack His Majesty, breaking the rules, the Queen Mother naturally hates her. But the inside story is something that they in Zhaoyang Palace cannot figure out. The Queen Mother never wants the Queen to give His Majesty an heir ... The Queen Mother dislikes the Second Prince and only favors the First Prince, not because the Second Prince is weak ... He came out of the Queen's belly, and the Queen Mother doesn't like him ...

De Lu took a look at the Zhaoyang Palace covered with ice and snow, and he knew very well that the Zhaoyang Palace was finished.

He said in a shrill voice: " The Queen Mother wants to call the manager of Zhaoyang Palace over. Let's see if you, a cripple, should go or Nanny Chen should go and answer the call. "

Everyone in Zhaoyang Palace was shocked, knowing that it would be difficult for them to come back. No matter what they said or how they said it, as long as the Queen Mother was not satisfied, it would be an offense.

" I'll go! " Nanny Chen came from the corridor. She was over fifty years old, but still very agile. The head nanny's demeanor made De Lu, who was used to being domineering, dare not say anything. This was the old nanny who had served Empress Xiaoyi in the past and Princess Pingyang, the later princess of the dynasty.

De Lu's smile was not as arrogant anymore, and his attitude softened a bit, " Then please come in, Madam. "

Unexpectedly, Ruyi stood up and stopped her, " Madam, let me go. " His eyes were fixed on Madam Chen, and the meaning was very clear. Without Madam Chen to keep the Zhaoyang Palace in order, it would have been in chaos long ago. The Empress was so ill, and who knew how much grievance she had to endure.

Nanny Chen opened her mouth and said that if she went, there would still be a chance of survival, but if Ruyi went, there would be no way of survival.

Ruyi shook her head, dragged her crippled left leg, and followed Delu towards Shoukang Palace with her back bent and unable to straighten up.

Bu Bu looked at Ruyi's back, biting her lips and not daring to cry out loud, her whole body trembling in the wind and snow.

The Zhaoyang Palace, which was originally sparsely populated, became chaotic again, and the Queen Mother vomited blood again.

Bu Bu held the blood-stained handkerchief in his hand and looked at Nanny Chen with tears in his eyes. He was totally at a loss. " Nanny, I'll go get the imperial physician! " Even if it cost him his life, he would get the imperial physician for the empress.

Nanny Chen looked at the handkerchief with her heart broken. She shook her head, her voice almost hoarse and hard as if she had swallowed charcoal, " Don't go. " The Imperial Hospital had long been following the orders of Shoukang Palace. They had invited a doctor, but no one knew whether he was here to cure the disease or to kill the patient.

In this palace, once you lose power, you can't survive.

Nanny Chen beat her chest and regretted her decision.

It was all her fault. She knew better than anyone how dangerous the palace was, but she never taught her little master about the evil in people's hearts. She always felt that her little master had suffered so much, and had been through crimes that no one else had ever experienced. With the Emperor Yongtai doting on her and the Crown Prince protecting her, she just wanted to see her little master live happily.

She had always wanted to persuade the young master not to be the Crown Princess. She said that she could pick any talented young man in Dayin, and with the imperial power behind her, she would be free and unrestrained all her life. Her young master was born with a noble fate, and she should live like this. She never expected that the young master was determined to be the Crown Princess, believed the Crown Prince's words of a lifelong couple, and was even more determined to be sincere to the Crown Prince and the Queen Mother, and she had come to this day step by step ...

Where in the world can there be a pair of emperors ... Why doesn't her master understand ...

But even if he really understands, what does it matter? She doesn't want to see her precious master give in and live a life like those scheming women in the deep palace ... Everything has been wrong since the day she entered the East Palace.

Nanny Chen held the handkerchief and cried silently.

At this time, the imperial concubine came.

" The imperial concubine has arrived! "

In contrast to the decay and bustle of Zhaoyang Palace was the imperial concubine's magnificent procession, the palace maids who hung their heads and dared not breathe, in front was the radiant imperial concubine, and behind her was the wet nurse holding the adorable eldest prince.

When Nanny Chen saw the eldest prince, her eyelids jumped. The imperial concubine was trying to kill the queen. Everyone knew that the queen couldn't stand the eldest prince. Half a year ago, no one could explain what happened in Shoukang Palace. Caixing said that it was the eldest prince who pushed the second prince into the water. The people in Shoukang Palace insisted that the two children were fighting and the second prince fell into the water.

The imperial concubine still respected Nanny Chen. After all, she had been the queen's maid for seven years, and she had done everything under the guidance of Nanny Chen.

" If Madam is willing to come to my Jinxiu Palace, I will be very happy. " Everyone knows that the Queen will be here in the next two days, and many of the people in Zhaoyang Palace have already found their destinations.

Nanny Chen's stern face was expressionless. " Old slave, not everyone is worthy of being used by me. "

These words undoubtedly slapped the imperial concubine in the face in public. The palace maids, who were already silent, lowered their heads even more. For a moment, the huge Zhaoyang Palace was silent, with only the flickering candlelight.

The imperial concubine had been through a lot, so she wasn't angry. She just glanced at Nanny Chen with a smile, then said, " I heard the noise inside has stopped. It seems that the queen has recovered. I'll go see her. Nanny won't be worried, right? "

" I dare not. "

The imperial concubine walked towards the inner room with dignified and graceful steps.

Nanny Chen raised her old eyes to look at the imperial concubine's back, then followed her.

Nanny Chen supported the Queen's back and helped her sit up again. Her hand felt a bunch of bones, and Nanny Chen's expressionless face trembled.

When the nanny heard the queen asking them to go out and talk to the imperial concubine, she did not hesitate and took everyone out. Only she stayed guarding the door of the bedroom so that she could go in in time if the queen called anyone.

Imperial Concubine Zhang Jinyu looked at the queen. Although she was so weak and haggard, her expression was still rare and charming. Even though she looked listless, she still had a noble air of indifference. It seemed that Xie Jiayi didn't care much about the queen's fall to this state.

The queen's arrogance is so unbridled that even her illness cannot suppress it.

She was still wearing a white sable fur worth a thousand gold coins, and the red glaze jewelry displayed in the palace was specially made for her by His Majesty. The imperial concubine looked at each piece one by one, and finally stopped at the transparent blue lapis lazuli bracelet that seemed to be casually hung on her wrist. This was only available as tribute, and the best beads were picked out and strung into a bracelet and sent to the Queen's palace. Such a rare item was only worn by the Queen when she was sick.

In contrast, the imperial concubine was much more plain, with just two jade hairpins on her head, two mutton-fat jade earrings on her ears, and two bracelets on her wrists. The water content was good, but it was not rare.

" No wonder people say that Zhaoyang Palace is luxurious and the Queen is extravagant. I have seen this. "

The queen laughed when she heard this, and coughed twice lightly without even raising her eyelids: " You should have seen it earlier ... You have been with me for so long, but you still say such shallow words. " After saying this, she coughed twice lightly.

The imperial concubine's expression remained gentle, but the corners of her eyes twitched. She looked at the queen who still had a lazy and noble air, and suddenly whispered, " Your Majesty, you probably don't know that the Second Prince has been weak since birth. It's not because Your Majesty didn't take good care of him during pregnancy, but because Your Majesty has Hehuan in her body ..."

When the imperial concubine saw that the queen's expression finally changed, her breathing became rapid and she coughed repeatedly. She retracted her leaning body and sat up straight and dignified again.

The queen waved to Nanny Chen who came in and asked her to go out.

Nanny Chen glanced at the imperial concubine and went out.

The Queen only found out this year that there were signs of Heju in her body. It was the famous doctor outside the palace who was found by Nanny Chen, who said that she had taken the palace's secret medicine Heju at least twice, and was afraid that it was more than twice. Hehuan, a good name, was actually a drug used in the palace to sterilize women. During the reign of Emperor Yuanhe, it was severely punished and destroyed, and since then Hehuan has disappeared from the palace. Unexpectedly, she took it more than twice.

" Your Majesty, there is no need to look at me like that. Your Majesty doesn't like me, but you don't have to hold this confusion account against me in the underworld. I have never harmed Your Majesty. You should know who Your Majesty dislikes. I am just letting Your Majesty know what's going on. " She remained that naive girl until her death. How disgusting. In this deep palace, everyone is busy and busy. In this world, everyone has a hard time. How can someone be so lucky and die freely? Before dying, she still looked unconcerned, as if everything she had worked so hard to get was not worth it to this person.

How could there be such a disgusting person?

The imperial concubine looked at the white mink fur sliding off the empress's body, her face still elegant and gentle.

" When the queen came of age, she had already taken Hehuan for the first time in Changchun Palace. Logically, she should not have children, but people were still worried, so Changchun Palace gave her two more doses of Hehuan the following year, on her birthday and on her wedding day. "

Changchun Palace was the residence of Empress Dowager Defei.

" You are still able to get pregnant despite this, which shows that Your Majesty is also concerned about having an heir. However, even with treatment, Your Majesty will not be able to give birth to a healthy child. "

As the imperial concubine finished her words, the candle in the bedroom flickered and the light dimmed.

It's late at night.

The queen slowly loosened her grip on the mink fur. It turned out that the queen mother had always disliked her. It was ridiculous that she had once regarded the queen mother as a relative. She lost her parents and brothers when she was four years old, and then she wandered among the distant relatives of the Xie family. It was not until she came to the palace from the north when she was six years old that she felt the warmth of home and the love of adults again.

The Emperor loved her, but he was a man after all, and not as attentive as a woman. Concubine De was the most attentive woman, taking care of her like her own eyeballs ... but it turned out that it was all fake from the beginning.

Thinking of the medicine she had to take every day for the sake of having children since the second year of her marriage, she had been almost soaked in various medicines for those two years. Princess Kunyi was delicate and afraid of hardship, and everyone in the palace knew that. But the queen couldn't be afraid of hardship, she wanted to be with her husband for the rest of her life, she had to have children, and the emperor couldn't be childless.

The medicine she took during those two years was so bitter. Even if she vomited it out, she would boil another bowl and drink it until she stopped vomiting. This happened every day, shrouded in bitter despair and hope. A few years have passed, and when she thinks about it again, the queen still feels bitter in her mouth and her stomach still can't stop twitching.

Albizzia julibrissin.

It turned out that her coming-of-age ceremony included a blessing sutra embroidered by Consort De of Changchun Palace, and a piece of Hehuan that she didn't even know when she ate. Her sixteenth birthday included a white jade hairpin carved by the Crown Prince himself, and Hehuan that she ate again that night.

"Your Majesty, you think I am just a servant, but you don't know that I was once the Crown Princess appointed by the Empress Dowager." If it weren't for the confiscation of her family's property and the extermination of her clan when she was seven years old, she would have been the Crown Princess and the empress who would naturally rule the country.

"I grew up with Your Majesty since I was little. Before Your Majesty came to the capital, I was already Your Majesty's playmate." The Queen Mother's elder sister married into the powerful Zhang family. She, Zhang Jinyu, was the daughter of a cabinet minister at the time. She was not a maid or a slave! She was the Crown Princess carefully cultivated by the Zhang family, the daughter of the Zhang family, and Your Majesty's cousin.

But for so many years, I have to bow my head and serve the people in front of me.

Fortunately, the hard times are finally over.

The imperial concubine looked at the queen's expression and gently pressed the corner of her mouth with a handkerchief, "When your majesty gets there, please don't hate the wrong person. I just want to take back what I deserve and have never let you down."

"Yan'er should be asleep now. I have to go and keep him company. If he wakes up and can't see me, he'll make a fuss."



As she spoke, she stood up, raised her hand slightly to salute, and before leaving, she asked the Queen: " Your Highness, do you have anything else to say to me? We are sisters, and I will listen to your wishes. As for His Majesty, you don't have to worry, I will serve you well. "

The queen looked at the imperial concubine's radiant face under the candlelight. She was very beautiful. Everyone around her was beautiful, and the first-class maid was naturally very beautiful as well.

It's just so annoying. She's about to die, and yet she has to listen to her talk like this.

It's also good to be a clear-headed ghost.

But, whether she knew the truth or not, she hated Zhang Jinyu.

The queen coughed twice before she spoke slowly: " I don't like you. "

This sentence made Zhang Jinyu feel better. She was always so cautious and smiled unconsciously, but her smile soon disappeared.

Because the queen continued: " So, you can't become the queen, and your son can't become the prince. "

The queen's voice was weak and light, but her tone contained her usual arrogance and confidence.

She has always been like this, asking for whatever she wants and saying whatever she wants. She got everything she wanted, and His Majesty helped her achieve her words even if he was angry. The only thing was that His Majesty broke his promise, and the emperor and the queen broke up. This person is so willful, and she is still so willful after becoming the queen, which makes people disgusted.

At this moment, the muscles on Zhang Jinyu's face couldn't help shaking. It was just the words of a dying man, she told herself. But she felt a chill down her spine, and her hair stood on end. The composure she had maintained all along was easily shattered by a word from the Queen. Zhang Jinyu tried hard to keep a straight face, but couldn't help revealing clues. She always spoke softly, gently and calmly, but at this moment even her voice was shrill: " Do you think you are still as favored as you were in the past? " The sarcasm in her words was not concealed at all.

But Zhang Jinyu, if she showed her emotions, she would lose . It was interesting that Concubine Zhang, who was steady, skilled and dignified, could be so sarcastic.

She was always so reserved that Xie Jiayi always had the urge to slap her, but unfortunately, she didn't have the strength to do it. Seeing her expression change, Xie Jiayi felt that her breathing became smoother.

She coughed twice again and called the nanny for water. After being served and drinking two sips of water, she turned to the imperial concubine who was still standing there in a daze and shivering and said, " I won't live long, but you can wait and see. My words will never fall through. " Her tone was still as innocent and arrogance as before, as if she was not talking about such a life-threatening matter as establishing a queen or a crown prince.

After everyone had left, the Queen asked for paper and pen.

Nanny Chen wanted to persuade the queen to do it tomorrow, as it was too late. She still brought paper and pen for the queen.

The Queen struggled to write her last letter to His Majesty with the help of Nanny Chen, and sealed it in the jade hairpin that His Majesty had given her as a gift for her sixteenth birthday.

The sixteen-year-old Princess Kunyi held the jade hairpin and asked curiously: " Why does it have a mechanism? " She didn't understand why she couldn't say it directly and had to hide it in the hairpin for the Crown Prince to see.

The eighteen-year-old prince said calmly: " Just take it if I give it to you. Why are there so many? "

The sixteen-year-old princess used a jade hairpin to convey a message to the prince for the first time, asking him to eat the crabapple cake from an old-fashioned shop outside the city. When she ate it, she smiled and said it was really useful.

This was the second time the 22-year-old queen used the jade hairpin. She had been willful and reckless all her life, and what she said was always what she thought. She didn't need to act, because whatever she wanted, she would get it if she just said it.

The first time she acted was in front of someone she thought she would never lie to, even if she died.

There is endless affection in these few lines, and it is the fear of death of the little princess back then. She talked about the pain of taking medicine back then, but it was all for the last two sentences:

The imperial concubine harmed me and misled me with Hehuan.

Third brother, I don't want the concubine's child to be the crown prince.

She sealed the jade hairpin with a light cough and handed it to Nanny Chen. She couldn't overthrow the Queen Mother. No matter how she investigated He Huan's matter, it couldn't be the Queen Mother's doing. So she pushed it to the Imperial Concubine. Seeing the Imperial Concubine being proud, she got angry. Even the Queen Mother, who loved the Imperial Concubine so much, could only watch the Imperial Concubine take the blame. The Queen Mother was probably the person who least wanted the truth to come out.

It's snowing heavily outside again.

The queen vomited two more mouthfuls of blood, but she held the nanny's hand and stopped her from bringing the medicine.

" Mammy, the medicine is too bitter. I've had enough of it in my life. "

" Mammy, I won't be able to see the crabapple blossoms bloom next year. "

At the last moment, the queen still held the nanny's hand, breathing weakly:

" Mammy, you guys just need to wait until His Majesty comes back. " In the letter, she asked His Majesty to do these things.

Nanny Chen looked at the master she had brought up since childhood, smiled with tears in her eyes and nodded, wanting to reassure the young master.

She saw the young mistress smile, and she was still the flamboyant princess in red. She swung a whip like a tiger, and although her skills were not very good, her favorite saying was " I am very good at fighting . " She wanted to travel the world at any time, but she chose to stay in the deep palace.

Her little master's last words were:

" Don't cry, Mammy. I have lived a very happy life . Now I am going to see my father , mother , brother , and uncle . They must miss me very much . "

On this day, Queen Dayin passed away.

The heavy snow that had been falling for several days finally stopped that day.

On this day, His Majesty, who had personally led an expedition to the northern border thousands of miles away, won a resounding victory. When he passed by Sucheng, an important town in the north, His Majesty, who was full of murderous aura, stopped for a long time and finally bought some crabapple cakes from the north gate of the city.

### Chapter 3

Spring is here, the days are warm, and flowers are blooming.

Xie Jiayi opened her eyes and faced a tree of weeping crabapples in full bloom outside the window. The lingering smell of medicine was no longer in her nose, but instead the sweet fragrance of crabapple flowers.

Xie Jiayi felt lazy and light. She had been ill for half a year and had long forgotten this feeling of lightness. Whenever she moved a little, she would cough violently. She often wondered why her throat was still in place and not falling out. This comfort made Xie Jiayi, who had been ill for a long time, stay still. She didn't care where she went after death. She wanted to enjoy it for a while.

If it is an illusion, you must not move, as it will be destroyed if you move. Isn't this what Buddhism says? If this illusion is destroyed, the next one may be the hell of endless suffering with green faces and fangs.

Until the wind blew through the crabapple tree, a petal of the crabapple flower floated through the open window and fell on Xie Jiayi's face, soft, itchy, fragrant ... real ...

True!

Xie Jiayi moved her fingers gently, then slowly reached out and took off the petals – real!

She sat up suddenly, and everything in front of her did not disperse like an illusion, but was still real. In front of her was the Begonia Palace where she lived before her wedding. She slept on the long couch by the window where she loved to take a nap. Outside the window was the weeping crabapple tree she had planted. It was March, the spring day when the crabapple flowers were in full bloom, not the twelfth lunar month, not the cold winter, and there was no heavy snow.

Xie Jiayi touched herself, touched the window frame, and leaned out to touch the crabapple tree, when she heard Nanny Chen's voice: " Oh my little ancestor, what are you talking about? I was just out for a while, and everyone downstairs is in turmoil. Where is Cai Yue Ming Pei? Where is she? Needless to say, the master was allowed to sleep here with the window open. This must have been done by that little bitch Cai Xing! "

As she said this, she walked forward and touched Xie Jiayi's forehead, and then touched her clothes and the thickness of the blanket she was covering herself with. However, she saw her little master's tears falling like beads, and she cried out while crying, " Mammy ... I lied ... I'm not happy at all ... Mammy, I'm not happy ..." and then she cried even harder.

Mammy's heart was soaked by the young master's tears, and she was panicking, " You are having a nightmare again ... Mammy's darling, you are having a nightmare again ... It has been a while since you had a nightmare, why are you having a nightmare again today ... Young master, it's all over, listen to Mammy, it's all over ... Don't be afraid. "

Nanny Chen patted him and coaxed him, then pointed out the window: " Look, master, you fell asleep. We are in the capital city ... all that is in the past ..." When she said that everything was in the past, Nanny Chen started to cry.

Xie Jiayi looked up blankly: " Is it all over? "

Nanny Chen nodded affirmatively: " It's all over. " Then she touched the little princess's soft long hair and sighed: " Nanny's little master is so big now, sixteen years old, and still cries like a child ..." At that time, she had nightmares all night long. The little master was sensible and knew that she should not shout when living in someone else's home. Every time she woke up from a nightmare, she would hug the quilt, open her panicked eyes, and huddle in the corner, crying silently.

" Sixteen years old? " Xie Jiayi looked at Nanny Chen and repeated slowly.

" Yes, she has grown up in the blink of an eye. " Nanny Chen nodded with emotion. The day for the wedding was approaching. " It's Nanny's fault. If you want to marry the prince, then we can marry him. " As long as her young master is happy, why would she have to stop and persuade him? Look, she has scared the child out of his worries.

" Marry the prince? "

The nanny looked at the little princess lovingly and said, " If the princess wants to be the crown princess, then we will be the crown princess. "

But what surprised the nanny was that the little princess did not get happy after hearing her words. Instead, she looked at her straight and said word by word: " I don't want to marry the prince, nor do I want to be the prince's consort. "

Nanny Chen was so shocked that she couldn't help but touch the little princess' forehead. It wasn't hot. She was still confused. How could she not know that her little princess loved the prince so much that she went to the East Palace three times a day, regardless of whether she could see the prince or not. Even if she couldn't see him, she would sit in front of the writing brush, inkstone, paper and inkstone in the prince's study and smile foolishly.

Since she was seven years old, she has been declaring in a baby voice that she wants to marry the prince. It is not easy to be a prince's consort. Over the years, it's not that no one has tried to stop and persuade her, but the princess would never listen.

Ten years had passed, and her master had never changed her mind. This stubbornness, temper and personality were exactly like those of the eldest princess. In the past, Empress Xiaoyi always liked to laugh and say how the palace could have raised such a cheerful and opinionated princess. Nanny Chen sometimes thought that it was a pity that Empress Xiaoyi didn't see it, otherwise she would definitely love the little princess very much.

At this time the maidservant dared to come in. Nanny Chen glanced at Caixing, who shrank her neck and quickly handed over the warm water. The Nanny directly helped the princess rinse her mouth, then took half a cup of warm tea and asked the little princess to drink it slowly.

" Where's Caiyue? "

Cai Xing quickly replied: " The princess wants grasshoppers, Cai Yue took Ruyi Bubu to catch grasshoppers for the princess. "

Nanny Chen asked again: " Where is Mingpei? " She felt the little person beside her tremble, and hurriedly said: " Is she cold? Don't blame Nanny for nagging. The weather looks warm but there is still a chill. If the wind blows and you feel cold, you won't be able to take the medicine. Then it will be the master who will suffer! " Nanny Chen got a headache when she thought of the little princess taking medicine. When she smelled the medicine, she got into the quilt and waved her hands to prevent anyone from getting close. Later, the imperial hospital rolled the medicine pills, but who knew that the princess seemed to have a barrier in her throat. After drinking half a bowl of water, the pills were still dissolving in her mouth. The bitter princess kept shouting that they should just bury her. She said all kinds of nonsense, but she just refused to take the medicine.

Not to mention the people in Haitang Palace, even His Majesty followed suit and coaxed and persuaded the princess, and every time he was tormented by the princess, he would sweat all over. So not only were the people in Haitang Palace afraid that the princess would get sick, but the people in Yangxin Palace were even more afraid that the princess would get sick.

Thinking of this, Nanny Chen was even more worried that the little princess would catch a cold, so she pointed at Cai Xing's forehead and said, " The master is in a bad mood and wants to sleep with the window wide open. You didn't try to persuade me but just went along with me. Be careful or I'll spank you! "

Cai Xing nodded repeatedly. Who in Haitang Palace was not afraid of Nanny Chen? If anyone broke the rules, Nanny Chen would always punish the person directly and impartially.

A little maid had already come forward to close the window, and Nanny Chen also put a half-worn homely dress on the little princess.

The two heard the little princess, who had been silent, ask: " Where is Ming Pei? "

Cai Xing felt that the princess' tone was very strange, but she did not have time to think about it and immediately replied: " She was summoned to Changchun Palace, and she must have been asked to draw flowers again. " The Empress Defei of Changchun Palace liked Mingpei's flowers and always summoned her every few days. At first, she told Nanny Chen about it, but later she got used to it and just passed it over without saying anything.

First, the relationship between Haitang Palace and Changchun Palace is well known to everyone. The Queen of Changchun Palace takes care of the little princess with great care and love, just like she would for her own daughter. It can be said that Changchun Palace is the princess' second home in the palace, and she spends seven or eight days in ten days there. Besides, Mingpei was originally a maid selected by the Eastern Palace and sent by the Empress of Changchun Palace. She was clever and skillful, and even Nanny Chen praised her for her needlework. Even Caiyue, who was steady , had been spanked, but Mingpei had never been punished. She had her own needs, and the princess took extra care of her in the first two years for the sake of Changchun Palace.

In the past two years, Mingpei has shown a tendency to surpass the two older maids Caiyue and Caixing and become the number one maid in Zhaoyang Palace. No one below dares to disobey her words or actions.

So when Changchun Palace came to summon her, she just went over directly. People in Haitang Palace were used to this kind of thing. Caixing herself didn't think there was anything wrong with her reply, but the princess's reaction this time seemed different from the past. Caixing waited for the princess to give her instructions, but the princess didn't mention Mingpei anymore, and directly said: " Wash and dress for me, I want to see His Majesty. " Caixing agreed, and then she realized that she was going to see His Majesty, not to the East Palace to see the prince. She was afraid that she had heard it wrong, and hesitated to ask more questions, but Nanny Chen was right next to her, so she didn't dare to ask more questions for fear of being scolded.

After washing and changing clothes, Caixing handed the princess the small whip.

Xie Jiayi looked at the whip, which was left to her by her mother and later destroyed by the Queen Mother. She reached out and gently stroked the calfskin whip on the tray, and then touched the red sandalwood whip handle inlaid with rubies.

Everyone else felt that there was something different about the princess when she woke up today, and they all held their breath and waited for her instructions.

Nanny Chen looked at the princess and was thinking about asking a Taoist monk for a few talismans to calm her down, but she hadn't decided whether to ask for the Dajue Temple or the Huangjue Temple, and she didn't know which of the two temples had more powerful magic. The princess must have been dreaming, or having a nightmare, otherwise she would have said she didn't want to be the Crown Princess.

Xie Jiayi held the whip, stopped Caixing, wrapped it around her waist, and touched it lingeringly before getting up and heading for the Yangxin Palace. The warm March sun shone on her body, bees and butterflies fluttered, and willows swayed. Xie Jiayi did not walk fast, and she felt comfortable and closed her eyes slightly and then opened them again.

She didn't stop until she reached the study in the Yangxin Palace, feeling her heart pounding. She was afraid.

She was afraid that it was all wishful thinking.

There really would be her uncle the emperor in there. On a sunny March day, Xie Jiayi was so scared that her hands were cold, and she stood in the yard, unable to move a step.

It was not until Eunuch Xi came out with a smile that the fear that had shrouded her dissipated and she was sure that she was indeed in the human world.

It was now the eleventh year of Yongtai, and the Emperor uncle who loved her the most passed away in the spring of the thirteenth year of Yongtai. The Emperor uncle had always been in poor health, and had to rely on careful care, and could not stand the slightest suffering. But the twelfth year of Yongtai was the most difficult year for Dayin, and it drained the Emperor uncle's last vitality.

From then on, there were no more relatives of hers in the deep palace of Dayin.

She stared at the two crabapple trees planted in front of the imperial study.

Eunuch Xi came to pick up the little princess in person. Her nails had already left a crescent-shaped mark in her palm. Eunuch Xi even joked with a smile, asking how the little princess, who was always active and lively, could be so well-behaved today. Xie Jiayi followed Eunuch Xi into the study, stopped at the door, and stared blankly at Emperor Yongtai, who was sitting in front of the kang table reviewing memorials.

Emperor Yongtai is only in his forties this year, but he already looks old and tired. Long-term illness has taken away his vitality prematurely. Emperor Yongtai has always been in poor health, but he is doing better these days. At least he can get up. But in such warm weather, he is still wearing a padded jacket. He finished reviewing a memorial with a pen and was wondering why the princess hadn't come in yet. He looked up and smiled when he saw the little princess by the door, but saw the little princess pursed her lips and suddenly cried.

This scared Eunuch Xi. Why was the little ancestor crying? If it had anything to do with the people below, even though Emperor Yongtai had a good temper, he would expose the skin of the person who made the little princess unhappy.

Emperor Yongtai himself had four sons and one daughter, but when it came to experience in coaxing children, he had gained all of it from this little devil. Seeing the little princess crying, he immediately got off the couch, looked around at the waiters, and when everyone was silent, he pulled the little princess to sit on the couch.

Asking and coaxing one question after another.

Hearing the princess say that she just missed her uncle the emperor, Emperor Yongtai didn't know whether to laugh or cry, " You are really becoming more and more childish as you grow older. How can I find a husband for you if people know this? "

The little princess sobbed and said, " I miss my uncle and want to cry. I don't want my in-laws anymore. I don't want such a in-law. "

Emperor Yongtai laughed at the princess' usual outspokenness and scratched her nose: " A girl is also talking about her husband's family. She has no shame at all. "

" I am the princess of Dayin. If I am afraid of this or that, I will only bring shame to my uncle the emperor. I am not afraid of shame. I am not afraid of anything. "

Emperor Yongtai laughed even louder. His temper was completely like that of Princess Pingyang. Thinking of Princess Pingyang, Emperor Yongtai smiled as he looked at the two crabapple trees outside the window of the imperial study. Princess Pingyang had been gone for twelve years.

Twelve years, time has passed so quickly.

The story of their previous generation ended long ago, and the story of their younger generation began again.

Emperor Yongtai said meaningfully: " You are not afraid of others, but you are not afraid of being laughed at by the prince? "

Unexpectedly, this time the little princess said directly: " No matter who he is, I am not afraid, let them laugh at me! " In her previous life, there were not many people who laughed at her, but she was afraid that the circle of noble ladies in the capital would laugh at her as a queen: she couldn't give birth to a child, and she didn't let His Majesty give birth to a child with someone else. She could imagine that when those people talked about this, they looked like they had seen a ghost, and exaggeratedly covered their mouths with handkerchiefs, " How can they be so jealous? " They were virtuous, but she bah. If they didn't find a bunch of sisters to serve their husbands, it seemed that they were not virtuous enough. If they couldn't give birth to a child and didn't let the man take a concubine, it was like breaking the law of heaven, as if the natural

disasters and man-made disasters in Dayin were all caused by her, the queen's unvirtuousness ...

" Zhao Zhao, there are many rules for being a crown princess. " Emperor Yongtai reminded again. Although he knew the little princess's intention, he still hadn't made up his mind. The palace was not a good place. Especially with Zhao Zhao's temper, Emperor Yongtai felt a little worried when he thought of this.

" Your Majesty, I don't want to be the Crown Princess anymore. " When Xie Jiayi said this, not only Emperor Yongtai, but even Eunuch Xi who was serving beside him was shocked.

## Chapter 4

" Your Majesty, I don't want to be the Crown Princess anymore. " There were still tears on Xie Jiayi's face. She looked at Emperor Yongtai with eyes that looked like black grapes washed by water, but her words were soft and decisive, without any sign of anger.

The smile on Emperor Yongtai's face faded. " Did the prince bully you? Or did someone in Changchun Palace make you angry? " How could someone dare to make her angry under his nose? If Zhao Zhao hadn't been angry, she would never have done that.

Xie Jiayi looked at her uncle the emperor, her only support, and just repeated: " I don't want to be a crown princess anymore. " Thinking about the two years as a crown princess and the four years as queen, Xie Jiayi's tears rolled down again.

Emperor Yongtai said hurriedly: " If you don't want to do it, then don't do it. I will pick a better one for you. I don't believe that there is no one in the whole Dayin who can make me happy. " Only then did Xie Jiayi wipe her tears with a handkerchief and grinned.

She saw an imperial decree on the table, and without any hesitation, she leaned over to look. Emperor Yongtai looked at her with amusement. This little girl dared to say anything and see anything. Without his protection, what could she do with such a temper in the palace?

When Xie Jiayi saw that it was an imperial decree to confer the title of Duke of Yingguo, she tightened her grip on the handkerchief.

The Duke of Yingzhou is the empress dowager's family. Originally, it was just a low-ranking official in Beijing. Later, a Concubine De gave birth to a prince, and another son passed the imperial examination. What's more rare is that the children have made meritorious deeds in the northern battlefield. The late emperor appointed the crown prince and the grandson at the same time. In order to consolidate the status of the grandson, he directly used the military merits of the Duke of Yingzhou to confer the title of Duke. The descendants of Emperor Yuanhe are all like wolves. If not, how can the current crown prince sit firmly on the throne? Dayin, you can't stand another chaos.

When the prince ascended the throne, Xie Jiayi became the queen, and the empress dowager's family, the Duke of Ying, rose rapidly. In just two years, the power of the foreign relatives had been established. And there was also Zhang Jinyu's brother who changed his name and hid in the army – Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi clenched the handkerchief in her hand even tighter.



Emperor Yongtai saw that Xie Jiayi had been looking at him for a long time this time, so he asked tentatively: " Usually, every time you rewarded the Duke of Ying, you were happier than when you received the reward yourself. Why today – " Unhappy?

Xie Jiayi looked up: " I just don't like them. "

The childish words made Emperor Yongtai want to laugh again, " What if you like it again tomorrow? "

" From now on, I will only like my uncle the Emperor and not them anymore. "

Emperor Yongtai smiled, carefully looked at Xie Jiayi's expression, and asked again: " Do you really not want to be the Crown Princess? This is not a joke. I will not allow you to regret it. "

Unexpectedly, Xie Jiayi nodded without even thinking: " No. "

Emperor Yongtai looked at Xie Jiayi for a long time. There was only calm determination on the little girl's face, which made Emperor Yongtai wonder what had happened.

Emperor Yongtai directly abolished the decree of the additional title, and at the same time observed Xie Jiayi's expression, but saw that her face was cold and stern, and she was not moved at all. The additional title was originally given for Zhao Zhao, and since she didn't want it, what was the point of the title? The Duke of Ying's Mansion was already quite powerful. Besides serving His Majesty, Eunuch Xi also tries to figure out the little princess's feelings. His Majesty will also be happy if he serves her well. At this moment, he really couldn't understand it. He was just shocked to see that the Changchun Palace and the Duke of Ying's Mansion had been looking forward to the promotion for half a year because of a few words from the little princess. The princess was favored by no one.

At this time, someone outside announced that the Empress of Changchun Palace had arrived. Usually, Eunuch Xi would go out to greet her directly. When the little princess came to His Majesty's place, the Empress of Changchun Palace would come twice out of three times. His Majesty was also happy to see the princess, and it would make His Majesty feel comfortable to see her.

At this time, Eunuch Xi did not dare to welcome him in rashly, but only brought the message to the emperor.

Emperor Yongtai saw that Xie Jiayi had no reaction. She sat sideways on the opposite side of the kang, flipping through the half-read book she had read last time, as if she hadn't heard anything. Unlike usual, she went out to greet him like a yellow oriole.

Emperor Yongtai remained calm and ordered: " Let her go back. I am busy now. "

Eunuch Xi was startled, the wind direction in the palace was about to change.

Empress Defei had never expected that she would be stopped outside the study, and Mingpei, who was following her, obviously hadn't expected it either. Empress Defei didn't know what happened, she just smiled and said, " I thought Zhaozhao was here, and I was busy sending her maid over, for fear that if I delayed too long, she would suffer. "

Eunuch Xi smiled and said, " The princess is here, and His Majesty is asking her to learn the rules. "

Empress Defei smiled and asked Mingpei to go to the side room with Caixing to wait for instructions. She took the hand of a maid and turned around. Halfway through the journey, she asked her trusted nanny: " Look, what's going on? " This had never happened before.

The nanny whispered, " It's possible that the princess is being irritated with His Majesty. "

" I guess so. " Defei said slowly.

Over in the study of the Hall of Mental Cultivation, there were two people, one old and one young. One was reviewing memorials, while the other was flipping through a storybook nonchalantly, but was thinking about things in his mind.

Especially this Mingpei, Zhang Jinyu.

" Beat her up? " Xie Jiayi thought, to vent her anger. But she didn't seem to be very angry with Ming Pei anymore. Ming Pei had disrupted her position as queen and cut off her son's path to becoming crown prince, so she seemed to have vented a lot of anger. Mainly because her mother said that it was useless to vent anger on a servant for no reason. If you want to vent your anger, you have to vent it on a tough guy, so that you can look powerful.

Is Zhang Jinyu a tough guy? At least not now. She is just a servant with great ambitions. Xie Jiayi hates her, but she doesn't want to be a coward who tortures people for no reason. She won't torture servants. As a princess, she will kill her directly if she wants to!

However, Zhang Jinyu is a person with many connections and he cannot be easily killed.

Especially, her brother. Later, he became so powerful that he dared to sit down when meeting His Majesty. The one who took control of the military power in the north was indeed different.

Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi felt cold in her heart. He took control of none other than the Xie family army. The reason why he could do it so smoothly, in addition to his own talents, was because she, a girl from the Xie family, supported him, which made him so popular.

At that time, she only wanted to make someone useful to the Crown Prince, only wanted to repel the Northern Di, only wanted to – , but she didn't know that this man named Zhang Dahu was originally named Zhang Peiyu, and was not only the Crown Prince's man, but also Zhang Jinyu's man ...

Thinking of the North and the ambitious Beidi, Xie Jiayi thought more and more, and she unconsciously clenched the pages of the book in her hands.

" What are you thinking about? If you think any more, your notebook will break ..." This was the reminder from Emperor Yongtai. Emperor Yongtai had been observing this little girl for quite some time, but he did not expect that the more she thought, the more absorbed she became, with her brows furrowed tightly. He did not know how the little girl suddenly learned to worry. Upon hearing this, Xie Jiayi let go of her hand and quickly smoothed out the wrinkled notebook.

" Tell me, what's the problem? " Emperor Yongtai asked kindly.

Xie Jiayi looked at His Majesty and murmured, " It would be great if Your Majesty could really live forever ..."

Emperor Yongtai laughed again, and laughed so hard that he coughed. He said that she was getting bolder and more presumptuous. She dared to say such things. Isn't it obvious that she was telling him, the emperor, that the saying "Long Live" was a lie. Who knows how many years he can live? He sighed, " Silly child, there is no emperor who can really live forever. But don't worry, even if I don't live forever, I can still ensure that you will have a peaceful life. "

Xie Jiayi looked at her uncle the emperor and smiled, and then she started to cry.

Emperor Yongtai looked at it and shook his head, laughing and crying at the same time, childishly, " Don't think about it, just think about what you want to play and what you want, and be happy. "

Xie Jiayi really thought about it for a while, " Your Majesty, I want to rebuild the Princess's Mansion. "

" Don't you like the palace anymore? "

" I'm old enough to not stay in the palace all the time. "

Emperor Yongtai tapped the table with the memorial, thought for a while, nodded, and said, " Repair. " The Princess's Mansion has been in name only for more than ten years. There is only an old housekeeper and a few servants looking after it. Xie Jiayi has always lived in the palace. His Majesty looked at Xie Jiayi and sighed that the child had grown up and would eventually fly away.

Soon the Ministry of Internal Affairs received an order to rebuild the Princess's Mansion. They dared not delay and immediately arranged for people to start preparations.

" Renovate the Princess's Mansion? " In the study of the East Palace, the Crown Prince, who was practicing calligraphy attentively at the desk, put down his pen, took the white soft handkerchief handed to him by his personal eunuch Gao Sheng, wiped his hands, threw the handkerchief down, then looked up and asked in confusion.

Gao Sheng said hurriedly, " Yes, as soon as the Ministry of Internal Affairs received the order, they took action immediately. All specifications were kept to the highest standards, and all items were made to the best quality. "

The Crown Prince did not speak. He turned around the desk and came to the Eight Immortals Table. He did not allow anyone beside him to interfere. He picked up the pot and slowly poured half a cup of tea. His fingers were as sharp as jade, and with the warm Dehua white porcelain pot, the pot and his hands looked like jade. The sound of slowly pouring water rang out in the East Palace study, where you could hear a pin drop.

The entire study is as plain as a snow cave. The only color in the study is a fiery red crabapple on the ebony high table near the door. It was the one that the princess changed yesterday. The prince fiddled with the white porcelain cup but did not drink. He just asked, " Has the princess come here today? "

" She only came once in the morning. His Highness was not there, and the princess ate two pieces of dessert and then left. "

His Royal Highness the Crown Prince's long eyelashes drooped, and he said calmly: " Bring over all the memorials related to the salt administration in the south last year. "

Gao Sheng knew that this was the time to prepare for work.

While asking people to ask for Haitang cakes, he went to get the memorial himself. Thinking that the little princess should be here soon, she felt a little depressed because she didn't have Haitang cakes in the morning. She had to let this little ancestor have some when she came in the afternoon.

But until dusk falls and the stars rise.

The princess never came to the Eastern Palace.

## Chapter 5

The lights in the East Palace were already on, but the little princess still hadn't come. Gao Sheng was surprised, as this was the first time.

The prince stopped writing and looked at the Begonia cake on the table, and casually said: " Send someone to check, is she sick? " Gao Sheng quickly agreed and arranged for the smartest Jixiang to go to the Begonia Palace and bring some snacks over, so that the princess would know that although the prince was busy, he was still thinking about her.

The prince is a man who can do big things, and he always thinks about these small matters carefully and does them properly, and nothing can be done better.

Seeing Jixiang coming back alone, Gao Sheng's heart skipped a beat: Could it be that the princess is really sick? Otherwise, no matter what the princess is doing, she will definitely follow someone from the East Palace. Before Jixiang replied, Gao Sheng was already thinking about what to prepare for the sick little princess. It had to be something new and fun to make the princess happy, and it also had to be sweet and delicious to whet her appetite. He was used to making all these.

Who knew that Jixiang actually said: " The princess said she was tired and didn't come. " He scratched his head and said, " She didn't leave any snacks, she said she gave them to me as a reward ..."

Gao Sheng then realized that the food box contained the Eastern Palace's Begonia Cake. He originally thought that the little princess was ill and couldn't come, so she must have prepared food for the Crown Prince and had someone bring it back.

This confused Gao Sheng: Was he tired and didn't come? Did he give the Haitang Cake from the East Palace to someone else? ... Gao Sheng was still puzzled when he went to the study. He felt that something was wrong and reported Haitang Palace's words to the prince.

The prince paused while flipping through the book, then said, " Let her do it. " Gao Sheng agreed and waited on the prince to continue reading and handling government affairs. If the little princess didn't come, it was unknown when the prince's dinner would be served. Logically, he should have reminded the prince, but Gao Sheng didn't dare.

Meanwhile, Nanny Chen and others in Haitang Palace were even more confused than Gaosheng. Under the lanterns in the corridor, Bubu and Ruyi were picking up grasshoppers in a wicker cage, muttering, " It 's a good bargain, the master should take it and give it to me as a reward. " The Haitang cakes in the East Palace were very good, and were not much worse than the old brands in the north gate of the city. The princess never gave them all as rewards, but only ate them a little at a time, and only gave them a taste when she was happy.

Ruyi glanced at Bubu and said, " How dare you complain about the master's affairs? You haven't been spanked for a few days, are you owed it? " Bubu stuck out his tongue quickly and laughed, " I'm just wondering, brother, what do you think of – the princess today –" He didn't get to say " Is there something wrong? " because he was blocked by Ruyi's sharp eyes.

" All the talkative people in the palace are dead, so you'd better remember this. The princess has a good temper, so you should also remember your duties as a servant. You must

do whatever the master tells you to do, and the servant has no right to say anything about what the master does. " Bu Bu nodded in response, and Ruyi ended her lecture for the day.

Mingpei put down the teapot she had just replaced with water, wiped her hands, and stepped forward to take the comb from Caixing's hand to comb the princess' hair, but she heard the princess say, " Go away. I don't want you. "

Mingpei's face suddenly turned red when she understood what Princess Kunyi said. Caixing's hand, which was about to hand over the comb, froze, and all the servants in Haitang Palace fell silent.

Princess Kunyi had never spoken to Mingpei in such a cold tone. Everyone else felt their skin tense up all of a sudden. Even Mingpei was scolded. It was obvious that the princess was in a bad mood today, so they had to serve her more carefully.

Caixing then continued to help the princess comb her long black hair. From the moment the princess said she was " tired " and didn't want to go to the East Palace, to now that the princess didn't want Mingpei to comb her hair, Caixing had a lot of questions, but she didn't dare to ask, because the princess had a good temper, but the nanny did not.

Mingpei had already left. At this time, Nanny Chen came over and took the comb from Caixing's hand and continued to help the princess comb her hair.

The comb was just right in the hands of the nanny, and Xie Jiayi sighed comfortably. If she continued to comb Caixing, she might not be able to resist taking the comb herself. She was light where it should be heavy, and even lighter where it should be light. When she was removing the hairpin, she even pulled her hair ... Xie Jiayi suspected that the hairpin might have caught her long hair that had been pulled off ...

If she really didn't want Zhang Jinyu to meet her, she wouldn't have to suffer this ... Caiyue had her sent to the Princess's Mansion. Caiyue understood her thoughts best and would definitely cooperate with the Ministry of Internal Affairs to clean up the Princess's Mansion.

After a while, Nanny Chen said, " Don't you like Mingpei? " The princess's behavior today shocked Nanny.

Xie Jiayi then opened her eyes and looked through the bronze mirror at the eyes of the nanny behind her. " I don't like her. Nanny, I don't like her. "

" If you don't like it, then don't use it. It's no big deal. " Although Nanny Chen didn't know why she suddenly disliked it, but, for a slave, it was no big deal.

Mingpei was supposed to be on duty tonight, so the nanny was replaced by Caixing.

Xie Jiayi hadn't figured out how to deal with Zhang Jinyu, especially since she had Consort De, the Crown Prince, Zhang Peiyu, and the entire Duke Ying's Mansion behind her. She hadn't even figured out how to treat Zhang Peiyu. He did become increasingly domineering after gaining power, but he was also the one who fought off the Northern Di and defended the northern border ...

If she touches this person, will anyone be able to come out and repel the Northern Di? Can the Northland still be defended? If she touches this key person, what will happen to everything ...

" We are the royal family, supported by the people, and only then can we enjoy this dignity. We should also contribute to the people and Dayin. "

" I, the son of the Xie family, have guarded the North for generations. As long as there is a son of the Xie family, we will not allow the North to be lost. "

My parents' teachings are still fresh in my mind.

The night wind blows the thin gauze curtains, it is late at night.

Sitting on the bed with her knees hugged, Xie Jiayi unconsciously clenched her hands. Her nails once again dug into her palms, leaving a crescent shape. She then slowly lay down on her side facing the candlelight outside the curtain, slowly closed her eyes and fell asleep.

The candlelight was dim, and the person on the bed was hazily entering into the dream of that year again.

" Zhao Zhao, repeat the last three times. You must remember it. "

" Zhao Zhao, you have to remember this! " The person who was speaking gradually began to cry.

" Zhao Zhao, don't be afraid! " The boy finally couldn't hold back his tears. " You have to remember, remember ..."

Xie Jiayi suddenly woke up from her dream, and everything in front of her eyes went dark. "

Caiyue! Caiyue! "

Caixing, who was standing guard behind the curtain, heard the princess calling her and got up with sleepy eyes. Then she heard something wrong in the princess' voice and suddenly woke up. She responded quickly and hurried over in her shoes, " Princess, Caixing is here. "

Cai Xing saw that the princess' forehead was sweating in the March weather. She was even more shocked when she touched the princess' neck and found that she was also sweating. She hurriedly helped Xie Jiayi change her underwear, drank some warm water, and let the princess go back to sleep.

Then the princess said softly: " Cai Xing, light two more lamps. "

" Light two more lamps. "

" Light two more lamps. "

Cai Xing heard the princess repeating the words unconsciously three times, and she felt a chill in her back. She responded and lit the candle with a calming incense. She put down a layer of gauze curtains for the princess, and then she tiptoed to find Nanny Chen. The princess started having nightmares again, and she started repeating herself. This was no small matter.

Upon hearing this, Nanny Chen frowned and came in to check on the princess. She saw that under the effect of the calming incense, the little princess had fallen into a deep sleep again.

The nanny came out and said coldly: " Has anyone mentioned the Northland to the princess these days? " The princess felt something was wrong when she woke up from her nap. After checking around, she couldn't find the reason.

However, the princess had offended Changchun Palace and Mingpei, and the nanny saw it clearly.

" From now on, Ming Pei is not allowed to serve the princess anymore. "

With just one word from Nanny Chen, Mingpei's smooth sailing since she came to Haitang Palace, her days of being more respectable and comfortable than those of ordinary young ladies, came to an end.

Within two days, the Changchun Palace received news that the reward that had been finalized for the Duke of Yingguo's mansion was lost.

" No more? "

Concubine De kept circling around the palace, fearing that someone from her natal family would enter the palace in the next two days. Seeing that the marriage between the crown prince and the princess was to be granted this year, it was only natural that they would be awarded the title of Duke of the State. I had heard that it would be in the next two days, so why did it suddenly disappear?

This is so rare!

Defei grabbed Madam Liu who was supporting her and asked, " Tell me, is it related to the Imperial Study that day? " If there was anything unusual, the biggest one was that she did not go into the Imperial Study that day. His Majesty did not like the harem to go into the Imperial Study, but she was an exception. When the princess was there, she would go in and accompany her whenever she went.

" Could it be that Princess Kunyi has fallen out of favor? " Aunt Liu guessed. Otherwise, seeing that the marriage was about to be granted, the Duke's Mansion and the Queen expected that the reward would be considerable because of the princess. Especially Princess Kunyi is someone who can directly ask for a reward, why didn't she ask for a big reward this time, but got nothing? The Xie family has no important people anymore, and if they don't reward this side generously, is it possible that the marriage will be granted without any action by an imperial decree?

Concubine De laughed in anger. This was really ridiculous. Is this the favor from His Majesty? But how could Princess Kunyi fall out of favor? Concubine De thought of something and clenched her hands even tighter, so tight that it was a bit cruel, and Aunt Liu frowned in pain, but she didn't dare to make a sound.

" Go call the prince! " De Fei said at last. What happened and whether she could be rewarded still depended on Princess Kunyi. Only the princess could find out the reason from His Majesty.

Everyone said that their emperor was gentle and self-controlled ... Defei lowered her eyebrows, everyone was wrong.

" Also ask the Duke's Mansion to check if there is anyone in the family who has misbehaved and caught the eye of His Majesty, causing His Majesty's dislike. " Concubine De stopped someone and asked them to make an extra trip to the Duke of Ying's Mansion. It was under such circumstances that the prince was called to Changchun Palace. As soon as Concubine De saw the Crown Prince's expression, she said, " How many times has your mother told you that you should learn from your fourth brother and be sweet-mouthed and smile more. Your father likes people like that. "

The weather was getting hotter. The prince came directly from the six ministries wearing heavy court robes. He lowered his eyes and responded when he heard this.

Then I heard Concubine De sighing, " Mother has spent so much effort to keep you as the crown prince, " Concubine De choked up, " Others may not know, but you must remember it. " The prince's already pale face turned even paler and he responded respectfully.

" It has been so hard for us mother and son to come this far, and the price we paid was so high that we cannot afford any mistakes. " Having said this, she turned to the main topic and asked the prince:

" The promised reward suddenly disappeared. Do you know what happened? "

The prince replied: " I don't know. "

" Did the princess tell you why? " Defei asked. The reward from her natal family was a matter of great importance and could not be lost. She had to find out where they had lost the emperor's favor.

The prince paused, moved his hand hanging by his side, and said: " The princess has not come to the East Palace in the past three days. Therefore, I don't know. " The voice was like ice and snow, just like his whole person.

## Chapter 6

" The princess has not been to the East Palace in the past three days. Therefore, I don't know. "

The prince's voice was like him, like ice and snow, with few emotional ups and downs.

" You haven't been to the Eastern Palace for three days? " De Fei was extremely shocked. That girl was like a tail behind the prince, wanting to run to the Eastern Palace three hundred times a day, but she hadn't been to the Eastern Palace for three days! De Fei, who was already angry because of the prince's two consecutive " I don't know " , didn't care about anything else at this time.

" Why didn't you tell me earlier about such a big thing! " Defei couldn't sit still anymore. Seeing her son still looking so cold and lonely, she became furious . If she had known earlier –

" You must have offended her in some way, and His Majesty is venting his anger for her? " Defei thought. It was not impossible. His Majesty doted on that girl so much that he was afraid she would melt if he held her in his mouth, and afraid she would fall if he held her in his hands. Defei sneered.

" You have to be thoughtful and tactful when dealing with a little girl! Mother has said many times that the princess is helpless and pitiful, and mother loves her like her own daughter, but you are always lukewarm. No matter how warm a heart is, it will get cold sooner or later if it touches an ice cube! " Defei was anxious and angry, and she wanted to grab her son's ears and pour all these things into his head.

Who does this child take after? The princess is such a crucial person. If you catch her, you catch the emperor. He has been following his son like a dog since he was young. It's just a matter of waving his hand, and he has this little girl under his control. How come he can't even do such a simple thing? ! If it was back then ... maybe I wouldn't have to worry so much today. Every day is government affairs, is it important to do government affairs well? What's important is the emperor's heart!

" Now, immediately, put aside your government affairs and go find the princess. You should apologize and say nice things to please the princess! " De Fei stared at the prince and said, "



Do you know how much effort the Duke of Ying spent on this reward? If you can't take advantage of this opportunity to move up, my mother's family, your support, will fall! "

At this point, Concubine De's expression changed again: " Mother knows that you are a grown man and you are impatient with these childish things. It is embarrassing for you to ask you to appease a yellow-haired girl. " She quickly asked someone to bring a cool towel and blamed Madam Liu: " The prince is so hot, and you can't see it if I don't tell you. "

Madam Liu laughed and said, " Your Highness is a kind-hearted woman, so she sees everything. I am old and my eyes are dim, so how can I compare to Your Highness who always takes His Royal Highness into consideration? "

The prince took the servant's wet handkerchief with his slender white hands and slowly wiped his hands and face.

" Mother understands how difficult it is for you. The princess has a bad temper and is very jealous, but you still have to coax her. Just be patient, and when the day comes , you can choose from many good ones. " In order to marry the princess, the prince was 18 years old and had no maids to serve him. This would be acceptable in any dynasty. But the princess asked for it, and the emperor also supported her. This is a ridiculous thing that happened in today's era. The prince walked very fast when he left Changchun Palace with Gao Sheng. He didn't breathe a sigh of relief until he bathed and changed into his daily clothes in the East Palace. Gao Sheng, who was standing by the door, also breathed a sigh of relief. The prince's patience was not very good recently. He was working with great vigor and ears perked up.

Soon, a guard handed over the information, and the prince opened it and read it. " Is that all? " A group of dark guards in tight clothes immediately appeared in the deserted study room. Gao Sheng seemed to have seen nothing and still stood guard at the door of the study room.

" Your Highness, following the financial allocation that Your Highness pointed out, we can only find these. "

" Xiao. " With so much manpower, they could only find the name of an organization. What on earth did the emperor grandfather set up such an organization for? Nineteen years ago, the biggest event was the extermination of the entire family of the emperor grandfather's nephew , the crown prince Min Huai, who was appointed by the emperor.

Thinking of something, Xu Shixing's eyelashes trembled slightly. Prince Min Huai was brutally killed on his way back from the Northern Expedition. Some people said it was the Northern Di, some said it was revenge from the Western Rong ... This abnormal expenditure started the following year. The amount was already considerable, and later it was increased. The amount was so large that it was shocking. Unexpectedly, the same abnormal expenditure was allocated last year under the guise of the salt administration, and no one could tell what the money was used for.

" Has the person who handled it been brought here? " Xu Shixing raised his eyes.

" Your Highness, I brought it back. "

" Tried? "

" After taking turns, they just said they were following orders and didn't know anything else.

"

Gao Sheng, who was standing by the door, cried out in his heart. After being raped once in the unknown dungeon of the East Palace, no one could still hold their teeth. It was obvious that they really knew nothing. Of course, after being raped once, they would definitely have no teeth left. Three years ago, when he followed the prince to interrogate someone for the first time, even the experienced Gao Sheng felt sick to his stomach at the end. On the contrary, the prince, who was regarded as a clear and calm person by the world, remained indifferent. He just watched calmly as the people in front of him were interrogated one after another, until they no longer looked like a human being and could not even make a sound.

The prince waved his hand, thought for a while, and then suddenly asked Gao Sheng: " Have you checked with the princess? "

Sheng came over and replied: " I checked. I only heard that the princess woke up from her nap that day and seemed to be in a nightmare. She hugged Nanny Chen and cried for a long time. After that, there was nothing unusual. She did not leave the palace. She went to His Majesty's place to eat these days. And three days ago, the princess had a nightmare again. Now, just like when she was a child, she has to light dozens of candles in the room. "

The prince heard this and asked, " Are you crying again? "

Gao Sheng was stunned for a moment before he quickly replied: " I guess I was dreaming. " He then laughed, " The princess is timid and precious, so it's possible that she was frightened. "

The prince sneered at first, " She is still timid. " When she got angry, she even dared to hit the son of the Prime Minister. After a pause, he shook his head and said, " She is indeed timid. " She is afraid of pain, darkness, insects, mice, thunder, and especially taking medicine. There is nothing she is not afraid of.

Gao Sheng echoed his master and said, " There are no other abnormalities. "

The prince glanced at Gao Sheng and said calmly, " No more? " No more, she suddenly stopped coming to the East Palace ... Is this all Gao Sheng can do? Does it mean that even the Princess Cha still needs the secret guards ... Then can he only use these servants to serve tea and water?

The prince's calm tone made Gao Sheng's spine tingle. He racked his brains and suddenly thought of something else but didn't know whether he should say it. He hesitated twice, and when he saw the prince looking at him gently, his scalp tingled, and he immediately said:

" Your Highness, it's not the princess, but Miss Mingpei. She has been doing the work of a maid in Zhaoyang Palace recently. Jixiang ran into her twice. She was sent to run errands and get things. " After saying that, he lowered his head and waited. Gao Sheng really couldn't figure out the Crown Prince's attitude towards Miss Mingpei.

" Let's go and take a look. " The prince said and walked out.

Gao Sheng wondered, who was he going to see? Miss Mingpei or the princess?

It was evening now, and the cool breeze was very comfortable.

There was laughter in Zhaoyang Palace. Caixing was playing on the swing with a group of maids for the princess to watch. Xie Jiayi sat in the pavilion, holding her chin and watching, her eyes fixed on the swing, but her mind was elsewhere.

Nanny Chen looked worried. The princess has been like this for the past few days. She didn't know where all these thoughts came from. Maybe her daughter has grown up and her thoughts

are hard to guess. If only the eldest princess was here ... A child without a mother, who can she talk to when she has something on her mind?

This was the scene the prince saw when he came in.

A group of people knelt down and saluted. Gao Sheng noticed that Mingpei was no longer serving the princess. Everyone else was playing at this time, and she didn't know what she was being told to do.

Among the people kneeling in the yard, only Xie Jiayi was sitting and the prince was standing. The two men looked at each other.

Xie Jiayi hadn't seen Xu Shixing for a long time. Thinking of the two-year-old child who was frail but always opened his mouth to take medicine no matter how bitter it was, Xie Jiayi's heart, which she thought she had adjusted to be calm, suddenly twitched, and her mouth was filled with the bitter taste of medicine.

After Ji'er passed away, she never wanted to see him again. Later, for Ruyi's sake, she met this man again, but still did not get the result she wanted.

So when Xie Jiayi saw Xu Shixing, who was still the crown prince, she was stunned. The eighteen-year-old crown prince was like this. She also found it funny. It turned out that someone who loved someone so much would also forget the person they loved the most. They were left with nothing but staring at each other in silence, feeling indescribable boredom and exhaustion. She stood up slowly, bowed as a gesture of respect, and then sat down again. No one said anything, the princess always behaved like this. In fact, the princess did not rush to greet the prince as usual. Except for the prince and Gao Sheng, the people in Zhaoyang Palace did not seem to be puzzled.

After these days, they all felt that something had changed.

The palace maids around stopped playing around and started serving tea and refreshments, while those who were supposed to be serving just kept serving.

The two people at the round table remained silent.

It turned out that once she stopped talking, there was nothing left for her and him to talk about. Xie Jiayi twisted the dim sum and slowly thought about how blind she was to not be able to see anything.

The silence made the waiters around them hang their heads, very nervous. But Xie Jiayi was indifferent. She spoke when she wanted to speak. When she didn't want to speak, she would remain silent for three days without feeling anything. Embarrassed? Anyway, Princess Kunyi never felt embarrassed.

The prince looked up at Xie Jiayi's expression. She seemed to have lost some weight since he hadn't seen her for a few days, but she looked fine. He saw her delicate white fingers twisting a piece of dessert, twisting it loose, and then picking another one out of boredom. When he came to his senses, he realized that he had been staring at her for a long time. The prince's eyelashes trembled, and then he said:

" We should appreciate the difficulties of life and learn to love the people. "

Xie Jiayi was stunned when she heard this, then slowly took the third piece and slowly scattered it on her plate. As if on purpose, she picked up the tea lid next to her and crushed it into powder. The pale yellow snack turned into crumbs in an instant, and Xie Jiayi looked up at the prince opposite her.

The words were nice, but she just didn't like to hear them.

She is extravagant and domineering, but she is always frugal and simple, like she is in mourning. She is his imperial concubine. This sounds just like the tone of Imperial Concubine Zhang. No wonder these two people are in cahoots with each other. It turns out that they share the same ideals in this regard.

, wanted to shrink himself into nothingness. How did their East Palace offend this little ancestor? Gao Sheng didn't even dare to look at his master's face ...

The prince remained calm, his emotion undetectable, but he reached out his hand and pressed Xie Jiayi's wrist through his sleeve, preventing her from moving her hand when she wanted to take another piece of dessert.

The cold and deep eyes stared at her, " Do you remember? "

Xie Jiayi did not struggle, but just raised her dark eyes and looked at the other person, " But this is me. " She said as if she was afraid that the other person would not understand, " I don't know the hardship of material resources, I don't know how to love the people, this is me. "

Her eyes were black and bright, as clear as a pool of water, but with something else that he couldn't understand.

It was clear and beautiful, but the new things inside made him feel strange and awkward.

Xu Shixing pressed harder unconsciously. He just looked into her eyes, looked deeply into her, and increased the strength of his grip.

Until I heard the delicate voice of the girl on the other side:

" Brother Prince, I'm in pain. "

## Chapter 7

" Brother Prince, I'm in pain. "

Hearing this, Xu Shixing came back to his senses and hurriedly let go. He wanted to lower his head to check her wrist under her clothes, but then he realized something was wrong. He turned his outstretched hand to pick up the teacup on the side and whispered, " Third brother was reckless. "

Xie Jiayi just rubbed her wrist lightly and didn't say anything. The prince took two sips of tea and asked, " What are you busy with recently? "

" Play. "

The garden became increasingly quiet, and one could even hear the sound of the breeze blowing through the leaves. Gao Sheng lowered his head to his chest. If he could, he would hide his hatred in his chest. Shouldn't he say " tired ", " busy ", " feeling unwell "... " play " ? Why did he suddenly stop playing with Dong Gong?

" Play? " Xu Shixing asked her, holding the teacup.

" Besides playing, I can't do anything else. "

Prince: .....

This time, even Ruyi outside the pavilion couldn't help but glance at her master.

The prince used the tea lid to scrape the tea, lowered his head slightly, and wondered what had upset this little ancestor again. Xie Jiayi had a bad temper and didn't give face to anyone when

she was unhappy, but she rarely did that to him. The prince couldn't remember when she last lost her temper, it was probably about two years ago.

The prince was thinking about it, and his eyes moved to see Gao Sheng next to him. He suddenly remembered the matter of Ming Pei he mentioned, so he asked: " Why is Ming Pei not serving you? "

As soon as he said this, he immediately felt Xie Jiayi's gaze on his face.

The bad-tempered princess opened her red lips and said, " Ming Pei? " She raised the corners of her pretty lips, " Prince brother is so busy, why are you still paying attention to the girl next to me? " At this point, she showed her first smile since they met today, " Speaking of this, I almost forgot that Ming Pei was given to me by Concubine De, and she said that Prince brother helped me find it? "

Xie Jiayi saw the prince's Adam's apple move, and he hummed vaguely, " Just use it as you like. "

" It's not very convenient. I think she is stupid. " Xie Jiayi said slowly, looking at the prince while saying this.

At this time, everyone in the garden dared not even breathe. Gao Sheng was sweating coldly. This little princess was too much of a troublemaker. Miss Mingpei was so stupid. How could anyone be smart? ..... Could it be that the problem was with Miss Mingpei? Could it be that the little princess saw that the Crown Prince valued Miss Mingpei ...

The prince looked at Xie Jiayi's beautiful black eyes and laughed when he heard this. He suddenly remembered why he was angry about this.

Two years ago, it was also for Mingpei, but it was because Mingpei slipped in winter. He saw Zhaozhao was only clapping and watching the eunuchs performing ice skating on the ice, while Mingpei was sweating in pain and followed Zhaozhao to serve him. He said: " Let's go find a female doctor first . " Just this one sentence stirred up a hornet's nest and made this little ancestor unhappy.

He looked at Xie Jiayi with amusement, " Don't say such angry words. "

Xie Jiayi's lips curled up even higher, " I said she was stupid, was it just an angry remark? In your eyes, she is good, she is so good, I'll give it back to you, do you want it, Prince brother? "

The smile on Xu Shixing's face faded, and he put down the teacup in his hand: " I told you not to say angry words. "

" Brother Crown Prince, I'm telling the truth, but you're taking it as an angry remark. " Xie Jiayi tilted her head and looked at him, as if the Crown Prince was being unreasonable. " Do you want it or not? If you want it, I'll give it back to you. It's not a big deal. "

The prince's smile faded even more, his eyes only looked at the spoiled girl opposite him, who had a bad temper and would scratch people whenever she was unhappy.

Ming Pei, who had come to the garden and stood aside, blushed, ashamed and annoyed, but she didn't even have the chance to speak. She just lowered her head and bit her lips tightly.

Xie Jiayi just wouldn't let her go: " Ming Pei, I wanted to give you to the prince, but he doesn't want you. How about you beg him? "

Mingpei knelt down and kowtowed without saying a word, tears falling down and wetting the floor. Gaosheng shook his head secretly in his heart. He didn't expect that the first person that

Princess Kunyi, who never treated servants badly, would make things difficult for the capable and clever Mingpei. Yes, she was beautiful, liked by the master of Changchun Palace, and even the servants of the East Palace liked Miss Mingpei. No wonder she was an eyesore to the princess.

Gao Sheng glanced at Ming Pei who was kneeling outside the pavilion and saw that her shoulders were trembling.

The prince looked at Xie Jiayi and said, " Don't be unreasonable. "

Xie Jiayi seemed very surprised. She withdrew her gaze from Mingpei and looked at the prince with a smile: " Why? She's just a servant. I'm a princess, can't I talk to her or give her away?

Brother Prince, please tell me, where am I being unreasonable? " Her smile became sweeter, but her words were not at all rude.

" Everyone, step back. " Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi's smile and said coldly.

The people from the East Palace quickly left the garden.

Xie Jiayi raised her hand, and the palace maids of Haitang Palace followed Nanny Chen and retreated. When they reached the outside of the garden, Nanny Chen raised her hand and slapped Mingpei in the face. Mingpei covered her face in surprise and looked up at Nanny Chen. The tears she had been holding back fell one after another. " What did this servant do wrong? Please tell me, Nanny. "

Although Ming Pei was a servant of the princess, she looked humble and considerate. But Nanny Chen had long felt that there was something else about her. She asked why the princess suddenly stopped wanting to be the crown prince's consort. It turned out that this thing had caught the crown prince's eye. The princess's favorite mutton-fat jade bracelet was smashed immediately just because the second prince, whom she hated, touched it.

The palace servants who had left the garden were stunned by the slap that Nanny Chen slapped on Mingpei's face, and they became even quieter. Nanny Chen looked at Mingpei, who was aggrieved and tearful, and she sneered, " Explicitly? You are a servant, and it is a great fault for a servant to make the master unhappy. You dare to ask me to explicitly explain it? "

Ming Pei shuddered when she heard this. "Slave!" Although she had been a slave for the past four years, she was superior to the princess psychologically. Especially the prince's cold reaction made her despise the princess's behavior of chasing after him. More importantly, the prince kept her secret and arranged her in Haitang Palace. So, looking at the princess, she was hiding a kind of pride as a woman under her humility.

But only then did she understand what the word "slave" meant. It meant that the spoiled princess just disliked her, and the servants could beat her or humiliate her at will.

Slave ... These two words deeply hurt the heart of the seventeen-year-old Ming Pei.

In the garden, the moment people left, the prince's coldness disappeared. He looked at Xie Jiayi with some indulgence and amusement. It was rare to see her like this. Her little face, which always loved to smile, seemed to be covered with frost. She was so angry that she was about to explode, but she still imitated others and put on a smiling face.

The prince lowered his head and couldn't help laughing. Seeing her serious look but still insisting on making trouble, he couldn't help leaning over and pinching her soft cheek, " Zhao Zhao, what are you worried about? "

Unexpectedly, Xie Jiayi slapped the back of his outstretched hand with a bang, covered her cheek, stood up and took a step back.

The prince was stunned, not knowing whether it was because of the " snap " sound or because of her sudden evasive attitude. He lowered his eyes and looked at the back of his outstretched hand. Zhao Zhao had obviously used some strength, but her strength was limited, and the redness on the back of her hand quickly dissipated.

He pursed his lips, said nothing, and looked up at Xie Jiayi who had already retreated.

Xie Jiayi didn't expect the slap to be so loud ... She just reacted without thinking. She didn't want to be close to him, and didn't want to be touched by him again. Ever since the night he was with Zhang Jinyu, whenever he got close to her, she felt sick and wanted to vomit.

But at this moment, she actually didn't want to really offend His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, who was the future emperor. If Zhang Jinyu got angry again and really became the Crown Princess, and then the Queen, and stepped on her head, would she have to kneel down to Zhang Jinyu? She couldn't stand the thought of this.

Even if you kill yourself, it's not allowed.

Xie Jiayi saw that although the prince's expression did not change, he was definitely angry. She had no choice but to remind him, " Brother Prince, just talk, don't touch me. We are already adults. "

There was a hint of weakness in his voice.

Hearing this, the prince smiled and looked at her. Now he knew who it was last time . Thinking of this, the normally cold and aloof prince blushed slightly.

The prince stood up and tried to pull her back, but she took two steps back, with a wary look on her face, and was already at the edge of the stairs.

" Come here. " The prince had no choice but to return to the table. Seeing that she was farther away from the steps , he felt relieved and said, " Why bother getting angry with a servant girl? "

" Is she just a servant? " Xie Jiayi asked him.

The prince's heart skipped a beat, thinking that Ming Pei's identity was secret and she would never know it. He said calmly, " If it's not a slave, then what do you think it is? "

It turned out that he didn't say that he had no chance to mention it. Even if he asked to this extent, he still wouldn't say it. Bastard! Xie Jiayi's mind almost immediately emerged with the words she heard on the streets of Beijing last time. At that time, Ruyi covered her ears to prevent her from hearing. If she hadn't heard the woman's curse, how could she find such a suitable description.

She smiled and said, " Can she be the Crown Prince's concubine? She is of low status, so she can't even think about becoming a concubine or a lady. She can start as a concubine in the Eastern Palace, and then be promoted to Fengyi, and finally become a Chenghui of the sixth rank, right? "

The prince thought she was just saying that in anger, and guessed in his heart that it was probably the set of frostbite cream that Gaosheng gave to Mingpei in the winter that was known to this jealous little girl ... He didn't know that she was very domineering. Not to mention people,

even things that belonged to her were not allowed to be touched by others. If someone she didn't like touched them, she would not want them even if she liked them.

After figuring out the reason, the prince softened his tone: " I remember everything you said. "

" What did you say? " Xie Jiayi thought to herself, I have said so many things that I can't even remember them myself, what words are worth remembering by the most virtuous prince of our Great Yin Dynasty. Could it be that she also said something that makes sense?

The prince looked up at her and choked. He turned around, stood with his hands behind his back, and looked at the crabapple flowers outside the pavilion.

It was as if he suddenly began to appreciate the flowers very seriously, and after a while he whispered, " You must be together for the rest of your life, and I will remember that. " The prince's voice was like ice and snow, but at this moment it was low and pleasant, and it reached the ears of Xie Jiayi behind him with the faint twilight and the falling crabapple blossoms in the wind.

" Brother Prince, I want to be with you forever. "

" If you dare to have another one, I will never want you again! "

Although she had already been completely disappointed with the man in front of her, at this moment, Xie Jiayi's eyes were still filled with tears. Not for the man in front of her, but for herself who had never let go of his hand since she was six years old.

Most beautiful things are not solid, colorful clouds are easily dispersed and glass is fragile.

She looked at the tall and handsome young man in front of her. She thought he was like a piece of jade, but maybe he was just a piece of ice. But she regarded him as the only warmth in the imperial city.

Xie Jiayi stood there for what seemed like a long time, yet also seemed like just a moment.

Between the blooming and falling of the brilliant crabapple blossoms, she had already witnessed the birth, growth, decline, and death of a relationship.

Hearing that there was no movement from the person behind him, Xu Shixing suppressed the heat in his heart, turned around, and saw that the girl next to him was already in tears, as if they had first met when they were six years old. Her silent crying made his heart ache.

He only took a half step forward, but now he didn't dare to get close. He whispered: " Okay, you are still so crybaby even though you are so old. "

As night fell, lights were lit in the garden, and there were two people in the pavilion.

The eighteen-year-old prince thought it was just a little temper and it would go away after crying.

Many years later, when he thought of that day again, he truly understood the girl's tearful face.

It's not about being touched, it's about letting go completely.

Let it go completely.

## Chapter 8

At the time of lighting, the usually bustling Begonia Palace fell silent today. There were a few servants who loved to play and make noises, but they did not dare to say a word. They just quietly did their job and did not dare to say a word.



There was nothing else. Originally, it was just something that people in Haitang Palace had noticed. Today, it was confirmed. Their princess was afraid that things really were not going well with the Crown Prince. The things that were originally confirmed had suddenly changed. Some of the smart people were already thinking about what attitude they should take towards the East Palace and Changchun Palace in the future.

Besides, Ming Pei was slapped in the face today, and it was Nanny Chen who slapped her. Nanny Chen hadn't hit anyone in a long time, let alone slapped someone in the face. That was Ming Pei, who had already surpassed Cai Xing and was about to surpass Cai Yue to become the most important maid in Haitang Palace, but she fell in the blink of an eye.

Bubu has been following Ruyi, and he dared not make a fuss. Ruyi glanced at him, "I thought you were going to ask about Mingpei." Usually Bubu would follow Mingpei and call her sister all the time. Today Mingpei was beaten, and he thought Bubu was going to say something. Who knew Bubu looked up in surprise, looked at Ruyi and said, "Why would I ask about Mingpei? I am the princess's servant, and I like whoever makes the princess happy." Then he said to Ruyi with a smile, "Brother, I don't like Mingpei, I like Mingpei who can make the princess happy." Ruyi was impressed by this guy. He was always noisy, but he was actually a clear-headed person. Ruyi nodded, "You are very good. We are the princess's people. No matter how capable some people are, it is useless if they don't understand this." This was Bubu's daily admonition today.

Only Nanny Chen and Xie Jiayi were left in the inner chamber. Nanny Chen watched the princess drink the angelica and red dates soup, then she took the bowl and watched Caixing help the princess rinse her mouth before coming back in.

She had a lot to say to her young master, and she was also very angry. After checking today, she found that in the past two years, the Eastern Palace not only sent things to the princess, but also sent a lot of things to Mingpei, that bitch. All kinds of frostbite cream, rouge cream, clothing materials, and even small change were thought of and sent to this bitch. They were afraid that she would be wronged in Haitang Palace. Is this a servant? I'm afraid that Eunuch Gao has already seen that this person will be the master of their Eastern Palace in the future, otherwise he would be so considerate!

Nanny Chen was so angry that she couldn't eat dinner. She was in charge of the Begonia Palace, but such a thing happened right under her nose, causing her young master to suffer such a great injustice, and she didn't even know anything about it.

These things put the stamp of the Eastern Palace on Mingpei. She wanted to pretend that she knew nothing and first find a fault and beat the person to death, so as to avenge the young master. Who knew that before she could do anything, Eunuch Gao came and almost said that this was someone the Eastern Palace valued. Not long after Eunuch Gao left, Aunt Liu from Changchun Palace actually came, saying that she was delivering something, but in the end, she was talking about Mingpei.

Ming Pei, what a talent! Nanny Chen really made a mistake this time, actually allowing such a person to serve the princess personally for four years.

Now that she had passed the clear path, she couldn't move.

Fortunately, the young master understood and did not want to be the crown princess. Otherwise, even if she risked offending the East Palace, she would have to feed the sterilization medicine to the person first, so as to prevent such a vixen from becoming a headache for the master in the future. It was unnecessary now, and it would only make the East Palace's female master upset in the future.

Now that she is no longer the Crown Princess, the princess is already sixteen years old, and she has to quickly pick a good one. Thinking of His Majesty's health, Nanny Chen frowned, and said, "We have to hurry up. If something happens to His Majesty, there will be no one to make decisions for the princess."

Nanny Chen said softly, "Your Majesty has chosen, and we have chosen too. This time we will find a good one who is devoted to you."

Xie Jiayi was thinking about the natural disasters and man-made disasters in the twelfth year of Yongtai. The continuous heavy rains in the south caused countless rivers to burst their banks, countless victims, and thousands of starving people. The famine and plague caused by the floods spread to most of Dayin, and countless people raised flags and claimed to be kings and rebelled. This natural disaster and man-made disaster drained the last bit of your majesty's energy, and in the spring of the thirteenth year of Yongtai, your majesty passed away. She clenched her fists. She had told His Majesty that she had dreamed of these scenes, but His Majesty did not seem to take it seriously, saying that those river projects were built with great care by Dayin and cost a lot of money. Later, Emperor Yongtai was pestered by her and sent people to check the river conditions.

At this moment, feeling Nanny Chen's hand gently pressing on her swollen head, Xie Jiayi slowly walked out of the things that happened one after another, leaned against Nanny, and looked at the palace lanterns outside the window swaying gently in the wind.

When Xie Jiayi heard the nanny say to find a better one, she was at a loss.

There may be good ones, but are there really good ones who are devoted to you? Princes and nobles all have three wives and four concubines. Even those talented people who come from the lower classes, when they pass the imperial examination, the first thing they do is to take concubines and buy maids. Even peddlers and hawkers, if they have a little money, either linger in brothels or think about buying women.

"Yes, Ma'am, we should find a good one." But where can we find one?

The night wind blew, and the palace lanterns fluttered helplessly in the wind.

Fu'anfang in the capital city is inhabited by wealthy families. Therefore, when night falls, the place becomes quiet and there is rarely any shouting or yelling. The walls are high and thick, so people outside cannot hear what is going on inside.

The Lu family, one of the four largest merchants in Jiangnan, has a house in Fu'anfang in the capital. The Lu family is rich, but not expensive. Since the last generation, there have been people who passed the imperial examination and became officials. The wealthy Lu family has a foundation in the capital. There are courtyards, pavilions, and towers everywhere, which are magnificent. Two families stayed in the old house in the south and continued to do business, while Mrs. Lu moved to the capital with the other three families.

For no other reason, it was just to win real wealth. He only hoped that the younger generation below would study and take the imperial examinations, and become a promising figure in the

officialdom, and spend money like water. The Lu family was not short of money, but only of fame. However, it was really difficult to get fame in the imperial examinations, and it was not something that could be obtained by just throwing money at it. But even if it didn't work, he would still throw money at it, because the Lu family was rich.

The Lu family was not short of money, but there was a side yard that was very simple and remote, separated from the street by only a wall and a corner door. This yard was not originally for the master above to live in, but now a master of the younger generation of the Lu family lived here.

Although he was called the master, he lived in a place that was looked down upon by the servants of the Lu family. There were only two servants in the courtyard, a boy who served as a servant and a mute.

At this time, the servant and book boy named Mingxin was arguing with someone in the kitchen. His master had been ill for the past few days, and he thought he should ask for a bowl of egg custard for his master. However, the kitchen staff said that eggs were hard to buy recently and asked him to wait for a while.

Mingxin was so angry that he was shaking. As the young master of the Lu family, he couldn't even have a bowl of egg custard. He was not afraid of being laughed at if others told about it. The maid in the kitchen whispered in a low voice but it was obvious that she was speaking to others: " You are not a proper master, yet you come here to ask for something. We in the kitchen all have our quota. " At this point, her voice became louder, " Every master above us will be rewarded for a bowl of porridge. The last time I went to our young master's room, the maid gave me a piece of silver, probably half a tael. I asked her how to do it, and she waved her hand and asked me to take it out. "

When he said this, he looked at Mingxin, who blushed, " It's just a bowl of egg custard, you said so much! "

The old woman was picking vegetables. " If you don't even have a tip, don't follow the masters of other rooms and order dishes. If you are really capable, you can ask the old lady to open a small kitchen for you like the eldest young master. Then you can have whatever you want to eat and you don't have to listen to so many words. " After saying that, she waved her hand and turned her waist to go in. The water on the vegetables splashed all over Mingxin's face.

Mingxin clenched his fists in anger. If the young master had not been ill for a few days, he would not have come to ask for egg custard. He had seen a lot of the snobbery of the servants in the Lu family over the years. He served the young master while he was studying in the side yard. He never thought that today it was just a bowl of egg custard. He suffered so much anger, and the key point was that he had not yet received it.

Mingxin returned to the side yard with a drooping face. He saw that the young master had already taken the medicine and was leaning on the couch by the window reading a book by candlelight. When he saw him come in, he looked up at him, turned a page of the book and said with a smile: " You've been mad again. " Then he pointed to a pack of snacks on the table, " Eat it, sweeten your mouth, don't be unhappy. "

Seeing the dim sum, Mingxin knew that it must be the mute woman who had taken the lady's dowry jewelry to sell again. However, Mingxin, who was only thirteen or fourteen years old, had

a bitter face and was worried. Over the years, he didn't know how many pieces of the lady's jewelry he had sold. If this continued, if there was no jewelry to sell one day, wouldn't the three of them not even have food to eat?

The monthly allowance of other young masters in the Lu family was twenty taels, but when it came to their young master, the madam only gave five taels. If the young master was born to the wife that the old master had married outside, the madam would not like him, but after all, he was the grandson of the old lady. However, the second year after the old master brought the young master back, the old master was killed by bandits, and the madam insisted that the young master was the one who killed him, and since then the old lady also hated the young master.

Even this five taels of monthly allowance may not be in his hands. Mingxin sighed heavily. Lu Chenan, who was reading by the window, glanced at him again. He was young, but he was worried about a lot. Lu Chenan raised his hand to call him over, stuffed a piece of dessert directly into Mingxin's mouth, looked at his bulging cheeks, chuckled, stuffed the whole dessert bag into his arms, and waved his hand to let him go.

Although Mingxin was worried, he had to admit that he didn't know where the dim sum that the mute woman bought from was particularly delicious. He felt that the dim sum bought in their courtyard was tastier than the ones made by the Lu family. He thought so, and after all, he was young, so he became happy after a while and started to stroll around the courtyard again.

Although the courtyard is remote, one can still hear the sounds of stringed instruments and orchestras coming from the main courtyard of the Lu Mansion, as well as the sound of gongs and drums. Today is March 15th. Although it is not a formal day, the Lu family is still gathered together to accompany the old lady to watch the moon and listen to music.

Lu Chenan listened for a while, pushed the already open window higher, and looked up at the full moon in the sky. He came to the Lu Mansion when he was nine years old, and it has been ten years since then. In the past ten years, he couldn't remember how many times he had seen the full moon. In fact, he also looked at the moon alone before.

Even when he was still living in the mansion outside, he was alone. People in the mansion never ate at the same table with him. Even on the 15th of August, when the big table was filled with tea, fruits and snacks, he was the only one sitting there.

After arriving at the Lu Mansion, except for the first year when he sat next to the master, he was alone afterwards. But even then, no one spoke to him, and everyone looked at him warily.

The son of a concubine will have misfortunes for his relatives and will be a lonely star.

Lu Chenan sat with his head propped up by the window, the moonlight filled the courtyard, the grass and the porch were all clearly visible. There was a faint sound of music in the distance, he clenched his fist to cover his lips, coughed twice, and called the mute slave.

An old woman quickly appeared and waited quietly by the side with her head down.

" Close the window. "

At this time, Lu Chenan didn't know that he would always be alone in his world, as a living princess was about to break in.

## Chapter 9

" I want to make money, a lot of money. "

The five people in Haitang Palace who heard the princess's declaration had different expressions, but they all expressed one meaning: they didn't understand.

Bu Bu and Cai Xing frowned at the same time, as if they wanted to understand the princess's instructions, but they couldn't understand. Make money? How to make money? Not to mention, the princess makes money, what to do with the money? The princess is not short of money, what does the princess want, just order it, what to do to make money ... Bu Bu scratched his chin, is this the princess's new game, how to satisfy the princess? Is it to let them pretend to be vendors ...

Even Caiyue and Ruyi, who were the best at guessing the princess's thoughts, were stunned at this moment. Making money ... is that what they meant?

Nanny Chen was even more confused. She had served Empress Xiaoyi and Princess Pingyang before. Even Princess Pingyang didn't have as many thoughts as her current young master. Now she jumped out to make money. Apart from other things, the princess's dowry was piled up. Even if she spent a lot of money every day, it would be enough for the young master to spend several lifetimes ... Not to mention the dowry, even the things that His Majesty gave to the princess, the small private storehouse was full. What did she want ?

But soon they all figured out that the princess was not playing around, she really wanted to make money. The princess looked at several people one by one, she didn't know how to do business to make money ... But they could use Ruyi and Caiyue who were in charge of her private treasury.

But it was not enough, she needed people. When she thought about it, she thought of Qian Yingying, whose family was a wealthy family in Jiangnan. The Qian and Lu families, two of the four richest families in Jiangnan, both had people in Beijing.

She doesn't know how to do business, so she can ask Qian Yingying to teach her and help her, or let Qian Yingying make money for her directly.

Thinking of Qian Yingying, who was like a little rabbit and always had red eyes, the little princess sighed. Everyone in the capital was wondering how the arrogant and overbearing Princess Kunyi could get together with a merchant's daughter, and the princess herself didn't know. By the time she realized it, she had already gotten used to standing up for Qian Yingying. The first time was when Xie Jiayi was seven years old and fell from a tree. The other noble ladies who were playing with her were so scared that they ran away crying. After all, Xie Jiayi had just come from the north. She was plump and had a lot of flesh. If she was hit by a little princess who fell from such a high tree, she would be ...

What will happen? Xie Jiayi knew that she would break some bones and would have to lie down for at least half a year. She knew this because she had hit Qian Yingying.

Qian Yingying, who was the most timid, cried with tears in her eyes and stretched out her hands to catch her. In the end, she actually caught her, but her hands were broken and she caught her with her body. It was a false alarm for Xie Jiayi, but Qian Yingying took half a year to recover and was able to get up and use her hands normally.

Although Xie Jiayi had a bad temper and was unreasonable, she was not ungrateful. What could she do? From then on, she could only protect this little rabbit who was four years older than her.

Thinking of Qian Yingying, Xie Jiayi's face turned a little ugly.

In her previous life, Qian Yingying died in October this year. Her eight-month-old baby was born prematurely, and both mother and child died. At that time, in the wing room of Dajue Temple, Qian Yingying, who was eight months pregnant, met Su Yan, who was also pregnant with a big belly – Song Ziming's mistress. No one knows what the two of them said, but they both had premature births. The one who shouldn't have died died, but the one who should have died survived, and both mother and child survived.

Somehow, Su Yan won the favor of the Empress Dowager, and she entered the palace with her son, becoming Song Ziming's first wife. Song Ziming doted on Su Yan, and later it became a legend in Beijing. The Empress Dowager liked her, but Xie Jiayi didn't. She would confront Su Yan every time she saw her, from the banquet hall to the alleys of the palace, and everywhere she made Su Yan kneel. It can be said that Su Yan was also a person who knelt all over the palace.

Song Ziming, a romantic man, felt sorry for his new wife. He was a capable official. With the support of the Queen Mother, he worked hard to climb up the ladder and eventually became a powerful official in Dayin. He was the initiator of the abolition of the Queen. He fought to the end with Xie Jiayi, the domineering and evil Queen, for the sake of his beloved.

Xie Jiayi was not angry when he wanted to depose the empress, but when he wanted to depose the crown prince, Xie Jiayi completely hated this man. She was domineering, extravagant, and jealous. She thought, how could her son not be worthy of being the crown prince? What's wrong with his son being weak? Did he want him to be weak? Her son was more obedient than anyone else.

Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi's nails dug into her palm again. This time, she was determined to block Song Ziming's path to success. A poor scholar, if it weren't for Qian Yingying's mother's appreciation of his talent, not letting him marry into the family because of his filial piety and fame, and supporting him all the way, what kind of person is he! I don't know where he is selling calligraphy and paintings in a dilapidated temple to save money for the imperial examination in Beijing.

Qian Yingying's mother's family, who died young, had no other requirements, just hoped that he could treat their daughter wholeheartedly. Qian's father was snobbish and had many concubines. Qian Yingying was cowardly by nature and had no brothers to support her. Qian's mother was afraid that if Qian's father married her daughter to a snobbish family, her daughter would be tortured to death, so she personally selected such a talented person.

As soon as the wedding was held, Qian's mother passed away. Who would have known that Song Ziming had talent and some character, but he was a sentimental man and had received a meal from a rich family in his early years.

He would remember the favor of a meal for his whole life. But he regarded the support from Qian's mother as a humiliation that could not be mentioned. How ridiculous, Xie Jiayi sneered, it was just because of her beauty, if it was an ugly girl, he would have been thinking about her for so many years.

Counting the days, even if the diagnosis cannot be made, Qian Yingying should be pregnant by then.

There are two people in the Qian Mansion that Xie Jiayi is thinking about. Song Ziming, who has just been promoted from a fifth-rank official, has become a favorite in the eyes of Qian's father. In the past two years, not to mention Qian Yingying's dowry, Qian's father has also supported him financially. Song Ziming's career in the officialdom was so smooth. He was promoted to a fifth-rank official at the age of 22. Naturally, it was inseparable from his ability. There was no worry about money after his death, and he could keep up with all kinds of financial matters. There was also a big reason.

Song Ziming, who had not returned home for two days, came in to withdraw five hundred taels of silver and was about to leave. Qian Yingying stopped him, wanting him to take the tonic before going back to work. He reluctantly sat down and drank half a cup of soup, when he suddenly saw a piece of ink next to Qian Yingying's hand. The color was thick and moist, and he could smell a faint fragrance from this distance. It was obvious that it was not an ordinary product.

Upon asking, it turned out to be a gift from Princess Kunyi some time ago. Qian Yingying liked it like anything and was reluctant to use it. She would take it out and touch and look at it whenever she was around.

Song Ziming, who was about to leave, sat down again. When he saw the Begonia ink, he thought of Su Yan. She had not been happy for a long time since her family suffered a disaster. She had always liked calligraphy and painting, and loved these elegant things the most. Seeing such a fragrant Begonia ink would probably arouse her interest and make her happy.

By the time Xie Jiayi came to Qian Yingying, Song Ziming had already left with Haitangmo. Xie Jiayi was furious when she heard this. In her previous life, Su Yan used the Begonia ink she had someone make to copy a book of biographies of women and presented it to Concubine Zhang, who then made her her confidant. At the time, she was wondering how the other party had the Begonia ink she made. You have to know that in order to blend the fragrance of the Begonia, the craftsmen spent countless efforts to make the ink, and to have the fragrance, color, and good ink quality. A piece of it cost more than a thousand gold coins, but even she, who was extravagant, only had a few pieces made for fun.

It turns out that this is the reason why she couldn't figure it out.

Qian Yingying said timidly: " It was given by the princess, I ... I am reluctant to give it up ... but my husband wants it, I ..." I hesitated for a long time, but no one understood.

Xie Jiayi stood up and walked around twice, then stopped in front of Qian Yingying: " Get it back for me! "

As soon as these words came out, the servants couldn't help laughing. How could they take back things that had been given away? It was Princess Kunyi who was used to being spoiled and said whatever she thought.

Qian Yingying's face turned red and she was sweating. She kept saying " I " for a long time, and her shyness made Xie Jiayi anxious. Xie Jiayi looked at her flat belly and suppressed her anger. She might be pregnant, so she couldn't bully her like usual.

Xie Jiayi ordered the people around her, " Take good care of your master and check his pulse every day. If you dare to neglect it, I will skin you alive. " Many servants, seeing that Qian Yingying was not valued by her father or loved by her husband, would inevitably try to deceive her. However, since the princess would punish her every time she came, they did not dare to act presumptuous.

Whoever dares to offend the princess will be skinned alive.

Xie Jiayi left a message: " I will come back to you later. Think about how to make money and make money for me. I need it. " Then she emphasized, " Think about it carefully and make a lot of money! " Qian Yingying wanted to say that she had money if the princess was short of it, but then she thought that the princess had even more money, and she was afraid that when the princess said she was short of money, she was short of a huge amount of money.

At first, others thought the princess was playing a joke, but Qian Yingying sat down and figured out how to help the princess make a lot of money. In order to make Song Ziming despise these businessmen, Qian Yingying even handed over her dowry and shop to her subordinates to manage, and she only dared to check the accounts from time to time without her husband's knowledge. But since the princess said so, even if her husband was unhappy, she had to find a way.

She, she only has the princess as her friend.

Apart from her mother, only the princess treated her well.

As expected, Qian Yingying started to look at all kinds of shops in Beijing and study all kinds of business methods from that day on. She was inferior to others in learning music, chess, calligraphy and painting, but when it came to doing business, although Qian Yingying was silent, she was born with more ideas than others.

On the other side, as soon as she left the Song residence, Xie Jiayi snorted, " Let's go to Fu'anfang! "

Qian Yingying didn't dare to take the person who dared to take her Haitang Mo, so she went to get it back herself!

How dare anything use her ink! I will use her ink to disgust her in the future!

Ruyi Caixing followed and after hearing what the little princess said, she ordered the carriage to take the princess to Fu'anfang. Coincidentally, as soon as she entered the big willow tree in Fu'anfang, Xie Jiayi saw a woman walking slowly with her maid, frowning and swaying. Who else could it be but Su Yan?

This is really a case of enemies meeting in a narrow road, and it takes no effort to get it!

Without waiting for someone to bring the stool for getting off the carriage, Xie Jiayi jumped off the carriage holding the whip and shouted to the woman in front: " Stop. "

The master and servant in front stopped in surprise and came to their senses, then they saw a girl in bright red clothes, who looked to be no more than fifteen or sixteen years old, extremely beautiful, and with an air of nobility. They immediately realized that this was definitely not an ordinary girl.

Su Yan bowed and saluted first. She was graceful and elegant, and every move was beautiful. It was obvious that she was from a noble family. She asked in a gentle voice: " I wonder if the young lady has any advice for me? "



Then I heard the person in front of me say directly: " Kneel down. "

Mingxin touched his chin at the corner. This young lady in red is so scary. How can she be so bad-tempered and bully others in broad daylight? He tilted his head and asked the person next to him in a low voice: " Sir, should we go over? " There is a woman in front who wants to bully people. She looks very difficult to deal with. Should they go over or not ...

As soon as I came over, I heard a delicate voice shouting " Kneel down " .

Lu Chenan stopped walking.

## Chapter 10

" Kneel down. "

Xie Jiayi stood in front of the two men holding a small whip, raised her chin, and spoke directly. The two people on the opposite side, one was weak and pitiful, and the other was a little girl who was already trembling, which made the girl in red look even more domineering. Especially Cai Xing, who stood beside the princess with her hands on her hips, and shouted: " Our master asked you to kneel down, what's wrong, are you deaf! "

In broad daylight, they were a pair of bullies and their servants. Ruyi stood behind them, carefully guarding his little princess. His young and handsome face didn't even bother to look at the two people opposite him, only paying attention to his own master.

The little girl bravely defended her master, " You don't know who my young lady is. My young lady is an official of the imperial court. You ... you don't want to bully me! "

After she said this, Xie Jiayi finally saw the girl Su Yan. She glanced over and saw the small bag in the girl's hand. Even at this distance, she could smell the faint fragrance of crabapple, which was almost imperceptible.

She was too lazy to talk to a maid and just glanced at Caixing. Caixing immediately stepped forward and snatched the bag from the maid's hand. Then, she kicked Su Yan in the knee, and the graceful and elegant lady from a scholarly family fell to her knees on the ground.

Su Yan couldn't believe that there were people in the capital who were so unreasonable. Her face turned red and then pale, and she was shocked, afraid, ashamed and annoyed.

Cai Xing opened the bundle, and Xie Jiayi took a look and saw that it was her priceless Begonia ink.

Cai Xing shook the bag and said: " This is my master's stuff. Are you worthy of using such a dirty thing? " She spat as she spoke.

Seeing this, Mingxin hissed. If his master wasn't sick, he would have stood up for justice. He only muttered in a low voice: " Whose daughter is this? This is too much. "

Lu Chenan was watching with great interest. Hearing this, he whispered back, " There is a story here. Just wait and see. It's not clear who is right or wrong. "

Mingxin wondered if it wasn't obvious: the master and servant in red clothes bullied the two people on the opposite side, snatching things and making them kneel, what else could it be but bullying ...

The little girl replied tremblingly: " This is a gift from my husband to my daughter. You ... you are defaming her innocence. "

" My dear? " Xie Jiayi didn't even look at the little girl beside her. She just looked at Su Yan who was kneeling there and repeated softly.

Cai Xing immediately made a "spit" sound: " Your young lady hasn't even combed her hair yet, yet you keep calling her husband your husband. It's so disgusting! " These words made the kneeling Su Yan tremble like a willow branch destroyed by the wind.

At this time, a man in green clothes ran towards the kneeling woman. He could not see anyone else except his beloved. His eldest daughter had already been wronged, and now there was someone bullying her and poking her sore spot. Song Ziming was heartbroken to the extreme. He pulled the woman on the ground up, pulled the woman, who was as soft as a flower shivering in the cold wind, into his arms, and glared at the other party.

It didn't matter that he glared at her. Song Ziming, who was already extremely angry, immediately turned pale. The person in front of him was none other than his wife's friend, Princess Kunyi of Dayin.

Xie Jiayi looked at the couple with a half-smile, as if she was seeing a very interesting scene. She didn't say anything, just stared at the two people opposite, from top to bottom, and carefully looked at the way they hugged each other, as if she wanted to see clearly where Song Ziming's hand was placed on Su Yan.

Song Ziming's whole body stiffened, and Su Yan in Song Ziming's arms felt ashamed and uneasy.

Xie Jiayi then spoke: " Sir Song, is this your Xiaoxing, or your mistress? Or a girl from Mingyue Tower? You can have fun, but you shouldn't be so disgusting. "

Every sentence was like peeling off the face of Su Yan, who thought she was the daughter of a scholarly family, and throwing it on the ground and stepping on it. Su Yan, who had always been proud of her status, was like a willow in the wind at this moment, and her low cry broke Song Ziming's heart.

" This is my personal matter and has nothing to do with the princess. "

When the word "Princess" came out, Su Yan and her little girl, as well as Ming Xin who was eavesdropping around the corner, were all shocked. Dayin has only one Princess, Princess Kunyi, who was personally conferred by His Majesty. The title of Kunyi shows how much the Emperor favors her. Having lived in the palace for many years, no one expected to see her today.

Xie Jiayi looked at Song Ziming and smiled, then asked in a clear voice, " Sir Song, don't you know that this Haitang ink was made by me? "

Song Ziming blushed, of course he knew.

" How dare you give my things to such a despicable person? You are really brave. "

The word " despicable " made the three men's faces turn pale.

" Let her kneel aside. Standing there will offend my eyes. " Xie Jiayi said in a cold voice. It was a sentence without much emotion, but it was full of majesty and could not be questioned. Even Song Ziming knew that there was no room for maneuver. Everyone in the capital knew that His Majesty was kind and would not necessarily care if someone accidentally offended him. However, if someone offended the princess, His Majesty would definitely care.

That was many years ago. Someone thought that Princess Kunyi was just an orphan from the north. The maid mocked the princess in public, saying that the princess was an orphan that no one wanted and had come to the capital to beg for food and was still pretending to be so. At that time, the princess, like a little wolf, jumped on her and started to fight. During the fight, the princess' cheek was scratched by the maid's nails.

This incident made the dignitaries in the capital understand two things.

The first thing is that the girl from the north was not dumb. She said four words before she rushed forward, " How dare you bully me . " This was the first sentence the princess said after coming to the capital for a year. The second thing is that this princess is the emperor's favorite and the eye of the gentle and cold monarch.

Because the man's father was directly dismissed from his official position, the noble lady was reprimanded by the emperor himself, which was a great shame for the noble lady and affected the entire family. The servant who dared to bully and hurt the princess was skinned by the emperor.

The gentle emperor announced to everyone in such a decisive way that the princess would not tolerate bullying by anyone. So far, all the rumors and attempts to bully the princess because she was a country bumpkin from the north and had no backing or family were stopped at once. Everyone understood the emperor's bloody declaration. The dignity of the princess was unquestionable. Soon, the title of princess was given, and the seven-year-old girl was given the title of Kunyi. This title was even higher than that of a princess. The emperor bestowed upon this orphan girl from the north the title of "the noble one of the thick earth" and "the model of etiquette".

Song Ziming endured the humiliation and let go of the beloved woman in his arms, while Su Yan knelt beside him in tears.

Because the person in front of him is Princess Kunyi, who can have someone skinned and stuffed with straw with just one word.

Xie Jiayi saw Song Ziming's trembling hand. She tilted her head and looked at it carefully for a while. Was this unwillingness or heartache? She followed the hand to see the man's face. Oh, I understand. This is unwillingness and heartache.

Their eyes met, and Song Ziming quickly lowered his head, trying to hide the anger and hatred in his eyes.

Xie Jiayi laughed, her laughter was sweet and charming. Before she finished laughing, her whip had already landed on Song Ziming. " Pa pa ", two "cracks" were made, loud and hard.

The spring clothes were thin, and the princess' whip was a small one. After two whips, blood appeared on Song Ziming's chest.

" Cai Xing, scold him for me! "

At this time, there were already quite a few people watching the fun. Cai Xing immediately put her hands on her hips and called out to more people, " Everyone come and see. This man was extremely poor back then, but he married a daughter of a wealthy family and promised in front of her mother that he would treat her well for the rest of his life. But after her mother passed away only a few years ago, he started to keep mistresses and concubines! He eats and drinks from the daughter, and uses her things to keep mistresses. Look at this beast in human form! "

" This young lady is even more ridiculous. She's a concubine, but the maid keeps calling him 'young master' and acts like she's the wife of the main wife! "

" Everyone, be careful when you marry off your daughters. If you meet a ruthless man like this, you won't have anywhere to cry! Look, he's like a big shot waiting for people to serve him in front of his wife, but when he comes to the concubine's room, he even has to buy snacks for her in person. Marrying a man like this is worse than raising a dog! "

The people around who were watching the fun started laughing and pointing at the two of them. Xie Jiayi whispered to Ruyi and said: " Arrange someone to ask her. This is the situation. Ask her what she wants. If she wants a divorce, I will support her in the future. She has children, and I will raise even her children. If she can't bear to leave this man, I will give this fan –" In addition to the words "bastard" and "dog thing", Xie Jiayi felt that she had learned a new swear word " fan head " . Just when she was about to use it, she heard Ruyi cough.

" Send this mistress away, and as for this man, you can just keep her as a dog for your amusement. "

Song Ziming was like being struck by lightning. Just a moment ago, he had just been promoted and had a bright future. He and Su Yan were getting along well and had entered her heart. The two of them were more and more in love. He bought snacks from the north of the city for Su Yan with his heart full of love, just to make her smile. But in the blink of an eye, he ended up like this. The insults and ridicules from the people around him were so loud that the proud Song Ziming could hardly stand. Princess Kunyi was so sinister.

Song Ziming was like this, and Su Yan was even worse. Even though her family was broken up, she was redeemed by Song Ziming after just two days of panic, and before she could figure out what was going on, she was carefully raised and protected by him, and she had never suffered any hardship. She was still the noble and weak young lady. But how could she be humiliated like this in the blink of an eye, kneeling here to listen to people's pointing and scolding.

Each sentence is more unbearable than the last.

What did she do wrong? She was just a poor person who had no choice! Princess Kunyi, you are going too far.

Xie Jiayi originally thought that Qian Yingying was so soft-hearted that nothing would happen. However, the person who replied came very quickly, kneeling down and bowing his head: " Miss Qian said she wants a divorce. "

The speed was so fast that Xie Jiayi was shocked. She broke up a marriage just like that, so smoothly ...

She waved her whip and immediately called the government officials, and allowed the two to divorce on the spot.

Xie Jiayi was very proud and thought to herself, Qian Yingying, I have saved your life, you have to make money for me to repay my kindness.

He looked around proudly, and his proud smile suddenly froze.

The man in the crowd looking at her solemnly with a smile on his face was none other than Lord Lu. Only then did she realize that the Lu Mansion was in Fu'anfang.

In the previous life, Song Ziming and the prince of Taining Marquis's mansion were the leaders of a large number of ministers who wanted to depose the empress, but there was only one

person who always stood by the empress. Others said that the empress was jealous, extravagant, and domineering ... all kinds of crimes, but this person was calm and said that the empress of the current dynasty was " dignified and gentle, with a spirit of ice and snow, and noble virtues, and she should be the master of the harem and the mother of the world . "

Could it be that even Lord Lu, the only one who stood on her side and believed in the Queen's virtue, saw her arrogance and domineering behavior?

Xie Jiayi felt like she was a little panicked.

## Chapter 11

As Song Ziming and Su Yan hid their faces with their sleeves and staggered away in embarrassment, the crowd watching the excitement either followed them or dispersed after talking about it.

The alley was quiet again, with only Xie Jiayi, who was pinned to the spot by the sudden panic, Ruyi, who was cleaning the whip for her, and Caixing, who was still smug. Not far away was Lord Lu with Mingxin, waiting quietly by the side.

Xie Jiayi was a little hesitant when she took the whip, hoping that Lord Lu would see her remaining dignity and gentleness.

Thinking that among all the voices calling for the dethronement of the empress, only Lu Chenan praised her, not only as " dignified and gentle, with a spirit of ice and snow, and noble moral character " , but also as " virtuous and well-behaved, with a broad mind and a broad mind, she is a role model for women all over the world "... Xie Jiayi, who was once the empress, read these compliments over and over again.

" Lord Lu is known as the smartest person in Dayin " , Xie Jiayi firmly believes that only Lord Lu is right. Every time she is hit, she thinks of Lord Lu's praise, which makes her always confident amidst waves of setbacks.

Thinking of how she looked just now, Xie Jiayi's face looked a little unnatural, and she felt more than a little panicked.

Fortunately, Xie Jiayi was thick-skinned enough, so she decided to speak first: " Sir, what did you see? " As the art of war says, know yourself and know your enemy.

At this time, the wind blew through the alley, and Lu Chenan smelled the fragrance of locust flowers. Then he discovered that the tall locust trees planted on both sides of the alley were full of white locust flowers overnight, trembling with the wind.

Hearing Xie Jiayi's question, Mingxin shrank back, and Lu Chenan whispered: " I only saw a little bit. " Then he raised his eyes to look at the person opposite, stretched out his right hand, and used his thumb and index finger to indicate a small distance.

He saw that the girl on the other side actually believed it and breathed a sigh of relief, which made him suddenly feel a little funny. Mingxin wanted to cry. His master was not in good health, but he was very brave. How could he dare to lie to the princess when answering her? They clearly saw it from beginning to end.

Xie Jiayi was very satisfied with this " little bit " , and estimated that the distance between the other party's white and slender index finger and thumb was enough to see the tail of her final

justice. Even if she did not become the queen, Xie Jiayi still hoped to keep the evaluation of herself by Lord Lu, who had a discerning eye for people.

After being satisfied, Xie Jiayi led the group away with peace of mind. Lu Chenan just looked at her like that, happy because of a single sentence, and his fiery red figure disappeared around the corner. He gently rubbed his thumb, index finger and middle finger, thinking without saying a word.

Until Ming Xin said, " So this is Princess Kunyi. "

Lu Chenan came back to his senses and hummed.

Ming Xin asked, " Master, have you seen it already? "

" The carriage next to it, and the boy following it. " The carriage was extremely expensive from the wood to the curtains, but there was no identification. The boy, who was about sixteen or seventeen, had a feminine air. It was obvious that he was from the royal family, a royal daughter of about fifteen or sixteen, who loved to wear red clothes.

The wind blew off the snow-white locust flowers, and Lu Chenan slowly explained to Mingxin.

The most important part, Lu Chenan didn't say, was that he knew her.

" Then how did you know from the beginning that it wasn't the princess who was bullying? "

" The two people opposite are clearly dressed as girls, and the girl started talking about her husband. " The most important thing is that he wants to see Princess Kunyi's excitement no matter what it is like.

The two of them had already entered from the secluded corner gate of the side courtyard of the Lu Mansion. When they returned to the courtyard, Mingxin asked again: " Young Master often says that a gentleman should not look at or listen to anything inappropriate. What's wrong? "

Today, he would accompany him to watch the fun. In the past, when encountering such things, the young master would turn around and leave.

Lu Chenan paused and replied: " Your son is not a gentleman, but a sickly person. " He knocked Mingxin's head with the scroll in his hand, " Why don't you go and see if the medicine for the mute slave is ready? "

Watching Mingxin running away, Lu Chenan stood with his hands behind his back in front of the small medicine garden that the mute slave had created in the courtyard. Even though there was a wall between them, he could still smell the fragrance of locust flowers in the alley outside the wall.

Princess Kunyi, it's not easy to meet her.

Lu Chenan didn't expect that he would soon meet Princess Kunyi for the second time.

It was still the same alley, but this time the princess was alone. To be more precise, this time the princess was chasing another little thief, who was young and agile. Lu Chenan took a look and knew that the princess could not catch up. He was blocking the road and saw the child rushing over. When their eyes met, he dodged to the side and the child slid past, turned a corner, climbed over the wall and disappeared.

The princess is quite agile, but that's just average.

The wall was still shorter than the high wall of Lu Mansion, and she climbed up, but it was covered with moss, and she slipped and fell down again. Lu Chenan glanced at the height and hesitated for a moment, and the princess slid down with a cry.

He estimated that at this height, he didn't need anyone to help him.

The princess then looked at Lu Chenan who was slightly turned sideways. She was so angry.

" Why didn't you stop him? " She was almost there, just about able to catch him.

Lu Chenan still stood sideways, not looking at the princess's embarrassed look at this time, and only said softly: " He is weak and can't be stopped. " After a pause, he asked: " What did he do wrong? "

" I heard someone shouting, 'Catch the thief!' I saw he was running fast and seemed to be very skilled. No one else could catch up with him, so I chased after him ..." In the end, she didn't catch up with him ... The princess felt it necessary to explain, " Actually, I'm quite skilled, but this wall is – slippery. " She hoped that Lord Lu would know one more of her strengths.

The corners of Lu Chenan's lips twitched, but he said nothing.

Suddenly, he heard someone behind him scream, and Lu Chenan quickly turned around, and saw the princess looking up at him and saying, " Go find a doctor for me! "

Lu Chenan didn't care to avoid suspicion at this time, he took two steps forward and asked the reason. When he heard that the princess had a nosebleed, he was silent for a while and said: " Princess, just press it with your hand, it will be healed soon. " There is no need to find a doctor ... I'm afraid that before he can find one, it will be healed ...

" I press? I'm not a doctor? " Xie Jiayi was very surprised. She was bleeding, but Lord Lu didn't help her find a doctor. Can a princess's blood flow freely? Can a princess's nose be pressed randomly? What do you mean by " press it " ? Where should I press ?

She wanted to emphasize that she didn't have a runny nose, she was bleeding.

It's blood ...

Lu Chenan saw that she was looking up with a blank face, so he asked her to press it. Although her face looked bad, she raised her hand and pinched her nose, and said in a muffled voice: " Can you go get a doctor for me now? "

Lu Chenan could only say " I'm sorry " and took out a white handkerchief from his sleeve. He covered the lower half of the princess' face with his middle finger and gently pressed an acupoint next to her nose through the handkerchief. Xie Jiayi felt that her nosebleed had stopped.

He looked at Lu Chenan who was leaning towards him in surprise: Lord Lu is not only knowledgeable, but he can also treat illnesses.

As expected, Lord Lu is omnipotent.

Just as Lu Chenan was about to retract the handkerchief, he met the dark, clear eyes that appeared above the handkerchief. The moon-white handkerchief gently covered most of the face of the person under him, and the exposed eyebrows and eyes became more and more charming.

Watery, dark black eyes and two curved eyebrows like distant mountains .

His hand loosened, and the handkerchief slid down the princess's smooth and fair cheek, revealing her delicate and pretty little face.

Lu Chenan looked away, took the Supa and put it back into his sleeve, stood up and looked sideways again, and said " I'm sorry " again .

Xie Jiayi was sure that the nosebleed had indeed stopped, and she stood up and looked at Lu Chenan, noticing that Lord Lu's robe had been washed white. Only then did she remember Lord Lu's background, that he was the son of the Lu family's concubine, and that before he passed the imperial examination, the Lu family did not value him, but instead had all kinds of unbearable things said about him.

She then thought that Lord Lu knew about rivers. Later, when the rivers in the south were being rebuilt, it was said that the Ministry of Works had repeatedly consulted Lord Lu, who was still working as a compiler in the Hanlin Academy at the time. Xie Jiayi's eyes lit up, and the river problem that had troubled her these days suddenly became clear. She didn't understand, but someone did.

She, she can learn too.

Lord Lu is poor, she is rich. She is uneducated, Lord Lu is skilled.

Xie Jiayi thought it was great.

She looked at Lu Chen'an's washed white robe with satisfaction. Lu Chen'an, who was looking at the locust tree in front of him, felt the burning gaze of the princess behind him. He asked the princess in a normal voice whether she was well, and a hand hanging by his side slightly pressed down the robe that was blown by the wind.

Before the person behind him could speak, there were hurried footsteps in the distance, and soon many people came into the quiet alley. The one walking in front was the young eunuch who followed the princess that day. He glanced at him calmly, and then led his people to greet the young princess behind him.

Lu Chenan heard the man say: "Master, please don't assign me other tasks in the future. I was away for only half a day, and the master threw them all away. Bu Bu was so anxious that he bought all the candies and cakes and chased after me crying."

Then the little princess said: "What are you afraid of? I am very skilled in martial arts."

This time, Ruyi and Lu Chenan couldn't help but twitch their lips. Lu Chenan heard Ruyi say, "The master is indeed skilled, but there are stronger ones among the strong. The master's body is worth a lot of money. If something goes wrong, what's the point of us dying a thousand times?"

"There is always someone stronger among the strong", Lu Chenan couldn't help but think that no wonder she was so confident in her skills.

The princess suddenly changed the subject and said to Lu Chenan: "I'll come find you later."

After saying this, she left with her group of people.

It was late spring, and behind her, poplar catkins blew from somewhere, brushing against her black hair and drifting away. Once again, her back disappeared into the late spring.

The spring breeze does not stop the poplar catkins from blowing, and they flutter in the faces of passers-by.

Lu Chenan lowered his eyes. This was the favored Princess Kunyi.

The wind blew through the locust tree, and a flower fell. Lu Chenan just stretched out his hand and caught the falling white flower. At this time, a head popped out from behind the wall: "Sir, this is Princess Kunyi."

The person who spoke was the thief that the princess had just chased.



Lu Chenan didn't even look at him, he just hummed softly, " Tell them I saw it. "

## Chapter 12

Xie Jiayi took people back to the Princess's Mansion. In just half a month, the Princess's Mansion had been renovated. There was no need to elaborate on the richness of the interior. As soon as the Princess arrived at the mansion, she heard from the servants that Qian Yingying, who lived in the East Courtyard, had a slippery pulse. " It's too early, and Doctor Zhang can't be sure. "

Doctor Zhang was unsure, but Xie Jiayi was sure that the baby was indeed in her belly. She walked into the east courtyard and saw Qian Yingying still writing something on the stone table under the osmanthus tree. When she saw her, she immediately stood up and saluted, her eyebrows curved and her face rosy.

Xie Jiayi felt that the food in the mansion was good, but Qian Yingying did not look like she had just been divorced for seven days. She was happy and seemed happier than she was. The east courtyard was full of things, making the whole courtyard seem smaller. Xie Jiayi ordered people to set aside some rooms as warehouses.

After Qian Yingying chose to divorce, the princess told her to move everything that could be moved away, and not to leave anything for the couple. Xie Jiayi just didn't expect that Qian Yingying was so honest that she really moved everything that could be moved away ...

Not to mention property and furniture, she even moved the stone table in the yard, the one under the osmanthus tree in front of me ...

Sister Bunny doesn't talk much, but she does things in a real way ... Xie Jiayi looked at the stone table and raised her eyes. Oh, this sweet-scented osmanthus tree in front of her was also moved by Qian Yingying ... She brought the soil and transplanted it here, which was beyond the standard to complete the princess's order ...

As expected, since they were her friends, Xie Jiayi, they couldn't give anything to someone they hated.

Qian Yingying, like a little rabbit, showed Xie Jiayi her next money-making plan, starting with a clothing and jewelry store, opening two pawnshops at the same time, and then slowly expanding. Xie Jiayi was amazed at the step-by-step instructions, but soon she couldn't understand some of them. Xie Jiayi felt that the little rabbit was very powerful.

After she praised her a few times, the little rabbit sister blushed and said, " That's all I know – money and copper matters. " She hoped that she could be useful to the princess more than before.

" The money is clean and pure. One ounce is just one ounce. I won't pretend it's two ounces. " He is much more honest and clean than a human being, Xie Jiayi replied, holding his chin.

Qian Yingying wanted to thank him. If it weren't for the princess, she wouldn't be able to get a divorce in this situation. Her father would never agree. Now, although everyone in the Qian family wanted to laugh at her, as soon as she entered the princess's mansion, they all shut up. Who dared to laugh?

She actually knew that Song Ziming had an affair, and she even knew where that person was. She was just cowardly, not really stupid. Her husband had suddenly become happy and sad since a year ago, it was so obvious, how could she not know anything? However, she was willing to pretend that she didn't know, just hoping that he could keep it a secret for a long time. Her mother died, and the Qian family had no place for her, so she could only stay in the Song Mansion.

But later, when she found out that he personally bought snacks for that person and began to pay attention to jewelry, cosmetics, food and toys for that person, she realized that she might not be able to stay here for long. Song Ziming was thinking about the long-term future for his sweetheart, and she, as the legal wife, would only become more and more embarrassed and more and more annoying.

When she was anxious, the princess once again helped her and gave her a place to stay. What's the use of a man when you have a place to stay? Qian Yingying looked at her plan for the shop and explained it to the princess carefully.

Xie Jiayi was a man of action, so she asked Uncle Zhong and Ruyi to find a suitable shopkeeper and accountant. Qian Yingying had the old people left by her mother. Many shopkeepers of the shops in her dowry were squeezed out by the people from Song's mother and Song Ziming's brothers, sisters and sisters-in-law. Many of them were closed or sold. Some of these people left, while others remembered their mother's kindness and stayed, either squeezed into small shops or endured on the farm.

Qian Yingying held a pen in one hand and touched the baby in her belly with the other. She looked down at the plan, her bangs covering her expression. This time, even the old people who had followed her mother had a place to go. She quietly looked up at the princess' bright face, and thinking of the little girl in red clothes who looked like a dumpling back then, Qian Yingying lowered her head and smiled quietly.

At this time, the Song family was filled with wailing. Song's mother had never expected that her obedient daughter-in-law would suddenly become a different person. Not only did she divorce, but she also took away all the gold and silver dowry from the family. " They 've all been taken away , " Song's mother cried. She wanted to tear her face off and make a big scene, and she couldn't let Qian Yingying get what she wanted, but she heard that her daughter-in-law had someone behind her, and if she offended that person, she would be skinned alive.

Song's mother, who was about to make a scene, immediately stopped talking and watched with tears in her eyes as the boxes of gold, silver and silk were moved away. They were originally her son's ...

When she heard that the woman was brought in for her son, Song's mother didn't dare to make trouble with Qian Yingying, who had a noble behind her. She was already full of anger, so how could she not make trouble with this wild woman at this time! Song's mother cried so loudly that half of the people in the mansion were moved. The jade screen, the antique vase from the previous dynasty, and the nanmu tables and chairs in her room were all moved away ...

Song Ziming was caught in the middle, his mother on one side and his beloved woman on the other. Su Yan was even more traumatized by this series of humiliations. She came to bleed

during Song's mother's crying and pushing. Only then did she realize that she was pregnant, but she miscarried after just over a month.

Song Ziming held the hand of Su Yan, who was pale on the bed, and felt pain and hatred in his heart. Everything he and Su Yan had experienced today was due to the domineering and tyrannical behavior of Princess Kunyi, who bullied others to such an extent.

He held Su Yan's hand and gritted his teeth secretly. This is the rich and powerful! He would do whatever it takes to climb up and step on these rich and powerful people who bully others!

Before he could wipe his face and think about it, someone outside said that people from all over the place had come to collect debts, and the money in the accounting office had already been taken away by Qian Yingying.

Song Ziming, who was always elegant and self-restrained, broke a teacup for the first time, and the broken porcelain flew everywhere. No one dared to breathe. Fortunately, that night, the Qian family sealed a thousand taels of silver and secretly sent it to the Song family. The Song family finally settled down temporarily. Along with the silver came Qian's father's plan. He had finally found such a son-in-law who passed the imperial examination and entered the officialdom with a promising future. Naturally, he was unwilling to let go easily. However, the unfilial daughter was disobedient, but he still had an obedient daughter.

Look, the daughter of the second wife is willing to marry Song Ziming after his divorce and become a wife of the Song family.

At this time, Emperor Yongtai was dining with his two sons in the palace. The eldest son and his mother, the fourth son of Emperor Yongtai, were imprisoned by Emperor Yuanhe for harming the royal family and being involved in witchcraft and curses. The second son fell off his horse while playing polo and became lame. The already cruel man became even more cruel and unpredictable.

The fourth son is less than a year younger than the crown prince. Unlike the taciturn crown prince, this son loves to talk and laugh, and is quite liked by Emperor Yongtai. This afternoon, the crown prince and the fourth prince came to pay their respects to Emperor Yongtai. Thinking that they hadn't seen their sons carefully for a long time, they simply stayed to have dinner. Also accompanying them was the fourth prince's mother, Emperor Yongtai's virtuous concubine.

The Crown Prince was respectful and followed the rule of not talking while eating, but the Fourth Prince didn't care about that and kept talking to the Yongtai Emperor who was sitting at the top of the table, which caused Concubine Xian to scold her son. But it was Emperor Yongtai who waved his hand and told her not to be so careful. The Fourth Prince's complaint made both Emperor Yongtai and Concubine Xian laugh.

Only the prince, who was sitting alone on the right, still had a cold expression on his face. In their laughter, he seemed like an outsider. The long table was also clearly divided. There were laughter and joy over there, and the father was loving and the son was filial. On this side, it was quiet. The prince just lowered his eyes and held the spoon, sipping the soup at hand.

Until he left the Yangxin Palace, the prince did not have a chance to speak. The Yongtai Emperor was surrounded by the Xianfei and the Fourth Prince. The Fourth Prince insisted on playing a game of chess with the Yongtai Emperor, so the prince left first. Behind him, there was the Fourth Prince's mumbling, his father calling him "Little Four" in a lecturing tone, but he was laughed at by the other party's words, and the Xianfei's smiling scolding of her son.

The sounds behind him gradually faded away, and the prince realized that he was already far away from the Yangxin Palace .

He suddenly stopped, and then he realized that the Begonia Palace was just ahead. Gao Sheng followed with a lantern, but he didn't dare to remind him. When the prince stopped, he perked up even more, and then he heard the prince's cold voice ask: " How many days has the princess not returned? "

Gao Sheng said quickly, " The princess's mansion has been mostly renovated. She has not returned to the palace for the past three days. She only comes in every day to pay her respects to His Majesty. "

In the darkness of the night he heard the prince sneer: " Remember to come to the palace every day to pay respects to His Majesty. "

The prince suddenly turned around, his black cape bringing up a gust of wind, and headed towards the Jingyun Gate. After the Jingyun Gate, he arrived at the Prince's Eastern Palace. Gao Sheng followed with a lantern, followed by the palace servants. When he arrived at the Eastern Palace, Gao Sheng helped the prince change his clothes and wash up. As soon as he left the study, a young eunuch came up and told him about Ming Pei's current situation in Haitang Palace.

" Ms. Mingpei washes all the palace's clothes. I went to see her in the daytime and my hands were all sore from washing. "

Gao Sheng hissed. Nanny Chen was experienced and didn't beat or scold her, or even pay any attention to her. But the people below had sharp eyes, and they had already treated Miss Mingpei badly in just a few days.

He was thinking about finding a good time to tell His Highness about Miss Mingpei's situation. Judging from His Highness's appearance, he definitely took Miss Mingpei seriously. You have to know how many girls there are in the palace and outside the palace, but His Highness has never looked at any of them seriously! So Gaosheng noticed the difference in Mingpei from the beginning. Later, even he himself deeply respected the way Miss Mingpei did things and behaved.

He heard His Highness calling him in the study, and Gao Sheng immediately went forward to receive instructions.

In the study, the Crown Prince had been practicing calligraphy for half an hour. He looked at the large characters under his pen and said without raising his head, " Send someone to the East Palace tomorrow. "

Gao Shengben was thinking about Miss Mingpei, and when he heard what the prince said, he didn't know for a moment who the prince meant by let " someone else " .

## Chapter 13

" Let someone come to the East Palace tomorrow. " When the prince said this, his eyes were still looking at the words he wrote, and his voice was calm.

Seeing that Gao Sheng didn't respond, the prince raised his eyes and said coldly: " You stupid thing, let the princess come to the east palace tomorrow. " I don't know whether it was because

he was impatient to say more or because he mentioned the princess, Gao Sheng actually behaved like the prince. After the coldness, I heard a bit of gritting teeth.

The next day, Xie Jiayi had lunch with His Majesty, and when she walked out of Qianqing Palace with Caiyue and Bu Bu, she met Ji Xiang who had been waiting aside early. Ji Xiang greeted the princess with a smile, and with a string of auspicious words in his mouth, he said that the princess would not go to the East Palace, and then said that His Highness the Crown Prince was waiting for the princess at the moment.

Xie Jiayi held a small whip in her hand and tapped her palm with it. When she heard that it was the prince who asked her to go over, she hesitated for a moment. She knew that she would offend the queen mother sooner or later. For the sake of her future life, she should not offend the prince. Others only said that the prince was virtuous and had the demeanor of a gentleman in the forest, but Xie Jiayi felt that Xu Shixing was a little narrow-minded.

She is more narrow-minded and holds grudges, but he is the prince and will be the emperor in the future, while she is just a princess.

She held grudges against many people, but Xu Shixing——. She thought that this person just didn't like her as much as she thought, but he was not worse than others. If possible, she hoped that they could be good cousins. Thinking of the word cousin, she sneered.

It's good to be someone's cousin, there are only benefits.

You can't say that a person is bad just because he doesn't like you enough.

Sixteen-year-old Xie Jiayi might not think so, but twenty-two-year-old Xie Jiayi slowly understood this. He, like most people in this world, should have nothing to do with me. In his hand, there was no candy that he had promised her.

Xie Jiayi arrived outside the study of the East Palace and heard the Crown Prince say "Come in", with his usual arrogance, coldness and frosty air in front of outsiders.

The study room in the East Palace was still the same as she remembered: empty and plain as a snow cave. Apart from the necessary items, there was no unnecessary decoration or color. Only the volumes of books and piles of materials made the room not seem so empty.

The only superfluous object was the round-bellied white porcelain vase on the high table at the door, which was brought out by Xie Jiayi from the East Palace storehouse and was used to place crabapple flowers in. It was now standing empty on the high table.

Even the man in the study usually wore light colors like moon white, light blue, sky blue, or dark or apricot yellow dragon robes. Xie Jiayi had seen the prince wearing a red round-collar dragon robe once, and since then she had always said that the prince looked so good in red, but the prince rarely wore red unless necessary.

At this time, the prince was also wearing a moon-white uniform, with dragon patterns on his chest and shoulders embroidered in secret, and he was still looking at the memorials that he would never finish reading. Xie Jiayi sat there for a while bored, with nothing to play with or look at except the teacup in front of her. She couldn't even remember how she had sat in this snow-like study room for an hour or two before ...

Just when she was about to get impatient, His Royal Highness the Crown Prince stopped writing and looked at her.

In the past, she had no idea how many times she had circled around him in the morning. As soon as she saw him stop writing, she would seize the opportunity to shout, "Brother Crown

Prince, it's time to take a break , " and then clapped her hands and ordered tea, fruits and snacks, as if this entire study and the entire East Palace belonged to her.

The prince lowered his eyes and his sight fell on the empty table in front of her. There was only a cup of tea, and she didn't even complain that he forgot to prepare snacks for her. She just sat there waiting, which was what he wanted. The prince always thought that Xie Jiayi would be a little more obedient. At this moment , looking at Xie Jiayi who seemed to be waiting there obediently, the prince felt that she was not as good as he thought.

This time, the prince asked someone to bring up the prepared snacks. Looking at Xie Jiayi who was picking out the snacks, he asked, " What are you playing recently? "

Xie Jiayi picked up a piece of crystal clear cake, looked at it carefully, and replied: " Play with everything, play with whatever you have. "

There was silence between the two for a long time.

Gao Sheng looked at Caiyue and Bubu who were following the princess. Caiyue just stood there demurely, while Bubu looked up and smiled at him. The two of them didn't seem to think that there was anything wrong with the princess, and in the past, Caiyue would at least smile at him, the chief steward of the East Palace. Bubu had called him brother this morning ...

The people at Haitang Palace ... are they also acting strangely? ... Gaosheng, who has always been capable, feels that there are more and more people and things that he cannot understand recently.

The prince sat down next to Xie Jiayi, reached out to pour himself some water, and then said, " It's the snacks from the East Palace. Are they not tasty anymore? "

Xie Jiayi shook her head, " Yes, Kunyi, I won't be greedy anymore. "

The prince pondered, raised his hand and tapped the table twice. Outside, Gao Sheng hurriedly led Cai Yue and Bu Bu to a farther distance . Seeing that the princess had no objection, Cai Yue and Bu Bu followed Gao Sheng out of the study and stood in a position where they could not hear the master's words but could see the master.

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi with a headache. Although she looked fine, he knew she was frowning. Xu Shixing moved closer and whispered, " Zhao Zhao, who made you unhappy? " His hand was only a cup away from hers, but she didn't come closer, but moved further away .

Xie Jiayi said seriously: " Brother Crown Prince, I only want to be your cousin, not your Crown Princess. "

This sentence made Xu Shixing, who was watching Xie Jiayi move her hand away, suddenly raise his eyes and stare at her. Xie Jiayi also looked at Xu Shixing at this time.

The two looked at each other, and Xu Shixing laughed: " Even when you were angry before, you never said such words. " Then he called her with a hint of coldness: " Sister Kunyi? "

Xie Jiayi thought that being a cousin was good, as they had known each other since childhood, so there should be some grace from the Crown Prince that he would not abandon her. It was impossible that when it came to her turn as a cousin, the Crown Prince would not protect her and just kill her ... Thinking of the " grace of not abandoning " , Xie Jiayi felt sick.

Xu Shixing didn't miss any of her expressions. Seeing that she looked unhappy, he slowed down his tone and asked, " Why do you want to be your cousin again? "

" Hello, cousin. " I can rescue you from a ruined family, raise you with precious treasures on the farm, and send you to my Haitang Palace when you grow up. Everyone knows that my Haitang Palace is the most comfortable place in the entire imperial palace.

You are really good at choosing places for people.

Xu Shixing's nerves tensed up, and he asked tentatively, " Are you still angry about that girl? "

" Who? " Xie Jiayi picked out another piece of pink cake, studied it carefully and asked, sneering in her heart.

" Ming Pei " lightly , but his eyes did not miss any reaction of Xie Jiayi.

Xie Jiayi didn't look at him, still playing with the snacks, and said with a smile: " You pay so much attention to this girl, could she be your cousin too? " She raised her head and looked at the person next to her when she said this.

Xu Shixing wanted to see from her eyes and face what Xie Jiayi knew, but he said, " You just think about these nonsense every day. "

Xie Jiayi seemed to let out a sigh of relief, " I've never seen a girl as nervous as you. "

Xie Jiayi really breathed a sigh of relief: He was lying to me to protect her.

" I don't worry about a girl. "

Xie Jiayi took one last look at Xu Shixing, put down the snacks, took out a handkerchief and wiped her hands carefully. It seemed that she couldn't do it well, so she called out " Caiyue " .

Caiyue responded and hurried to the study, asked the little maid to fetch some water, and washed the princess' hands herself.

The princess pulled out a small whip and waved it, saying with a smile: " Brother Prince, I am leaving now. " If you wait any longer, you will vomit.

To her, Xu Shixing was not a bad person. Most of the time, he was obedient to her. But Xie Jiayi felt that he was worse than all those bad people combined.

The prince looked at her without saying anything, and the people below did not dare to breathe. The cicadas in the yard were chirping more and more, making some people nervous and some people irritated.

" The chirping of cicadas in the trees is really annoying. Kunyi is going to take his leave . " He smiled and said, " It's much quieter in our Begonia Palace. I asked Mingpei to stick with me when the cicadas were chirping the loudest these past two days at noon, otherwise I wouldn't have been able to sleep during my nap. " The time when the cicadas are chirping the loudest at noon is also when the sun is the brightest and the day is the hottest.

Xie Jiayi bowed and walked away. Seeing that her master had really left, Caiyue hurriedly took her leave and followed.

Gao Sheng knew that this was not the right time, but if he missed this opportunity, he would never have the chance to mention it to his master, so he had to bite the bullet and smile: " The princess didn't bring Mingpei with her this time. " In the past, when she came to the East Palace, Mingpei accompanied her eight out of ten times.

Seeing that the prince had no reaction, he added: " It's so hot, Miss Mingpei wants to catch cicadas, I don't know if she can stand it. "

He only waited for His Royal Highness to ask a question so that he could tell Ming Pei more about her current situation. But His Royal Highness just looked at the yard, as if he didn't hear what he said at all.

" Let He Sheng in. " After saying that, he turned and went into the study behind him. He Sheng, dressed in a guard's uniform, knelt in front of the desk, waiting for instructions. On the prince's desk was a letter that was sent from the north yesterday. The letter was from Zhang Peiyu, who used the alias Zhang Dahu. He reported that he had gained the trust of the soldiers in the army. Finally, he mentioned the Xie family army. He said that if the Xie family army could be brought under control, His Highness's power in the army would be stable . The Zhang siblings must sink to the bottom.

" Cousin " " Crown Princess "... If this wasn't said in anger, then what happened? Something must have happened.

He stroked a delicate teardrop-shaped mutton-fat jade earring with his left hand, and after a long while he said, " Go see what the princess is busy with recently. "

He Sheng immediately understood the prince's meaning.

Seeing He Sheng taking the order and leaving, the prince clenched the mutton-fat jade earrings in his hand, and a smile that did not belong to the bright and sunny prince appeared at the corner of his lips. " Zhao Zhao, you can't just say you don't want to be the crown princess. " When the prince called Gaosheng again, he had already returned to his previous self. " Go and take some people to catch all the cicadas in the East Palace. "

" What about Haitang Palace ..." Gao Sheng asked cautiously without looking up. Then he heard the prince's chuckle that made him sweat: " My East Palace's chief steward is in charge of the affairs of Haitang Palace? "

Gaosheng kowtowed hurriedly and took his men to catch cicadas.

On the other side, Xie Jiayi led Caiyue out of the East Palace step by step, saying to herself in her heart, "I have no resentment or hatred, I have no regrets after making this move, I am willing to accept the loss." Then she suddenly raised the whip and lashed it hard against a nearby wall, leaving a blue-gray mark on the vermilion wall.

Bu Bu shrank back at the sight.

Xie Jiayi sneered: "You bastard, you started to lie to me from this moment on." After venting the anger that had been suppressed, Xie Jiayi felt much better.

She began to think about the floods in the south, the northern land and the northern barbarians ... Zhang Peiyu ... These things weighed on her mind, making her frown and making the princess realize that she was not very smart. Why did she have no way to deal with any of them? She breathed a sigh of relief. At least now she had started to make money.

The early bird catches the worm, so she is not in a hurry.

She is not smart, but there are people who are smart.

Xie Jiayi raised his chin: " Let's go. " Let's go and see the smartest person in Dayin.



As night fell, the endless chirping of cicadas during the day finally died down, and the summer insects began to chirp in relays. The rooms in the side yard of the Lu Mansion were narrow and cramped, warm in summer and cool in winter. In the summer evenings, Mingxin felt like he grew up in the yard.

This year was hotter than in previous years. Even the young master, who seemed to be indifferent to the heat, sat in the corridor and read books by candlelight. Mingxin squatted on the side in a daze, and the mute slave was still tending to her herbs under the moonlight.

Mingxin saw the mute slave suddenly turn around and stand beside the young master, and the young master had also stood up.

He was still confused, and saw both of them looking at the wall on the left. Mingxin realized it later and also looked at the wall. After a while, he saw a little head popping out from the wall and said crisply:

" Mr. Lu, it's me. "

The girl's smiling face seemed to glow in the moonlight.

Mingxin cried out, leaned closer to the young master, and whispered: " Young master, it's the princess. " The mute slave retreated silently again and continued to tend her medicine garden. The young master walked to the wall with a lantern and looked up at the girl who was already sitting on the wall.

The other party waved at him with a smile and asked politely: " Then I can come in? "

But it was all in vain, because before the master could say anything, she had already jumped down from the wall. She landed lightly and steadily , and immediately heard a voice outside the wall asking: " Master, are you safe ? "

The girl said happily, " Steady . " She seemed surprised that she landed so smoothly , and she emphasized to Lu Chenan, " Like I said, I'm very skilled. "

The person outside the wall landed in the courtyard almost instantly, causing several people in the courtyard to look at the person who came. It was Ruyi. However, he only looked at his little princess carefully, and only when he was sure that she was fine did he feel relieved and went to the corner gate next to him.

Lu Chenan bowed and saluted, " Greetings, Princess. " Xie Jiayi waved her hand casually, looked around the courtyard, and reminded Lu Chenan who was standing aside in a daze: " Carry the lantern and follow me. " When she came to the medicine garden, she looked carefully, and at this time she saw the mute slave squatting on the ground in the moonlight. The princess exclaimed and asked Lu Chenan to move the lantern closer. " Have I seen her somewhere before? " Why did this person make her feel inexplicably familiar?

" The mute slave sometimes goes out to buy things, so the princess might have seen him on the streets. "

Xie Jiayi shook her head. How could she remember an inconspicuous servant she had seen on the streets? She always felt that there was something about this person that made her look particularly familiar. After thinking for a long time, she couldn't remember it, so she simply gave up.

This explains the purpose of the visit.

" River channel? " Lu Chenan looked at the person in front of him strangely. A sixteen-year-old noble lady from a royal family who climbed over the wall into a man's house late at night actually wanted to know about the river channel ... He had a new understanding of her favor and wild imagination.

" How does Princess know that I know about the river? " Lu Chenan asked with a smile, holding a lantern. The mute slave behind them also looked at the little princess.

" Let me check you. " The little princess said casually as she looked around the three simple main rooms.

So fair and just ... Lu Chenan was speechless. After a while, he asked again, " Why did the princess investigate me? "

" I like you. "

Lu Chenan: .....

Ruyi had already lit a row of candles in the indoor courtyard, placed a few ice basins, and burned mosquito-repellent incense. She took the cage that was sent in from the corner door, put a chair next to it, and placed snacks on the table.

Ming Xin was stunned by the series of actions.

Lu Chenan saw the paper, ink, brush and inkstone prepared for him on the table. He paused, picked up the pen and listed on the Chengxin paper the books that the princess could use to understand the river.

Ruyi was guarding the door, and Mingxin was also guarding the door. They couldn't help but look at the corner door, wondering who or what would come in.

The princess leaned over to look at the window of his room, muttering, " This gauze should have been replaced long ago. It's been so many years, and it can't keep out mosquitoes . " Then she said , " Your brush washer ... " The princess looked at a bowl with a chip on it and thought it must be a brush washer ... Then she looked at the tables next to her. Although there were no expensive vases or vessels, there were two faded pink peonies leaning diagonally in the coarse pottery. The princess nodded, " It's quite interesting . "

After a while, he leaned forward to look at the words written by Lu Chenan: " So your handwriting-- " He swallowed the words " It's fine like this now " and said, " It's good like this. "

A faint sweet fragrance came from the princess. Lu Chen put down his pen and continued writing. At this time, the sweet fragrance had faded away , and the princess's mumbling voice sounded again, and the deserted and shabby room suddenly became lively and lively.

When Lu Chenan presented what he had written, Ruyi put it away for the princess.

The little princess came over and said something very seriously, which made Lu Chenan stunned.

The person in front of me has turned around and walked into the yard, ready to leave.

Ruyi was about to help, but the steady landing just now boosted Xie Jiayi's confidence. She asked Ruyi to move aside, and she wanted to climb over the wall and fly away in one go.

She took two steps back and then moved forward to climb up the wall, but she ran out of energy halfway and slipped down. Ruyi quickly supported the princess who had fallen.

Only then did Lu Chenan look at Ruyi twice more. This man's skills were really good.

" Master has improved. If it were autumn, he would have been able to climb over it. However, the walls are so slippery in summer that even the most powerful masters would not be able to do it. "

" Is that so? "

" Of course. Even the master, who is so skilled in martial arts, can't do it, let alone others. " Ruyi said sincerely and confidently.

Lu Chenan, who was watching from behind the two of them, thought to himself that this person was not only good at fighting, but also said something better ...

" That's what I told you. " Xie Jiayi realized that it was the wall's problem, not her, and she didn't force it. After all, we humans can't force a wall.

This time, Ruyi stretched out her arms and supported the princess. Lu Chenan saw the little princess in scarlet clothes fluttering up like a light petal, landing on the top of the wall, turning back to smile at him, and then jumping down.

He only left one sentence: " Mr. Lu, the dessert is the Begonia Cake from Begonia Palace, it's delicious. "

Mingxin blurted out: " Why didn't the princess go through the door? "

Then I heard the princess' voice outside the wall: " There is no martial arts master who goes through the gates. " It's cheap.

Several people in the courtyard: .....

The people outside soon left, and the alley outside the high wall became quiet again, as did the courtyard inside the high wall.

After a while, Mingxin asked carefully: " Are all these things given to us? " There were a lot of ice cubes, snacks, candles, chairs, ivory mats, and a plate of silver ingots, each weighing twenty taels.

Lu Chenan nodded lightly and asked the mute slave and Mingxin to put it away.

While Mingxin was happily collecting the items one by one, the mute slave quickly took out a silver needle to check the snacks. When Mingxin turned around, she had already put away the silver needle and then went to collect the silver next to her.

Until the moon was at its zenith, Mingxin and the mute slave had already fallen asleep, but Lu Chenan was still reading. He put down the book and his eyes fell on the black pottery vase with peony in it. He thought that the princess had looked at it for a long time and gave it a good review. Lu Chenan stood up and looked at it carefully, then came to the table, picked up a piece of crabapple cake and tasted it carefully. The faint sweet fragrance was very similar to the sweet fragrance on her body when she approached.

I couldn't help but find it funny. The little princess must have eaten too many crabapple cakes.

The next day, Mingxin came back from breakfast and saw a lot of people gathered in front of him. He looked again and saw that it was their side yard. He took the box and walked a few steps quickly. It was obvious that the servants from the palace had replaced the old screen windows of their small courtyard with a brand new scarlet gauze, and also left a box of things and a lot of ice.

Before he could even squeeze in, he saw the Lu family's chief steward, sweating profusely, running over and respectfully telling the young master that it was their negligence and that they

should have put ice in the side yard earlier. As a result, things happened one after another recently and the servant was delayed. Now the man had been taken away and beaten with a stick.

Hearing Mingxin standing there with the lunch box in hand, she said that the side yard had not received any ice cream in the summer for the past ten years ... The most capable woman in the kitchen came over with a smile on her face, and told Mingxin that she had received the wrong breakfast. She enthusiastically stuffed the other one into Mingxin's hand and snatched away the lunch box that only contained two plates of bok choy and porridge.

The two men bowed and apologized, saying that their subordinates had played tricks and delayed the master's share. They had told everyone and would never play tricks like that again in the future.

Not only did they make up for the missing things in the side yard, they also changed the tables and chairs in the side yard, and sent four servants, four little girls and two old women, all arranged according to the specifications of the young master of the Lu Mansion. Finally, they were sure that Lu Chen'an did not take the previous neglect to heart, and the two of them smiled until their faces were sore before leaving, and they had to go to the old lady in front to reply.

"What do you mean? How come the people in that courtyard are related to the palace?" the old woman asked in fear. She had offended the side courtyard in the past. Today, seeing that the young master didn't care, she didn't know whether he really didn't care or was going to settle the score later.

The butler took off his hat and fanned himself, "What courtyard over there? This is the seventh young master of our Lu family! This morning, the old lady had half of her breakfast and called the three ladies and the young masters and young ladies to Rong'an Hall. The school didn't even let the young masters go ... She said she wanted to return Qinghui Courtyard to the seventh young master."

Qinghui Courtyard was the courtyard that the eldest master arranged for the seventh young master. It could be said to be the best courtyard besides Rong'an Hall. The eldest wife had long been eyeing it as the courtyard for her eldest son to get married in the future. However, she did not expect that the master would arrange it for a concubine without even saying hello. When the eldest master died, before the funeral was over, the nine-year-old Lu Chen'an and his servant were driven out of the courtyard and moved to a side courtyard where no one could live.

The servants of the Lu family always referred to each other as "the ones from that courtyard" and no one dared to call him the Seventh Young Master anymore.

This morning, the kitchen maid looked like she had been fished out of water and was sweating all the time.

Lu Chen stood in the courtyard, watching the servants coming in and out carrying all kinds of items, all with smiling faces. He looked towards the courtyard wall unconsciously, and heard the words left by the little princess before she left, "Mr. Lu, the princess will protect you from now on." She was obviously a delicate and bright girl, but she spoke in a gangster tone that she didn't know where she learned.

The three words "Mr. Lu" shouted out from her mouth had an indescribable taste that made people stunned.

Meeting the gaze of the mute slave, Lu Chenan suddenly woke up from his trance and clenched the book in his hand.

## Chapter 15

It was a June afternoon, the bright sun was so hot that the stone slabs were scorching, and the heat was rolling. The prince was heading to Changchun Palace. Perhaps it was because this summer was unusually hot, and everyone in the East Palace felt that the prince had become increasingly difficult to serve. The eunuchs holding umbrellas could hardly keep up with the prince's pace, and they followed him desperately. They themselves had already sweated through two layers of clothes, but fortunately they were all wearing indigo outer clothes, so even if they were sweaty, the color was only slightly darker, and it would not bother the master's eyes. As soon as the prince entered Changchun Palace, he saw a little maid kneeling on the ground picking up the broken blue and white porcelain cups on the floor, Concubine De was leaning on the couch in the middle with her eyes closed, and Nanny Liu was rubbing someone's forehead. She opened her eyes only when she heard the prince paying his respects. His voice sounded calm, "The prince is here." The prince bowed, sat on the chair on the left, and waited for Concubine De to speak.

"Did you see it?" She was referring to the broken teacup on the ground. "Everyone in the palace knows that since the princess entered the palace at the age of six, I have been scratching my eyes to take care of her. She was sick several times, and I stayed up all night to take care of her." When she said this, Defei seemed to be too sad to continue and closed her eyes again.

Matron Liu said, "The queen sent people to visit the princess several times, but the princess didn't come or say anything, and she didn't even say a word to the queen, which made the queen feel cold. Today, on such a hot day, Miss Mingpei was still hanging around in Haitang Palace, chasing cicadas and drinking water. She was so miserable. The queen couldn't bear to see it, so she sent me to Haitang Palace to ask for this girl. But the princess didn't even show up, and Matron Chen gave me a cold shoulder, which made me feel embarrassed."

Concubine De opened her eyes and looked at the prince: "You said she wouldn't be——"  
The prince shook his head: "No."

"That's you! Jin Yu will be yours sooner or later, why are you in such a hurry? It must be you who revealed some clues, making Yu'er a thorn in the princess's side!" Defei said hatefully. The prince lowered his eyes and said nothing.

"You are too virtuous. You can't even hold a little girl!" De Fei looked at her son who was known as "a gentleman". Her head was buzzing with pain. If he had used some tricks to hold that girl, there would be no need for these things. Apart from other things, he is already nineteen years old. He should have been able to do some things long ago ... It's a matter between men and women, and it's a matter between men and women. Why can't this son open his mind?

"It's better if she doesn't become the Crown Princess. That girl is too jealous." A woman actually dared to ask a man to have only her, and this man is the Crown Prince and the future

emperor. This is too whimsical. She is indeed a spoiled girl. She dares to say all kinds of strange requests according to her own wishes. Why doesn't she just go to heaven!

Defei thought: " If she really becomes the Crown Princess, Yu'er will probably suffer in the future. " She had been counting on her to make things go more smoothly for her mother's family, but not only did she not get the title this time, but the Fourth Prince also kept harping on the matter of her nephew killing someone some time ago, and Princess Kunyi didn't say a word to help. If that's the case, why did she have to marry such an unlucky person?

But the prince, who had always been taciturn and never said a word unless asked by Concubine De, spoke up: " Ming Pei is old enough, mother, why don't you choose a good family for her and let her live a peaceful life. "

This was a serious statement. When Concubine De heard it, she was shocked and angry: " What are you talking about? Your mother has already said that Jinyu will be your wife in the future. " It's just that now due to her status, she has no status, but in the future – as an old member of the Eastern Palace, she can't even think about the position of empress for the time being, and being named a consort is just a matter of a word from him.

" What the hell has gone wrong with you this time? " Defei had a good relationship with her elder sister since childhood. She had a difficult time in the palace and her parents had backed off, but her elder sister was loved by Prime Minister Zhang. Under such difficult circumstances, her elder sister was promoted from a concubine to the wife of the then famous Prime Minister Zhang.

She also supported herself to move forward. When her sister died, she wept and shed tears. Not to mention that Jin Yu had been in her heart since she was a child, and she and her sister had the same ambitions and styles. She also had deep feelings for the prince and saved his life! At this time, Madam Liu hurriedly said, " I'm afraid that His Highness feels sorry for Miss Mingpei's hardship. "

" Suffering? Who doesn't suffer? As long as you remember the suffering she has suffered for you today, she will be rewarded with happiness after all the suffering! " Defei looked at her son: " Don't have these childish thoughts. Since you love her, you should find a way to get her out of the Princess Palace. No matter whether you keep her with your mother or in your East Palace, it will allow Jinyu to suffer less. " When Defei said this, she felt sad. Princess Pingyang had abused her back then, and now her daughter was abusing her niece ... These royal ladies with their eyes on the top of their heads were really hateful.

The prince had no choice but to speak frankly: " I want Princess Kunyi to be the Crown Princess. She is just angry for a while. I will persuade her. "

Concubine De was a little nervous. She looked at her son's still gentle and cold expression and asked tentatively: " Why do you still want the princess to be your crown princess? "

The prince's eyelashes trembled slightly, but he said: " The princess is the most suitable. A journey of a hundred miles begins with a single step. I cannot lose your Majesty's heart. " His hands unconsciously tightened the cup, and he felt the coolness of the celadon passing through his palms, and then he felt his slightly restless heart comforted a little.

Defei looked at her son for a long time before nodding slowly, " You are worried about it. I heard that the Fourth Prince got a good assignment the day before yesterday. The virtuous concubine

seems cheerful and keeps saying that she is stupid, but in fact she is just a smiling tiger. I'm afraid she has more tricks than lotus roots. This mother and son are not easy to deal with. Your Majesty ..." At this point, Defei looked at her son with a headache. Even a blind person could see that His Majesty did not like the prince.

" Don't worry about Jin Yu, or the princess will go even crazier. " At this point, De Fei rubbed her forehead, " After being tossed around in Haitang Palace for half a day, mother is also tired, you can go back. " Then she said meaningfully: " As long as you understand and know in your heart that all these years, so many people have suffered for you, " her voice was so low that only the prince could hear: " the lives they have sacrificed, it's all worth it. " As soon as these words came out, it was like a ghost floating by, and then De Fei regained her voice and reminded: " It's so hot, the tree should be watered more – or you should take care of it yourself? "

The prince still looked solemn and respectful, but his voice was tense and uncontrollably tense: " Mother, I have been taking care of him personally all along. "

De Fei looked at him again, " You are thoughtful. " It's all right if you have the intention. De Fei then showed a tired look, waved her hand, " You go. "

At this time, in the huge palace, all the servants had been sent out by Matron Liu to guard outside. Only Concubine De, the Crown Prince and his mother, and Matron Liu were left.

There was a rolling heat wave outside, but perhaps because of its location or because there was too much ice in Changchun Palace, the whole palace was filled with a chill.

The prince walked out of Changchun Palace and re-entered the heat wave. Only then did he feel like he had returned to this world of eternal daylight, full of noise and chaos.

He finally loosened his clenched hands and kept walking forward. In the eyes of others, he was still the gentle, calm and magnanimous wise prince.

When he passed by the Yu River, there was a cool breeze with moisture on the ground and weeping willows. He looked up and saw the girl who was also staring at the river. She was wearing a frosty shirt and a pea green dress, and her clothes were fluttering in the river breeze. Although there were flowers and willows all around, she was the most eye-catching.

It was rare to see this person wearing such plain-colored clothes, and Xu Shixing couldn't help but look at him for a while longer.

The girl was Xie Jiayi, who was surrounded by a group of palace servants and standing by the river. She was holding a willow branch that Bubu had picked for her and was whipping the water surface from time to time.

The results of the investigation of the southern river channel have been reported, and there are indeed two places that need to be reinforced. The local authorities have received the order to start the work. Emperor Yongshou also praised her as a lucky star because she discovered two inappropriate places in a dream.

But, no, how could there be only two? It was clearly a flood that affected several southern provinces.

But she knew too little. She looked at the memorials piled up on His Majesty's desk from the north, southwest, and south. Some places were suffering from drought and insects, some

places were flooded, and the Yellow River channel needed to be repaired, which was another huge expense.

If she insisted on doing anything, it would not only embarrass His Majesty, but what if she took care of the south and it was the Yellow River that had problems this year? Xie Jiayi now deeply understood what it meant to move the whole body with a single move. This was the case with the north and south rivers, and it was also the case with Zhang Peiyu in the north ... Why was Dayin's treasury so poor? Why were there so many problems in the local area, and people everywhere were asking for money from the treasury. But Xie Jiayi knew that there was not much money in the treasury.

" Why am I so stupid? " She was so stupid that she was angry. If she had studied hard since she was young, she wouldn't be in a situation where she knew something was going to happen but didn't know where to start.

Then I heard a cold voice, " You know you are stupid. " He was stupid to begin with, and recently he has become even more stupid, which is infuriating.

The people around him had already stepped back and knelt to salute. Xu Shixing raised his hand slightly to ask people to stand up, but his eyes were looking at Xie Jiayi who was standing by the water.

Xie Jiayi was already angry with herself, and when she saw this man again, she could only bow and call out in a bad mood: " Brother Prince. " The word " Crown Prince " was clear, but the word " brother " was so vague that it seemed as if she had swallowed it.

Hearing that she was still like this, Xu Shixing looked at her unhappily.

" The sun is so hot, why do you come here alone? " You are not a very strong person, and even if you want to play, you can't wait until the heat goes down before coming out.

The other party opened his mouth and choked: " How come there is only one person with such a large group of people behind him, can't the prince see it? "

Xu Shixing nodded, which meant he was blind. If there were no one around, he really wanted to flatten her angry little face and pry open her little mouth to see what she was talking about.

Thinking of this, Xu Shixing's eyes fell on the slightly pouted red lips of the person in front of him, and thinking of that day – he immediately shifted his gaze, looked at the vast water surface, and exhaled calmly.

In the past, Xie Jiayi was the one who took the initiative to talk between the two of them, and Xu Shixing was not a talkative person. Once Xie Jiayi became indifferent, the two of them would often remain silent when they met.

Xu Shixing was just about to ask her if she was satisfied with the Princess's Mansion, saying it was so hot this summer, why bother running back and forth between the palace, when he heard someone passing by on the other side of the river, startling the egrets perched on the river bank. Two egrets were startled and flew away, flying over the water and heading towards another lowland by the water.

Seeing Bai Lu, Princess Kunyi's frown relaxed: Yes, she couldn't figure it out, but Lord Lu must be able to figure it out, so she should go and ask Lord Lu.

So before Xu Shixing could say anything, the princess bowed and left excitedly with her people.



Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi's eyes that suddenly lit up and her glowing little face before she left, tightly grasped the white jade pendant of double dragons snatching a pearl hanging from his waist, glanced at Gao Sheng, and Gao Sheng hurried to inform He Sheng.

At night, the prince received news: the princess had been in a teahouse room with a scholar named Lu for three hours, and the princess had not come out yet.

## Chapter 16

The windows in the wing were closed, blocking out the noisy voices and the heat waves on the street outside. On both sides were a pair of ice sculptures of white cranes. When Lu Chenan came in, he first felt the cool air, accompanied by the fragrance of fresh flowers, plants, melons and fruits.

The princess was not polite at all. As soon as he sat down, she asked him questions one after another.

As Lu Chenan answered, he was secretly surprised. In fact, these questions were not something that a princess who was pampered in the deep palace could ask. But he did not show his expression and answered the princess' questions seriously.

Soon, he was surprised to find that behind all the princess's questions was the same premise: there was excessive rain in the south this autumn, and the rivers might burst their banks. Lu Chenan remained calm, but he was puzzled. If we talk about the risk of bursting banks, Dayin's main concern is the Yellow River, so why did the princess insist on several rivers in the south? Xie Jiayi became more and more discouraged as she listened. From Lu Chenan's answer, she finally understood that the southern river was currently in the best situation. The treasury was tight, and the money that could be allocated must be used first to support the Yellow River in the north and the grain and grass in the north. Many parts of the Yellow River had not been repaired for nearly ten years, and the north was gradually becoming uneasy.

Xie Jiayi unconsciously bent her thumb and put it in her mouth, biting the joint gently. There was a hint of confusion in her voice: " Your Majesty sent people to check the southern rivers, and the people who reported back said that everything was normal. " Apart from those two places, there should have been large areas that were not right, but the report was that everything was normal. Lu Chenan understood Xie Jiayi's question and replied, " Then everything is normal. "

" As usual ... how could it flood as usual? " No problem, why did it burst the dam. Her mind was filled with all kinds of information about the flood in the south that would continue to be transmitted to the palace in September next year. Refugees were everywhere, even pouring into the capital. His Majesty was busy with all kinds of affairs and could not sleep at night. The money and grain allocated seemed to be a drop in the bucket. Later, it was discovered that the disaster relief process was full of exploitation. His Majesty was very angry and dismissed many people. He asked the prince to go to the disaster relief himself, and then he could barely control the situation.

But man-made disasters had already begun, and several places had become chaotic. Not only did the Changshou Sect of the previous dynasty make a comeback, but several places also used the banner of Prince Min Huai, saying that they did not obey the will of Taizu and that God

was punishing Dayin. The court of Dayin took great efforts to quell the civil unrest, but it left behind troubles, and His Majesty fell ill and was exhausted. Dayin was unable to fully recover for several years, and then the Northern Di invaded and united with the Western Rong and Western tribes, and the north was in danger ... It can be said that Xu Shixing took over a Dayin that was in danger of falling apart.

Lu Chenan only saw the princess muttering " How could she drown ?" She seemed to be in another world, like in a nightmare. He called softly, " Princess. " Xie Jiayi's eyes fell on the person in front of him again. This was the most talented and brilliant scholar in the Great Yin Dynasty. He must have a way.

Xie Jiayi's gaze was fiery, and she just stared at Lu Chenan, as if a person who fell into the water saw a branch that suddenly appeared.

Lu Chenan tried hard to understand her doubts and said softly, " It will flood as usual if the weather is abnormal. " Seeing that the princess seemed to have really seen the occurrence of extreme abnormal weather, her whole body trembled, and there was helplessness in her eyes, as if everything had already happened.

Lu Chenan said hurriedly, " Princess, such extreme and abnormal weather has not occurred in the past hundred years. " The river in the south was rebuilt when Dayin was founded. It was to match the climate and water volume in the south. There have been small breaches since the founding of the dynasty, but no major ones. On the contrary, the difficulty in controlling the Yellow River is Dayin's real concern.

The princess uttered a cry, clenched her hands, and once again couldn't help biting her thumb joint, murmuring repeatedly: " What if this happens ..."

Lu Chenan was sensitive enough to notice that Xie Jiayi had a slight compulsion when she was nervous, for example, she had just put the teacup in the same position, but she had to push it three times. For example, she had to repeat certain words three times, and she seemed to be completely unaware of it.

So this is what she is like.

The princess asked Ruyi to show Lu Chenan the copy of the conditions of several rivers in the south. These were the places she remembered hearing people mention that were hit the hardest. She looked at him expectantly: " If the water level is higher, how do you think these embankments should be reinforced? How much money will it cost? "

Lu Chenan lowered his head and looked carefully, taking a pen and paper to carefully calculate. Time passed little by little, and the room was very quiet. The only sound he could hear was the melting ice sculpture dripping into the copper basin.

Xie Jiayi didn't do anything else but just stared at him and waited.

When Lu Chenan looked up, he found that the princess had been looking at him, and now her eyes were shining. He paused, his throat suddenly itched, and he turned sideways and clenched his fist and coughed a few times.

" Princess, I do have a repair plan, but ... it will cost a huge amount of money. Using it in these places is really ... " There are many places in the country to spend this money, and it would be more appropriate to use it anywhere rather than here.

" Tell me about it in detail, I'll ask later-- " She paused at this point. The two people in Dayin who knew the river best and solved the dam project problem were Lu Chenan and Xu Shixing. It was these two who built the river projects in the north and south. In the following six years, heavy rains came again, but the dams they rebuilt were safe and sound.

Xie Jiayi clenched her hands and said slowly, " I will ask His Royal Highness the Crown Prince later. He knows the river best. " Such a project is only possible if the Crown Prince and His Majesty are convinced. The remaining issue is money. Money is really a good thing ... Fortunately, she is a rich person, and there is no shortage of rich people in the capital. She can make money ...

What Lu Chenan heard the most was the story of the prince and the princess being childhood sweethearts. Many people even guessed that the princess would be the prince's consort. But looking at the princess' reaction when she mentioned the prince, it seemed that this was not the case.

He pushed the paper over to the princess, then pointed to the numbers he had marked and explained them to her.

Xie Jiayi tried hard to understand and remember what he said. In addition to height, length, structure, diversion, drainage, water storage ... there was also water volume, water level, and numerical values ... She soon became dizzy.

After Lu Chenan finished speaking, he looked at her.

Xie Jiayi also looked at Lu Chenan.

Lu Chenan clenched his fist and coughed twice, " Princess, please tell me what you don't understand. "

Xie Jiayi looked carefully at the rice paper that was filled with structure drawings and numbers, moved her lips, and found that she didn't even know where to start. The things she had just tried so hard to remember had already become a mess. The key point was that after it became a mess, she didn't know who ate it up, as if there was nothing left.

Her face turned slightly red, and she said confidently: " Say it again, I didn't hear it clearly. " As she spoke, she leaned forward to show that she would listen carefully this time.

Lu Chenan paused, swallowed the words " Princess, what didn't you hear clearly " , and repeated the contents of the paper from beginning to end. Then you looked at me, I looked at you, the princess couldn't help licking her lips, and there seemed to be no place to put the brush in her hand, so Lu Chenan pushed the jade pen holder on which the brush was placed forward. The princess put down her brush seriously and placed it neatly. This time she didn't look at Lu Chenan anymore and cleared her throat. " Say it again. "

Lu Chenan: ..... It is indeed a bit complicated, especially since the princess obviously has no knowledge of rivers.

This time he spoke more carefully and slowly, and finally saw the princess nod several times. When he finished speaking again, it was getting slightly darker outside.

Xie Jiayi was more anxious than anyone else. She was anxious to get the money, anxious to explain the plan to the prince, anxious ... She clearly understood a lot, but why did she still not know where to start? At this time, Ruyi beside her whispered to remind her:

" Princess, it's getting late ..." Ruyi thought that if she didn't leave now, she would miss dinner.

Unexpectedly, the word " too late " made Xie Jiayi even more panicked. She had to be quick. She looked at the drawings one by one, let out a long breath, and imagined that the person sitting in front of her was the prince. She had to convey her words clearly and convince him. Xie Jiayi looked at the patterns drawn by Lu Chenan on the paper. They were straight and horizontal, and the dense small characters were neat and beautiful. This was the fifth time Lu Chenan explained it to her ...

She tried hard to say something, and Lu Chenan looked at her encouragingly.

Xie Jiayi opened her mouth, then suddenly lowered her head into the crook of her elbows on the pearwood table.

The princess's sudden action made Lu Chenan stunned, and he saw the girl opposite him just folding her arms and lowering her head, motionless. The candles were already lit in the wing room, and Lu Chenan could see the hair on the extremely white neck of the person opposite him trembling, so he could only look away and focus on the flickering candlelight beside him. The girl who had buried her head finally spoke with tears in her eyes: " This is really too difficult ..." Why is the gap between people so big? Why was she reborn? It would be useful if someone like Lu Chenan was reborn ... Is God blind ... Before she was reborn, she was a queen who only knew how to eat, drink and have fun. After she was reborn, she was still a princess who only knew how to eat and drink ...

Why didn't she read more books before? Except for her martial arts being better than others, she is inferior to others in every other aspect.

" How come she can recite poetry and tell history? She can understand everything as soon as she hears it, and she can even discuss it with the ministers ..." Xie Jiayi's unclear voice came, and she suddenly sat up straight, " Tell me again. "

Lu Chenan glanced at her, and apart from her wet eyelashes, nothing seemed to have happened.

The girl looked stubborn, trying to be nonchalant and asking him to say it again, as if she hadn't said it five times before. But Lu Chenan still noticed her eyelashes trembling, and there was a tear on her wet eyelashes, crystal clear and shaky under the candlelight. And she sat with a stern face, looking noble, as if nothing had happened just now.

It was as if she had never complained, let alone cried.

Lu Chenan stood up and said " excuse me " , then moved his stool closer to Xie Jiayi so that they could look at the paper pattern on the table together, and he could also pay attention to the princess's reaction at any time.

The man's clear and deep voice sounded again. This time he spoke slower and more carefully, paying close attention to any reaction of the girl beside him. He even noticed that once she clenched the pen in her hand, he would pause slightly and repeat the previous part in another way. He would not continue until he felt the tension of the person beside him relax.

At this time in the study of the East Palace, Xu Shixing was looking at the news in front of him, his eyes fell on the last four words, " not out yet " .

In the eyes of the world, His Royal Highness the Crown Prince is a gentleman as virtuous as green bamboo and white poplar, and he speaks little and has few desires. However, his eyes are dark and filled with unfathomable darkness.

## Chapter 17

The window of the East Palace study facing the prince's desk was open. A breeze blew, the candlelight flickered, and the light and shadow changed on the prince's fair face. His Royal Highness the Prince picked up the note on the desk and read the investigation about Lu Chenan. He read it very seriously, and nodded and smiled at the end:

" Scholar, elegant, gentle. Yes, she really likes this. " Isn't he like this? Thinking of this, his smile darkened a little. His washed white and slender hands seemed to be stained with the blood of the man in the dungeon in the afternoon. The second prince and the fourth prince were linked together, and various small actions were constantly taking place, while the fourth prince was still dignified, gentle and filial.

Why aren't you behaving well at a time like this?

The only sound in the study was the dripping of ice in the copper basin. He Sheng, who was sitting at the desk, really wished he could be invisible, but unfortunately he couldn't; when he got the news, he simply didn't want to be the one who came to report in person, but unfortunately he had to come.

Gao Sheng stood by the door, feeling even more dissatisfied with the princess. He secretly thought that Miss Mingpei was better.

Unexpectedly, before Xu Shixing had time to find Xie Jiayi, Xie Jiayi came to the East Palace again. The prince, who had just returned to the East Palace after the morning court session, paused and asked the princess what she was doing in the study.

Gao Sheng curled his lips in his heart. What can the princess do? Either eating or playing. Miss Mingpei is not like that. Every time she comes, she is thinking about the clothes and food of the prince. She always mentions the princess. In fact, everyone in the East Palace knows that the princess cannot remember so much. It's because Miss Mingpei cares about her master.

" The princess is having snacks. " Gao Sheng replied.

" She is willing to eat the snacks from the Eastern Palace again. " The prince said this, slowed down his pace, changed into casual clothes, drank half a cup of tea, and then slowly came to the study.

Xie Jiayi had been repeating the river repair plan in her mind over and over since last night. She even had the idea that she would rather move bricks to repair the river herself than to memorize all this stuff. However, after cramming, she seemed to have understood a lot, and she memorized the parts she didn't understand. She kept thinking about it over and over again, and before she knew it, she had eaten several snacks.

When Xu Shixing came in, he saw Xie Jiayi muttering to herself, her eyes slightly straight, with some pink snack crumbs on the corner of her mouth.

He stopped and just looked at her. Everything was still the same as before. Xie Jiayi was usually more dignified than anyone else, but once she had something else on her mind, she

would not care about anything else. Sometimes Xu Shixing even wondered if her heart was so big that it could not accommodate this thing but that thing.

Caixing and Ruyi saw the snack crumbs on the corner of their master's mouth, but they didn't dare to go forward. The princess had been like a madman since she came back last night. She wouldn't let anyone talk to her, and she kept mumbling to herself while taking a bath. When Caixing interrupted her, the princess forgot what she was going to say next. She looked at Caixing anxiously and was about to cry.

Ruyi only thought that the princess had been up all night and couldn't even eat breakfast, so it would be good for her to have a few snacks at this time. She only dared to push the teacup forward, and didn't dare to remind the princess to drink some tea. Wouldn't she feel choked if she ate a few snacks dryly?

Xu Shixing came in and took a look at the two of them. They all retreated to the door to guard. Xu Shixing picked up the teacup and handed it to Xie Jiayi's mouth. She drank it unconsciously. Xu Shixing smiled rarely and reached out to help her wipe the pink dessert residue from the corner of her mouth.

When their skin touched, Xie Jiayi was startled. She came to her senses from the string of numbers that even though she remembered them by heart, made her feel dizzy as if she was riding in a carriage. She quickly moved away and looked at the person opposite her vigilantly. Xu Shixing sneered and stretched out his hand to show her, " You've eaten all over the place. You don't look like a princess of the royal family at all. "

Sure enough, there was a strange smear of powder on Xu Shixing's white thumb.

Xie Jiayi cried out and quickly took out a handkerchief to wipe his face. Xu Shixing held one of her fingers through the handkerchief and asked coaxingly: " Zhao Zhao, what are you thinking about? Tell your third brother. "

Xie Jiayi didn't even want the handkerchief anymore, and pulled her hand away directly. She wanted to give him a cold shoulder and remind him, but then she remembered that the next two things would require the help of His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, so she couldn't give him a cold shoulder at once ...

She simply replied to the prince's words: " Third brother, I want the strongest river channel, the kind that can't be washed away by heavy rain for two months. Can you help me take a look and see if this one is good enough? " Xie Jiayi handed the stack of drawings to Xu Shixing as she spoke, not giving him a chance to ask questions. " Let me finish first, or I won't be able to remember it. "

Xie Jiayi pleaded with a hint of pleading when she said this. She was really tortured by those digital drawings like a person who was dizzy in a carriage. She had endured the dizziness and had managed to hold on until now. Let her speak out quickly, otherwise she would forget more. Because of this, she didn't even dare to sleep, for fear that she would forget it when she woke up.

Xu Shixing's doubts were blocked by Xie Jiayi's eager gaze. He nodded and let her speak. Xie Jiayi stuttered at first, as if she was not sure whether she remembered it correctly. She continued to speak tentatively, becoming more and more proficient, and it was even obvious that she had understood some parts thoroughly.

The more Xu Shixing listened, the more surprised he became. He was surprised at how Xie Jiayi suddenly became interested in these things, and also surprised at how amazing the drawings, ideas and structures were. Xu Shixing, who was quite interested in river engineering, was amazed when he heard them.

Finally, after she finished speaking, Xie Jiayi felt relieved. After two days of bumpy ride on the rugged mountain road, she could finally get off the bus.

Xu Shixing looked at her relief and wanted to laugh, but when he thought about how she had been in the same room with a young man for such a thing for so long, he couldn't laugh anymore. But in the end, he figured out the whole story, it was just for the blueprint.

" Brother Crown Prince, would you like to take a look at it? " What Xie Jiayi wanted was the set of southern river reconstruction maps that the two of them had jointly researched.

" Why did you think of doing this? "

" I want to do something for the country and the people. " Xie Jiayi replied.

When Xie Jiayi said this, Xu Shixing understood. This was Xie Jiayi. She might want to renovate the imperial palace's kitchen and create the best imperial chef in history. The next day, she might be thinking about traveling around the world and becoming the most powerful female hero in the world. It was not surprising that she wanted to serve the country and the people.

She doesn't have a big brain, but she thinks big things. When she is in high spirits, no one can stop her. The more you stop her, the more excited she becomes. When she suffers, she will quietly change her ambitions. Maybe after a while, she will want to be the god of flowers in the world. It is also possible.

Xu Shixing didn't say much when he thought about it, but the person she was looking for this time ... Xu Shixing looked at the drawings in his hand and he really had something in mind.

Xie Jiayi looked at the prince's expression and said crisply, " Brother Prince, is this person very powerful? I think you are more powerful. You can definitely make this picture better. I believe in you. "

Xu Shixing felt that it had been a long time since he had seen Xie Jiayi being so servile and talking to him in such a flattering way. He glanced at her and asked, " Do you believe me, or are you provoking me? "

No one else but Xie Jiayi could be so clumsy in using provocation.

Xie Jiayi was not surprised by the revelation, but continued to provoke: " Just tell me if you can do it or not? "

Xu Shixing looked into her dark, clear eyes, revealing her thoughts. How could she not hide her thoughts? " Do you want to serve the country and the people so much? "

Xie Jiayi nodded quickly. She didn't want her uncle, the emperor, to die.

Xu Shixing saw that there were faint blue spots under her eyes. It was obvious that she had not slept well at night recently, especially yesterday. She was afraid that she would not sleep well after memorizing so much. When she was a child, everyone else remembered everything she read, but she could not. Now she could actually remember all these things ...

" How many hours did you sleep last night? " His voice was light and gentle, as soft as silk.

" Too dumb to sleep. "

"... Are you too stupid to sleep or too stupid to sleep? "

Xie Jiayi held the blueprint and looked at Xu Shixing eagerly. Is it possible? Hurry up, she was anxious!

Xu Shixing couldn't help but reach out to touch her soft hair, but she turned her head away. She probably immediately realized that she needed help from someone, so she looked at him awkwardly, as if she didn't know what to do, and continued to provoke him clumsily: " Brother Crown Prince, can you do this? "

" If you want, I can do it. " Xu Shixing said faintly.

He first asked Gao Sheng to bring all the river drawings in the south, looked through them carefully, and pondered over them for a while. Once he had some ideas in mind, he began to add to and modify them.

Xie Jiayi stayed by his side obediently, and gave him whatever he needed.

It would be fine if the prince didn't do it, but once he did it, he would do it to the best of his ability. Xie Jiayi knew that she would get the best river reconstruction drawings.

The busy schedule lasted until the afternoon. Xie Jiayi accompanied Xu Shixing for lunch. The two did not even take a break and continued to work. When Xu Shixing finally put down his pen, Xie Jiayi knew that she had obtained the river map that should have been available in the 13th year of Yongshou. The next thing was money. If she had money and did a good thing, His Majesty would definitely agree.

Xu Shixing took the teacup handed over by Xie Jiayi and glanced at her. This girl hasn't been so well behaved for a long time. Although he was exhausted from racking his brains, Xu Shixing felt unusually comfortable. The darkness in his heart faded away again this afternoon. He thought that he was the bright and clear-minded Crown Prince, and he would become a kind and benevolent sage king in the future.

In the cool room, with the faint scent of crabapple, on a quiet summer afternoon, watching the person in front of him listening to him attentively, Xu Shixing felt that everything was fine as it was.

It was not until dusk fell that Xie Jiayi and a few others walked out of the East Palace.

Only then did she raise her hand and wipe the corners of her mouth vigorously with a handkerchief. The heat had subsided a lot, the sunset was brilliant, dyeing half the sky red, Xie Jiayi quietly watched the infinitely beautiful sunset.

She finally learned how to act, she could even act out a clumsy provocation.

The 22- year-old queen plays her 16- year-old self, and her acting is already so good.

Xie Jiayi stretched out her hand, as if she could catch the brilliant sunset.

Soon, the whole capital, not only the whole capital, but also the local rich received invitations: the princess was having a grand sixteenth birthday party. The sender also hinted that the prince would also attend the banquet.

Originally, the nobles, the rich and the gentry needed the opportunity to curry favor with the higher-ups. Since the princess had given them face by sending them an invitation, how could the birthday gifts not be elaborate? Hearing that there was a chance for them to meet His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, how could this be possible! The Crown Prince had always been cautious and didn't interact much with court officials and local officials, let alone the royal merchants and wealthy people. How could they have the opportunity to show their faces in front of the future new emperor?



The princess gave them a chance, it depends on whether they understand it or not. This time the gift specifications have been raised to a higher level.

The East Palace

His Royal Highness the Crown Prince picked up the note and smiled: This means you will use me to the fullest.

## Chapter 18

The princess was collecting money, and it was straightforward. The people who sent the birthday invitations were all wealthy families, and the boys who sent the invitations almost said that the birthday gifts must be generous, because the princess would not look down on ordinary gifts.

Even if they knew that the princess was collecting money, how could they not seize the opportunity? They were afraid that if they didn't give enough, they would be outshined by others and fail to leave an impression on the princess.

In the imperial study, Emperor Yongshou heard all this and smiled at Xie Jiayi, who had done all this. " You don't even care about your own reputation? "

" Your Majesty, you speak as if I still have a reputation. " Speaking of Princess Kunyi, the first thing that comes to everyone's mind is probably " domineering " . The princess who was only six or seven years old could almost bite off a piece of flesh from a noble lady's arm, with blood in the corner of her mouth, raised her head and pointed at people and sneered, " You wait " , but the next day this person waited for the end of " skinning the daylily " .

Emperor Yongshou sighed softly. He didn't blame Zhaozhao, but himself. He had heard many things reported in the newspapers that year, and then he knew that so many people laughed at Zhaozhao and looked down on her in private. He had deliberately alienated Pingyang for many years. He ignored Zhaozhao because of Pingyang's death. He gave her honor and favor, but didn't give her anything to live on. That made those villains look down on his Zhaozhao, the only granddaughter of Empress Xiaoyi and the only legitimate daughter of Princess Pingyang. The furious Emperor Yongtai did not think much and took drastic measures. The effect was very good, but it also affected Zhao Zhao's reputation.

" When the weather is hot, you should follow others' example and give out cool drinks; when the weather is cold, you should follow others and give out porridge. Or you can build a golden statue in the temple, or carve some Buddhist scriptures and distribute them. " These are all good deeds that would bring fame, and the noble ladies in the capital love to do them. No matter how many times she has been told, Xie Jiayi has never done them.

She said indifferently, " There is no shortage of people giving out porridge in the capital. " Last year and this year, the grain price was low, so there were more people giving out porridge than in previous years. Many of those who received porridge were from families around the capital, who were not short of porridge, and had their children take it for breakfast. The people who gave out porridge didn't care and just wanted to finish giving it out as soon as possible. She was too idle to join in the fun ...

But when it comes to food, Xie Jiayi blinked her eyes. Since food is so important in the future, she should find someone to help her do the food business. When the time comes, whether the north or the south really needs food, she won't be at a loss. The early bird catches the worm. She is stupid, so she should do it first.

Seeing Xie Jiayi's eyes light up, Emperor Yongshou didn't know what tricks she had come up with. She didn't know how to plan things that were truly beneficial to her, but instead came up with these tricks one after another. Let her be, as long as she is happy. If she doesn't have a good reputation, he will give her a title when the time comes. Who dares to question the character of the emperor who personally approves it?

Emperor Yongshou thought that Xie Jiayi's first words, "I earn money to repair the river in the south for Your Majesty," were just a whim, but he didn't expect that she would actually do it and help Dayin survive. Of course, this happened a year later, and at this time, all the nobles in the capital were talking about the princess' birthday.

The Treasure House opened by the princess and Qian Yingying, where all kinds of things are sold at expensive prices, has been almost sold out these days. Qian Yingying is busy arranging the turnover of goods with her big belly. There is a nanny sent by the princess to help her with her pregnancy, and there is also an imperial physician who specializes in gynecology to take her pulse every day. Qian Yingying is very confident about her belly, but she is more worried about the shop, fearing that the princess will create momentum and she will not be able to help make a fortune.

Qian Yingying was flipping through the inventory in the inner room. Many of the jade vases and vases that were put on display yesterday had already been crossed out today. Then she heard a master and servant talking outside the curtain. It sounded familiar. Qian Yingying looked through the curtain and saw that it was her second sister, the daughter of her second wife Qian Liu, who had just married Song Ziming last month.

Even though she knew they couldn't see her, Qian Yingying still shrank back, her hands gripping the booklet tighter.

"Madam, you didn't see the one in the courtyard over there, drinking the spring water from Qingming Mountain, and eating only red glutinous rice. If the clothes are made of a little coarse material, they will have rashes all over their body." The maid said this and wanted to turn her mouth up to the sky. She was so noble, but she was using the money of their Qian family. Even so, she acted as if she had been insulted. The master just said a word to her, and she turned around and threw everything out to slap her master in the face. The son-in-law actually bowed his head and coaxed her every day.

Qian Lianlian snorted, "She thinks she's so precious that everyone has to flatter her."

The maids hummed along, but the son-in-law was willing to flatter her, so they had no choice.

Su Yan ate coarse rice out of spite, saying that she would not eat "food given out of pity", and vomited for half a day while leaning on the bed, which made Song Ziming's heart ache. The young lady had only been married for half a month, and the son-in-law had already frowned on his young lady. He had not entered the main room for half a month, just because the young lady asked Su Yan to perform the ceremony of a concubine.

But she is a concubine. The girl thought her husband was crazy.

Qian Lianlian was also in pain. She had long dreamed of marrying Song Ziming. Her brother-in-law was the best-looking and most promising man she had ever seen. He was aloof and cold, and one look at him could make her heart beat for half a day. When she knew she could get married, she was so happy that she couldn't sleep. But she didn't expect that it would be so difficult to marry him. It was all because of that vixen.

After the two men picked out two fine jade carvings and left, two more people came in, attracting special attention. It was not because of anything else, but because these two people really did not look like people who could enter the Treasure Pavilion.

They were dressed neatly, but the material was too coarse to look at. They stood straight, just like two soldiers. Everyone guessed correctly that these two were soldiers from the north, and they were the personal soldiers of General Ji De, a former member of the Xie family army in the north. The two had chosen the most respectable clothes to wear when they came to the capital, but when they entered such a place, they found that their most respectable clothes were not as good as those of the shop assistants or the servants who followed the nobles.

Hu Xiaobao muttered quietly, " Why are even the servants wearing silk here ..." Yang Siwu glanced at him and told him to shut up, saying they were here for business. So the two of them pursed their lips to look at the things on the shelf, and the more they looked, the tighter their lips pursed. In Yang Siwu's bag was the wealth that General Ji had accumulated over the years. Before coming here, he and Hu Xiaobao were full of confidence, but after coming here, they felt more and more empty.

" How about ... how about ... we buy the bronze mirror inlaid with gemstones for the princess? " Hu Xiaobao pointed to the bronze mirror at the bottom, which they could still afford.

" What could the princess need from a bronze mirror? " Yang Siwu pursed his lips and continued to look.

The two came with a mission. They heard in the north that many merchants were searching for treasures for the princess' birthday, and then they knew that the princess was so favored.

General Ji was thinking about whether he could meet the princess and ask her to help him pass a letter to His Majesty to help them solve the problem of the Xie family army's pension. In the last two wars, the Xie family army was arranged to rush to the front, and many died and were injured in the war, but the pension was distributed more by those who had connections, and it was almost nothing for them.

So many people are waiting for the pension to live and recover from injuries and illnesses. Many disabled people rely on this pension. Even those with minor injuries, whether it is a facial injury or a lame leg or a broken arm, can no longer serve in the army. Many of them are refugees who joined the army and have lost their land. How can they make a living? They rely on this pension to do some small business, but when they really get it, it is so little that it makes people despair. Not to mention doing business, it is not enough to buy medicine to treat injuries.

General Ji and General Zhao were still supporting the disabled old soldiers, so how could they come up with money to subsidize this batch? They happened to hear the news brought by the merchant, and they specifically inquired about it. Isn't this talking about the little princess of their Xie family army! It turns out that their princess can actually talk to His Majesty, so wouldn't their old subordinates also have a backer! Although they are all in the northern border, they are all

generals and soldiers, and there is a big difference between those who have people in the capital.

When they came, the brothers all envied them for being able to make this trip, but Yang Siwu felt bitter as he weighed the silver in his bag and the things on the shelf.

How could they meet the princess? The princess knew who they were ... After all, the princess was only five or six years old when she left the North.

In the end, the two of them bought the bronze mirror inlaid with jewels.

The Lu family also received the invitation from the princess. The old lady and the heads of the family all thought that the princess must have given Lu Chenan face. They were overthinking it. The princess saw that they were one of the four richest people in Jiangnan, so this invitation must be sent.

The maid fanned the old lady. The old lady looked at her second and third sons and two daughters-in-law sitting below and asked slowly: "What do you think the princess meant?"

Why did she stand up for that unlucky guy?

The two families have pondered this issue privately, so why else ... The third family drank a sip of tea, and he and his wife couldn't say anything, so of course he liked Lu Chenan.

No matter how bad Lu Chenan's fate was, they had to admit that Lu Chenan was good-looking. He didn't look like anyone from their Lu family at all. He looked too good. Everyone had long guessed that this must be because he looked like his mother who was a mistress.

If she wasn't a beauty, she couldn't have charmed the steady elder brother so much. When she brought him back, she actually gave Qinghui Courtyard to this concubine. She was really being very careful with her son. Not to mention the elder sister-in-law, they all felt it was not right.

Otherwise, how could the elder sister-in-law hate a nine-year-old child so much that she wanted him to live in the horse stable?

No one spoke, but they all thought of this. The old lady squinted her eyes, and the two daughters-in-law winked at each other: If the princess really likes Lu Chenan and wants to be his concubine, I don't know whether the old lady who values the reputation of the Lu family so much will agree or not.

The old lady coughed up some phlegm and cleared her throat: "This child is also blessed."

Then she said to the housekeeper's second daughter-in-law, "You should also send more things over there. The last time I saw the child, he was still wearing old clothes from previous years. How can a young man from a noble family in the capital wear cotton? Don't embarrass our Lu family."

The two daughters-in-law were more thoughtful than the other, and they understood immediately: this is a blessing, and they have to dress up Lu Chenan. What else is there to understand?

So when Lu Chenan heard what Mingxin heard from the people below, he coughed so hard that his face turned red.

## Chapter 19

"Sir, they all say that you will be the princess's concubine. What is a concubine?"

Mingxin was bought as a mute slave. She had been following Lu Chenan since she was eight years old. She spent most of her time guarding her master in the remote side yard of the Lu family. She was only fourteen years old this year, so naturally she had no chance to know what a mistress was. At this moment, she looked up at her all-knowing master, waiting for him to tell her the answer like he had done every time before.

But the young master was stunned when he heard this, and suddenly started coughing. He waved the hand holding the scroll to signal Mingxin that he was fine, while the other hand was holding the wall under the corridor, obviously coughing badly.

Mingxin was anxious. How could the master be okay since his face was red from coughing? He panicked and wanted to call the mute slave, but the master raised his hand to stop him and pointed to the round table in the hall. Mingxin hurried in and poured tea and brought it out.

Lu Chenan slowly drank half a cup of tea before his coughing gradually subsided. He sat down, his thumb habitually rubbing his middle and index fingers, and after a while he said to Mingxin: "Don't say these words again. " After a pause, " Especially not to the princess. "

Mingxin was frightened by the young master's coughing. She knew that " face-shou " was not a good word, so she dared not say it again. With tears in her eyes, she sobbed: " I will never say it again. The eldest young master is the princess's face-shou, not the young master ... I will never say it again ... " Thinking of those servants who were in front of the eldest young master, Mingxin got angry and reflected it on the eldest young master.

Lu Chenan: ..... My throat was itchy, and I couldn't help coughing twice before saying, " You can't say that either. "

Mingxin scratched his head. He couldn't say anything, so he would say what he could. " Today is the master's-- " Before he could finish this sentence, he heard the attentive voice of the Lu Mansion's chief steward leading people over.

The person who came was none other than Ruyi who was accompanying the princess. He bowed and saluted, saying with a smile: " Our master is here to congratulate Master Lu on his birthday. " After saying that, he turned sideways, and a group of servants came in behind him carrying gifts.

The Lu family's chief steward looked at the gifts being carried up with envy, and then looked at his own handsome young master. It seemed that the rumors were not groundless, as the betrothal gifts had been delivered ... They said it was a birthday gift, but unless the princess was attracted to the seventh young master, how could their Lu family be worthy of the princess' birthday gift? The difference of one word can only be understood but not expressed in words. There were many servants outside who had the same idea as him. They all quietly stuck their heads out to look in. Although their Lu family was rich, they could not be compared with the royal family. Thinking of this, they all secretly looked at the handsome young master who lived in the side yard ... As expected, being good at studying is not as good as being born well.

Ruyi pointed to the two boxes in front and said, " These are all the good books that the princess has collected. " She then pointed to the two boxes in the back and said, " These are the finest writing instruments, inkstones, and paper that the princess asked me to pick for you. The princess asked you to prepare well for the autumn examination. "

Butler Lu nodded and listened beside him: Look, even the young master's Autumn Examination Princess is taken to heart.

After Ruyi led the people from the Princess's Mansion away, Mingxin shouted twice, and many of the servants in the Lu Mansion left reluctantly. Mingxin said happily: " I was just about to say that today is the master's birthday, but coincidentally the Princess' birthday gift has arrived. " At this point Mingxin couldn't help but say: " Sir, why is the Princess so good to you? "

Lu Chenan raised his hand, clenched his fist, and coughed twice before saying, " Don't talk nonsense. "

Mingxin: He didn't lie, he was telling the truth. In these years, besides him and the mute slave, the princess was the first one who remembered the young master's birthday. They could only prepare a bowl of longevity noodles for the young master, but the princess gave the young master these good things and was still thinking about the young master's autumn examination.

" Why don't you find someone to pack up the things? " Lu Chenan reminded him, and Mingxin put the problem behind him and happily arranged for people to do the work.

Lu Chenan looked at the books in the first box: many of them were precious collections, and there were also internal books for the Imperial College's imperial examinations. He leaned over and took out a book, gently flipping through it. The summer wind blew the leaves, making a rustling sound.

That evening, when a head popped up again on the wall, everyone in the yard was much calmer. Only the two servants who had not been sent away in time covered their mouths. Lu Chenan glanced at the mute slave and Mingxin, and they immediately went to the two new servants. They would teach the two side yards the rules of service.

The princess smiled and watched Lu Chenan in the corridor reading the book "Shanhe Zhi" which she had sent him. Lu Chenan had even begged her, the queen, for this book, which showed that he really liked it. This time, she simply sent the book he liked to him. Xie Jiayi looked at the Lord Lu she had chosen with satisfaction.

This time, she could train Master Lu and help him avoid death at the age of 25. With Master Lu around, Song Ziming was nothing. She didn't even need to do anything to suppress him.

The princess was really more and more satisfied the more she looked at him. She had to keep this man, as he was someone she could use greatly.

Seeing this, Lu Chenan turned his face slightly, and the summer night breeze blew across his face, and he felt that the heat on his face had faded a little. He closed the book and stood up from the corridor, saying softly: " I greet the princess. "

Xie Jiayi jumped from the wall and landed lightly. With the experience from last time, she climbed fast and well this time, and landed lightly and steadily .

" This princess is here to congratulate you on your birthday, and would like to take my birthday gift as well. " After looking around, Xie Jiayi turned around and said to Lu Chenan. Lu Chenan was stunned. He had never seen anyone ask for a birthday gift so directly.

Xie Jiayi looked at his expression, stepped back slightly and asked: " Why? You didn't plan to send a gift, did you? " She didn't believe that Lu Chen'an didn't know her birthday was on the day of the beginning of autumn. Is there anyone in the capital who doesn't know? Princess Kunyi's birthday was widely sent out invitations. Who doesn't know that this is to notify the

people who received the invitations to bring gifts to the door. If the person herself is not free and can only send a gift, it would be even better ... She didn't believe that the person who arranged it would not convey this clearly ...

Lu Chenan looked at Xie Jiayi's sparkling eyes that contained a little doubt, like a confused little deer. He cleared his throat and said, " Of course I gave it to you, but I don't know yet-- "

" Then you don't have to worry. This princess will come to inform you personally. "

Lu Chenan had never seen himself arrange his birthday gift so clearly, and he had to go to the door in person to ask for it. The key point was that Princess Kunyi was very confident.

Xie Jiayi raised her hand, and Ruyi, who followed silently behind her, handed over the blueprint of the southern waterways that had been revised by the prince and presented it to Lu Chenan, " Sir, please take the trouble to finalize this blueprint. It will be a birthday gift for this princess. "

Xie Jiayi thought for a moment and added, " Of course, don't delay the Autumn Examination in August. " Don't let her be reborn and delay Lord Lu, whom she values so much. It would be a sin if she fails to be selected as the third place in the imperial examination.

Xie Jiayi took another look at the heavy drawings. It would definitely take a long time to complete such a task. She also told the other party not to delay the Autumn Examination. The princess felt that she was implicit and clear in her meaning: try not to go out and hang out in the future, and sleep a few hours less ... so that you can do both the engineering and the imperial examination. Thinking of this, even though the princess was thick-skinned, she felt a little embarrassed. She thought that the bird's nest and ginseng sent today were not enough, so she asked Ruyi to pick more good ones from the warehouse and send them back.

Lord Lu was the first clue she grasped among the myriad of clues, and there could not be any mistakes.

Lu Chenan took the drawing and put it away carefully. Before he could say anything, he saw snacks and dishes already set out in the yard.

Xie Jiayi even added a bit of attentiveness: " This princess will celebrate your birthday. " After saying that, she looked at Lu Chenan eagerly. She, the Princess Kunyi, climbed over the wall in the middle of the night just to celebrate his birthday. The intention of winning him over and cultivating him was so obvious that a smart person like Lu Chenan must have understood it.

Xie Jiayi felt that since she had been so good to Lu Chenan this time, he would definitely stand by her side for the rest of his life and trample Song Ziming, the Duke of England , and the like to death ... Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi felt happy, as if she had really trampled on those two people who stood by the Empress Dowager Zhang Jinyu and were willing to risk their lives to kill her, the queen who had no one in the court.

As for other things, Xie Jiayi was not worried at all. She knew that Lu Chen'an had a cousin whom he loved very much, but unfortunately they were not destined to be together. She heard that the cousin died early. Xie Jiayi, who became the queen, was still gossipy. She had asked Lu Chen'an when she had the chance. After all, he was the most talented and brilliant scholar in the capital, and there were countless ladies who wanted to marry him, but he was alone until his death.

At that time, Lu Chenan paused, probably because he was really surprised by the Queen's question. After a while, the Queen finally heard him admit that he had someone he liked, and that person was his cousin, and that they had no chance to be together for a long time. Even the stupid Empress Xie knew at that time that she shouldn't ask any more questions. She had long heard that beautiful women are doomed to fail. Cai Xing swore to her that Lu Chenan didn't pass the imperial examination and the girl died.

Xie Jiayi couldn't help but sigh when looking at Lu Chenan in front of her. What a pity.

I don't know whether I feel sorry for my cousin or Lu Chenan who never got married for my cousin. The princess brought wine from the Western Regions in the glass wine pot and luminous cup. It was poured into the specially prepared glass cup, which was gorgeous and charming, as if it contained a dream.

A crescent moon hangs on the treetops, and the small courtyard is shrouded in the bright moonlight.

Lu Chenan felt a little tipsy after just one glass of red wine. He raised his eyes slightly and looked at the person opposite him who was looking at the moon with her chin in her hand. The girl's cheeks were slightly red. She didn't speak for a long time, just staring at the waning moon in the sky.

Except for the day when he was brought back to the Lu Mansion, the person in front of him was the first person to sit at the same table with him to drink and watch the moon.

Lu Chenan lowered his eyes and looked at his hand holding the wine cup. Princess Kunyi has always been the most special person to him. He had seen her a long time ago through a portrait. They told him: This girl is deeply loved by the emperor, the master can take his time to pursue her.

For so many years, Lu Chenan has always been content with what he has. Tonight was the first time he thought: there was another possibility for his life.

Lu Chenan raised his hand and drank the wine in the glass: Don't be greedy for wine, don't be greedy for pleasure, and don't be greedy for the moonlight.

But she heard the person on the opposite side: " ... Don't ... ah " . Seeing Lu Chenan drinking the wine that could not be called back, Xie Jiayi sighed. Of course, she wanted to celebrate this man's birthday today, but also wanted to urge him to study harder. He had to draw and read at the same time. There were not many days left before the autumn examination. She was really afraid that she would delay Lord Lu's chance of winning the third place in the imperial examination.

I was thinking of drinking some red wine to cheer myself up, and reading all 300 articles by candlelight tonight ... Before I could even say anything to encourage her, she drank another glass.

" Are you dizzy? "

Lu Chenan supported his forehead, raised his eyes and smiled: " It's okay. "

" So are you going to read tonight? " Xie Jiayi asked earnestly, " Time is money. On your birthday, I helped you spend an hour, which was equivalent to a whole night for you. Now that your birthday is over, you must concentrate on revising your drawings and prepare well for the autumn examination. " Diligence makes perfect, Lord Lu.



Lu Chenan looked at Xie Jiayi for a long time and suddenly laughed.

A smile is like a blue lotus blooming under the moon, with indescribable grace.

Xie Jiayi was so amused that she was stunned, and suddenly realized a problem that she had overlooked: Lord Lu was not only brilliant, but he was also good-looking.

I don't think it's a pity.

"Is the princess leaving?" Lu Chenan asked with a smile.

Xie Jiayi nodded and asked tentatively: "What about you?" "You are not going to sleep, are you ... Thinking that Song Ziming, that bastard, must still be scheming to climb up, and the Prince of England might be holding a banquet to hook up with some senior official in the court, Xie Jiayi was really anxious.

Under the moonlight, the girl thought she was being tactful and reserved, but she didn't know that in Lu Chenan's eyes her intentions were so clear and thorough, just like the peony blooming in the medicine garden under the moonlight, which was clearly visible.

She wanted to win me over.

And help me become successful.

How interesting.

Lu Chenan looked at the princess who couldn't hide her thoughts at all, and said slowly: "You should study by candlelight at night to prepare for the autumn exam." As expected, the girl smiled happily, like the wind blowing open peonies, full of joy. But he had to hide his joy and advised her seriously: "You should also take care of your health." He was afraid that he would really pay too much attention to his health and would not study hard, so he added tactfully: "But at this age, you should work hard to gain fame and fortune."

Lu Chenan saw every detail of her expression: proud, testing, reminding, pretending to be reserved, self-righteous, happy ...

Everyone says that Princess Kunyi is domineering because of her favor.

It turns out that everyone was wrong.

The handsome young man in the moonlight was slightly tipsy after two glasses of red wine. He was drawn into the world of mortals. He said softly, "The princess is right." As soon as he finished speaking, he saw her joy again as he wished.

Lu Chenan raised his head and looked at the waxing moon in the sky that the princess had been watching for half a day: the night of the summer solstice moon was his birthday.

It is said that on the day of his birthday, the whole mansion was filled with joy, and even outside the mansion, there was joy as well.

Lu Chenan had never thought there was anything happy about his birthday until tonight.

## Chapter 20

The capital city has been getting more and more lively these days, and it reached its peak on the day of the Beginning of Autumn. It was because of the princess' birthday banquet. All the treasures and treasures in the world were brought into the capital city, and wealthy merchants and dignitaries from all over the country came to the capital city with invitations from the princess's mansion.

The birthday gifts that Yang Siwu and Hu Xiaobao from the north spent nearly 1,000 taels of silver given by General Ji to buy were mixed in among them, and they were inconspicuous. The things and invitations were delivered, but looking at the endless stream of people and boxes, Yang Siwu, who squeezed out of the crowd in front of the corner gate of the Princess's Mansion, looked at Hu Xiaobao and smiled bitterly.

The two retreated to a corner and looked at the people who had been giving gifts since the daybreak. They didn't speak for a long time. It was Hu Xiaobao who broke the almost hopeless silence first, " Brother Yang, should we go back or – ? " If we don't go back, we will have to pay for each day in the capital. But if we just go back like this, we will be even more unwilling. Yang Siwu looked at the crowd and said in a hard voice: " Wait a little longer, let's think of a solution. " That's what he said, but the two of them were just soldiers, what could they think of? General Ji probably didn't expect that a gift of one thousand taels of silver was very attractive in the north, but in the capital, in the princess's mansion, it might not even make a sound. Originally, he thought that after seeing their invitations and gifts, the princess might meet them, but now he was afraid that their invitations and gifts would not even reach the princess. Here, Yang Siwu was gnashing his teeth and Hu Xiaobao was frowning as they watched the crowd and thought of a solution.

The guests who were qualified to enter the Princess's Mansion felt that it was worth it. Not only did they receive gifts personally bestowed by His Majesty, but the one who sent them was actually His Majesty's eunuch Xi. This ... This was an unexpected surprise that they could talk about for years when they returned to their hometowns. Some people who had just been complaining were now half satisfied.

The previous complaint was not because of anything else, but because the princess's qualification to enter the mansion to celebrate her birthday was simple and crude. There were experts counting and estimating the value of the gifts at the corner gate, and the one with the highest bid could enter.

There were local tycoons who kept increasing the price just to see the prince. For the first time, the wealthy merchants were treated as if they were the same as the marquises in the capital, and were politely ushered into the princess's mansion. This was really a clear price tag, with no deception for anyone.

Finally, Eunuch Xi came out of the crowd, wiping his sweat and following the people from the Princess's Mansion to the backyard, he saw the little princess sitting in the flower hall and listening to the accounts seriously, and Eunuch Xi couldn't help laughing. He had to talk to His Majesty about it when he got back, and I'm afraid His Majesty would be happy too. How could there be such a good day, the birthday boy would just sit here and start counting the birthday gifts.

As soon as Xie Jiayi saw the eunuch Xi, she came up to him with a smile and said, " Thank you very much for being so kind as to entertain me. "

Eunuch Xi hurriedly said he didn't dare, " How could I have the face to do that? The princess has ordered me not to stay in the front yard for an hour or two. Even if she asked me to serve tea and water to the guests, I would be happy. "

Before he finished speaking, someone had already brought a small stool to Eunuch Xi. Eunuch Xi could not refuse, knowing that the princess was concerned about his health as she was old and had been away for half a day, so he sat down with his body tilted. He chatted with the princess for a few more words, and then happily returned to the palace with the good things that the princess had picked out for His Majesty.

Eunuch Xi left and went to the Princess's Mansion, where His Royal Highness the Crown Prince entered the flower hall. He saw Xie Jiayi put down the account book and stood up, saying enthusiastically: " Brother Crown Prince, why are you here just now? The guests are waiting. " Xu Shixing felt something was not right when hearing these words, but he couldn't tell what was wrong for a moment. Gao Sheng, who was following him, also felt something was not right. Xie Jiayi had already brought the tea. Xu Shixing drank two sips of tea to moisten his throat. He was satisfied when he heard Xie Jiayi urging him, " Let's go over there and show the guests a good look. " After receiving the money, people must be satisfied. Xie Jiayi was just doing business, and she would never bully customers with her big store. She would definitely make them get their money's worth.

As he spoke, he reminded Xu Shixing: " Brother Crown Prince, smile more when the time comes. "

Xu Shixing glanced at her unhappily, but she still had a smile on her face. As I said before, a man who knows the current situation is a hero, and Xie Jiayi is the one who deserves it. At this time, she makes money by relying on the prince, so she has no intention of offending her temporary financial sponsor.

" Are you still thirsty, Prince? Are you hot? "

Xu Shixing lost his temper at the attentiveness. Just as he gave her a good look, he heard: " Since the prince is not thirsty or hot, let's go over quickly and don't keep the guest waiting for too long. "

Gao Sheng finally understood what was wrong. This princess was like the mother in the building, and his prince was like an oiran who was urged by his mother to meet guests ... Just thinking about this made Gao Sheng feel blasphemous. If it weren't for the master in front of him, he would have wanted to slap himself twice. But looking at the enthusiastic princess, and then looking at the prince who was reluctant but still followed the princess to the front, this feeling was really lingering.

Gao Sheng followed behind and heard the little ancestor in front of him chattering: " Brother Crown Prince hasn't given me a birthday gift yet, right? I don't want anything. Brother Crown Prince plays the guqin well, how about playing a song for me in the front yard? "

Oh my god, Gao Sheng's lips trembled when he heard this. He even wanted His Highness to perform a talent show ...

" If you don't want to play, then don't play. Can you write a calligraphy for me in court? " Xie Jiayi was anxious. She had received so much money from so many people. If the prince didn't stay for a while and perform something, her conscience would be unbearable ...

If it wasn't for the fact that today was Xie Jiayi's sixteenth birthday, Xu Shixing really wanted to tie this girl up and interrogate her ... But in the end he couldn't stand her soft words anymore, and she stopped calling him " Crown Prince Brother " . Probably knowing that he was asking

too much, he kept calling him " Third Brother " every time. Finally he let out a long breath and nodded slightly with reserve.

Just write.

Just as he nodded, he heard the person next to him heaving a sigh of relief as if he had accomplished something, and said happily as if he had made a big deal: " I knew that the Crown Prince was very generous. " The goal was achieved, " Third Brother " became " Crown Prince " again . Xu Shixing glanced at the person next to him, but since the person had achieved his goal, he didn't care about these things.

Xie Jiayi thought that Xu Shixing was not generous, and in her opinion, he was the most petty. But she heard that corrupt officials love to praise their integrity, and shrews like others to say that they are shy and can't talk, so Xu Shixing must like to hear others say that he is generous. On this day, except for His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, all the guests had a great time. Everyone came to the Princess's Mansion with precious gifts, and everyone left very satisfied. After Xu Shixing completed his task in the front yard and left, he couldn't even find a chance to see Xie Jiayi again. He still had a lot of government affairs to deal with. He sat patiently for a while. The servant he sent to look for someone came back only to say that the princess was busy. He then heard that when he went to look for her, the princess had gone somewhere else to be busy.

In the end, Gao Sheng found the princess who was so busy that she had obviously forgotten that there was a prince in the mansion. Xie Jiayi seemed surprised to see Xu Shixing and blurted out, " Why hasn't the prince left yet? "

Following the prince's Gao Sheng and He Sheng Wu Yan: ...

This is the first time I have seen someone who dares to use and then throw away His Highness. Xu Shixing didn't say anything, just looked at Xie Jiayi. Xie Jiayi, who was too busy to think clearly, realized from the quiet atmosphere that what she said was indeed inappropriate. She explained it for the good performance of the prince today, " I thought you were busy and it was a mess here. "

This sentence at least has some humanity, Gao Sheng and He Sheng thought silently. Xu Shixing glanced at Gao Sheng, who then led his men out of the hall. He glanced at Xie Jiayi, who was sitting on the side, and slowly drank the tea. After sitting for a while, he took out a brocade box and pushed it in front of Xie Jiayi: " This is a birthday gift for you. Take it and play with it. "

Looking at the familiar brocade box and the disappearance of the voices in the distance , Xie Jiayi finally felt as if she had lived her life again.

She knew that inside was the white jade hairpin carved by the prince himself, which contained a small mechanism. She looked up at the man in front of her and wanted to ask: Did he agree to her last request?

But how would the person in front of me know?

It turned out that she really went back to six years ago, from the age of sixteen to twenty-two.

She thought it would be the best six years, but behind the splendor there were lice crawling.

Whenever she thought about it, she could taste the bitter medicine, which she ate and her son ate.

She heard the prince's voice, " Mother said that you haven't been to Changchun Palace for a long time. She missed you very much. Today, she personally cooked your favorite dish to celebrate your birthday. "

Xie Jiayi seemed to be able to hear the sound of blood flowing in her veins. Her throat was bitter and she couldn't speak. She was no longer the Crown Princess. Would there be a reunion at tonight's banquet?

Her mother said that women are most afraid of complaints. She has to choose every path by herself, and she has no regrets after making a move. She doesn't complain. Xie Jiayi told herself over and over again that she has no regrets after making a move. She doesn't complain. Suddenly I heard the voice of someone next to me: " Zhao Zhao, what's wrong? "

Xie Jiayi looked up at the prince: It's nothing, this time she won't walk the path ahead, everything is fine. She chose the path herself every time, and she must make no regrets. She is stupid, so she can't blame others.

After realizing the prince was suddenly approaching, Xie Jiayi realized that her hand was shaking uncontrollably when she tried to take the teacup. She looked at her shaking right hand in surprise, and suddenly understood:

She didn't blame anyone, but she hated the person in front of her.

How can we not keep our promises, no matter how difficult they are?

Xie Jiayi looked down at her right hand, which was slowly returning to normal, and then she looked up and said to Xu Shixing with a smile: " Your Highness, I have to get busy. "

The smile was stiff, and the tactful way of seeing the guest off was also stiff.

The impatience in her eyes is so bad that she doesn't even bother to hide it. She throws it away after using it. This is what people like Xie Jiayi should be talking about. But she clearly lets people know that she is like this. Next time when you beg her with soft words and a smile, will you still say no?

Xu Shixing withdrew his hand, he also had a temper, and was just as stiff: " Princess, there is a small banquet at Changchun Palace tonight, you probably don't have time to go, right? "

" Go. " She should take Zhang Jinyu to see the empress dowager's excellent role at this time.

Xu Shixing stood up and was about to leave but suddenly turned around and grabbed Xie Jiayi's wrist.

Xie Jiayi felt that her wrist was held tightly, with no chance of escape.

Xu Shixing stared into her eyes and whispered, " Zhao Zhao, you've been making trouble for so long, it's time for you to have enough. "

Make trouble?

It turned out that Xu Shixing thought she was just throwing a tantrum.

He would understand tonight that she was not making trouble with him.

She is busy too.

When the front yard of the Princess's Mansion was completely quiet, the back yard began to get busy. The Princess was putting on her makeup. She was wearing a blood-red pomegranate skirt that trailed the ground, a violet embroidered shirt with large sleeves, the rings and pendants around her waist were made of emerald jade that His Majesty had just awarded her, and the hairpin she wore was a jewel-studded crabapple hairpin.

When the princess came out, the servants in the mansion were silent for a moment. They had seen the princess jumping around many times, but they had never seen her dressed up like this. Nanny Chen quietly turned her head and wiped away her tears. Her little princess had really grown up. Looking at the princess dressed up, she seemed to see the young Empress Xiaoyi, still waters running deep.

It was also like Princess Pingyang on her wedding day. After putting on her makeup, the princess said to her before getting into the sedan chair: " Mammy, the Crown Prince is unhappy. I'm afraid I won't be able to return to the capital often in the future. " Princess Pingyang, who always loved to laugh, had an expression that made it hard to tell whether she was happy or sad at that moment.

Ming Pei was summoned from Haitang Palace to the Princess's Mansion. She was almost stunned by the heavily made-up Princess. Ming Pei clenched her hands unconsciously. This Princess made her feel strange, noble and awe-inspiring. But after glancing at her, she never looked at her again, as if all the suffering she had endured in the past few months was not worth a glance from her.

" Lingjiao, Mingpei, lift the princess's skirt. " To Mingpei, Nanny Chen's voice was full of humiliation. She was actually asked to lift the princess's skirt with the little maids in the mansion in public. Mingpei remained calm and natural, bowed and responded, and slowly walked towards the fiery red skirt behind the princess. However, her heart had already been rubbed by this scene, and she secretly made up her mind: it was not that she wanted to betray the master, but that the princess could not tolerate her at all, and it was everyone in Haitang Palace who forced her to humiliate her. For today's humiliation, she would make these people pay for it one day.

No one knew the humiliation and determination burning in the heart of the humble girl at this moment.

Except Xie Jiayi, but she doesn't care.

When they arrived at the gate of Changchun Palace, Xie Jiayi looked at Changchun Palace from her sedan chair. The six-year-old girl was wandering in the palace, and everyone was watching and whispering. Only in Changchun Palace would someone care if she was hungry or cold, as if she had returned to her home in the north. Even His Majesty knew that the Empress of Changchun Palace and this little mute from the north were particularly compatible. Before His Majesty showed his attention to her, the Empress of Changchun Palace had already squatted down lovingly and personally wiped the dust off her face.

Her words touched the six-year-old Xie Jiayi, " This little face looks so much like your mother's. It should be clean and pretty, so that your mother will be happy looking at you in heaven, right?

" That was the first kindness Xie Jiayi, who came to the capital from the north with thorns all over her body, received. It was the first time that six-year-old Xie Jiayi shed tears in front of outsiders.

She missed her mother, and she liked the person who mentioned her mother so tenderly. From then on, apart from His Majesty, she treated the Empress of Changchun Palace and the Duke of Ying as her relatives, and spoke for them with a whip in hand. Little did she know that they were all devoted to protecting Zhang Jinyu, the heirloom of the family, and worked together to push Zhang Jinyu to the position of imperial concubine, just waiting for her death to push her to the position of empress.

" Changchun Palace " written in duck-head green on a black background . After a while, she extended her hand to Nanny Chen who was waiting in front of her. She stood up slowly, got off the sedan chair, and walked slowly into Changchun Palace.

Everyone in Changchun Palace, including Concubine De and Aunt Liu, who came out to greet her, were all stunned by the princess's aura. The princess had not been to Changchun Palace for three months, and when she came again, she was like a different person. Concubine De couldn't show her prepared affection naturally, and Aunt Liu, who had originally planned to greet her enthusiastically, didn't dare to act rashly.

At this moment, they all realized that this was a true royal family, the only legitimate bloodline of Emperor Yuanhe and Empress Xiaoyi, the daughter of Princess Pingyang, the most noble royal family of the Dayin Dynasty.

Xie Jiayi raised her chin slightly, and with just one glance, everyone in Changchun Palace fell silent.

To such a person, even enthusiasm is presumptuous.

She was wearing a fiery red pomegranate long skirt, a wide-sleeved khaki shirt embroidered with gold thread, jade so green that it seemed to be dripping with water, and a dazzling crabapple flower hairpin in her raven hair. She was Princess Kunyi, who exuded majesty and dignity at first sight, so noble that people dared not look directly at her.

until a voice called " His Royal Highness the Crown Prince has arrived! " that broke the spell of silence in front of Changchun Palace. Xie Jiayi turned around and met the eyes of Xu Shixing who walked in. The former bowed slightly, and her red skirt moved like ripples on water, as if it would directly touch people's hearts.

Xu Shixing's eyelashes trembled slightly, and he raised his hand to call out. Xie Jiayi turned and walked inside, and the crowd of heads kneeling below stood up and started to get busy again. De Fei wanted to reach out and pull Xie Jiayi to sit on the three-screen couch in front, but Xie Jiayi had already sat down on the right side with the help of Nanny Chen. De Fei's face froze, and she had to sit down with Nanny Liu. The prince sat down in the first seat on the left, and when he looked up, he met Ming Pei's timid gaze standing behind the princess. She seemed to be aware of the prince's gaze and quickly hid her hands behind her. When she moved, the prince saw the obvious burns on her hands.

The prince drank his tea in silence, with his brows lowered, and no one knew what he was thinking.

De Fei noticed that since she sat down, Xie Jiayi neither touched the snacks nor drank the tea from Changchun Palace. Her eyes flickered and she said with a smile: " The princess used to love the snacks in my palace the most. How come the princess has grown up and our snacks don't please her anymore? "

Xie Jiayi replied: " As people grow older, their tastes will naturally change. Your Majesty doesn't need to worry about it anymore. "

Xu Shixing's hand paused, and the cup lid hit the teacup, making a crisp " clang " sound.

Madam Liu's fair face was full of smiles: " Early this morning, the Queen was busy sifting powder and picking crabapple flowers. Even the fine hairs in the bird's nest were picked out by the Queen one by one. The Queen loves the princess, and even this old servant feels moved when seeing this. I may say something offensive to the Princess, but if our little princess is to live, she must have a beautiful and lovely master like the Princess ... The Queen loves the Princess as if she were her own little princess. "

These words made Empress Defei wipe her eyes with a handkerchief, " Look, Madam, you are old and confused. Why are you saying these things on such a happy day? "

Xu Shixing exerted a little force on the cup and then slowly loosened his grip.

This was what Xie Jiayi was used to hearing. People in the palace said that Concubine De had lost her daughter and the princess had lost her mother. The two of them got along so well that Concubine De loved her like her own daughter.

The daughter of Concubine De died when she was one year old. At that time, Emperor Yongshou was still in the Eastern Palace and loved this youngest daughter very much, which made Concubine Shu full of complaints. In the end, she killed the little princess, which led to the witchcraft in her palace, and even caused the eldest prince who was favored by Emperor Yuanhe to fall out of favor. Some people also say that Concubine De was a blessing in disguise. When the eldest prince fell out of favor with Emperor Yuanhe, Concubine De's third prince caught the eye of Emperor Yuanhe, was personally taught by Emperor Yuanhe, and was later made the crown prince.

Defei saw from the corner of her eye that Xie Jiayi showed no sign of emotion, and she spat in her heart, saying that she was indeed heartless.

The heartless Xie Jiayi directly canceled the banquet and just said that everyone was just sitting for a while to celebrate her birthday, as she would have to leave the palace soon.

" Still busy? " Xu Shixing's voice was slightly cold, which made Concubine De frown. She blamed her son for being so indifferent to the princess, which was why she couldn't get her to stay. On the one hand, she was satisfied with her son's attitude towards the princess, but on the other hand, she was worried that Changchun Palace and the Eastern Palace had obviously failed to win over the princess.

Only Xie Jiayi could hear the sarcasm in Xu Shixing's voice, but he couldn't say it in front of others: You are still busy playing at this time.

Xie Jiayi nodded slowly: " Busy. " I'm busy playing, I don't want to play with you guys.

When she nodded, the fiery red crabapple hairpin on her head swayed gently, emitting a warm glow in the bright candlelight.

Xu Shixing sneered and said nothing.

Defei had to calm down and turn the tide to pull back Xie Jiayi's heart, which had suddenly cooled down. The pressure from Xianfei to her and the pressure from the Fourth Prince to the Eastern Palace were not small. The eldest prince was imprisoned and Shufei was sent to the cold palace, but Shufei's mother's family was still there. They hated them and stood on the side



of the Fourth Prince, not to mention that the Second Prince had always been on the side of the Fourth Prince and wanted to pull the Crown Prince down.

This kind of struggle has never stopped. Now that they have lost the princess's help, it is becoming more and more difficult.

Xie Jiayi was unwilling to give her another chance to act. She had seen it and let it go. It wasn't that she was blind, it was that Concubine De acted so realistically. The pain she mentioned about the princess who died young was also realistic, the work of picking the bird's nest hair and sifting the flour was also realistic, and even her eagerness to open her heart and express her love as long as she could win him over was also realistic.

She used to not care about the situation in the palace, but only about her brother, the Crown Prince. She tried her best to protect the Crown Prince, Changchun Palace, and the Duke of Ying. But she was not as clear-headed as she is now, and could clearly see that Changchun Palace and the Crown Prince had already been struggling. The position of the Crown Prince of the Eastern Palace has always been a living target for the royal brothers to stare at, and it has never been easy to sit on. Especially since Xu Shixing started as the Crown Prince, it became even more difficult.

But she couldn't move. She didn't help them, but she would never help the Fourth Prince. He was a sinister and cruel man, sweet-mouthed but treacherous. Who would have thought that such a sinister man was also a romantic man? Later, he was bewitched by the princess of the fallen country of the Southern Kingdom. The Fourth Prince, who was already Prince Rui, really gave up his responsibilities to his family and country for that woman, which almost led to the Northern Di breaking through.

Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi clenched her hands on the chair: the one who turned the tide and repelled the Northern Di was Zhang Jinyu's brother, who later became the Governor-General of Sichuan and Shaanxi and the General Zhenbei.

If he allowed Concubine Xian and this thing to take advantage of the situation and come to power in order to suppress Concubine De and Changchun Palace, he would be willing to sacrifice even the Great Yin Empire for the sake of the beauty. He was determined to become the son-in-law of the fallen Nan Shu.

This is also the reason why Xie Jiayi, although she hated Concubine De, did not really want to beat her to death. She couldn't move.

Xie Jiayi slowly exhaled the foul air.

She couldn't kill Changchun Palace, but they couldn't use her anymore. The disgust she had eaten had to be swallowed by Concubine De.

Xie Jiayi raised her hand to adjust the crabapple hairpin on her temples and said slowly, " My Lady, the servant you gave me back then was so envious that I am so angry. What do you think I should do? "

Ming Pei, who was standing behind him, knelt down tremblingly when she heard this.

" My lady, the servant you gave me back then was so envious that I am so angry. What do you think I should do? "

After Xie Jiayi finished speaking, Nanny Chen pushed Ming Pei who was standing behind her and she knelt down tremblingly. The woman in green looked frail and lonely, kneeling on the cold marble floor in summer, with a dignified character in her weakness. She did not argue, but knelt down silently, with her hands on the ground showing obvious burns and small scars. Everyone in Changchun Palace and the Eastern Palace knew Mingpei, a maid. Everyone knew that she was the most amiable and decent girl. She also had a pair of deft hands. She could write beautiful words and draw beautifully. The patterns she drew were more delicate than anyone else's. The aunts from the embroidery workshop in the palace came to ask for advice on her embroidery. If anyone was wronged, she would comfort them in detail. If anyone came to her with difficulties, she would be willing to give them money to help. From Changchun Palace to the Eastern Palace, including the Begonia Palace, many servants had received the favor of Miss Mingpei. Seeing such a smart girl being scolded by the princess, the servants hung their heads and could not speak, but they felt dissatisfied for Mingpei in their hearts.

Many people secretly thought that Ming Pei must be outstanding and had won the favor of the prince, so the princess was tortured like this. Otherwise, it was completely incomprehensible that Ming Pei had always been favored in Haitang Palace and was the head maid under Nanny Chen, how could she suddenly fall to this point.

Especially at this moment, a maid in green was kneeling silently with her back straight, and a princess in red was sitting lazily watching. Gao Sheng looked at Ming Pei kneeling there, and felt cold sweat for her. His hard heart felt pity for her. He silently turned his eyes away, unable to bear to watch.

Concubine De looked at her niece who was being tortured by Haitang Palace, and then looked at the arrogant look of the princess beside her. She wanted to grit her teeth, but she could only bear it and said with a smile: " Since the princess doesn't like it, I will pick a better one for her. "

" Your Majesty, you don't have to bother picking anyone else. What should you do if Your Majesty only wants to buy this? " Xie Jiayi asked lazily, looking at her bright red nails.

Aunt Liu was a confidant of Concubine De, so she naturally knew the twists and turns. At this time, she smiled and said, " Leave this girl to me. I will teach her a lesson and let her know that the sky is high and the earth is thick, and the master is noble and the slave is humble. "

" Oh? How does Aunt Liu teach? You teach this princess a lesson, and let the people in my palace learn from it, so that those who have no respect for their masters will remember it long. " Xie Jiayi looked up with a smile.

under the candlelight reveals her undisguised evil.

Madam Liu was stunned. Miss Mingpei was of noble status, so it was impossible for her to teach her a lesson. She really didn't expect that the princess, who was always easy to talk to, would be so difficult to deal with after not seeing her for a few months. The princess was either most afraid of the prince being unhappy or she would suppress her temper in front of the prince. How could she do such a thing in front of the prince this time? It really surprised Madam Liu.

Mingpei, who had been kneeling quietly, kowtowed and said: " Princess, please don't make things difficult for others. This is all Mingpei's fault. Mingpei is willing to take the punishment. " Then he straightened his body and raised his hand to slap himself in the mouth. There was silence in the main hall of Changchun Palace for a while, with only the sound of Mingpei fanning herself, which made people feel panic and pity.

" Enough! " It was the prince.

At this time, Ming Pei's fair little face was already red and swollen, with blood at the corners of her mouth. She looked calm, neither humble nor arrogant, and bowed her head to the ground. Like a white lotus in the wind, your fate is not in your own hands and you are at the mercy of others.

She straightened her back.

The whole hall was silent.

But Princess Kunyi seemed to be unconcerned. She held her cheek with her hand, and her bright red nails set off her fair and pretty face, making her look innocent and bright. She frowned and thought for a long time before she spoke. However, she did not speak to the prince, but hesitated to ask Nanny Chen beside her: " Mammy, I am talking to Changchun Palace. Can a servant interrupt me? "

Then she looked at Concubine De with her big eyes flashing: " I am a princess, and a slave can step on me to show her dignity? Did she step on me? " Xie Jiayi's voice was full of serious confusion, " In this Changchun Palace, I am Princess Kunyi, can anyone step on me? "

At this time, Nanny Chen came out and said with a smile: " Our young master is young, but he has been very smart since he was young. The queen is even more clear-headed. This servant is arrogant and arrogant. The queen has seen it clearly now. We have to make the decision for our master, otherwise anyone can interrupt and punish themselves. Before the master said anything, she showed a pair of hands that were burned at some point and slapped her face until it bled. " At this point, Nanny Chen turned around and sneered: " Let me ask you, is the burn on your hand related to the master, or did you slap yourself and want to blame the master? The princess said that she would leave you to the queen, and she meant it to the queen. Who do you think you are? How dare you jump out and make the decision in front of the prince, the queen of Changchun Palace, and the princess herself! "

Nanny Chen's words were righteous and stern, and many people woke up from Mingpei's heroic slapping of herself. Indeed, before the princess said anything, Mingpei had already confirmed the princess's cruel, narrow-minded and intolerance.

Even though Concubine De was a calm person, she was filled with hatred at this moment, and Begonia Palace was unwilling to let this matter rest.

She gritted her teeth and smiled as she ordered: " Madame Liu, go teach this girl some rules! "

Madame Liu responded and came to Mingpei, raising her hand to hit her. She noticed the smiling look in Madame Chen's eyes and knew that she must not play any false tricks under her gaze. Madame Chen knew all about this.

She had no choice but to grit her teeth and slap her hard, " Papa " " Papa " four times. Ming Pei fell backwards and gasped for breath on the ground, which made Aunt Liu tremble with fear.

This might be the mistress of the East Palace in the future. She was ... Aunt Liu swallowed her saliva, but did not dare to hit her any more.

It was the prince who came out again. Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi who was watching with great interest and asked in a cold voice: " Is that enough? If not, I will teach you a lesson? " His eyes and words were a subtle reminder: stop when enough is enough.

Xie Jiayi smiled at him, a very bright smile, and then looked meaningfully at Mingpei who was lying on the ground, and then looked at the prince opposite.

Xie Jiayi's gaze and the meaning behind it made Xu Shixing, who had always been calm , move unconsciously, and his gaze shifted slightly away.

Then Xie Jiayi said, " Come on, His Highness has spoken, who dares not to give him face? "

Concubine De and Nanny Liu both breathed a sigh of relief.

Who knew that the princess continued: " After this, my servant Liu Ma taught me a lesson. I don't want to use her anymore. She is so arrogant that I can't afford to use her. " At this point, she smiled and said, " Sell her. "

Sell? Everyone was stunned for a moment. The word " sell " was rarely heard in the palace .

Sell what? Sell ... slave ... sell Ming Pei ...

They were all either beaten or punished, sometimes even beaten to death. I have never heard of anyone selling it in the palace.

But the princess seemed to think that she had come up with a good idea, and was very satisfied. She said excitedly: " Sell it for twenty taels of silver. I heard the other day that you can buy a maid for ten taels of silver, but our girl is different after all. She is good-looking, has good teeth, and can write and draw. " At this point, she looked at Xu Shixing seriously: " Your Highness, I know you want it. Twenty taels of silver, I will leave the opportunity to you, do you want to buy it? "

Ask as naturally and sincerely as possible.

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi and smiled slowly: " I will buy it. "

Xie Jiayi's heart was filled with adulterers, but her face was full of sweet smiles: " Bring the silver, one hand for the money and the other for the goods. "

Before Mingpei had time to be happy, her heart sank again when she heard the words " payment on one hand and goods on the other " .

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi and raised his hand to Gaosheng behind him. Gaosheng took out a handful of golden melon seeds, with only more and no less, and smiled and handed them to Ruyi who was next to the princess.

Unexpectedly, Ruyi didn't answer at all, and Gaosheng was stunned.

Xie Jiayi smiled and said, " I said twenty taels of silver, not a cent more, I'm honest, this servant of mine is worth twenty taels. "

As soon as she finished speaking, Concubine De couldn't control the twitching of her face.

Gao Sheng had no idea where to get twenty taels of silver, so he had to go out in a hurry to prepare. The palace was silent, and everyone's face looked as if it was covered with starch, except for the princess and the palace maids of Haitang Palace who were still the same as before. The princess fiddled with her nails, waiting impatiently.

After a while, Gao Sheng came back panting with a silver ingot of twenty taels.

The silver ingot was handed over, and Ruyi took it this time. Nanny Chen immediately said: "The silver and the goods are paid. You can take the people away." It was as if she was selling an animal.

From then on, Mingpei would never be able to wash off the stained label that the prince bought with twenty taels of silver.

Xie Jiayi glanced at Mingpei, who was supported by Gaosheng and stood behind the prince, with a half-smile, and suddenly said, "We are master and servant. Come over and kowtow to me before you leave."

Everyone was stunned, but what could they do to the favored princess?

Since the prince didn't say anything, no one else had the right to speak.

Mingpei walked over, knelt down and kowtowed. Every move she made was pitiful and full of elegance.

The princess smiled and glanced at Nanny Chen. Nanny Chen picked up a small piece of light pink crabapple cake next to the princess. It was made by Concubine De herself for the princess, a unique one.

Coming to Ming Pei, he said, "The princess will give you one last treat, so we can be considered as master and servant."

Unexpectedly, Mingpei, who was usually calm and composed, reacted unexpectedly. She stepped back violently and shook her head, completely losing her previous graceful demeanor and noble character.

Xie Jiayi laughed again: It turns out that Zhang Jinyu knew it at this time.

Hehuan was indeed in this unique Haitang cake. She looked up at Defei: "What's wrong, Madam?" She seemed very surprised by Mingpei's reaction. Everyone else was also very surprised, because Mingpei's reaction at that moment was really like seeing a poisonous snake or scorpion. Xie Jiayi said slowly: "Is this cake poisonous? This was made by Madam, and I didn't even touch it. Is this servant clearly accusing me of wanting to harm you?"

De Fei's pretty face couldn't help twitching, and she had to smile: "With her status, how could she be worthy of eating such food? She must be very frightened."

"I'm giving her a reward. Your Majesty, do you think she should eat it?"

Defei paused, her voice tensed: "My princess, even if you don't appreciate my feelings, don't make me sad in this way." As she spoke, her voice was filled with sadness.

However, Xie Jiayi's voice became colder: "Your Majesty, this is the prince's person. Although she was bought with twenty taels of silver, there is no way she can be your daughter-in-law. But she is used to warm the prince's bed. After all, she is also a woman of the Eastern Palace. I will reward her with a plate of snacks. Your Majesty, do you think she should eat it?" Having said this, she looked directly at Concubine De. Her dignity did not allow anyone to say any more nonsense. She wanted Concubine De to answer clearly: should she eat it or not?

I don't know what she said, but Xu Shixing, who was still drinking tea slowly, suddenly looked at Xie Jiayi. The tea in his hand spilled out and splashed onto his apricot yellow prince's robe, but he seemed to be unaware of it.

For a moment, the air seemed to be frozen. Defei had always been obedient to Princess Kunyi, but unexpectedly, she quarreled with the princess over this plate of dessert.

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi coldly and said: " It's just a plate of dessert. No matter how expensive it is, people in my Eastern Palace can't even eat it. " His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, who was always as bright as the moon and green bamboo, looked at Xie Jiayi with some anger in his eyes.

Everyone thought, look, the princess has made the good-tempered prince angry. Then he looked at Ming Pei who was in a state of distress. It seemed that this girl really caught the prince's eye. Although she was not good today, who knows what her future will be like tomorrow. In all these years, the prince had never seen anyone who really caught his eye. Maybe Ming Pei was very lucky.

Gao Sheng quickly took the snack and advised: " Miss Mingpei, please eat some. " Looking at Mingpei's swollen and bloody mouth, he thought that the princess still didn't forget to humiliate her in the end. Fortunately, the snack was small and soft, so it wouldn't hurt to eat some. Ming Pei, however, kept shaking her head, her hands tightly gripping the gap between the floor tiles, as if she would rather die than surrender.

Gao Sheng was anxious. Why bother to upset the overlord-like princess over such a matter? After eating the snacks, there would be no good days in the East Palace. He was more anxious than Ming Pei. He held the snacks and moved closer to Ming Pei. His eyes were full of reminders. Why bother to force himself on such a small matter?

Nanny Chen's voice was cold: " Ms. Mingpei just married a rich man, and she doesn't take our princess seriously. Is it an insult to you to give you snacks? You act like this, and people who don't know would think you are poisoned! Otherwise, let's call the Imperial Hospital to examine you, so that you won't act like this and put the blame on our princess and tarnish our master's reputation! "

The words made Concubine De tremble with fear. Seeing that Mingpei would not eat, Princess Kunyi would not let it go. The matter had really gotten out of hand. With His Majesty's temper, since it concerned the princess, he would get up and investigate thoroughly even if he was sick. No matter how secretive it was, it would reveal clues. She had no choice but to grit her teeth and say, " Mingpei, just eat it. "

## Chapter 23

" Mingpei , just eat it. "

There was a warning in Concubine De's voice, which was unquestionably cold.

Ming Pei looked up, her eyes full of tears , as if these words made her suddenly lose her backbone . Tears rolled down her pale cheeks , looking so pitiful.

She turned her head to look at the prince, but the prince only looked at Xie Jiayi with a sullen face. Xie Jiayi, who was stared at by the prince , still looked high and mighty, and it was clear that she just wanted to make others unhappy, and no one could stand her. At this time, she had a malicious smile, looking at the pink crabapple cake in Gaosheng's hand , and then at Mingpei who looked panicked.

At this moment Mingpei felt infinite hatred towards Xie Jiayi. She was so high and mighty , but just because she was unhappy for a moment , she competed with Changchun Palace and the prince , and ruined her life with just one sentence.

One day she will rise to a high position and make Xie Jiayi pay the price for what happened today.

Ming Pei seemed calm as she reached for the cake on the plate , but the moment she touched it, her hand shrank as if it had touched a poisonous snake! Feeling the increasingly cold look in Concubine De's eyes , she shivered , reached out again , slowly put it into her mouth, and ate it with tears. However, Nanny Chen and others beside her did not let her go , staring at her as she ate it bit by bit until it was all gone.

Mingpei ate like this , and every bite was filled with hatred.

Xie Jiayi just watched: Concubine Zhang , the eldest prince , all go to hell. She waited patiently, the people in Haitang Palace watched eagerly, and Mingpei had no choice but to finish the small dish of snacks.

In the end, Xie Jiayi didn't leave. Instead, she seemed to be interested in the purple-glazed porcelain vase on the ebony table next to her. She looked at it very carefully and tapped it lightly with her fingers. She asked the palace servant next to her: " Is this the purple glaze from the Jun kiln? It's rare to see this kind of eggplant purple fired so well? ..... Hey, that one is not bad either. Bring it over here for me to see. "

Defei Mingpei's heart felt like it was on fire. If she delayed any longer, Mingpei's body would be further damaged. If she delayed any longer, she would not be able to vomit!

At this moment, every word and every action of Xie Jiayi became infinitely slow in their eyes.

Defei really wanted to beat the palace servant who put out the purple glazed porcelain vase to death. Who asked him to put out such a vase!

She smiled and said, " If you like it, just take it away. There is another set in the storeroom. I will send someone to deliver it to you later. "

Xie Jiayi groaned, she was anxious. But she refused to leave. She waved her hands with a smile: " I don't want it. The Queen knows me. I am interested now, but I may not like it tomorrow. " She also ordered: " Since the Queen said she has a set, then you all move them out and show me! "

This one sentence almost made Concubine De angry to death!

Not only was it not sent away, it was also kept!

Mingpei's face was already pale with despair. But Xie Jiayi actually looked at Mingpei kindly and said, " You look very bad. Is the pastry not tasty? Too dry? " Then she said with concern, " You servants are so ignorant! Hurry up and bring some water to Miss Mingpei to help her drink down. I see she is choking on the food and her face is turning blue. "

Nanny Chen also chimed in, " You see, your Majesty, my little princess is just like that. She doesn't hold grudges. She immediately forgot about that nasty servant who made her angry. "

As she spoke, she shook her head lovingly, as if to say, " My little mistress is just so kind-hearted . "

Defei Mingpei almost bit her teeth to pieces and drew blood.

As a result, Xie Jiayi really took advantage of the situation and said: " I am just giving face to my brother the Crown Prince. Maybe she will be my sister-in-law in the future. " After saying this , she chuckled twice.

Now even the crown prince looked even uglier. Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi with eyes that seemed to be filled with fire and ice. But Xie Jiayi didn't even glance at him. She just rubbed her hands and looked at the purple-glazed porcelain that Changchun Palace had brought in with great interest. The porcelains were all different in height, size, and shape, and each one was interesting. Even the patterns on them were well-made.

She had originally intended to buy time, but she had actually tasted the flavor. Xie Jiayi thought to herself, to taste something, one must slow down the time and have the patience to simmer it over a low fire. Look, with her patience, she was able to taste the flavor and the beauty of the craftsmanship.

Ah, it really makes me want to write a poem! Unfortunately, she can't do it, and it's a pity that Lord Lu who can do it is not here. What a pity, such a moment of enlightenment cannot be recorded in poetry ... Let's just say something common:

There is reincarnation in the world, and I just watch it with a smile.

Everyone in Changchun Palace can see that the princess is in a good mood at the moment, and it can also be seen that whether it is the master of Changchun Palace or the lady of the East Palace, they are in a bad mood at the moment ... The next task will be difficult again. The master is so angry that he can't sleep. The night watch tonight is unlucky ...

Defei forced a smile and said: " It's windy outside, and the clouds are getting dark. I'm afraid a storm is coming. " This was to remind the princess that it was time to leave before the storm came.

This person sat down, why couldn't he leave? She even served tea twice, serving tea to see the guest off. Did the princess have any sense?

Don't ask, the answer is no.

Xie Jiayi nodded and said, " What a strong wind! I'm afraid the rain will be heavy. " She left without saying a word, but continued to ask the palace maid, " Tell me in detail how you found these bottles. I'm not in a hurry. Please tell me slowly. "

De Fei gritted her teeth in anxiety and could only say again, " It's rare that I caught your eye, Princess, please take her away. " The key is not " take " , but " go " . It's time to – go ! De Fei could still smile on her face, but her heart was already hideous and twisted.

Who knew that this bastard would just say: " I said no, it means no. It's a little interesting but I don't like it enough to take it away. It's heavy. "

The smile on Concubine De's face trembled, and she cursed in her heart: What a wicked thing, you don't even need to take it! As expected, she is as selfish, domineering, cold-hearted and heartless as Princess Pingyang. She will pretend to be innocent and act like a vixen!

If the princess can't send her away, then take the Ming Pei away first. De Fei once again stubbornly said: " Let Madam Liu take this annoying thing away, so as not to make the princess angry again and spoil her fun. "

The princess seemed to be happy looking at the bottle, not caring about the sound of the bottle, and nodded casually. Concubine De was delighted, thinking that it would be too late to drink the



bottle or the mung bean soup to induce vomiting. As a result, the princess, whom she secretly called a jerk, showed with her actual actions that she was a jerk that could make people angry to death.

Xie Jiayi seemed to be in a good mood and changed her mind temporarily and said, " Wait a minute! " Defei's heart was tense and loose, rising and falling. She felt a little pain in her heart and liver between the ups and downs, but she couldn't cover it and rub it. She had to listen with a smile to what bad ideas the person in front of her came up with.

I only heard the princess say: " It's a bit of an eyesore, but I think she matches the vase very well. They both have the same long neck and thin waist. Hold the vase for me so I can enjoy it. " Zhang Jinyu had just seen a glimmer of hope, but was kept by the princess on a whim. At this time, her first reaction was no longer the humiliation of being held in the vase, but despair. She seemed to be able to feel the acacia blossoming in her body, and then strangled her hope as a woman! Her heart was gray, her face was deathly pale, and she stiffly took the vase held by Caiyue. For a moment, she felt that the world was extremely dark.

All she saw before her was the princess's still inexplicably happy face. She hated it!

Her ambitions and bright future seemed so far away at this moment .

It's all because of this domineering princess!

For a moment, no one spoke in the hall. Even Concubine De couldn't hold back her smile. She stopped trying to win over the princess and sat aside with a stiff face, drinking tea in silence.

The palace maids thought that the princess had gone to such lengths that she even disliked the princess, and the intention of sending the guests away was clear, and no one in the palace, whether it was the Changchun Palace or the Eastern Palace, could see it. But the palace maids in the Begonia Palace seemed not to see it at all, whether it was Nanny Chen, the head maid Caiyue, or the eunuch Ruyi, the chief eunuch of the Begonia Palace, they all served as they should have before, without any embarrassment of being treated poorly by the master.

The two foolish Caixing and Bubu were still able to smile at this moment. They waited beside the princess with a smile, pointing at the long-necked plum blossom vase held by Mingpei, and flattering the princess' taste and vision from time to time. In the stiff silence and awkwardness of the whole hall, they were not embarrassed at all.

Princess Kunyi actually sat there for half an hour in such an awkward situation, and then she stood up and looked outside and said, " It's really windy, and Madam didn't even remind us. We should have left earlier. "

This sentence really hurt Concubine De's heart, and Zhang Jinyu was even more miserable. Her lifelong plan for offspring was ruined by this mindless princess. Half an hour earlier or later was a matter of life and death for her, but it was just a whim for her. Together with the small plate of snacks, it was all the whim of this selfish and self-righteous princess, which ruined her life. She gnashed her teeth until they broke. She had never hated him so much even when her family was ruined. At this moment, she once again deeply understood what power was and what being a slave meant. Although she was once a slave, she knew in her heart that she was the most special one, even more special than the princess she served. Changchun Palace was her aunt and Donggong was her cousin. They didn't say it on their faces, but they took care of her all the way behind her back.

Not to mention the servants who only cared about the silver rewards, even the princess didn't really take her seriously, and sometimes she even felt pity for her ignorance. What's wrong with the princess? Didn't the princess still run to the East Palace? But the prince, whom the princess was devoted to, would think of asking Gao Sheng to send her frostbite cream, and even thought about it for her when she needed to use small change to bribe people, and secretly asked Gao Sheng to send it.

Zhang Jinyu used to be even confident that if the princess really made her unhappy, she would be able to use His Royal Highness the Crown Prince to make the princess unhappy!

But at this moment, just because the princess was not happy at all, she got angry and destroyed her completely, just because she was a slave!

As soon as Princess Kunyi moved, the people in Haitang Palace started to busy themselves, waiting for the princess to leave the palace. Although Concubine De hated the person in front of her, she had to stand up and see her off with a smile.

On the other side, the prince also stood up and left, heading towards the East Palace.

The wind was howling outside, making the palace lanterns sway and the grass and trees sway.

The air was filled with humid water vapor, and I was afraid that if it rained, it would be heavy.

Ruyi was busy carrying the sedan chair inside, while Nanny Chen Caiyue Caixing held a lantern and stood aside to protect the princess. Xie Jiayi, who had been smiling all the time, only stopped smiling at this moment. She looked at the whistling wind outside with a blank expression and remained silent.

Xu Shixing stopped beside her and whispered, almost gritting his teeth: "Are you happy after this incident?"

Xie Jiayi's voice no longer had the same flattering and charming tone as before, it was cold and clear: "Your Highness, I don't feel happy at all, I'm afraid it's not enough."

After saying this, she lifted her skirt and got on her sedan chair, disappearing in the crowd. The group from the Princess's Mansion went out of the palace in the strong wind.

Xu Shixing thought that this fight was just because Mingpei was unhappy. After humiliating someone like this, she should feel relieved and the matter should be over. But when he heard her voice just now, it was clear that everything had just begun. Her voice was quieter and colder than he had ever heard before.

Xu Shixing was also brought up by Emperor Yuanhe at the age of six and was personally raised by him. He was also named the Crown Prince at a young age and has been the Crown Prince of the Eastern Palace for more than ten years. As soon as he raised his hand, the palace servants immediately stepped forward to listen to his order, "Return to the Eastern Palace."

As soon as they left the palace gate, heavy rain began to fall. The palace servants had already prepared their oil umbrellas, raincoats and other items. They dressed neatly in silence under the flickering lights, and continued to move forward, protecting their masters.

Only then did Xu Shixing notice that the servants in Haitang Palace were just as disciplined as those in the East Palace. Faced with the sudden storm, they were all in good order. They didn't even hear Xie Jiayi's orders from the sedan chair, as they were all ready and continued to move forward.

Is this really the Xie Jiayi who only knew how to stay with him to read storybooks and eat snacks all day? He suddenly called a halt and got off the sedan chair. Gao Sheng hurriedly

asked the tall guard beside him to come forward and hold an umbrella for his master. The wind and rain were getting stronger and stronger. Although the guard was steady, Xu Shi walked too fast and soon his shoulders were wet.

Xu Shixing ignored all this and walked straight forward. In the wind and rain, he had only one thought: to catch up with the line of swaying lights in the darkness.

When the people in Haitang Palace saw that it was the prince himself coming, they all stopped and knelt down even in the strong wind and rain. Only Xie Jiayi sat steadily on the sedan chair and looked up to meet Xu Shixing's deep and dark eyes.

Under the umbrella, Xu Shixing's face was also hit by the wind and rain, and he raised his hand to wipe it off. Seeing the person in front of him clearly, she still looked at him quietly without any expression. At this moment, he didn't know whether it was because the wind and rain were too strong or the light was too dim, he couldn't see what was in her eyes.

Xu Shixing only felt his heart sinking.

Instead, he smiled, staring at the girl in front of him, trying to smile gently as usual, but his voice was cold: "I will ask for permission tomorrow. You are sixteen years old, and it is time for me to get married. What do you say?"

Hearing this, Xie Jiayi nodded as if she had heard something interesting, and said with a smile: "Third brother, the emperor uncle is going to choose a crown princess for you."

"Your Majesty and I both think that the daughter of the Grand Tutor is very good."

After Xie Jiayi finished speaking, the surroundings were dead silent, with only the endless sound of rain.

The gentle smile on Xu Shixing's face disappeared, his long eyelashes covered his drooped eyes, he slowly raised his eyes, these days he always heard his mother say that the princess looked innocent but heartless, he always just listened and thought nothing of it, but at this moment he raised his eyes and looked into the eyes of the girl who was only a few feet away from him, as if he wanted to see into her soul, the prince's voice was low and clear in the rain. He said slowly: "Zhao Zhao, say it again so I can hear it clearly."

The word "孤" sounds stern, representing the Crown Prince of the Eastern Palace's inviolability and pride, but also implies a subtle threat.

Xie Jiayi thought: His eyes are so dark. She was even a little distracted. What color is Xu Shixing's heart?

Seeing that Xie Jiayi was still distracted at this time, Xu Shixing laughed again, but there was a creepy coldness in his laughter. He leaned over, held the handrail of Xie Jiayi's sedan chair, and got very close to her.

At this time, the servants were still kneeling on the wet ground, all of them bowed their heads and dared not move. Even the guards holding umbrellas were holding their umbrellas and leaning sideways, not daring to look directly at the two masters at this moment.

Nanny Chen had already asked the princess to escort her ahead, and took them back to the mansion to prepare hot water and hot tea.

None of the servants dared to look directly at the prince at this time. Ruyi bowed her head and knelt in the rain, but she only listened to her master's movements and waited for the princess's

orders, even if they had to go through mountains of swords and seas of fire. Caiyue was very nervous, and Caixing didn't dare to look or move too much without her master's orders.

" Speak. " Xu Shixing's tone was cold.

" Your Highness, I don't want to be the Crown Princess anymore, you know that. I have already told His Majesty that. " Xie Jiayi replied in a crisp voice, seemingly unaware of the importance of her words.

When the servants nearby heard this, their hearts began to beat fast. They wished the rain would rain heavier, fearing that their masters would hear their nervous and rapid breathing. Gao Sheng was horrified: It turns out that the princess was not angry, but actually had this idea in mind! She even told His Majesty about it , this——

The rain was endless at night, and the wind blew, making everyone shiver.

Today is the beginning of autumn, and it is Princess Kunyi's sixteenth birthday. On this birthday night, the future Crown Princess of the Eastern Palace, who everyone thought was the future Crown Princess, told His Royal Highness the Crown Prince that she no longer wanted to be the Crown Princess.

This is Princess Kunyi's birthday night, and it may also be the night of the breakup between Haitang Palace and Donggong and Changchun Palace.

Everyone was silent, kneeling in fear in the sound of the pouring rain.

---

The rain was pouring down at night, and suddenly a flash of lightning cut through the darkness in the distance , followed by a muffled thunder explosion and a deafening roar of thunder.

Xu Shixing watched the girl in gorgeous clothes sitting in the sedan chair shudder. The moment the lightning flashed, her whole face suddenly lost its blood color and turned pale. He just watched coldly. The thunder that followed made the people in front of him tremble. I don't know who's lantern went out. The sky was already pitch black, and it was all lit by a row of lanterns. At this time, as several lanterns went out, the darkness came closer.

Xu Shixing saw Xie Jiayi shrinking further into her seat, as if she wanted to find a corner to hide herself in. She liked rain, but she was afraid of lightning and thunder. She had been like this since she was a child and it hadn't changed until now.

Has it not changed till now?

Xie Jiayi's pale and helpless face gradually dispelled the darkness in Xu Shixing's eyes. He took a breath. Although his voice was still cold, it was a big step back for him. He said softly, " Zhao Zhao, please stop making trouble, okay? Is there anything you said that Third Brother didn't do? "

This was already a huge concession and bowing for the proud Crown Prince.

Gao Sheng just listened and felt wronged and sad for his master. Not to mention the princes in the palace, even the young masters of the big families below, all of them have concubines at the age of fifteen or sixteen, and all of them have a few intimate maids. But his master, because of the princess's eccentricity, even the maids who are knowledgeable about the world that every prince should have are left alone. Now he is an eighteen-year-old prince, but he still has no concubines. Just like this, I don't know where the princess got her temper from in the past three

months. It's just that the master likes the maid a little more. There is nothing wrong, but the princess is making a fuss. Which prince can tolerate it ...

The princess is noble, but her master is even more noble!

Xie Jiayi seemed to have just come back to her senses from the thunder. She looked at the person in front of her and said blankly, " I will never be a crown princess again. "

These words made Xu Shixing tighten his grip on the sedan chair's armrests, then slowly let go. He took one last look at Xie Jiayi, turned around and strode away. Before the guards could react, the prince had already walked a long distance in the rain. Gao Sheng kicked the stunned guard and screamed, " Why don't you catch up! " Looking at his master in the night rain in front of him, he was so anxious that his voice broke.

By the time the umbrella was held for the prince, he was already soaked. He suddenly stopped and looked behind him. Gao Sheng also quietly wiped the rain off his face and looked in the direction of the princess, but saw that the princess and her party had already set off towards the princess's mansion. Soon, a row of lanterns disappeared into the distance .

First it was obscured by the night rain, and then it gradually disappeared in the night wind and rain.

Gao Sheng could feel the coldness emanating from the prince, and he swallowed back the words that he wanted to persuade his master to return quickly.

Everyone stood in the rain with the prince, soaking wet, until the princess and her companions disappeared completely into the darkness. The entire capital was shrouded in heavy rain, and it was pitch dark everywhere.

Seeing the cold wind and rain coming, Gao Sheng was so anxious that he turned around in circles, but he had served the prince for a long time and naturally knew that the paler the prince's face, the more angry he became. Usually at this time, except for Princess Kunyi, who dared to say a word.

Thinking of Princess Kunyi, Gao Sheng, as a servant, felt chilled, not to mention the prince. The two had been together since they were six years old. The princess was always affectionate and affectionate. She wanted to be the princess since she was very old. The prince was also concerned about her and treated her as his princess. How could she suddenly say she didn't want to be with him? Even the coldest person would be fooled, not to mention the prince who was childhood sweethearts with the princess and spent every day with her.

Another gust of wind and rain came, and the prince closed his eyes, letting a drop of rain fall down his eyelashes and slide down his face. He opened his eyes again, with a cold look in his eyes, and said in a cold voice: " Get up and return to the palace. "

At this point, the group set off again.

When Xie Jiayi arrived at the mansion, Nanny Chen came up with towels and hot ginger soup. She forced the princess to drink a bowl of hot ginger soup, then quickly made her take a hot bath. She held up the hot soup and stared at the princess while she drank it. Only then did Nanny Chen feel relieved.

Seeing the thunder and lightning outside, people lit candles everywhere in the Princess's mansion, making it bright and bright as day. The Princess's bedroom was even more brightly lit, leaving no dark spots.

A new maidservant looked at the brightness of the inner chamber and couldn't help asking Caixing: " Sister Caixing, it's so bright, how can the princess rest well? " Caixing was busy with her work and said: " It must be this bright on a thunderstorm day, you will know later. " The little maidservant was also afraid of thunderstorms, but she couldn't understand why the princess was so afraid of it.

Nanny Chen usually didn't stay up all night, she was already fifty years old and couldn't stand it. But on days like this, she still stayed in there to accompany her little princess.

Seeing the princess sitting in the grand light in a daze, Nanny Chen felt pain in her heart.

Thinking of the silent city that day, thinking of how she followed people into the dead silent city and saw her young master coming out, even after more than ten years, her heart still ached.

" Mammy, I miss home. " Xie Jiayi hugged her knees and said blankly.

Nanny Chen's eyes became hot and tears started to flow.

Princess, she had no home for a long time. She was only five years old that year, and overnight, she lost everything.

I thought the East Palace was where I would be in the future, but now it seems that the princess has really made up her mind not to be the Crown Princess. When Nanny Chen first heard about the matter of Hehuan, she was really hurt and scared. She had secretly invited many folk doctors during this period of time. She finally gave up: the princess had a cold body and it would be difficult to conceive. Although no one could find out that the princess had Hehuan in her body, many doctors could see that there must be something wrong with the princess's body.

Nanny Chen wanted to chew out Concubine De. But the princess was right, they could do nothing. Concubine De was a venomous snake, and Concubine Xian was a smiling tiger with wolfish ambitions. The difference between the two was just the difference between a bamboo leaf viper and a lance-headed viper. No matter which one was in power, the princess would be a thorn in their eyes. At least the crown prince was better than the other princes.

Thinking of this, Nanny Chen felt even more chilled. The branch of Emperor Yuanhe ... was the most gloomy and cruel, and some even whispered that it was the most crazy. This was also one of the reasons why Emperor Taizu lost the crown prince he had appointed early on in the battlefield, and chose to pass the throne to the adult Emperor Yuanhe in the face of foreign enemies and internal strife, but at the same time appointed the two-year-old Crown Prince Minhuai, so that Emperor Yuanhe, as an uncle, would not pass the throne to his son in the future but to his nephew Crown Prince Minhuai . As wise as Emperor Taizu was, how could he not know the variables, but still did it.

All his measures were aimed at restraining Emperor Yuanhe and ensuring that the throne would return to Prince Minhuai. He left many backup plans for Prince Minhuai, and the old ministers and the Queen Mother, inside and outside the palace, all knew that Emperor Yuanhe's throne would be passed on to his nephew Prince Minhuai, who was the legitimate heir.

Taizu 's methods were sophisticated and thorough . Even the powerful Emperor Yuanhe could not shake the deep-rooted beliefs of the whole court and the people of the world. Year after year, and Prince Minhuai was indeed intelligent and gentle, with the style of a benevolent monarch, he did not even need to win over people. His actions were the most popular. But unfortunately, Prince Minhuai's entire family died nineteen years ago.

Nanny Chen sneered. Emperor Yuanhe and his children and grandchildren were more vicious than each other. Seeing that among his majesty's sons, I'm afraid that only the crown prince was better, not tainted by the viciousness and madness hidden in his blood. Now the remaining two ... were fighting with the crown prince like black-eyed chickens. I'm afraid that if the fourth prince really came to power, let alone the princess, no one in the world would have a good life. The crown prince at least had a line in his heart, but the fourth prince ... Nanny Chen couldn't help shaking her head.

So even though she hated it so much, Concubine De couldn't do anything.

His Majesty's health is really not good. Nanny Chen is worried every day, afraid that there will be a storm somewhere and His Majesty will die. Who can the princess rely on at that time? She wanted to persuade the princess that even if she didn't become the Crown Princess, she had to learn to be submissive, but she couldn't say these words. She was a servant and could flatter Concubine De. She couldn't let her master flatter the servant who gave Princess Pingyang acupuncture and foot washing.

Life and death are determined by fate, and wealth and honor are in the hands of God. None of her masters, from Empress Xiaoyi to Princess Pingyang, to the current Princess Kunyi, would ever truly submit and bow their heads.

She looked at the princes and sons below, how many of them were really good? Who of them, at his age, didn't have a beloved maid or a talented and beautiful woman in his heart ... But from Princess Pingyang to the county lady, they were all left-wing and could not tolerate any grain of sand in their eyes.

Nanny Chen gently patted the princess' back and advised: " There is no good one in the capital, so we can look for one from Dayin. There is no one satisfactory among the young masters of the noble families, so as the autumn examination is approaching, we can look for one among the talented Jinshi. " As she spoke, she looked at the princess, We " must find a good one while His Majesty is healthy. " If His Majesty ... the princess' marriage would then fall into the hands of the empress dowager at that time.

At this time, the thunder outside the house had stopped for a while and the sound of rain was gradually subsiding.

Xie Jiayi looked at the flickering candlelight and whispered, " Good? Where can I find good ..."

No matter how good the relationship was at that time, no matter how deep the love was, it would fade after only three to five years. At that time, there were so many beauties out there, and they might be moved by the glances. Once they got drunk, the warm and soft jade would come to them, and how many people could really resist? Good? She once thought that her third brother was the best ...

She rested her chin on her knees, listening to the sound of rain outside the window, and murmured: " Mammy, is there really someone in the world who is so devoted to you ..."

At this time, the Lu Mansion had already sunk into darkness, wind and rain, and even the servant who was on night watch had dozed off against the wall.

But one person suddenly woke up from his sleep, sat up abruptly, and clenched the thin blanket under his hand. The room was already dark, and only the sound of rain outside could be heard, which had become lighter.

Lu Chenan was stunned in the darkness for a while before he got out of bed, pulled the robe beside him and put it on, then lit the lamp. He opened a window and felt the sound of rain getting louder. A cool breeze blew in, and the lights flickered. He leaned his forehead against the window frame and let the rain fall on his face.

Slowly, the whole person calmed down completely.

He looked at the endless darkness, and suddenly he seemed to see those tearful eyes again. He didn't know if he had been busy with the southern river map before going to bed recently, but he actually dreamed of those tearful eyes tonight. He was about to cry, but he still sat up, gnashing his tiny silver teeth, and asked him to say it again in a sobbing voice.

Even choking is a sign of stubbornness.

Lu Chenan is extremely intelligent. He has read all the books in the world and has a photographic memory.

What doesn't he understand?

His face was pale, he let out a long breath, leaned against the window frame behind him, and looked at the flickering candlelight.

He also understood how far a concubine of a merchant family was from being a precious and favored princess of a royal family .

Lu Chenan, you are overstepping your authority. If a person like you has any intention, he will be crushed to pieces.

His face gradually returned to normal, and he reached out to close the window. He sat down by the candlelight and took out a book to read carefully. The autumn examination was approaching, and it was useless to think too much.

Since she needs loyal and capable ministers in the court , Lu Chenan smiled bitterly and decided to be a loyal and capable minister.

He was already walking on a muddy and lonely road, and it was rare for him to see the light, so let him escort the light for a while.

Lu Chenan regained peace with his strong self-control, but the Princess's Mansion was destined to be restless that day.

No one in the Princess's Mansion had expected that the rain had not stopped and the sky had not yet brightened, and the Crown Prince, who they thought was likely to break up with the Princess, came in the rain. Standing with his hands behind his back in front of the Princess's Mansion, He Sheng knocked on the door of the Princess's Mansion before dawn in the drizzle.

---

The gatekeeper of the Princess Mansion was still sleepy when he opened the door. He couldn't help cursing in his heart. Which bastard dared to knock on the door of their Princess Mansion so early? It better be that he really has something to do, otherwise – , just as he was thinking that if the drunk took a wrong step, he would have to drag him to Shuntian Mansion, he saw the man standing in front of him with his hands behind his back –

Why does he look a bit like the Crown Prince who has been to the mansion before ...

The two people who opened the door were stunned when they heard a shrill voice shouting: " Open your eyes, the prince is here and why don't you hurry up! " It was Gao Sheng, the most capable eunuch beside the prince. Who wouldn't recognize his round, fair face?



When the two heard that it was indeed His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, their legs went weak and they knelt down. They could never have imagined that it was only the hour of Yin, and it was windy and rainy, and the sky was not yet bright. How could His Royal Highness come at this time! While they were kneeling to welcome the Crown Prince, the clever ones were quietly trying to report to the back, but they were held down by the people brought by the Crown Prince. Before they could react, the Crown Prince had already walked into the rain and headed straight for the inner courtyard.

Princess's bedroom

Nanny Chen had been forced to sleep by the princess half an hour ago. After all, she was old and couldn't stand it any longer. In addition, the thunder and lightning had stopped long ago, and she estimated that it was only rain left. She stopped trying and was helped by the little girl to rest. Caiyue accompanied her. Xie Jiayi lay on the couch by the window and watched the rain hitting the crabapple tree. Caiyue knew that the princess had endured too much and was sleepy. She couldn't fall asleep for a while, so she could only put on her outer robe and let her go.

I just hope that the soothing soup in the kitchen will be cooked soon, so that the princess can sleep for two hours after drinking it. How can she endure like this?

Recently, she always felt that the princess had more worries than before. In the past, she only had the prince of the East Palace in her heart, but now she has let the prince go. However, her heart is filled with many things that she has no idea about. Caiyue didn't understand and could only serve her more carefully.

The princess leaned against the window and looked at Begonia in the drizzle, and recited: " Begonia does not hesitate to be rouge, independent in the drizzle. " She asked Caiyue, " Do you feel good listening to this poem? " She has also read some serious books recently. Poem and calligraphy, probably because of not sleeping all night, the voice that was originally as delicate and crisp as an oriole has become soft and waxy.

Like an intoxicating whisper, gently scratching people's eardrums. Xu Shixing stopped in front of the dormitory corridor. The window of Xie Jiayi's dormitory was open, blocking her face, but he knew that she must be soft and infatuated at this moment.

Xie Jiayi did not hear Caiyue's reply, but heard the voice outside the window, with a unique desolate tone: " The poem is a good poem, but it is not worthy of you. You should recite ' Cherish your love and don't reveal it easily, and let the peach and plum blossoms bloom in the spring breeze ' . "

Suddenly there was a man's voice in the inner courtyard. Caiyue was so startled that the clothes in her hands fell. Just as she was about to call for help, she heard the princess say: " It's His Highness. His Highness is not so particular now. " The women entered the inner courtyard as soon as she was told. It seemed that her princess's mansion really needed to be reorganized. She still needed someone to look after the gate. But then she thought again, where in the world can she find someone who can stop the prince?

When Caiyue heard that it was the prince, her fear was only half gone. With trembling hands, she hurriedly helped the princess straighten her clothes and buttoned up her outer robe. On the contrary, Xie Jiayi seemed only surprised and not afraid at all.

She knew Xu Shixing, and he was the most polite and respectable person.

Xu Shixing really stopped at a distance of one window from Xie Jiayi, and did not move forward. Through the screen window, he could vaguely see Xie Jiayi's thick black hair, the soft pink silk robe she was wearing, and even her fair face and delicate chin. It was both hazy and clear, but he could see it through the window.

After hearing Xie Jiayi's words, he was silent for a while. For a moment, there was no sound inside or outside. Only the sound of the dripping rain could be heard, which seemed endless. Xu Shixing sighed softly, and his voice was not as soft and coaxing as it sounded in front of outsiders. He sighed, " Zhao Zhao, I know you are just saying this in anger. Stop making trouble, okay? " There was also some tiredness in his voice.

There were already so many things going on outside that even Xu Shixing felt very tired recently, but he couldn't sleep for an extra hour or take a nap. He was the crown prince, and since ancient times, not many crown princes who had been in office for a long time had a good ending. And he was not even the crown prince appointed by the current emperor, but by Emperor Yuanhe.

The last crown prince who was appointed by his grandfather like him was Crown Prince Min Huai, who served as crown prince for 19 years and ended up in pieces.

Xu Shixing sighed again, his coldness half gone, looking at the girl on the other side of the window through the green gauze, " If it's for Mingpei, I'll send her away when I get back, keep her in Changchun Palace, and never let her come to the East Palace again, okay? " Perhaps it was because he thought of the jealousy of the people around him, who had been so angry that he had a headache last night. At this moment, Xu Shixing, who had rarely calmed down, shook his head with a little smile on his lips. There is no one more left-wing than Xie Jiayi. Not to mention sand, even a speck of dust cannot be tolerated in her eyes.

No matter how much she loves the things, if someone she hates touches them, she will smash them or throw them away if she doesn't want them.

But his smile soon froze on the corners of his mouth, because Xie Jiayi did not come down the ladder he gave her. At this time, there were only two of them, but she did not complain or grumble, only said in a lukewarm tone, " You? Send her away " kill her , Prince, to vent my anger? "

" You killed the maid for no reason . Where are your books and the teachings of the nanny? " Xu Shixing gritted his teeth.

Xie Jiayi laughed: " Your Highness, you don't want to, what's the point of talking about the teachings of the Saintly Book Madam? " Then she turned her face and asked through the window screen: " Your Highness, are you unwilling? "

" Even if you are a princess, you cannot ignore human lives. " Xu Shixing's voice turned cold.

Xie Jiayi just nodded, " Your Highness just doesn't want to. "

Xu Shixing got angry at the light but firm tone, " Why do you have to get angry with a slave? Do you want to give up your dignity as a princess? "

" Yes, why would I get angry with a slave? " The voice was lazy, and he did not hesitate to send the guest away: " Your Highness, please go slowly. It's cold outside, and I'm weak, so I won't see you off. "

Xu Shixing slowly exhaled, reminding himself not to be mad at this little thing again. He didn't want to hear her say " I don't want to be the Crown Princess " or " the daughter of the Grand Tutor " and other nonsense. It hurt his lungs at the time, and when he calmed down, he thought it was Xie Jiayi who was angry with him.

" Just tell me what you want. " It was the coldest time of the day, and Xu Shixing hadn't slept all night. He had to go to the Sixth Ministry after dawn. The Fourth and Second Princes had been doing a lot of things in secret recently, and he had to punish them. He didn't know if he was tired or angry at this time, but his face was a little paler than usual, and it seemed that he could emit cold air.

" Are you done yet? I told you I want Ming Pei dead! " Xie Jiayi raised her voice, extremely impatient. Her voice was soft and tender, but she made it sound murderous . Wasn't what she said human language? She discovered a new problem with Xu Shixing: he couldn't understand human language.

Xu Shixing squeezed out a few words from between his teeth: " Who is the one who started this trouble? "

Xie Jiayi sneered, and was sure that he just didn't understand what she was saying, so she closed the window and ignored him.

Xu Shixing was left shivering in fear as he looked at the tightly closed window. Gao Sheng, who was following him from a distance , also shivered in fear. Although he did not hear clearly what the two masters said, he still heard clearly the princess's words " want Mingpei dead " . His teeth were chattering, and he didn't understand how Miss Mingpei, such a good person, could have offended the princess to death and made the princess do such a cruel thing.

The master stood there in silence for a long time, then went straight into the inner room. As expected, Caiyue's scream was soon heard, and she was sent out immediately.

The prince glanced at her, and Caiyue's legs trembled. She couldn't say a word, and her throat was dry. It was only when the princess said, " You just stand by the door and let His Highness say it, it's no big deal " that she went to the door with weak hands and feet.

Gao Sheng hurried forward, calling her sister in a long and affectionate manner: " Let the two masters have a good talk and untie the knot. This will be good for the masters, right? Don't worry, sister. His Highness and the princess grew up together. There is nothing for you to worry about. " As he said this, he was about to pull Caiyue away .

Caiyue stood guarding the door and refused to move, " We each have our own master. I only listen to the princess's orders. If the princess tells me to guard the door, I have to guard the door. " Seeing that he could not persuade her, Gao Sheng did not dare to persuade her anymore, for fear of really angering the people in the princess's mansion. They would do anything relying on the princess, and if the princess said she would not give face to the prince, she would really not give it. So he could only stay here and watch Caiyue, waiting for orders. This was the first time Xu Shixing entered Xie Jiayi's bedroom. The two of them had been close in the past, but since Xie Jiayi had grown up, such abrupt things were no longer allowed. But

today he had to ask clearly and could not let Xie Jiayi continue to make trouble. He stood at the door of the inner room and did not move forward. He only felt that the whole room was filled with the usual sweet fragrance of Xie Jiayi, which softened people's hearts.

But Xie Jiayi did not give him a chance to soften his heart and said directly:

" Your Highness, I don't want to be your Crown Princess anymore. Don't you understand? "

She pointed at herself and emphasized each word: " I don't want to. "

Her eyes were calm and firm, and her words were clear. She was not even angry, but just told him a fact calmly.

She doesn't want to.

Like a thunderbolt.

Xu Shixing knew it clearly: it turned out that she was not making a fuss from the beginning to the end, she just didn't want to do it anymore.

He clenched his hands tightly behind his back, and his face was as pale as the wall behind him. His eyebrows and eyes looked even darker, and his eyes were so dark that you couldn't see the bottom. He looked like he was covered with a layer of ice, with a cold and arrogant look. He nodded slowly and said slowly: " So it's you who don't want to. "

His tone was almost contemptuous, and he looked at Xie Jiayi coldly: " Whose young man has the princess fallen in love with? Could it be that he is the son of that merchant, or a concubine's son? "

What the hell, Xie Jiayi wanted to roll her eyes. The bitches think everyone else is a bitch.

Xie Jiayi's reaction made Xu Shixing's heart, which had suddenly shrunk into a ball, relax. He could feel it was still beating as usual. The two of them confronted each other, neither of them would give in. The air was so heavy that it could be cut with a knife.

I can still hear the faint sound of rain drops outside, which seems to be endless, never ending and never ending.

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi 's pretty little face, she was wrapped in a soft light pink silk robe, wearing shoes, with her chin held high, standing proudly, her thick black hair like satin hanging down behind her, making her face look even paler and her lips even redder, her whole body exuding an awe-inspiring look that could not be bullied.

He sneered: He is the Crown Prince of Dayin, and he is trying to beg her to be the Crown Princess. She thinks too little of him.

" You don't want to do it, but there are many who do. " Xu Shixing sneered, " It's just that my Crown Princess is not someone the Princess can dictate to. The daughter of the Imperial Tutor or the granddaughter of a cabinet minister are all my business, and it's not the Princess' turn to say anything. "

The words are as sharp as knives, and I wish every word would draw blood, so that the sinking heart can feel better.

He only looked at her expression, but he didn't know that the person on the other side just nodded when he heard her words, " It doesn't matter, just pick the best one for yourself. "

Xu Shixing was so angry that his temples were throbbing.

He couldn't stay in this place any longer. If he stayed there, he really couldn't guarantee what he would do.

He looked at Xie Jiayi again, turned around and walked away. If he didn't leave, he was afraid that he would use the same methods he used on others on the person in front of him. For a moment, he really wanted to reach out and strangle her to death.

Nanny Chen, who had heard the news earlier, came in at this time. She looked the princess up and down and was relieved to see that nothing had happened and her princess had not suffered any loss. She just kept muttering: " The prince usually looks like a steady person, why is he so unprepared today? Men can also enter the inner chamber of a girl ..."

Xie Jiayi said indifferently: " What's even more ridiculous is that he actually said that Lu Chenan and I—— "

Here she stopped talking.

Lu Chenan.

Lu Chenan is a good person.

He was also a good man who never married and kept himself clean all his life.

Her eyes suddenly lit up.

## Chapter 24

This time, Xie Jiayi was not looking at the crabapple blossoms as the rain sounded , but was thinking about the candidate for the county horse.

The prince's guess, which seemed dirty and ridiculous to her at the time, reminded her of this and made her feel as if she had searched for him in her dreams for hundreds of times, and when she turned around suddenly , she found him standing in the dim light.

Why can't it be Lu Chenan? He died at the age of 25 without getting married , which shows that he didn't care about offspring. He had a cousin in his heart , so he kept her hidden. She just needed a man with good character to walk with her , to be loyal to each other, and to be innocent. She could even accompany him to pay tribute to his little cousin who died young. She could help him build a temple and make a golden statue to pay tribute to his sweetheart .

Whenever he missed his cousin, he could go in and cry.

It's rare to find a caring person in the world, and now that she finally finds one , she will naturally cherish his sincerity.

The more Xie Jiayi thought about it, the more she felt that it could be described in four words: a match made in heaven.

Nanny Chen led the maid to help the princess wash and change clothes , while looking at the princess's expression . She didn't look like she had quarreled with the prince early in the morning , but was a little excited. Nanny had no idea that in just a short while , her young master had found a prince for herself and even wrote the words " match made in heaven " on herself .

Nanny Chen saw the princess happy at one moment and frowning at another.

After Xie Jiayi was chosen as the prince consort, she faced a very difficult problem: how to impress the hard-hearted man who once had a crush on someone.

She sat cross-legged on the couch, thinking , and couldn't help sighing . In addition to repairing the river, doing business and storing grain , and paying attention to the war in the north , she now had one more thing to worry about:

How to catch up with Lu Chenan.

Life is indeed not easy , and each thing is more difficult than the last. But no matter how difficult it is , Xie Jiayi is happier looking at the vibrant crabapples in the courtyard than in the palace in her previous life. How wonderful it would be if the child who was destined to die from birth could also live a healthy and happy life without having to take bitter medicine.

Everyone saw that the atmosphere in the East Palace and the Begonia Palace had completely cooled down.

After the thunderstorm, Emperor Yongtai fell seriously ill, and Princess Kunyi devoted herself to tending to His Majesty. It was not until August, with the arrival of the refreshing autumn, that Emperor Yongtai's health finally improved and he was able to get up and handle government affairs, and Xie Jiayi felt relieved again.

Especially when the results of the Autumn Examination were announced, Lu Chenan did better than in his previous life. In his previous life, he ranked third in the provincial examination, but this time he was directly ranked first. For a time, the concubine of the Lu family came into the eyes of the people in the capital, and it was said that someone from the Fourth Prince had come to win him over.

Xie Jiayi came out of the Yangxin Palace, thinking about what to do next, and wandered around the palace casually. Although the crabapples in the palace had withered, the chrysanthemums were blooming. Seeing the servants coming and going in the imperial garden carrying various varieties of chrysanthemums, Xie Jiayi was in the mood to take a closer look.

As soon as he looked up, he saw His Royal Highness the Crown Prince passing by. This time he not only brought Gao Sheng with him, but also his maid.

Ruyi, Bubu, Caiyue and Caixing looked up and saw that it was the Mingpei that was bought by the Eastern Palace after leaving the palace. Bubu and Caixing pouted their lips at the same time, which showed that she was really valued by the prince. They heard that other people were not allowed to enter the prince's study, but she could go in and serve. If they said that there was no affair before, they would not believe it.

Xie Jiayi bowed and saluted. She also saw the maid Mingpei standing with Gaosheng behind her. She snorted coldly in her heart, "What a bitch." She continued to look at the chrysanthemums with great interest. She had already set her sights on the chrysanthemums. Chrysanthemums go well with celebrities. She would ask His Majesty for a precious breed of horse for her.

This gift should be good, elegant, and valuable. A scholar like the county horse should like it very much. She was still happily thinking whether to ask for this basin of snow sea or that basin of jade phoenix on the jade platform, because they were both suitable for her future county horse. If she asked for both basins, would His Majesty feel bad ...

But Gao Sheng shouted, " You are talking nonsense in front of the master. Why don't you kneel down and apologize to Miss Mingpei? "

Xie Jiayi thought the prince had left long ago, but when she turned around, she saw that she was the only one who was enjoying such beautiful chrysanthemums. The two sides were already on edge. Gao Sheng had obviously seen the prince's expression when he spoke. Cai Xing had already knelt down, but in front of Ming Pei, in front of the prince.

Xie Jiayi's anger suddenly rose.

What a bastard, he is worthy of making her Caixing kneel down!

She pulled the whip from her waist and whipped Ming Pei, but Xu Shixing grabbed the tail of the whip and pulled her back. Well, this pair of dogs didn't hide in the East Palace to be affectionate with each other, but actually ran in front of her to disgust her.

Xie Jiayi snorted: " Caixing, get up. " The voice was cold and crisp, and her dark eyes were filled with arrogance as she stared at Xu Shixing who was holding her whip opposite her.

Cai Xing hurriedly stood up and came behind the princess. She felt extremely aggrieved, but the prince was present and Gao Sheng's words were the prince's intentions. How could she dare not kneel?

Gao Sheng hurriedly said, " My lord , please understand. We just heard Cai Xing muttering and cursing Miss Ming Pei. Cai Xing doesn't take the people in the East Palace seriously. "

He had long wanted to stand up for Ming Pei and give a good beating to the servants in Haitang Palace who had made things difficult for her. They were so arrogant because they relied on the princess's support. Especially this Caixing, who was sharp-tongued and had made so many sour remarks behind Ming Pei's back. Seeing that the Crown Prince had not said anything, but had obviously agreed that he would make the decision for Ming Pei, Gao Sheng felt more at ease .

Ming Pei stood by holding a handkerchief, and whispered: " I am a lowly servant, and I don't deserve that His Highness and the Princess should be upset because of me. "

Xie Jiayi sneered: Peaceful, what kind of peace do they have? The subordinates are fighting, why did they hurt the harmony between her, the princess, and the prince, just for her. She hasn't even climbed to the position of imperial concubine yet, but she's already so arrogant! She pulled the whip hard, but it didn't move at all. Xie Jiayi simply swung the whip at Xu Shixing! The other party looked at her and raised his hand to catch it.

Xie Jiayi said coldly: " You are indeed lowly. I don't deserve to hurt the eldest maid of Haitang Palace for a lowly person like you! "

Ming Pei had never thought that even though she was now considered the leading maid in the Eastern Palace, Xie Jiayi would still not give her any respect. But it was better not to give her respect. She looked at Gao Sheng, who was getting more and more angry, and the prince, who was whipping the princess in circles without saying a word, and her calm voice was filled with a little grief and indignation: " I dare not offend Miss Caixing, but Miss Caixing is relentless to me. I am a clean person and do not deserve Miss Caixing's words. "

Xie Jiayi sneered at first: " Is this servant talking to the princess? " Ruyi knew what the princess meant and immediately bowed and said, " Although I am from the East Palace, I have no right to stand and talk in front of the princess. " She spoke more respectfully, but to Mingpei: " Miss Mingpei, you have to kneel down to answer the princess. "

Seeing that His Royal Highness the Crown Prince was just looking at the whip in his hand and remained silent, Ming Pei had no choice but to kneel down in humiliation.

Xie Jiayi turned around and asked Caixing: " What did you say to her that made her, a servant, feel wronged? "

Cai Xing whispered: " ... Fox ..."

Xie Jiayi was already upset when the whip fell into the hands of the prince, and she couldn't hear Caixing humming like a mosquito, so she said impatiently: " Speak back loudly. "

Cai Xing dared not whisper any more: " Fox charmer. "

Now, those who hadn't heard it all heard it. It turned out that Miss Caixing from Haitang Palace was scolding Miss Mingpei from Donggong as a foxy woman. This was indeed very unpleasant to hear. I was afraid that if the princess continued to make trouble, she would have to give face to the prince and punish Caixing in front of Donggong.

But the princess muttered after hearing this: " What you said is not wrong. "

Everyone: .....

Not only did she not intend to punish her maid, but she smiled and said: " Brother Crown Prince, although Caixing's words are unpleasant, they are also true. Think about it, besides Mingpei, which maid in your East Palace has ever sent frostbite ointment and small change to my palace? " At this point, she smiled more innocently, " Doesn't this make people call her a foxy woman? But Caixing is outspoken, I will ask the nanny to punish her later. " At this point, she turned around and glared at Mingpei, scolding: " Next time you say something like this, keep your voice down! "

Gao Shengmingpei and the servants of the Eastern Palace: .....

Xie Jiayi did not give anyone a chance to speak, and turned to Xu Shixing and said, " Brother Crown Prince, you see, I also scolded Caixing. " At this time, her sweet smile faded a little, "

But, what kind of filthy thing dares to make my personal maid kneel to her? Brother Crown Prince, you are the most fair, you can't be partial to a servant. "

Prince brother.

Xu Shixing tightened his grip on the whip, knowing full well that she was eloquent and flattering, calling him " Your Highness " when nothing happened and " Crown Prince " when something happened , but facing her eloquent face, he could not say a harsh word.

This person broke up with him without hesitation. For all these years, he didn't know that she was such a cruel person.

But no matter how bad she was, he couldn't embarrass her in front of the servants of the two palaces.

Xie Jiayi reached out and gently pulled the whip, tilting her head and urging: " Your servant offended me, should he be punished? Brother Crown Prince, please say something! "

Xu Shixing almost couldn't hold the whip as she pulled it lightly, and the tail of the whip brushed against his palm, causing a slight itch.

On this brisk autumn afternoon, amidst the chrysanthemums in the garden, the coldness on his body had already been half gone the moment she called him " Brother Prince " .

" Gao Shengmingpei will go back to accept the punishment. Now I kowtow to the princess and apologize for my crime. "



Gao Sheng and Ming Pei thought that the prince stopped because he heard Cai Xing's words and wanted to make decisions for others. Now they figured out that something was wrong. Gao Sheng immediately knelt down to apologize and begged for mercy. Ming Pei had a much harder time. She didn't expect that even in the East Palace, she would still be suppressed by Xie Jiayi. But he heard Xie Jiayi's devilish voice: " Brother Prince, you see she is still unhappy? What's the matter? Have you flattered her too much, making this person really think she will be my cousin-in-law, and now she dares to be so arrogant! " After she finished speaking, she laughed first. A cousin-in-law worth twenty taels of silver was indeed funny.

Xu Shixing, whose expression had originally calmed down, immediately turned pale when he heard Xie Jiayi say this:

" I've said before that it's not your turn to talk about the marriage of the Eastern Palace. " He gritted his teeth and said, " It's none of your business if I want to promote someone, don't you think? "

The prince narrowed his eyes and stared at the girl in red in front of him.

" Yes, yes, I won't say anything more. " Xie Jiayi was very conscious of the current situation. No matter how much she thought, she knew that Xu Shixing must not be offended at this moment. He was narrow-minded and had a bad temper.

She responded quickly and well.

But the faster and better she responded, the uglier Xu Shixing's face became. He suddenly felt that he was extremely ridiculous. Ever since he entered the Imperial Garden, his whole mind was full of ridiculous thoughts.

The grain transport, taxes, salt affairs, border affairs ... there are mountains of memorials waiting for him to sort out one by one. Why should he stay here and waste time with this heartless person?

He didn't even want to look at Xie Jiayi again. He threw away his black cloak and strode forward. Autumn is bleak in nature, and Xu Shixing never thought there was anything interesting about chrysanthemums.

The two met again after that rainy morning, but ended up parting on bad terms again.

It's better not to meet.

One of them went towards the six ministries with a cold face, while the other one snorted and continued to pick the chrysanthemums she liked, and was excited to give them to the prince.

## Chapter 25

When Xuehai and Yaotai Yufeng were sent to Lu Chen'an's courtyard in the Lu Mansion , even Mrs. Lu was shocked. The old lady, who had not liked to leave the courtyard for a long time, was surrounded by a group of maids and came to this most remote courtyard. She praised " I have never seen such beautiful chrysanthemums . It is true that the palace is noble and the flowers produced are better than those elsewhere. "

At this point, she looked at her grandson meaningfully . He was indeed good-looking, and his temperament was stronger than many noble sons she had seen. But his body looked a little

weak. She didn't know what the rules of the princess were. Although their Lu family was considered a merchant family, they were still well-known.

She gave some advice to this grandson whom she hadn't looked at for more than ten years . Mingxin was confused by the old lady's words, but Lu Chenan knew everything clearly and just pretended not to understand.

After everyone in the yard had left , Lu Chen quietly looked at the chrysanthemums that were as big as snow balls , stroking them gently with his fingers . After a while, he turned around and looked at the brocade box that Ruyi had specially sent him . When he opened it , he found a jade pendant.

A Begonia jade pendant.

Ruyi specifically said, " This was chosen by the princess herself . "

Lu Chenan stretched out his slender hand and gently took out the jade pendant from the box . He looked at it for a long time before whispering , " Give me a peach, and I will give you a jade in return. "

It is not a reward , but a forever friendship.

couldn't pronounce the last two sentences no matter how hard he tried . He clenched the jade pendant , coughed twice , and a blush appeared on his jade-white face.

Ming Xin looked at the gifts from the Princess's mansion and asked his son: " Last time the Princess sent a gift , you stayed up all night writing and drawing for her. This time the Princess sent such a good gift, is she going to ask you to stay up all night again? "

The jade in his hand was very warm. He held it gently and looked towards the courtyard wall. After a while, he whispered, " This time it may be different. "

" She probably needs more than just a capable minister. "

" Then what else could the princess need? " Mingxin didn't understand. There was nothing good in the princess's mansion. In our small shabby courtyard, apart from the young master's talents, what else could the princess take notice of?

This time, his master just held the jade pendant, lowered his eyes slightly, and did not answer. When Mingxin couldn't see, his hand holding Yu tightened unconsciously.

Mingxin was packing the gift boxes, thinking that even his extremely smart son didn't know, so he himself could not guess. He just hoped that this time the princess would not order him around like she did last time, asking him to read and draw. The son had been enduring for more than half a month, and just after he recovered, he was sick again for several days.

Fortunately, the princess would always send a lot of precious medicinal herbs for nourishing the body. From the look of the mute slave, you can tell that many of them are hard to buy even if you have money, not to mention that they have no money ...

At the Princess's Mansion, Yang Siwu and Hu Xiaobao, who were stranded in Beijing, were not much different from street beggars. Hu Xiaobao's eyes widened when he saw the meat buns. He hadn't had meat for days. They had never thought that the Princess would never come out after entering the palace, so they had no idea where to go. The money they brought had already been spent. Now the two of them had to help others carry heavy bags and earn money to stay in the capital. It was not until they finally heard that the Princess had left the palace again.

The gifts sent in didn't even make a sound. Although they had guessed this result, they still held a glimmer of hope. Two months later, this hope was gone. The two decided to go all out. The only way was to stop the princess' sedan chair.

After making up their minds, they washed themselves in the river, took out the clothes they had worn as gifts to Beijing, and put them on, so that they could at least look like human beings.

They waited in front of the princess's mansion for another two days, but seeing that they could not see the princess again, they lost their human appearance after so much effort.

Just when the two were anxious, they saw the princess' carriage coming. Yang Siwu pressed Hu Xiaobao's shoulder and rushed out first as planned. During the days in the capital, he heard a lot of rumors about the princess, most of which said that the princess had a bad temper. If he rashly stopped the carriage, he might be punished. At that time, Hu Xiaobao was outside, and he could either go back to the north to find a way or find another opportunity, so there was still hope.

Hu Xiaobao watched anxiously as Yang Siwu knelt upright in the direction of the princess's carriage. The driver immediately pulled the reins to stop the horse. The horse let out a long neigh and raised its front hoof, about one step away from Yang Siwu .

The people in the Princess's Mansion hadn't seen anyone who dared to stop their carriage for a long time. Their Princess was neither an imperial envoy nor a prince. It was unreasonable. Someone immediately became cautious and alert, fearing that the Princess' carriage would be startled. Especially since the man kneeling in front of them was very burly, he might be a martial artist. Seeing that the man was under the horse's hooves, he didn't panic, but knelt there with gritted teeth. This was not an ordinary person.

Although the people around did not dare to come forward to watch, they were also pointing and watching the excitement. Ruyi lifted the curtain of the large carriage and came out. He did not look at Yang Siwu who was still kneeling and kowtowing to see the princess. He only asked the people with swords to protect the emperor in a friendly manner. Yang Siwu knew that the opportunity was right in front of him, but he could not reveal his identity. If the general of Beidi sent someone to the capital to use the princess's connection, it would be a disaster if it was not heard.

He shouted in a deep voice towards the carriage, " My princess, do you still remember ' The young men of Wuling are riding white horses with silver saddles in the spring breeze ' ? "

When he said this, Ruyi was shocked at first. This person is from the North! Everyone in the North knew that this compliment was for the young master Xie Jueli of their general's mansion. He was only 13 years old, riding a silver saddle and a white horse. He was already a well-known young hero in the North. Ruyi looked at the person kneeling on the ground at this time. Although he was kneeling, he could tell that he was from the military.

In the carriage, Xie Jiayi stopped looking at the account book in her hand and looked up at the curtain as if she was stunned. Following the shout, she thought of the proud record in her notebook, " People praise me with Taibai's poems, Zhao Yebai's heroic figure has contributed greatly " , and she also added a note to herself, " People love to tell the truth the most, Zhao Zhao was proud of his brother at that time " . " Zhao Yebai " is her brother's horse.

She closed her eyes. She didn't remember. How could she remember the young man that everyone in the north praised back then? She only vaguely remembered that when he came in

with his BDSM , she seemed to cry because she didn't bring back Haitang cake and osmanthus candy for her brother. The young boy surrounded her and tried to comfort her. She couldn't even remember what he looked like last time. Only his voice appeared in her dreams again and again. But the person she wanted to see clearly was blank. She couldn't remember her brother's face at all.

" Princess! " Cai Xing's shouting brought Xie Jiayi out of her dark and deep memories. Xie Jiayi ordered, " Take the people with you and return to the mansion. "

Even when Yang Siwu followed the people from the Princess's Mansion into the Princess's Mansion, he still felt a little unreal: Was he really going to see the Princess? Was this going to happen?

Princess, does the princess really still remember the North, and us, the scattered old members of the Xie family?

Hu Xiaobao shouted at him anxiously: " There's me too! " As soon as he shouted, Ruyi nodded, and two guards came forward and took him to the Princess's Mansion.

Until Yang Siwu and Hu Xiaobao set out on the road to the north again, their faces, which were rough and tough due to the northern wind, still had unconscious smiles on them.

Following him was Uncle Cheng from the Princess's Mansion, who brought more than 30 people with him to help the Princess's Mansion expand its business to the north. Yang Siwu and Hu Xiaobao asked Uncle Cheng again if he had any instructions, so the two of them rode their horses in front to lead the way.

At that time, the princess let them leave after hearing what they said. When everything was checked and verified, the princess called them over and said only two sentences, " Don't worry, I will support those people " and " I will use them too " . The princess's grain and fur business in the north was in need of people, and Yang Siwu's heart was pounding at that time. These retired soldiers, dare not say anything else, but they can escort goods and deter barbarians and robbers. There is no one better than them. Even if they have broken legs and can't walk, they can sit in the store. Who dares to act wildly in their brothers' store.

Even if brothers cannot go to the battlefield, there is a way out.

Until now, Yang Siwu felt like he was dreaming and whispered, " What a nice horse we have! " It was shiny and smooth. It was the horse that the Princess's Mansion gave them.

" Dry food is good too! " Hu Xiaobao felt that there was still the taste of meat in his mouth. It was all dried meat. Why was the dried meat in the Princess' Mansion so fragrant?

" We will have someone in the capital from now on. "

" Someone's here. " It's the young master of the Xie family army, the daughter of General Xie!

" Boy, make sure you keep the silver bills that the princess brought to the general! " Yang Siwu reminded again.

" Even if I die, the banknotes will be safe! Brother, please keep the letter from the princess to our general! " Hu Xiaobao also reminded.

" Don't worry, even if you die, it won't matter! "

The two smiled at each other, and then looked at the caravan following behind them. They rode their horses to the outpost first. In their hearts, they were eager to get to the Northland as soon

as possible. The general and the brothers in the Northland would be so happy if they knew. Let those bastards who pushed them forward in battles and pressed them behind in rewards and pensions see : you have people, and we also have people above us! Their little master who wandered in the Northland back then has grown up now and is a big favorite in the eyes of His Majesty the Emperor. He grew up with the prince and is still willing to protect them, the old masters!

Here, the princess was leaning on the railing, feeding the koi in the pond, thinking bit by bit about the distant and unreachable north, that tangled mess, which seemed to have also pulled a thread.

" Ji De, Zhao Yi, Jiang Gan, Yang Siwu, Hu Xiaobao ..." Xie Jiayi pinched the fish food and frowned as she recited these names. She had never seen these people in her previous life, but why did these names make her feel familiar ... But no matter how hard she tried, Xie Jiayi couldn't figure out where this sense of familiarity came from. She thought of the mute slave beside Lu Chenan, which was another sense of familiarity. She always felt that she had seen her before, and in a situation that she really shouldn't have forgotten, but why was it that she couldn't remember this special sense of familiarity at all ...

God created humans, but didn't he give stupid people a chance to live ...

Xie Jiayi raised her hand and slammed her head hard. Ruyi, who was standing next to her, quickly came up and held the princess's hand, rubbing her forehead, and said, " It's not me who said that the princess was too harsh on herself. Look, it's all red ..."

She couldn't help but sigh, " Comparison is the thief of anger. " She is considered to be hardworking now, but she is not as good as Qian Yingying in reading account books. Reading ... let alone reading. Lu Chenan and Xu Shixing are extremely smart. They can read ten lines at a glance and remember everything they see. Zhang Jinyu can learn things quickly. Why can't she catch up with them even if she works hard all day ...

The princess, who had been stupid for twenty-two years, was deeply distressed for the first time because of her own stupidity, but what else could she do except to work hard and fly forward? But Xie Jiayi is such an optimistic person. She changed her mind and realized that she was stupid, but her horse was smart!

She scattered the fish food, clapped her hands, washed her hands in the basin brought by the maid, asked Ruyi to wipe her hands, and asked: " Are you ready for tomorrow night? "

Ruyi nodded.

Xie Jiayi took a deep breath. The gifts had been delivered for several days. Tomorrow was August 15th, and she had to go out in person and try to get her prince!

The longer the night, the more dreams you may have. You must act quickly and decisively!

## Chapter 26

On the 15th day of August, the Moon Festival , the night in the capital was very lively, and Princess Kunyi invited the young master of the Lu family to enjoy the moon and the lanterns. Nanny Chen had already inquired about Lu Chen'an in detail, and the only thing she was not satisfied with was his status as a concubine's son. But after comparing them , none of them was

as suitable as Lu Chen'an for the princess . The fact that he was still chaste at the age of 19 eliminated many people. Many of the newly-appointed scholars had not yet arranged marriages , and those from small families did not have their own wives, but compared with Lu Chen'an, they were outshined. Nanny Chen did not understand academic knowledge, but how many scholars had passed the exams , how could ordinary people compare to him? Not to mention his character and appearance, Nanny Chen, who had seen countless people, took one look and was already 70% satisfied.

He is so beautiful , apart from anything else , the princess feels comfortable just looking at his eyes every day!

Knowing that the princess had an appointment with Lu Chenan today , Nanny Chen was even more anxious than the princess . She saw the princess wearing a short blue jacket and a long, flowing crimson skirt, with her hair in a cross bun with a golden begonia hair accessory. She was smart and beautiful , but Nanny Chen always felt that it was too casual . On such a good day, she should dress up more carefully.

Xie Jiayi waved her hand: " That's enough. " There was no point in having more . Even if she dressed up beautifully , the other person would have someone in his heart. She had to find another way , although she herself hadn't figured out how to find another way.

If appealing to his emotions doesn't work , why not try to reason with him ..... On the premise of maintaining her dignified and gentle image , she has to quietly show that she is generous – she has money, and the key is that she is willing to spend money on Lord Lu! In addition, for someone like Lord Lu, Xie Jiayi thought that she must have the talent to impress him, but what talent does she have ...

The princess thought about it and arrived at the agreed place. She helped Ruyi get off the carriage and was greeted by the bustling night scene and voices. The Lantern Festival and Mid-Autumn Festival in Dayin were not banned for several consecutive days. On such nights, the streets of the capital were crowded with people, restaurants and teahouses were open, lanterns were hung on both sides of the street, and small vendors selling all kinds of food and toys were one after another.

It is common for young men and women to go out for sightseeing, or to meet up with three or five people, or for engaged men and women to travel together in Dayin, where the customs are relatively open.

As soon as Xie Jiayi got off the carriage, she saw Lu Chenan, a young man in a blue robe, standing under a tree in front of her, looking at a lantern with his hands behind his back. He was wearing the common blue robe for scholars, but it looked noble and eye-catching on him. In the crowd, the place where he was standing seemed to be shining.

The princess was slightly stunned. Every step she took towards the tree where Lu Chenan was, seemed to be on a different fateful path. She strayed further and further from the path of her previous life . This fateful deviation made her dazed and trembled slightly. The voices of the people around her blurred into one, and even the bright lights seemed hazy. She lifted her skirt and walked towards Lu Chenan.

What Lu Chenan saw when he turned around was the princess walking towards him with her skirt lifted up, her hair in a playful bun and her scarlet silk skirt. As she walked lightly, the

moonlight seemed to dance between her skirts, and the bright lights of the capital seemed to fall into her eyes.

Her eyes were dark and clear, but she looked at herself blankly, even the confusion was bright and clear. It seemed that no matter when, there was always no trace of haze in her eyes. Lu Chenan even had an illusion that the world was not in her eyes at this moment, and she could only see herself in the confusion.

This is heart-wrenching.

His heart was pounding, and he almost wanted to raise his hand to cover his chest, but his hand, which moved slightly, soon curled up slightly. Lu Chenan then crossed his hands and bowed slightly to the girl who was holding up her skirt, performing the first greeting of meeting her tonight.

Lu Chenan's salute was as smooth as flowing water. At that moment, the young scholar in blue shirt bowing and the young girl in green shirt and scarlet skirt complemented each other, and in the eyes of others, they were indescribably beautiful and well-matched. Even the noise seemed to be quiet at that moment.

When she arrived in front of Lu Chen'an, the usually cheerful Xie Jiayi felt shy for a moment.

This was Lord Lu, the Dali Temple Minister who amazed and feared many people in the capital. Her words " Be my princess " , if it were anyone else, would not be so difficult. After all, Lord Lu, who was praised by everyone, had praised her as a queen " dignified and gentle, with a soul of ice and snow, and noble character " , which made Xie Jiayi feel more difficult to speak directly. Simply put, she still has baggage in front of Lord Lu, and she cannot live up to the reputation of her " high moral character " , so she has to cover up her vulgar thoughts in a tactful way. She can't let " Ice Soul and Snow Soul " become " a mess " again .

After being stunned for a moment, Xie Jiayi noticed that Lu Chenan was quite tall, and she was only between his shoulders and chin. After knowing Lord Lu for such a long time, this was the first time Xie Jiayi realized this. She smiled at Lord Lu, and she felt that her smile was a little guilty and nervous, but she didn't know that in Lu Chenan's eyes, it was just dazzling. Lord Lu, who was very smart, saw through the nervousness of the girl in front of him.

She is Princess Kunyi, and she should be the moon in the sky, but she gets nervous in front of a vulgar man like me.

She thinks I'm nice.

Lu Chenan rubbed his fingers unconsciously, and suddenly he felt his ears slightly warm.

Xie Jiayi, who always boasted that she was not thin-skinned, felt a little embarrassed. It turned out that it was so difficult to propose marriage to herself. She thought about her strategies one by one. She gave a lot of gifts, all of which were gifts that could express one's feelings as described in the relevant storybooks. She just didn't give a sachet made by herself. She wanted to give it, but she didn't know how to do it.

She even gave him her favorite Begonia jade pendant. A smart man like Lord Lu should definitely understand.

Her feelings had been revealed, and today was the most important step. She had to show Lord Lu that she had the talent to match him. But she had thought all along that, apart from the fact

that her skills were definitely better than Lord Lu's, she hadn't thought of any other talents that could match him.

Xie Jiayi rarely said hesitantly: " I can't embroider or play the piano, nor can I recite poems or paint. In short, I can't do this or that . " She felt embarrassed even when she said it, so she immediately tried to save her face: " How about I perform a handstand for you? " No other young lady could do this.

Caiyue and Ruyi, who were standing far away , lowered their heads when they heard the princess' words, fearing that they would really laugh. Fortunately, Bubu and Caixing were not here, otherwise they would have burst out laughing and ruined the princess's business. Caiyue and Ruyi knew that the princess wanted to show her talents, but they never thought that the princess would think about it for a long time in the carriage and come up with this ...

Lu Chenan couldn't help but curl up his lips, but he immediately stopped. But the princess still saw his laughing face, which made Xie Jiayi glare at him. " I'm very skilled, but I'm afraid of hurting people, so I told you to do a handstand. If I use a whip, I'm afraid it will scare you. "

" I know that the princess is really good at fighting. " Lu Chenan lied with his eyes open. Sure enough, he saw Xie Jiayi looking as proud as a little fox. If she had a fluffy tail, it would have been wagging by now.

He paused for a moment before saying, " The princess doesn't need to know anything. "

He paused again, looked aside and said softly: " I can do most things. "

This made Xie Jiayi nod her head, " I know you can do everything. " Lu Chenan was so amazing. Although he was always sick and weak, unable to lift anything, during the autumn hunting that year, she had to give face to the Duke of Ying. He, a civil official, led her team of guards to hunt, and won the first prize for her. Afterwards, all her guards worshipped Lord Lu. Lu Chenan smiled again, and his eyes were as soft as water when he looked at Xie Jiayi. He had thought about the princess's reaction many times when he met her tonight, but he never thought that he was just a scholar, but the princess' eyes were already full of admiration and praise.

She really thinks I'm good.

This made Lu Chenan feel that the moon was as bright as frost and the wind was as gentle as water, making people completely intoxicated on this windy and moonlit night of the fifteenth day of the lunar month.

He smiled softly, looking at the girl in front of him who was obviously still racking her brains, and reached out to touch the Begonia jade pendant hanging around her waist, and said to her: " Princess, do you think the string that comes with this jade pendant is good? "

Only then did Xie Jiayi notice that the thing Lu Chenan was wearing around his waist was the Begonia pendant that she had given him.

She looked up blankly and saw Lu Chenan also looking at her.

Apart from the prince, this was the first time Xie Jiayi looked into the eyes of another young man. There was light in his eyes, peaceful and warm, which calmed Xie Jiayi's heart, which had always been at a loss .

She looked up at him and smiled unconsciously.

The princess' smile was like a blooming crabapple flower, indescribably beautiful and moving.



Blooming at the tip of people's hearts.

But it is very dazzling in the eyes of some people.

Not far away , Xu Shixing was watching the scene. His usually gentle face turned pale and cold. The young man who was already noble in the crowd now looked even more noble and awe-inspiring, and could not be approached. He stopped and looked at Xie Jiayi from the moment she lifted her skirt and dismounted from the horse, until she looked up and smiled.

Xu Shixing, who had been watching quietly the whole time, suddenly felt his heart beating in his chest. He couldn't tell whether it was painful or not, but he just felt it was unbearable.

There was a huge crowd of people and a lot of noise all around. He couldn't hear clearly what the girl was saying under the tree in the distance , but he could clearly see her smile and her head lowered, and the proud look on her face with her chin held high.

Gao Sheng, who was following behind, dared not breathe: "It turns out that the princess has a lover, no wonder she refused to be the Crown Princess!" He originally thought that His Highness agreed to go out today because of Miss Ming Pei's words, otherwise His Highness would definitely be in the study dealing with endless memorials and one difficult government affairs after another. In the past, with the princess pestering him, His Highness still had time to rest, but now he can only sleep for less than three hours a day, and the rest of the time is spent on government affairs. He said that His Highness is becoming less and less popular.

Now he was a little hesitant . Could it be that His Highness had received the news long ago and came out specifically to catch the adulterer ... God, no matter whether it was or not, the servants who served the master would have a hard time for a long time ...

Although His Highness's face looked expressionless at this moment, Gao Sheng knew that His Highness must be extremely angry.

Ming Pei was also surprised to see the scene in front of her. She had always thought that the princess said she didn't want to be the Crown Princess in order to control the Crown Prince. Only someone like His Royal Highness the Crown Prince who was devoted to official duties could not see the little girl's means, but she didn't expect that the princess actually had someone outside the palace ... This is really true. The princess probably didn't know that today was the day she would be in trouble with His Royal Highness. No matter what she thought, whether she was pretending or being restless ... From now on, the Crown Princess and the future Queen's position have nothing to do with Xie Jiayi.

His Highness looks like a gentleman on the surface, but he has been extremely proud since he was a child and will never tolerate such things. Princess Kunyi Xie Jiayi, from now on here with His Highness ... Impossible! Ming Pei felt like she was walking on cotton at this moment, her heart was beating very fast. She never thought that the princess, a strong rival in her way forward , would just disappear like this ... She thought that she had to knock down the roadblock slowly over the years, and slowly overcome it, but it just disappeared like this?

I just hate that she has ruined herself. Thinking of this, Ming Pei lowered her head, not wanting to let the hatred leak out. The Queen and the Duke's Mansion have been looking for doctors for her. There are already some signs. If they can find the King of Medicine Fang Zhongzi, there is still hope for her health. She has to keep her mind steady and move forward step by step. Her future is already bright .

His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, who had been watching quietly, suddenly asked Ming Pei to follow him and headed towards the direction where the two people were under the banyan tree.

Mingpei immediately stepped forward and followed the prince closely. Gaosheng also followed, but after thinking for a while, he fell slightly behind Mingpei.

## Chapter 27

Under the big banyan tree, Xie Jiayi was excitedly talking about tonight's plans , " We must go eat a bowl of Liu Sanniang wontons, okay? " She looked at Lu Chenan with sparkling eyes. In her previous life, she seemed to be the prince's tail and rarely left the palace . Later, she became the crown princess and then the queen , and it was even more impossible for her to leave the palace.

Before Lu Chenan could say anything , he heard a noble and cold voice saying, " If you want to feel pain again, just go and eat it. Why ask others if it's okay? " When the speaker mentioned the word " others " , his voice became even colder, as if the mere mention of " others " was a compliment.

Xie Jiayi was startled, and turned around to see the prince's noble face. She never thought that Xu Shixing would go out to the night market. Not to mention that he was busy with government affairs , he also disliked night markets the most. He said more than once " that there are too many people , the smell is mixed " and " it's too noisy . " Later, seeing that she really wanted to go , Xu Shixing simply asked the eunuchs and maids in the palace to organize a night market in Yujing Garden. That was when she was nineteen years old , the third year of her marriage , and the second year of being the queen. It was probably the last happiest time for her . From that year on, life became more and more difficult for her.

Her gaze passed over Xu Shixing and fell on Zhang Jinyu beside him . She was less than half a step behind Xu Shixing , which was no longer the distance that should exist between a maid and a prince.

The next day after the night market in the palace, the Queen Mother told her that she had been childless for three years and the imperial doctors were helpless . Your Majesty must have an heir as soon as possible to fill the harem. In fact, she was already suffering from the bitterness of the medicine and felt anxious , but she was used to being tough and refused to bow down to the Queen Mother. At that time, she only thought that her third brother had promised her that there would be no one else.

Soon, there was an overwhelming wave of calls for elections, sweeping in from inside and outside the palace. In fact, Xie Jiayi had already been more than just panicking, she even felt guilty, but she just wouldn't let go, just holding on to the last bit of certainty: he agreed to her. When she was most panicked, she was so scared that she even used Jun Wuxiyan to comfort herself. Those people didn't know that her third brother had agreed to her a long time ago, otherwise, no matter how good the third brother was, she, Xie Jiayi, would not marry him.

She and Xu Shixing started to quarrel, or rather, it was she who lost her temper, while Xu Shixing mostly remained silent. During that time, Mingpei, who was already familiar with the people in the East Palace, interacted more and more with His Majesty. She used soft words to comfort her, and even at one point, she was too stubborn to say the words of apology, and she was eager for Mingpei to say them to His Majesty ...

After the night at Eton Garden, her life began to fall apart. Before she could see anything clearly, everything had fallen to the bottom, and stones kept falling from above. Every day, every day ...

Xie Jiayi almost felt a little cold, and unconsciously moved closer to Lu Chenan. She smelled a reassuring scent of Begonia ink, which made her get closer to Lu Chenan. He used the Begonia ink she gave him. Lord Lu was indeed different from others. Even the daughter and son of the Taifu family chose to treasure the Begonia ink she gave to them, but they only took it out occasionally for appreciation. Only Lord Lu would use it when he said to use it.

He is different from others.

Xie Jiayi raised her head and looked at the people around her.

Lu Chenan also recognized that the person in front of him was the Crown Prince of the Eastern Palace, but he was obviously traveling incognito, and no one called out his identity. He was just an ordinary scholar, so he shouldn't know him, so he didn't say anything. At this moment, he felt a little timid from the person next to him, and he looked down, not expecting that the other person was so close to him, and met Xie Jiayi's eyes looking up at him.

Lu Chenan felt his heart tremble again.

There were unshed tears in Xie Jiayi's eyes, as well as confusion.

As a princess, with the title of Kunyi and the emperor's favor, she should have lived a life as she pleased. But the look she gave him at this moment was so lonely and helpless, as if she was alone in a siege and she didn't know how to break out.

Lu Chenan was a cautious person, but at that moment he even forgot that the prince was right beside him. He just whispered softly, " Princess, I'm here. "

" Lu ... Chen An? " She seemed to be trapped in the time scene.

Lu Chenan looked at her and whispered, " I'm here. "

Xie Jiayi smiled. Even in that miserable life, there was still someone who openly supported her, the miserable queen. Everyone said that she was " jealous ", " domineering " and " unfit to be the mother of the country " , but the person in front of her said that she had " a spirit as cold as ice and a noble character " and " was the right empress and the right queen " .

Lu Chenan saw her gaze turned back, as if she had come out of the trapped situation, and a smile appeared on the corner of his lips.

Xie Jiayi looked at his slightly raised mouth, and was stunned. She suddenly took a half step to the side , lowered her head and thought: Lord Lu, you are really beautiful. You are worthy of being the top scholar, handsome like Pan An, and a third scholar.

At this time, Caiyue and Ruyi had already fallen silent under the banyan tree. Gaosheng almost trembled, because he could feel that his master was as cold as ice. Although his face did not show it, the coldness around him could no longer be restrained. My God, is the princess flirting with someone in front of their highness ...

This is the Lu Chenan ... Xu Shixing also had a faint smile on his face, slowly turning the jade ring on his thumb, and in front of him was Xie Jiayi reading out these three words. A son of a concubine, a humble person, is also worthy of the favor of a princess, Zhao Zhao is really getting more and more willful.

Until this moment, Xu Shixing had never looked at Lu Chenan. He was like a mustard seed, not important. When he thought about it, the smile on his face deepened. It should have been a smile, but it brought out a hint of coldness. He lowered his eyes and stared at his jade ring: Xie Jiayi, you are really good.

Xie Jiayi was indeed amazing. She was still happy after she came out of her daze when she met the Crown Prince. She stood beside Lu Chenan, tilted her head to look at Xu Shixing and Zhang Jinyu beside him, and asked with a smile: " Third brother, are you guys out here to enjoy the moon and lanterns too? "

Then he said happily: " What a coincidence, we are the same. "

Xu Shixing's hand that was turning the ring suddenly stopped, and he pinched the jade ring with his thumb and index finger. He looked up at the happy and smiling face of the person opposite him, staring at her with a cold warning, and smiled slowly: " It's a coincidence. "

Xie Jiayi nodded indifferently and asked, " Where are you going to play? " Then she turned and winked at Lu Chenan, telling him not to go with them.

Lu Chenan smiled. People outside said that Xie Jiayi wanted to be the Crown Princess, and she had been chasing after the Crown Prince since she was a child. After ten years, the Crown Prince never agreed.

" Didn't you clamor to go to Jiuqu Bridge earlier? " Xu Shixing said calmly.

" Are you going to Jiuqu Bridge too? " Xie Jiayi confirmed.

Xu Shixing hummed impatiently.

Then everyone heard Xie Jiayi's cheerful voice: " That's too bad. We won't go to Jiuqu Bridge tonight. Goodbye now. Have fun, third brother. " After saying this, she bowed, called Lu Chenan to join her, and went in the opposite direction with Ruyi Caiyue.

Lu Chen bowed and said goodbye. Ruyi and Caiyue did not dare to look up when they bowed to the prince. They bowed very respectfully and hurriedly followed the princess. They really did not dare to even glance at the prince's expression at this moment.

Leaving the prince and his men behind, Gao Sheng wanted to hide away in despair. The duties of the Eastern Palace were already difficult to handle, and this little ancestor had provoked His Highness to this point. He clapped his hands and ran away ...

Xu Shixing watched the woman in the crimson dress blend into the crowd and disappear in the blink of an eye. His temples jumped uncontrollably, and he slowly suppressed the anger in his chest and looked at the direction she disappeared. Then he turned and headed towards the East Palace. Gao Sheng didn't even dare to remind his master whether he wanted to take the sedan chair, and just followed silently.

The master walked faster and faster, and it was hard for him to keep up, not to mention Miss Mingpei who was following behind. Gao Sheng had no choice but to speak, " Master, are we going back? "

The prince sneered, " Why do you want to go shopping too? "

As expected, Gao Sheng had hit a thorn in the side. He was afraid to say anything. Fortunately, Xu Shixing slowed down his pace. Gao Sheng saw Ming Pei almost stumbled. The night in August was as cold as water. When the few people slowed down their pace, sweat broke out on her forehead and nose. But she followed closely, feeling both convinced and sympathetic. Looking at the prince's face, he smiled cautiously and said, " Your Highness walks fast, I can hardly keep up, but it's fortunate that Miss Mingpei can keep up. "

The prince seemed to have just realized that he had a girl with him. " Didn't you say you wanted to see the night market? "

Mingpei paused while wiping the sweat off her face with a handkerchief. She didn't expect that her cousin the prince would still remember her at this time. Before she could be happy, she heard the prince continue to order: " Since everyone is out, Gaosheng, take Mingpei for a walk. " As he spoke, he raised his hand, and two more people came forward. The prince gave an order, and soon someone came with a horse.

Before Mingpei could think about how to answer, the prince had already jumped on his horse and rode towards the East Palace. Under the bright moonlight, the back of the man on the horse was handsome and tall. He was the prince of Dayin, the future new emperor. Mingpei clenched her handkerchief tightly and said nothing.

The prince rode very fast, and the two followers behind him kept whipping their horses to keep up with him. They all felt that the prince was not like usual tonight, and the faster he rode, the faster they had to keep up.

Mingpei looked at the brightly lit road and heard Gaosheng's cautious voice beside her: " Ms. Mingpei, the master is not happy today, otherwise the master would like to accompany you to look around. "

Ming Pei smiled, seemingly unconcerned, " Who am I to trouble the master to accompany me? "

Gao Sheng smiled and said: " The master treats the young lady differently. We in the East Palace all know it clearly. I am afraid that the young lady will definitely have a position in the future. " When the princess wanted to be the crown princess before, it was hard to say. The princess was jealous and could not tolerate anyone. Now that the crown princess has changed, Miss Mingpei's bright future is certain.

Mingpei just smiled and didn't say anything. " Having a position "... is not what she wants. How can a sparrow understand the ambition of a swan?

On the other side, Xie Jiayi, Lu Chenan and others turned to a riverside where there were few people. The noisy sounds faded away , and they saw the bright moon hanging high in the sky, with one in the sky and another in the river.

Xie Jiayi walked a few more steps toward the river and leaned over to look at the moon in the water.

" Princess, be careful! "

After all, this is a riverside place with few people, and the ground is not that flat. Seeing the princess stepping on the raised gravel, as Lu Chenan reminded her, he helped her up very lightly, and then let go.

Later, as the princess Ruyi withdrew her hand that was about to go forward to help, she calmly looked at the sickly young man in everyone's eyes again in the bright moonlight.

## Chapter 28

Lu Chenan's support caught Ruyi's attention. He looked at the seemingly sick Mr. Lu again in the moonlight.

Lu Chenan raised his hand, clenched his fist, placed it on his lips and coughed twice, and Ruyi withdrew his gaze. Caiyue gently pulled Ruyi back and stood under the shadow of a tree a little further away from the princess, so that she would not be in the way of her master, and she could respond at any time if her master gave her an order. She noticed Ruyi's gaze on Master Lu and asked in a low voice: "What's wrong?"

"Just now – Mr. Lu doesn't look like a weak scholar." His reaction was too fast and his hands were too steady.

Caiyue disagreed, "Could it be that Master Lu is a hidden master? You are too suspicious. I think Master Lu is always keeping an eye on his master."

Ruyi hummed, "Maybe."

The two of them quietly looked at the young man in green and the girl in scarlet long skirt in front of them. In front of them was the water surface with ripples occasionally caused by the wind, and in the sky was a big, round moon. When the girl tilted her head to speak, the young man in green would slightly turn his head to listen carefully.

Listening carefully, it turned out that the princess had not forgotten the famous Liu Sanniang wontons. Lu Chenan said softly: "The princess doesn't often eat out. It's inevitable that she will have stomach problems when she eats street food. I know a place that is delicious and clean. If the princess likes it, I'll take you there to try it next time."

Xie Jiayi was so happy that she immediately asked, "When is the next time?" She also asked, "Is it better than Liu Sanniang's? Why haven't I heard of it?"

Her eyes sparkled in the moonlight, as if stars had fallen into them.

Lu Chenan's laughter was low and clear, as beautiful as the bright moon and fresh breeze at night.

Even when he wasn't smiling, Xie Jiayi noticed that his eyes seemed to be smiling, and when he smiled, his whole body was warm. It turned out that when Lord Lu smiled, people felt so good. Xie Jiayi thought carefully and it seemed that she rarely saw Lord Lu smile in her previous life.

Lord Lu, a 19-year-old, so fond of laughing?

The willow trees by the river were all golden yellow. Lord Lu's smile was implicit and contained something like the golden willow trees. Xie Jiayi thought that it was probably a kind of brilliance that belonged to autumn, implicit but not revealed, but it was there. In the golden willow trees, in the bright moonlight, and in the smile in Lord Lu's eyes.

Their eyes met, then unconsciously moved away and fell on the river surface that was rippling like crepes. They were speechless for a moment, watching the crepes raised by the breeze slowly flatten out. After the wind passed, the river surface seemed to become a clear mirror again, reflecting the reflections of the willow trees and the moon in the sky.

Xie Jiayi gently pulled the willow branches hanging behind her, and Lu Chenan noticed that a golden willow leaf swirled and fell on her hair, adding a touch of brilliant yellow to her dark hair. He curled his right hand, then slowly let go, but unfortunately he couldn't help her take it down. Xie Jiayi estimated that the time had come, and turned to look at Caiyue Ruyi behind her. They both smiled and nodded at her.

She knew that everything was arranged. Xie Jiayi loosened the willow branch in her hand and looked up at Lord Lu beside her again, " Mr. Lu, I have a gift for you tonight! " Xie Jiayi, who had no talent, felt that she could express her feelings through a generous gift.

Lu Chenan turned to look at the girl next to him, and saw the girl pointing forward with a smile, " Look, your gift! "

As her voice fell, fireworks suddenly bloomed all over the sky, and a silver star-like object fell, filling the entire sky. Among the silver stars, a deer figure appeared, as if strolling in the Milky Way.

What's even more amazing is that the deer stayed in the starry sky for quite a while before disappearing in the dazzling light.

With the successive colorful fireworks, the words " Peace and Prosperity " appeared in the sky . The whole city was attracted by the fireworks in the sky, and many people looked up to see it. With such a grand display, many people thought it was hosted by the imperial court. Xie Jiayi said with a smile: " Mr. Lu, I will give you fireworks all over the city! " The bright fireworks had not yet dispersed, and the girl's smile and even her figure were extremely clear. When this spectacular fireworks display ended amid waves of joyful shouts from the people in the city, Lu Chenan, who was always calm no matter what happened, seemed to still not have recovered from the grand fireworks display. A smart man like him could easily see his own name in it. Someone hid his name in such a grand fireworks display and said it was a gift to him. Everyone thought that the fireworks were for the wish of " peace and prosperity for the country and the people " , but they didn't know that some people used the word just to get the " peace " in it .

Lu Chenan looked at the dark sky after the fireworks faded, his heart still beating uncontrollably in his chest.

It turns out that this is Princess Kunyi Xie Jiayi. When she wants to please someone, no one can refuse her.

No one.

This is Xie Jiayi.

The last person in this world who was inextricably linked to him. When he thought he could only watch her from afar , she walked straight into his world.

At this moment, Lu Chenan was both happy and sad.

It took so long that Xie Jiayi was a little worried that her gift was not good enough. Was it too much arrogance but not enough talent? Now, she stood upside down next to the willow tree. Was it too late ?

Just when Xie Jiayi began to doubt the fireworks, she heard Lu Chenan's hoarse voice, soft and faint: " Princess, I like it very much. "

fireworks display for him that will stun the whole city with such care again .

He was just the son of a merchant family and a concubine, and he was also destined to have bad luck with his relatives and be a lonely star.

Xie Jiayi finally felt relieved. As long as she liked it, it was good. She had spent a lot of effort to look for these fireworks from many families.

Although everyone knew that Princess Kunyi was generous, the present was different from the past. Xie Jiayi explained seriously: " You also know that all my money was used to repair the river in the south. I am not that extravagant now. I would not give such a big gift to ordinary people. " Xie Jiayi thought to herself, it was only for my princess that she would be so generous. She gently swung a piece of willow branches, slapping the water surface. She was a little embarrassed to mention it, but she also thought that there was nothing to be embarrassed about for men and women to get married.

At the end, he only said: " Mr. Lu, do you understand? "

Lu Chenan's vague sorrow had dissipated with Xie Jiayi's serious explanation. The person next to him almost said directly that he had made such a huge investment just for you ... Lu Chenan felt funny and at the same time he shouldn't laugh. In the end, the sixteen-year-old princess actually asked a question, with a sense of righteousness, but she didn't even look at anyone, as if her attention was attracted by the willow branches in her hand that were gently whipping the water.

But it makes people feel that she is waiting with her ears perked up.

Lu Chenan couldn't help but clenched his fist and coughed twice. He felt that he was obviously three years older than the person in front of him, and he thought she was a willful little girl, but his ears started to get hot as she spoke. He even suspected that his face was also slightly hot, giving people a clue.

Fortunately, the wind was cool by the river and the night was hazy.

But he still didn't dare to face Xie Jiayi. He just focused on the river in front of them and said softly, " I will definitely pass the palace examination tomorrow. "

Only if he gets the top score in the imperial examination will he have the possibility of marrying the royal princess.

Lu Chenan gently grasped the Begonia jade pendant hanging around his waist.

Xie Jiayi thought that Lord Lu was too kind. She hadn't even proposed to build a temple for his deceased lover and make a golden statue of him, but Lord Lu seemed to have agreed – could he consider becoming her princess? She raised her left hand and gently kneaded her neck, taking the opportunity to secretly look up at Lord Lu next to her, only to see that Lord Lu was concentrating on looking ahead, and didn't seem to care that she was beside him.

Lord Lu is as handsome as Pan An, Lord Lu is bright and handsome, and Lord Lu can do anything.

But, Lord Lu, your heart is not here.

Xie Jiayi turned her head and looked at the water. It doesn't matter. Lord Lu's heart is not with her, but his heart is not with anyone else in this world. Over time, they can be together forever, and there will be no one else this time. He will always be by her side, don't leave.

No matter how many thunderstorms there are, I will never leave.

She would no longer be left alone.



Such a good person, this is enough. She is neither talented nor smart, has a bad temper, is domineering, jealous, and extravagant. She may never be someone's favorite, but it is also good to be someone close to such a good person. Just don't leave and don't break your promise.

Xie Jiayi was immersed in the moon in the water and the shadow on the river, but she didn't know that the moment she turned her head and retracted her gaze, Lord Lu, who seemed to be concentrating on watching the water, the shadow and the moon, quietly turned his head and looked at her.

In the moonlight, she seemed like fragile glass, making people want to treasure her.

Where is it hidden?

Hidden in the heart.

This unprecedentedly grand fireworks display also alarmed the Eastern Palace. Gao Sheng and Ming Pei, who had already returned to the Eastern Palace and were serving in the study, were the first to hear the noise outside.

In the end, it even alarmed His Royal Highness the Crown Prince.

Xu Shixing stood in the East Palace, looking in the direction of the fireworks. With such a hand, she dared to blatantly release "Peace and Prosperity". He didn't even need anyone to check, he knew it was Xie Jiayi.

Deer, stars, peace and prosperity for the country and the people.

He clenched the jade ring in his hand and watched the final brilliant ending indifferently.

Under the palace lanterns, the prince's face was handsome, but also increasingly cold.

It was originally a festival in the East Palace, and seeing such a sensational fireworks display, the palace ladies inevitably felt happy and whispered. But no one knew who started to shut up, and then one after another, they all shut their mouths tightly, no longer daring to point at the sky where the fireworks were blooming.

So everyone watched the grand fireworks display in a heavy and oppressive silence. No one dared to move until the fireworks ended, because the prince kept one hand behind his back, looking at the sky where the fireworks disappeared.

The sky was dark at this time, and as the wind rose, the palace maids in the East Palace all shrank their necks unconsciously, and the night became colder.

Others didn't understand, but Ming Pei was so smart and thoughtful that she realized almost halfway through that this was a fireworks display that Xie Jiayi prepared for that Mr. Lu.

She was almost disdainful of the spoiled princess, whose choices were so arbitrary and absurd. Zhang Jinyu was holding the crown prince's cloak in her arms, but the coldness of the man in front of her made her stop halfway and not move forward. She looked at the dark sky after the fireworks in the distance, raised her head, and hugged the cloak tightly in her arms. She didn't have the good life of the princess, but she had to walk the road to heaven, and one day the proud princess would have to kneel at her feet.

He is just a top scholar, what use is that? No matter how powerful he is, he is destined to be a subject and a slave kneeling at the feet of His Highness.

And she will be the master.

On that day, all the grievances and injuries will be explained. No one can hurt others recklessly without paying a price. No one, not even Princess Kunyi, can do that.

Two people standing in the night wind, one has endless darkness in his eyes, while the other has burning ambition in his lowered eyes.

Behind them was the tree that the prince had taken care of himself. It was already autumn, but the leaves were still green and rustling. The green of the leaves was almost eerie, like burning darkness, like burning wild ambitions.

Zhang Jinyu soon found an opportunity to break the deadlock.

## Chapter 29

Zhang Jinyu lowered her head in the darkness, her original plan had been thwarted. But Xie Jiayi made her understand one thing, she couldn't be a slave forever, she had to stand out, and she saw a great opportunity in front of her.

At the end of September and the beginning of October, the Yellow River was in flood season, and the prince who was in charge of repairing the Yellow River became increasingly busy.

Dayin was a vast country, with the Northern Di and Western Rong in the north, the barbarians of the fallen Shu chieftains in the south, the Yellow River in the Central Plains, and the affairs of scholars in the Jiangnan region ... Each of them was a difficult matter, and the treasury had finally saved some money, but it was simply not enough to cover it. During the flood season, money was poured in to repair the river, and the project was tight, the treasury was short of money, and the local officials were still exploiting it at every level. When it came to the hands of the common people, it was inevitable that the work was tight, but the food and wages were suppressed again and again.

This is the time when complaints are most likely to arise. Logically speaking, the situation is not worse than in previous years, but public opinion is more turbulent this year. It is not for anything else, but because the Kunyi County Princess's Mansion is investing a large sum of money to renovate the southern river.

In people's eyes, Princess Kunyi's behavior was simply absurd. There was a shortage of silver everywhere, but the princess who had silver in her hand wanted to throw it away. Especially at this time of the Yellow River flood season, it was a tense time. The princess, who was favored by the country, actually spent silver to repair the river in the south that could not possibly have problems, just on her own will. And His Majesty, as always, indulged the princess no matter what she wanted to do.

There were all kinds of rumors, and people with different motives were behind the scenes fanning the flames. In the end, there was a rumor that the princess relied on her favor and the people's money to repair the river as if it was a game. Another rumor was that the princess had a nightmare about a flood in the south at night, so she wanted to repair the river in the south, completely ignoring the fact that the Yellow River was in dire straits during the flood season. Everything was just to appease the nightmare of a sixteen-year-old princess.

For a time, everyone was talking about Princess Kunyi, who was willful and unaware of the difficulties of people's lives.

Later, I heard that the princess went to the south to build a river channel, held the imperial token, and personally supervised the execution of more than a dozen officials, just to make the

project go forward according to her wishes. No matter whether it was the noble officials in the capital, the scholars in the academy or the ordinary people, when talking about this princess, they all shook their heads.

At this time, Xie Jiayi, who had just returned from the south a few days ago, was staring at the continuous autumn rain in the corridor of the princess's mansion. Nanny Chen came in from the outer courtyard and just passed the hanging flower gate when she saw the princess staring at the rain in the corridor. Because the trip to the south lasted more than a month, the princess had become thinner. At this time, she was wearing a bright red cloak, which made her look even weaker and paler.

Her nose was sore. Nanny Chen didn't understand why the young princess had to spend so much energy to repair the many rivers in the south. Not to mention the silver invested, it was hundreds of thousands of taels from the princess's treasury. His Majesty couldn't bear it, and couldn't persuade the princess, so he allocated some silver from his own private treasury to help the princess do this. As a result, people outside said all kinds of things, and all the money became the people's blood and sweat. God has mercy on her. Their young princess is just willful. What she did was good for the country. She didn't use a penny of the treasury money. She did business and met with merchants. She used the money she had carefully planned to do things. Why was she talked about like this?

Just now she had scolded a servant from the outer courtyard who was doing purchasing work for hearing those nonsense words outside and daring to bring them back to the mansion.

Nanny Chen came to the corridor, thinking about the gossip she had just heard, and she felt angry and distressed. She reached out to help Xie Jiayi tighten her red cloak, and seeing the little princess frowning and thinking, she couldn't help but ask, " Master, are you worried about money again? "

Xie Jiayi then looked at her nanny and smiled softly: " Master Lu has already calculated the amount of money. I was already worried at that time. Now I just need to prepare the next batch of money. Don't delay the project. "

She looked at the continuous autumn rain again. Such a big project only has one year to complete. At this time next year, the heavy rain in the south has been covering the sky for two months. The river channels have broken one after another. Countless villages have been flooded overnight. Countless people died in their dreams, and countless people were displaced. Following the flood, the plague came. Half of Dayin was like hell on earth. Tragedies such as cannibalism happened constantly on that land. Two kilograms of millet could buy a sixteen or seventeen-year-old girl. That was a real starving population, which drained the emperor's uncle's last bit of effort. The new emperor was still cleaning up the disaster in the south after ascending the throne for several years.

Xie Jiayi took a deep breath, and the coolness of late autumn seeped into her lungs.

My mother wrote in her notes: What is the purpose of life? To be a person with a single-minded purpose, to do good for the country and the people, is to live up to the honor of this body and this life.

In her previous life, she had sought a devoted person and fully supported that devoted person to do things that benefited the country and the people. She originally just wanted to be a rich and idle person. She was indeed extremely rich, and an idle person was also a complete idle

person. But in the end, she did not have a devoted person, and did not do what her mother said: do a few things well to live up to this life.

" Mammy. " Xie Jiayi called out softly, but didn't say anything. Perhaps it was because of the intense day and night trip to the south, and the killing and bloodshed, she felt exhausted. Xie Jiayi called Mammy Chen, but didn't say anything, just leaning against her. She knew the gossip outside, but she couldn't control it, and didn't want to.

What does the gossip of the world have to do with her?

She had been scared, panicked, and guilty before, but once she came here, she realized that although human words are scary, but they are impossible to think about, then it is up to you to say what you say, so you have to avoid me and don't let me hear it. . If I hear it, I'll slap your mouth to pieces. If I don't hear it, you're lucky.

No matter how much people reviled her, she was still the noble and noble Princess Kunyi, and she still enjoyed the prosperity of the world. Could it be that saying a few words to others would make her less noble? Again, just don't say it in front of her eyes, let her hear it, the whip on her waist is not forgiving.

Xie Jiayi felt that the autumn rain was long and the world was so vast. She thought that she was just a little tired and lonely.

At this time, the Prince of the East Palace had just returned from a few places downstream of the Yellow River. As soon as he came back, he read the backlog of books and stayed up for two nights without closing his eyes. At this time, he stood in front of the desk and raised his hand to rub his forehead, closed his eyes slightly and then opened them. open.

He picked up the note handed to him by He Sheng, glanced at it and sneered. He was already feeling unwell, and now he felt his forehead throbbing twice.

She even auctioned off the calligraphy and paintings he gave her, as well as the pair of pearl jade ruyi. Does this little bastard know how precious the pair of jade ruyi is? He had specially found them for her .

The prince let out a long breath and suppressed his surging emotions.

He brought it from the south when he was seventeen years old for them – for their wedding.

After working non-stop for more than a month, the prince, who was always full of energy, now had slightly blue eyes and bloodshot eyes. He was obviously a handsome and elegant young man, but now he looked a bit unruly and uninhibited. The work came to an end, and it seemed that all the energy in his body had dissipated. The prince felt as if his whole body was falling apart. The fatigue that had been suppressed for a month could no longer be suppressed at this time, and it all came out of his body.

He suddenly heard someone outside the study calling " Third Brother " with joy. Who else could it be but her?

Xu Shixing's face was still stern, but he had already stood up and walked around the desk. She hadn't been to the East Palace for a long, long time, and Xu Shixing didn't even know what expression he should put on for a moment.

He should be indifferent. Does she know how hurtful the things she said and did were? In the middle of the night, Xu Shixing had the urge to strangle her more than once.

But he waited for a long time and did not hear any greetings from the people below. Xu Shixing then took a few more steps towards the door, but saw that it was empty outside. There was only the sound of rain hitting the parasol trees, and occasionally a few palace servants hurried by in oil coats or holding oil umbrellas. Where else was there?

But he had clearly heard it just now, it was her voice, there was no way he could be wrong.

His voice was slightly hoarse, perhaps because of tiredness: " Gao Sheng, was there anyone here just now? "

Gao Sheng, who was standing by the door, was stunned and replied: " No one has come at this time. Miss Mingpei came to bid farewell to her master a while ago. The Empress of Changchun Palace asked her to take a mission to the Duke's Mansion for two days. " Gao Sheng suspected that the prince wanted to see Miss Mingpei.

The prince listened in a daze, said nothing, and raised his hand to let him leave.

Gao Sheng hurriedly stood aside. When the master was busy, he hated it most when there were people serving tea and water next to him. The people who served him had trained themselves to turn themselves from existence to non-existence. When the master didn't need them, they could even suppress their breathing to be inaudible.

The prince looked at the rainy courtyard for a long time before turning around and going in.

The old lady in the Duke of Ying's mansion was rubbing Zhang Jinyu's " darling " and complaining: " You are such a heartless little thing. You didn't tell your grandmother when you entered the palace. "

Zhang Jinyu leaned against the old lady and said, " My granddaughter misses me every day, but there is no servant in the palace who can make the decision. "

The old lady of the Duke's Mansion pondered for a long time before slowly saying, " At that time, we sent you to the princess for your future. Otherwise, we would not be able to hide you in the Duke's Mansion. Now that you have arrived at the East Palace, when your grandmother goes to see the queen someday, she should find a reason to raise your status. "

Zhang Jinyu just smiled next to her grandmother, " Jinyu listens to everything grandma says. " After waiting for her grandmother to rest, she went to her uncle's study in front.

" Misappropriation? " The Duke of England always knew that his niece was no simple person, but he did not expect that she was not only smart and able to see the situation clearly, but also very courageous.

The old house of the Duke of Yingguo's mansion is in the Lianghuai area. With the emergence of the Queen and the Prince, the originally inconspicuous Wang family has now become a prominent family in the Lianghuai area. The major local families are closely related, and the Wang family has established a network in Lianghuai. It is easy for them to embezzle the money for repairing the river. How it was repaired and how much money was spent, how could a princess in the capital know. The people in the Princess's Mansion spent a lot, but the project was too big. The Duke of Yingguo had noticed that the two places that the princess was most concerned about had already involved all the manpower of the Princess's Mansion. In other places, the princess did kill people this time and shocked them, but the Lianghuai area was not a place where a princess in the capital had the final say.

Zhang Jinyu was not afraid at all when facing the Duke of England's gaze, and continued to tell the story.

Hearing this, the Duke of England couldn't help but nodded.

By embezzling the princess's money, the Wang family made some achievements in the Huai River and Huai River regions, and created a new situation to win the hearts of the people. They also won over the scholars in the south for the court and their Duke's Mansion. Not to mention that the matter would not be exposed, even if it was exposed, they could step on the princess's reputation for wrongdoing and gain a good reputation of not fearing the domineering and powerful and serving the people wholeheartedly.

No matter how you look at it, the British Dukedom is the biggest beneficiary.

That was a huge sum of money! They were not greedy or stingy. They used the princess's money to do things for the scholars in Lianghuai. Even if it was exposed, people would only say good things about them.

That's wonderful.

While the princess was still looking at the account book in a daze, she heard Qian Yingying, who was also looking at the account book next to her, say that she would go to Dajue Temple in two days.

October, Dajue Temple, the place where Qian Yingying died in her previous life!

Xie Jiayi felt a chill on her neck. " No! "

## Chapter 30

" no! "

" You are about to give birth, how can you go out casually? "

Xie Jiayi's firm refusal made Qian Yingying, who was like a little rabbit, shrink a little . She still followed her nanny and explained with a smile that this time of year was the time to go to Dajue Temple to hold a ceremony for her deceased lady, and they always had to stay in Dajue Temple for some time.

Hearing that it was about her deceased mother, Xie Jiayi frowned slightly. She thought about it carefully , Qian Yingying's fate in this life was different from her previous life . Not to mention that she might not meet Su Yan and others in Dajue Temple again , even the situation she met was different from her previous life. Xie Jiayi's eyes fell on Qian Yingying's round belly: she wanted Qian Yingying and her child to be safe, so no one could kill them.

After thinking about it , Xie Jiayi suddenly relaxed her tense nerves when she heard that Qian Yingying was going to Dajue Temple. Then she remembered that the county horse she personally appointed was studying in Dajue Temple these days, preparing for the next spring exam. As the champion of the capital area, he was naturally the target of the upper-level people to win over and make friends , especially now that the Fourth Prince's party was not giving in and fighting with the Prince's party in full swing. People without a family background could easily become victims of the struggle between the two parties , so Lord Lu naturally had to hide.

Thinking of this , Xie Jiayi turned to Qian Yingying and said, " I have something to do , so I'll go to Dajue Temple with you to live for a while. " This way , she can keep an eye on Qian Yingying

and show off more in front of Lord Lu. His Majesty seems to be in better shape these days, and she also wants to pray for His Majesty , hoping that she can do what she wants to do and that the Emperor uncle can spend the spring of the thirteenth year of Yongtai safely.

Looking at Qian Yingying's round belly again , Xie Jiayi clenched her hands unconsciously. If she could protect Qian Yingying and her child , she could definitely help her uncle share his worries and let her uncle spend the thirteen years of Yongtai safely.

soon as the servants in the Princess's Mansion received the Princess's instructions , they quickly arranged for the Princess's departure under the arrangements of Nanny Chen and Caiyue Ruyi.

The group arrived at Dajue Temple . The princess' servants had prepared the room for her . Xie Jiayi had just sat down after taking a bath and picked up the teacup when she saw Caixing rushing in: " Princess, something happened to Miss Qian! "

Xie Jiayi choked on the tea in her mouth. Her heart started pounding. She waved away Bu Bu's hand that came up to pat her, stood up, lifted her skirt, and ran forward with Cai Xing.

The daily planning and hard work since her rebirth made Xie Jiayi clench her whip tightly. She wanted to change people's fate. If anyone dared to ruin her work, she would kill them! If she couldn't save people, she would kill them . She wanted to let the heaven see that she could change her fate since she was reborn!

Xie Jiayi arrived at the lotus pond in the front hall with a murderous look on her face, and saw that quite a few people were surrounding Qian Yingying!

This time, in addition to Su Yan, there is also Song Ziming and Zhang Jinyu.

Xie Jiayi's eyes flashed, so many things have changed, but they still gathered together. When the princess arrived, these people were shocked and immediately knelt down to pay their respects. Xie Jiayi then saw Qian Yingying, who was surrounded, pale, with beads of cold sweat coming down, and the two little girls who brought her were both supporting her with tears in their eyes.

Xie Jiayi did not speak, but raised her hand. The imperial physician Liu, a gynecologist from the Imperial Hospital who she had invited for the trip to Dajue Temple, immediately stepped forward to feel Qian Yingying's pulse and immediately gave her acupuncture. The cold sweat on Qian Yingying's forehead finally subsided. The imperial physician bowed and replied, " Miss Qian was stimulated. She needs to go back and rest well to be safe. "

Xie Jiayi's heart finally settled down. She looked at Qian Yingying unhappily. The latter's tears made her head hurt. It was true that like master, like servant. Yishui and the other three looked at her like little rabbits.

" You say. " She casually pointed at the little rabbit on Qian Yingying's left, " The rest of you can just watch the fun and then send your master back to rest. " She emphasized the word "rest".

With someone backing her up, Rabbit dared to speak loudly. The girl immediately said hatefully: " Our nanny brought people to clean up the girl's residence. The girl burned incense and wanted to take a short walk and come back, but then she met these people! " At this point, she pointed at Su Yan, who was also pregnant and supported by Song Ziming. She looked to be about four or five months pregnant. " This woman's maid came up and went crazy, saying that our master

was narrow-minded and intolerant, and instigated the princess to humiliate their girl. Who knew that the son-in-law who came later – the former son-in-law, came over and scolded our master without asking any questions, saying that he would not let go of Madam Su even after the divorce, and that Madam Su was in a heavy body, and if anything happened to her after being provoked, he would not be polite! " At this point, the girl's voice was already crying. Could it be that their former son-in-law was a blind man? Their girl was even more pregnant, so he was like a man with shit in his eyes and lard in his heart, and he could not see at all. All he could see was that vixen.

The words flew over here like a knife, and then he turned around and became a different person, speaking softly and being humble, which was something they had never seen before. Just like that, he warned their girls with a cold face to stay away from Miss Su ! Back then, it wasn't just Song Ziming, there were also several poor scholars. It was their young lady who chose this man. This was the man that the young lady thought she could rely on for the rest of her life!

The maid sobbed twice, and then turned to Zhang Jinyu: " I don't know where this girl came from. She showed off her knowledge to our young lady, saying that women should be virtuous and tolerant. She looks very kind, but she keeps praising her mistress and her words are irritating! "

the little girl said the word " concubine " , Su Yan's face turned even paler. Song Ziming's heart twitched, and he was so distressed and angry that his veins popped up and he shouted: " How dare you, lowly slave! "

This time he was so angry for the beauty he loved that he even forgot that opposite him were not only the master and servant Qian Yingying who had always regarded him as their god after marriage, but also Princess Kunyi.

As soon as he said this, a slap landed on his face, stunning Song Ziming and others.

Every time she smiled, she revealed a dimple. With her cute baby face, she was very popular in the whole palace. But at this moment, this baby face had a sinister smile, and her voice was a little sharper than usual: " How dare you yell in front of our master! This is our servant from the Princess's Mansion, open your dog eyes and take a look! How dare you scold a servant from the Princess's Mansion in front of our master! This is outrageous! "

Song Ziming had a sweet and fishy taste in his mouth after being slapped, and even his teeth felt a little loose. He was shocked, scared, and angry. A slap from such a clever little eunuch was like a hammer. If anyone told others about it, no one would believe it.

Su Yan was already trembling with fear, shaking like a leaf in the wind.

Zhang Jinyu was stunned, and then he came to his senses and said: " Sir Song is a fifth-rank official of the court. How can a servant like you beat him up? Where is the face of the court? Aren't you afraid of being impeached by the censor? "

But Xie Jiayi ignored her. She had fought and watched the fun. She glanced at Qian Yingying and told someone to take her downstairs to rest. After watching Qian Yingying being helped downstairs by the maids and Doctor Liu following, Xie Jiayi slowly turned around and looked at the people in front of her.



After a quick glance, his eyes finally fell on Su Yan, looking from her small and delicate pointed chin to her belly which was smaller than Qian Yingying's. Perhaps the Song family had a hard time, her belly was bigger, but she looked even thinner and more pitiful than when they met in March.

" You're being someone's mistress and you're not allowed to talk about it? " Xie Jiayi sneered at this point, " Who do you all think you are? You think you're the leading actress or actor in a storybook, a young lady in distress and a young man in love, touching and moving! Those who stand in your way are flatterers, and those who don't let you feel comfortable and sad are bad people. Don't you feel wronged? "

Xie Jiayi snorted coldly: " Really, the less human this thing is, the more righteous and self-righteous it is when it speaks. I feel sick every time I see it. "

" Kneel down. Looking at your aggrieved face makes me lose my appetite. " Xie Jiayi said bluntly. At this moment, she still had some residual fear. She was afraid that if she came a step too late, Qian Yingying, this timid and useless girl, would lose her child and her life because of a few words from others, repeating the same mistake.

As soon as Xie Jiayi spoke, half of Song Ziming's face swelled up, while the other half turned red. Veins on his forehead throbbed, and he looked hideous.

But if Princess Kunyi asked them to kneel, who dared not kneel? Bu Bu watched with a smile, afraid that if they knelt too late, someone would come forward to help.

Su Yan's maid helped her master kneel down, she was so distressed that tears came to her eyes, but she didn't dare to cry out loud.

This princess is so scary. One of her servants dared to slap the young master. Now the girl is still panicking, afraid that the princess will come after her ... After all, the words she said to Miss Qian were more unpleasant than the last, and she even complained when she saw the young master ...

Xie Jiayi ignored the maid below, she only looked for the master above. Mother said, if you want to bite, bite the hard ones, what's the point of beating the dog, beating the dog's master is the most interesting.

Her eyes fell on Song Ziming, who was clenching his fists tightly: " Not convinced? "

" If you don't agree, just keep it to yourself. "

At this point, Xie Jiayi suppressed the half-revealed smile on her face: " Who gave you the guts to bark in front of Yingying! Divorce, do you know what divorce means? She is not your daughter-in-law who can be manipulated by you, she is my friend, both mother and son live in my princess's mansion, you can't afford to marry her! Not to mention your beloved flesh and blood, in front of them mother and son, she is just dirt under your feet, go back and enlighten your little star, in the past, her greatest hope was to be a concubine, Yingying was her mistress; now, her greatest hope is to kill her current mistress and see if she can become your second wife's second wife, Yingying is from my princess Kunyi's mansion, a sister recognized by the royal nobles! "

These words made Song Ziming and Su Yan feel ashamed, angry and scared. If something really happened to Qian Yingying, there was no telling what this crazy princess could do.

Xie Jiayi told them directly: " She and her child are safe, nothing happened. If anything happens to her and the baby in her belly, I don't care if you two have anything to do with it or not, I will make you pay with your lives! " At this point, the princess sneered: " If that day comes, I will beat her until she has a miscarriage, Song Ziming, do you believe it? "

Song Ziming's face turned pale. Su Yan, who was kneeling there, cried out and fell down. She could hardly kneel any longer. She leaned against the maid and looked at Xie Jiayi in horror. What kind of fate do they have? How could they encounter such an evil star!

, who heard about Qian Yingying's situation behind the lotus pond and rushed over to ask Song Ziming for an explanation, happened to hear the princess's words, her eyes turned red, and she didn't go forward, but turned around and went to Qian Yingying's residence. While walking, she chanted Buddha, " Madam, you are showing your spirit, asking the princess, a Bodhisattva, to bless our young master ".... When she arrived at the door, she wiped her tears, wiped her face, and went in.

Not only Nanny Gui saw this scene, but also Lu Chenan with Mingxin. The two of them were also heading towards the lotus pond.

Ming Xin thought to herself, what a coincidence! She once again saw the princess abusing her power and being cruel.

## Chapter 31

Such a big scene beside the lotus pond attracted not only Lu Chenan and Mingxin, but also the little monks passing by the temple and other pilgrims who came to pray and burn incense. Naturally, passers-by only saw the arrogant princess with her equally arrogant servants. They couldn't even see the princess's face , but only saw the red fox fur cloak that the servants who came behind put on the princess.

They saw that a court official was beaten , and two women, one looked gentle and graceful , and the other looked sad and weak. The latter was pregnant and was punished by the princess to kneel on the cold ground in this cold October . Many people silently chanted Buddha in their hearts. In this situation, they naturally stood on the side of the weak who were embarrassed. Xie Jiayi doesn't care what others think, she just does what she wants to do. She doesn't plan to be the queen anymore, so how can someone use reputation to abolish her? She would rather have a fairy peach than a basket of rotten peaches , and others don't matter to her . She only knows that Lord Lu, the smartest person in Dayin, praises her , and that's good. She only needs Lord Lu's praise , and she doesn't care about others.

Because she had been standing for a long time , the servants brought the princess's hand warmer . Xie Jiayi took the hand warmer handed to her by Ruyi , breathed a sigh of relief , and then shifted her gaze to Mingpei who was standing next to her.

This man is more cunning than she thought . He has been with Song Ziming and his gang for only a few days since he came to the Duke of Yingguo's mansion from the palace . He must have known that Song Ziming really loved Su Yan, so he went directly to Su Yan's side. In the previous life , Su Yan flattered the Queen Mother , and later became like-minded with

Concubine Zhang . Has it changed this time? Is this Zhang Jinyu directly helping Su Yan in her time of need, and winning over Su Yan in one fell swoop , and helping the Duke of Yingguo's mansion to take down Song Ziming, a capable general?

Ming Pei saw that it was her turn . At this time, more and more people were watching. She was not afraid at all. She bowed and saluted, and said in a neither humble nor arrogant manner: " I greet the princess. I dare to ask the princess to spare the family of Lord Song. She is in a serious condition. If something happens to her, it will be the princess's fault. "

A few words expressed everyone's thoughts, and then the people who had been watching silently dared to speak up, and all agreed with Mingpei. Some people even secretly looked at Mingpei's family and saw that she was brave, knowledgeable, and calm.

Xie Jiayi tapped the hand warmer in her hand, and saw Ruyi stepped forward and said directly to Mingpei: " Miss, what you said is wrong. If the princess hadn't come here, the three of you would have forced Lord Song's ex-wife to death! Not to mention that Lord Song divorced his ex-wife just for this concubine in front of him, the key is that Miss Qian is more serious than this woman. The three of you forced her, and it ended up with one corpse and two lives. The heaviest sin is also yours. Our princess can't bear to see a grown man take his beloved daughter, speak like a knife, and force his ex-wife to divorce step by step. The princess is acting like a demon with a heart of a bodhisattva. Buddha has mercy on me. Miss Mingpei, please don't confuse right and wrong and help the tyrant to do evil. "

Xie Jiayi just looked at the jade hand warmer in her hand. With Ruyi around, she could make sense even if she was wrong. Ruyi in their family would never speak loudly, but would calmly and calmly crush you to death.

When the people around heard this, they realized that the pregnant girl who was escorted away by others was actually Song Ziming's ex-wife. No wonder she looked pale. It turned out that there was such a thing before! The servants who had seen it before had room to speak. They hurriedly told the situation at that time, how the girl provoked and mocked, and how Lord Song embarrassed his ex-wife. " If the princess hadn't brought the imperial physician, I'm afraid it would have been really bad . "

The one kneeling in front of him was actually the mistress that Lord Song had caused such a stir. Those who came to burn incense were all with his wife and the old lady. If they had naturally stood on the side of the weak before, their positions had changed immediately now. They naturally stood on the side of the wife. Especially since Lord Song had divorced his wife for the mistress, this had already aroused public anger.

Public opinion suddenly changed. Xie Jiayi hugged her warm hand warmer and glanced at Zhang Jinyu opposite her with disdain: You think you are the only one with a mouth and you are the only one who can speak!

Seeing that the time for kneeling was almost up, and if she continued kneeling, something might happen, Xie Jiayi was not so cruel. She waved her hand without even looking at Su Yan, as if she was afraid of dirtying her eyes, and stood up. Then she said in a crisp voice: " It's your turn, Miss Mingpei. You have confused right and wrong and ruined the reputation of this princess. Who told you to do this, or did you do it on your own? "

Even if Ming Pei had more ideas, the people around them hated Song Ziming and his wife so much that she was powerless to change the situation. She could only bow her head and say, " I dare not. I just saw ..." She wanted to talk about Su Yan's big belly, but Xie Jiayi rolled her eyes and didn't give her a chance to speak. She interrupted her directly, " Enough, you keep talking nonsense! You are a servant who betrayed your master. You left this princess' palace and are getting better and better? You, a servant, are mixed up with a fifth-rank official of the court. Is this your duty as a servant? The space in front is just vacant. You continue to kneel and don't waste the space. "

After saying that, Xie Jiayi seemed too lazy to talk to her any more, so she turned around and left with her people.

Ming Pei could only kneel down. She was not surprised to be punished by kneeling, but she had originally planned to kneel for Su Yan, so that she could win the sympathy of the public and completely take down Su Yan and Song Ziming. But before she could even say anything, the stick hit her. Ming Pei knelt with her head down, still looking neither humble nor arrogant, but no one could see that her heart was deeply hurt by the princess's words " slave " .

Xie Jiayi, who had calmly stabbed Zhang Jinyu, was very panicked at this moment. She never thought that she was so unlucky. Last time, she made things difficult for Su Yan and was seen by Lord Lu. Now, this time, she made things difficult for Su Yan and Zhang Jinyu and was seen by Lord Lu again? !

It's so cold, why is Lord Lu not studying in his room but walking out ...

She looked at Lord Lu, blinked her eyes, and tried to think whether her behavior just now was out of line, and whether it would affect Lord Lu's evaluation of her as " dignified and gentle, with a spirit of ice and snow, and noble character " ...

Without giving it any further thought, she discovered in despair – yes!

Would she lose the only person who praised her after living a new life ... In Lord Lu's eyes, would she be a princess who would embarrass a beautiful girl or embarrass her to death ...

The princess was panicked. She was really panicked.

The image she had always tried hard to maintain in front of Lord Lu was that of being kind, generous, benevolent and magnanimous ... Xie Jiayi felt that all the beautiful words that she hoped Lord Lu would find in her were like bubbles in the air, which were shining with colorful light the moment before and then burst one after another with a " poof " .

She could only watch with her eyes open, powerless to do anything.

Xie Jiayi's face was stiff, and she pulled the corners of her mouth to show Lord Lu a smile that was uglier than crying. At this time, Lu Chenan had already brought Mingxin to her. Xie Jiayi smiled stiffly: " Mr. Lu, have you been here for a while? " After saying that, she looked at Lu Chenan with the last glimmer of hope, hoping that he might have just passed by.

The princess looked so pitiful, and her expectations were so obvious. Lu Chenan couldn't help laughing when he saw her. How could she be such a person, unable to hide anything in her heart and eyes? The hearts of people in this world are full of devils, but she is as clear as a glass man. Lu Chenan even thought, how many people would plot against such a person living in the deep palace? If there was no Emperor Yongtai to protect her, how difficult her life would be.

Lu Chenan felt an inexplicable slight pain in his heart. He looked at Xie Jiayi quietly with his dark eyes and was speechless for a moment.

Xie Jiayi couldn't help but stammer: " You ... you saw everything? " No, you didn't see everything, right? You only saw a little bit ... You didn't see her sneer, you didn't hear her say those harsh words ... What did she say, oh, she also said she wanted to make someone have an abortion ...

Xie Jiayi couldn't help swallowing.

" No. " Lu Chenan denied decisively. He really didn't see anything. When he and Mingxin came here, they met a group of people escorting Miss Qian away. He didn't see what happened before, but he saw her pretending to be ferocious.

Xie Jiayi heard the " no " , she finally felt relieved. But she couldn't continue to ask what he saw, so she had to praise herself and guide Lord Lu to understand her. " I am quite ..." She cleared her throat, hesitated for a moment, and then quietly chose a compliment, " I am kind-hearted and stand up for the weak. "

Xie Jiayi said it tentatively, and saw Lu Chenan nodded naturally. She breathed a sigh of relief. As expected, Lord Lu didn't see much. In his mind, she should still be closer to the " high moral character " side.

It was just that Lord Lu's little servant was not walking carefully enough and he stumbled even on the road.

Mingxin was so frightened. The princess really made him panic. She was so cruel, yet she could brazenly say that she was " kind-hearted " . He was worried for his son. He already knew what " face-shou " meant. The princess had taken a fancy to his son with outstanding temperament and was reaching out her evil hand to him.

Think about the princess's terrible temper, how hard will the young master's life be in the future. Look at the young master, he can't even tell the truth now. He just saw the princess being ruthless to two beautiful and weak girls, and he turned around and nodded to admit that the princess was " kind-hearted " .

While Xie Jiayi was still trying to find out how Lord Lu evaluated her, and trying to assess whether she was closer or further away from being a " virtuous person " in Lord Lu's mind , she heard Lord Lu's gentle and pleasant voice: " Princess, do you want to watch the moon together tonight? "

Xie Jiayi suppressed the messy thoughts in her mind and turned to look at Lu Chenan, " Watching the moon? "

Lu Chenan turned his gaze away and looked at the still green pines and cypresses in the temple, and said softly: " Appreciate the moon. The moon in winter is especially clear, Princess. "

Xie Jiayi's heart suddenly blossomed. Sure enough, she didn't see anything. Otherwise, why would she invite me to watch the moon? My county horse is walking towards me ... Then she must nod, and nodded without saying a word.

She insisted on sending her sick horse back to the yard halfway up the mountain, and then she was contented to take Ruyi and Bubu to her own yard.

Before she could feel satisfied for long, she heard Ruyi say: " Princess, Mr. Lu came here when Miss Qian left. "

Xie Jiayi's happiness was like bubbles in the sun, bursting with a " pop " .

She looked at her Ruyi and Bubu blankly, " Then why did he invite me to watch the moon? "

Bu Bu, who was quick to speak, could not help but guess: " Princess, is Master Lu looking for an opportunity to express his thoughts? "

Thoughts, what thoughts? Xie Jiayi felt like a cabbage in the cold winter wind. Even the fox fur cloak couldn't keep the warmth she wanted. She tightened the cloak and swallowed again.

Could it be that Lord Lu was trying to tell her that he didn't want to be a county lord?

A good person like Lord Lu would definitely speak very tactfully.

However, Xie Jiayi felt that no matter how tactful she was, she would still feel uncomfortable.

The north wind blew, and a yellow leaf was blown into the air. Xie Jiayi looked at it thoughtfully: Could this be a hint from God?

Hint to her: her horse, like this leaf, may also fly away ...

## Chapter 32

Seeing that the agreed time was almost up , Xie Jiayi was listless, but she still wanted to change clothes. Looking at the red fox fur cloak that Caixing brought over , she said weakly: " Change it. " In order to prevent Lord Lu from seeing it and being reminded of her aggressive demeanor in the afternoon.

" Princess , which one do you want? "

Xie Jiayi sighed: " Pick something warmer. " It would also help warm up her cold heart.

Ruyi ordered someone to open the largest wooden box and picked out the white mink hooded cloak. The white mink fur shone brightly under the candlelight.

Xie Jiayi asked Caixing to add more charcoal to the hand warmer. Seeing Ruyi coming over with a cloak, she suddenly thought of Zhang Jinyu kneeling beside the lotus pond . She was so busy mourning for the county horse she was about to lose that she almost forgot about this person . She continued to ask weakly: " Over there by the lotus pond? " Kneeling all the time would not do . She couldn't offend the people in the Eastern Palace, Changchun Palace, the Duke of Ying's Mansion, and Zhang Jinyu's brother to death . It would be enough to offend them to vent her anger.

However, Xie Jiayi is very confident in Ruyi . No one can do a better job than Ruyi in judging the situation.

, Ruyi smiled and said, Princess " , don't worry about such a small matter . I have sent her back long ago. " After all, she is a person loved by the Eastern Palace and Changchun Palace. They in Haitang Palace can't really let people kneel down and break their legs, right? Ruyi smiled gently on the surface , but she was sneering in her heart . Although she couldn't let her kneel down and break her legs, she would at least let her remember it . From now on, whenever it is cold and rainy , her knees will not be safe . It can also remind her to consider whether she can bear it before doing anything.

" I'm here , master, don't worry. " Ruyi helped the princess put on the white mink cloak , and carefully tied the cloak belt for her, and led Xie Jiayi out. When they reached the door, he raised his hand to help the princess put on the cloak and hat, and said, " Although there is no wind tonight, it is October after all, and the night is cold. I'm afraid it's even colder in the courtyard halfway up the mountain. "

" It's cold. " Xie Jiayi just replied with this sentence. The cold weather made her heart chilled.

The group walked towards the middle of the mountain and came to the gate of the courtyard. Xie Jiayi looked down and saw only darkness. She was surrounded by warm yellow lanterns and the warm yellow light. She looked up at the sky again and sure enough, there were only a few scattered stars in the sky, like a blue-black curtain, making the moon even brighter and clean.

There is a faint fragrance of winter plum at the tip of the nose, which matches the cold air, and is refreshing and clean . What Lord Lu said is indeed right. When you appreciate the moon on a winter night like this, you appreciate the cleanliness.

As soon as she entered the courtyard, the first thing she saw was Lu Chenan, who was wearing a black cloak under a red plum tree and turned his head to look at her with a gentle smile on his face. Under the light of the lanterns hanging under the corridor, Lord Lu looked even more like a fairy descending from the moon.

The better the things you are going to lose, the more you want to cry. Xie Jiayi couldn't laugh in her heart, but facing such a fairy, she had to put on a smile on her face.

The night is nice, the scenery is nice, the moonlight is nice. Even the people are so nice, it would be even better if everyone could not talk, so that her prince would never be able to refuse her. Xie Jiayi walked over slowly. Someone had already laid a thick and soft fur cushion on the bamboo chair in the yard. This was a tiger skin hunted when His Majesty was still in good health. It was a big piece, hanging from the armrests of the chair, wrapping the whole chair soft and warm.

Ruyi even ordered someone to replace the chair next to him with a thicker cushion.

The group moved lightly and swiftly, and in a short while they arranged all the things the princess needed, and then quickly retreated to the outside of the courtyard gate. Only Ruyi and Caixing stood in the shadows on both sides of the courtyard gate. If you didn't look carefully, you couldn't see anyone there. In just a moment, it seemed that only Xie Jiayi and Lu Chenan were left in the courtyard.

Oh no, there is also Mingxin. Mingxin stared at the neat and tidy actions of the servants in the Princess's Mansion. So many people seemed to have disappeared in the blink of an eye, leaving only him standing stupidly under the big moon, holding a lantern that was extremely bright. His face gradually turned red. A servant like him was really embarrassing for the Master. He also followed Ruyi's example and went to the shadow by the door.

Ruyi glanced at him, and seeing that he didn't react, she raised her hand to extinguish the lantern in his hand. Mingxin then realized that he had just exposed Ruyi to the light, and his face turned even redder.

Fortunately, it was a dark night with a bright moon, and the whole world was quiet.

far from being " dignified and graceful " and " virtuous " in the eyes of Lord Lu at that time , she was not willing to accept her fate, but to struggle desperately. She tightened the heater in her hand, " Mr. Lu, did you see everything at that time? "

" I really didn't see it all. " Lu Chenan's voice was gentle and clear.

But Xie Jiayi wanted to cry, he only saw me being domineering ... She struggled to explain: " Then didn't you see that they bullied people in front, they bullied so cruelly, they were so bad ..." She tried to emphasize that she saw injustice and stood up for justice. When she emphasized it almost enough, she still wanted to remember the highest evaluation that Lord Lu had given her, so she whispered: " I am ... I am not what you see, usually ... I am very graceful ..."

Xie Jiayi was ashamed and depressed by these words. Oh my god, how did she deceive the wise Lord Lu in her previous life? She had never been " dignified and graceful " . As for " high moral character " , it didn't seem to have much to do with her. She just had a bad temper and would take revenge for any slight. When she hated someone, she was the best at making trouble and making unreasonable troubles ... As for " Ice Soul and Snow Soul " , she liked this evaluation too much, but she didn't seem to be related to ice and snow. In her previous life, she told Lord Lu that she loved to drink tea made from snow water. This was not a lie, but what she didn't say was that she loved to eat meat, drink wine and roast taro around the stove ...

But, people cannot accept their fate easily.

" ..... Actually ... I can be gentle ... dignified ... and tolerant ..." Xie Jiayi said something she didn't even believe. The more she spoke, the more desperate she became. She was reborn, but she couldn't even get the greatest achievement she had in her previous life ...

Lu Chenan just listened to Xie Jiayi grabbing at the good words she could find like a drowned person, and her voice was filled with tears. Under the cold moonlight and the floating fragrance, it made people's hearts soften and they just wanted to say " yes " , just wanted to tell her " whatever you say is what it is " .

It is not you who are gentle and graceful, nor you who are dignified and amiable. It is you who are gentle and graceful, and dignified and amiable. In this world, the bright moon and the cool breeze, the maple trees on the river, the fishing fires, and the spring scenery of the crabapple trees, all the good things are you.

He heard Xie Jiayi snifle and suppress her sobs, " Mr. Lu, I'm done, go ahead. "

It made him want to laugh, but also made him feel soft-hearted.

Unfortunately, the winter moonlight was far away and faint, and it was hazy, so he couldn't see the expression on her face under her white mink cloak. It was okay not to see it clearly, because he thought that if he could see the tenderness on her face at this moment, he would probably be speechless.

" Princess. " Lu Chenan's voice was soft and pleasant, like the moon in the sky, indescribably gentle and clean.

" Yeah, I'm listening. " Xie Jiayi wanted to scratch her ears, but she could only answer while holding the hand warmer.

Good and soft.



Lu Chenan exhaled slowly, and suddenly turned around and stopped looking at the little man wrapped in a cloak opposite him. He looked at the moon in the sky, and his mind gradually became clear. He smiled to himself and said to the moon: " The princess is fine. "

After saying this, Lu Chenan's eyes passed over the person in front of him and fell on the hazy red plum next to him, " The princess is good no matter what she looks like. "

Whether it is tearful eyes or assertive demeanor, whether it is a proud look or domineering cleverness, whether it is light or darkness.

Ever since he came to the capital, he knew that his little princess lived here, in that majestic and towering palace.

Behind layer upon layer of high walls.

At that time, apart from studying things that seemed to never end, the only thing he cared about was: what kind of person she was.

Lu Chenan's voice was full of tenderness and affirmation. Xie Jiayi felt her ears itching more and more. She had been waiting with her head down. When she heard Lord Lu praising her again, she looked up at Lu Chenan and asked blankly, " And then? " It was as if someone had given her an extremely huge gift when she was desperate, and it contained everything she wanted. Xie Jiayi wanted to reach out but hesitated. Her voice almost trembled: Lord Lu, there won't be a " but " after that ...

" Then? " Lu Chenan's eyes fell from Hongmei to her suddenly raised face, and his voice became softer. " I really like the jade pendant given by the princess. "

To repay her with a jade pendant is not to repay her, but to show our everlasting friendship.

Xie Jiayi looked up and the hood fell from her head.

Lu Chenan finally saw the princess's eyes clearly at this moment. They were like lit lights, flickering and extremely bright.

Xie Jiayi felt that the burst bubbles in her heart were coming back one by one. She murmured, " Is it okay if I'm not gentle and graceful, or dignified and self-disciplined? "

Lu Chenan looked at her again and laughed softly.

" It's also good to be neither gentle nor demure. "

His voice was gentle and firm, just like that time. At that time, amidst the voices accusing the queen, he stood out from the crowd and praised the queen's virtues to everyone and to His Majesty, which could be a shining example for the harem and the world. He was so firm.

Again and again.

Xie Jiayi's confused heart seemed to be touched by something, although she didn't understand what it was. With all her indifference, her always anxious heart suddenly seemed to stop, and she saw the red plum blossoms blooming and the moonlight shining on the entire mountain.

" Lu Chenan, you are right. " Xie Jiayi's voice suddenly became cheerful, " The winter moon is indeed beautiful, clear and bright. "

The two of them sat on cushions under the moonlight at night. Someone came up quietly and brought them hot tea. For a moment, the fragrance of tea mixed with the fragrance of plum blossoms. Xie Jiayi heard the sound of a gurgling stream not far away . She was surprised to see the birds that had been sleeping in the mountains, startled by something, flying by in the moonlight.

The two of them looked at the three or two stars that had existed since ancient times, and Lu Chenan softly told her the name of every star that could be seen at this moment.

He told the story in detail, like he knew all the details.

Xie Jiayi saw Lu Chenan from the stars and the moon: Lord Lu's face is so beautiful.

Lord Lu knows so much, it seems like there is nothing he doesn't know.

She felt that the winter that had already arrived didn't seem to be very cold.

On the way back, she looked back and could still see Lu Chenan in a black cloak standing in the moonlight. Xie Jiayi stopped and handed the jade hand warmer to Ruyi. Ruyi was stunned and turned to Lu Chenan, giving the princess's hand warmer to Mr. Lu who was standing high up. When Xie Jiayi saw Ruyi coming back, she gathered her cloak and walked back briskly in the moonlight.

" Cai Xing, Ru Yi, I am very happy. "

" I don't know why, but I'm just very happy. "

Caixing didn't hear clearly what the princess said next.

The princess's last words were very soft, but Ruyi heard them clearly. What the princess said was:

" In fact, being alive is still very good. "

Ruyi's brows relaxed. Perhaps there was no need to care too much about the abnormalities in Lu Chenan. At least he made the princess happy and made her feel that it was good to be alive. He had been with the princess for a long time and was the one who knew her best. After returning, when he exchanged duties with Bubu, Ruyi smiled slightly, which shocked Bubu. She kept asking what good news had made the princess so happy. Even the serious brother Ruyi smiled.

" You don't understand. " In the past few months, the princess was not afraid at all , whether she had offended Changchun Palace and the Eastern Palace, or had offended many people by stubbornly repairing the river.

Ruyi looked at the moon and lowered her voice very low, " Because the princess never planned to live forever. " When the princess gave up on His Highness, she was not afraid of anything. " Everyone who deserved the princess to live has died, " even His Majesty, who was only a person who would not live long, " but now—— "

Ruyi looked at the cold and bright moon and said slowly, " Maybe there is someone else who deserves the princess to live. "

## Chapter 33

The next day was even colder , but the sun was shining brightly. Xie Jiayi asked the imperial physician Qian Yingying about her condition, and was told that both mother and child were fine. She was finally relieved and took her people to stretch their muscles in the warm winter sun. She began to feel that everything seemed to be moving in a good direction. If Qian Yingying and her son could survive, she would be able to repair the river to prevent the flood and keep His Majesty alive. She was even more confident that Lord Lu would survive six years later.

Xie Jiayi smiled, and Ruyi, Bubu, Caiyue, Caixing and others all smiled as well. They felt that the happy princess in the past was slowly coming back. Although no one dared to say it, those who served her closely could see that the princess had been unhappy since the incident between the crown prince and Mingpei.

Caixing saw that the princess was in good spirits, and immediately said: "My Lord, let's go to the back mountain to see the maple leaves! I heard that they are all bright red and very beautiful." Even the steady Caiyue followed suit and said: "Caixing's idea is not bad. I'm afraid that in a few days, if there is a gust of wind, all the leaves will fall. The princess might as well take this opportunity to enjoy them."

Xie Jiayi had heard about the maple leaves on the mountain behind Dajue Temple. Every autumn, there were waves of people admiring the maple leaves. Now it was winter and there were no people on the mountain. It was a good time to go and see the last of the red leaves. The princess nodded, and Ruyi Caiyue started to get ready. She brought people and accompanied the princess to the back mountain quickly.

It was indeed a golden and deep red, extremely gorgeous.

Xie Jiayi bent down and picked up a bright red maple leaf, held it in her hand and looked at it carefully, then handed it to Ruyi and said, "Give it to Mr. Lu later. He invited me to appreciate the moon, and I gave him a red leaf, which is also a courtesy in return." Lu Chenan would stay at home to read during the day, and Xie Jiayi did not disturb him. She looked at the maple leaf, thinking that she would go to visit him when the sun was about to set.

Just as he was thinking this, he saw Ruyi standing in front of him: "Princess, there is someone in front!"

"It sounds like there is a woman there. I'm afraid she met some bad guys in the back hills."

At this time, even Xie Jiayi and others heard faint shouts coming from the depths of the forest ahead, as well as a man's faint hideous laugh, coming through the layers of dense forest.

The others hurriedly gathered around the princess.

Xie Jiayi had already pulled out the whip, swung it in the air, and headed towards the direction of the voice: "Come with me to rescue people!" Ruyi hurriedly tried to stop her, "Let Bubu take the people over, and the princess can just wait here." Judging from the noise over there, there might be some obscene and unsightly scene, how could she let the little princess see it?

Ruyi winked at Bubu, who understood and smiled with a dimple. He bowed to Xie Jiayi, pointed to a few people beside him, and headed into the mountains.

"Don't worry, Princess. Bubu can't handle these bastards alone." Ruyi comforted the princess gently. Xie Jiayi also anticipated Ruyi's thoughts and had to wait there with his men. Fortunately, Bubu acted quickly and returned with his men soon. He was still smiling and knelt in front of Xie Jiayi: "Princess, they were just passing bandits. I have tied them up and sent them to Shuntian Prefecture. I have also rescued the two girls."

Xie Jiayi then looked behind Bu Bu and saw that the little girl with messy hair was holding the girl next to her tightly. It seemed that they were a master and servant.

Looking at the lady again, her clothes were disheveled and her face was dusty, but her skin was extremely fair, and her coarse clothes could not hide her beauty. No wonder she attracted people to the back hill of Dajue Temple, with such a beautiful face, naturally there would be those low-class people who would not hesitate to take risks.

Xie Jiayi waved her hand and asked the maid to take out a spare cloak and put it on the girl. She seemed to be grasping at a life-saving straw and tightly held the black cloak on her body. Although she was still shaking all over, she spoke in an orderly manner and it was obvious that she was not a country girl.

" Thank you very much for saving my life, young lady. Hu Jiao will never forget it! If I hadn't met you, I would have bitten my tongue to death and would never have survived. " As she spoke, tears fell down and she fell to the ground and kowtowed, unable to get up.

Xie Jiayi had someone help her up, and she said like the storybook: " Meeting each other is fate, I will save you to the end. Wherever you and your servant are, I will send someone to send you back. " Not to mention, she quite liked this girl Hu Jiao. She was pretty, spoke crisply, and even when she encountered such a bad thing, she didn't cry and wail.

It's really good.

Xie Jiayi was praising it in her heart, and she heard the girl whispering softly, " My master and I have come to the capital from Suzhou to look for our relatives. I wonder if the young lady knows about the Lu Mansion? "

What a coincidence! The Lu Mansion in the capital is the Lu Chen'an family. This is her county horse's relative. In other words, this girl who seems to be compatible with her is her Kunyi County Master's relative!

Xie Jiayi looked at the girl, something flashed through her mind, but she didn't catch it immediately. However, her heart was uncontrollably beating twice out of joy. She unconsciously grasped her white cloak, leaned forward and asked: " Are you relatives of the Lu family? "

After asking, he stared at the beautiful woman without blinking, who looked about 16 or 17 years old. Xie Jiayi felt her right eyelid twitch twice, and an ominous premonition arose, making Xie Jiayi's throat slightly dry while waiting for a reply.

This question should have been easy to answer, but the woman hesitated , as if she was having some difficulty. Cai Xing saw the princess waiting, and hurriedly reminded Hu Jiao: " What's so difficult about it? Aren't you going to the Lu Mansion to live with your relatives? "

The girl then hesitated and said, " It's not that I don't want to say it, but I'm not a relative of the Lu family. " She bit her lip and seemed very embarrassed before she slowly said, " My cousin is the son of the Lu family. "

Ruyi Caiyue already understood that this young man might be a concubine of the Lu family. The people from the concubine's family were not real relatives. No wonder the girl was in such a dilemma.

Ruyi noticed that his princess' face turned pale when he heard this. He immediately thought that the cousin this person had gone to was probably Master Lu Chenan, but he didn't understand why the princess reacted so strongly. Ruyi looked at the kneeling girl in front of him, whose beauty could not be concealed even by her coarse clothes, and looked at the deep mountains

and dense forests behind them. If they really made the princess unhappy, he would not let them live.

Ruyi looked at the two of them, thinking, but she called out softly: " Princess. "

Xie Jiayi let out a cry and tightened her grip on the cloak. She felt her fingertips trembling uncontrollably. Her gaze once again fell on the woman in front of her.

What I heard was the words of Cai Xing from my previous life: " The person that Lord Lu loves is his cousin. Unfortunately, I have secretly inquired about it and found out that the cousin died before Lord Lu passed the imperial examination. It is said that her death was not glorious. "

Caixing was wrong. The girl didn't die before she passed the imperial examination. She died before Lord Lu passed the imperial examination and became the third place in the imperial examination.

He died an ignominious death, at the hands of thieves and bandits in the hills behind Dajue Temple .

She stared blankly at the face of the woman in front of her, and recalled the autumn hunt that year, when Lord Lu helped her win the hunt and severely suppressed the Duke of Ying and Concubine Zhang. The more she looked at Lord Lu, the more satisfied she was. She really didn't want Lord Lu to be alone. She had heard that Lord Lu had moved out of the Lu family and lived alone in a rented courtyard in the capital, with only a servant, a mute slave, and an old man who guarded the door.

Others were calling their friends, but because of himself, Lord Lu was excluded by the elite and was always alone.

He is the Minister of Dali Temple, the most talented young man in Dayin, and even a proud man like the third brother can't help but praise him as a good and capable minister.

So Queen Xie Jiayi couldn't help but ask him about his feelings.

She remembered clearly that Lu Chenan replied to her, " I already have someone I love, and I will love him forever. "

" She is my cousin, and in my heart I only want her as my wife. Since she is not my wife, I will never have a wife in my life. "

Speaking of his cousin, the usually taciturn Lord Lu rarely said a word: " She and I have a history. "

" Later, I met her. " He didn't say the rest, but even though he didn't say it, the queen understood.

Love at first sight, forever. Lord Lu was attracted to his cousin. Unfortunately, she died young.

Xie Jiayi straightened her back and raised her chin slightly, but her hands holding the cloak were so tight that they hurt: she was wrong, she was wrong about the death of Lu's cousin, and she was wrong about Lord Lu's intention.

The wind blew through the maple forest, making a rustling sound. Xie Jiayi heard her own voice floating in the wind: " Are you Lu Chenan's – cousin? "

The woman in front of her suddenly brightened up. Before she could say anything, the shrinking little girl next to her said in surprise: " Miss, do you know my young master? "

It turns out to be my cousin.

Xie Jiayi saw maple leaves falling with the wind, and it seemed that the ground was covered with fiery red maple leaves in a short while. She looked at the girl in front of her carefully, and she had to admit her beauty. No wonder she could make people fall in love with her at first sight. With such a look and a connection that even Lord Lu was thinking about, who could not fall in love with her?

She loosened her hands that were holding the cloak, and then she felt the coldness on her fingertips. Xie Jiayi put her hands into the cloak.

She was even a little confused, how on earth did they fall in love at first sight ...

Xie Jiayi asked unconsciously: " Have you seen him? " This time it was the little girl who answered again, " Our young lady should have arrived on the day when the young master announced the results. She should have seen him earlier. "

Hu Jiao said embarrassedly: " The river channels are being repaired everywhere in the south, and the waterway is difficult to travel. It took us two months to get to the capital today. "

Xie Jiayi was struck by lightning when she heard this. It turned out that she had blocked their chance to meet in this life. She was stunned and asked, " How do you know that Mr. Lu is in Dajue Temple at this time? "

They were both very surprised and asked in unison: " Cousin / Young Master is in Dajue Temple? " Hu Jiao seemed particularly embarrassed after reacting, and lowered her head and said: " I didn't know, but today is my aunt's death anniversary. I know that my aunt – uncle placed my aunt's tablet here. "

Xie Jiayi understood everything at once. Yes, in the previous life, the announcement of the results of the Autumn Examination in August should have been their first meeting and they fell in love at first sight. Today should be the day when Hu Jiao met with misfortune in the mountains behind Dajue Temple. So, everything matched up.

It was she who delayed their meeting until now ... But would two people who were destined to be in love stop loving each other just because they met too late? Xie Jiayi almost smiled bitterly. The destined couple will finally meet. This time, Hu Jiao will not die.

She thought to herself that it was good this way, Lord Lu ... Lord Lu had been lonely all his life, and now he could finally have his wish fulfilled.

Lord Lu hasn't changed, he still thinks I'm good.

Just like in my previous life, when I was the queen, he also thought I was good.

It was herself who had changed, Xie Jiayi thought almost sadly, she regarded Lord Lu as a prince, so she saw affection in his good deeds.

Perhaps, perhaps she should be worthy of some affection from others, but compared with the destiny and deep friendship of others ... She felt a tug of pain in her heart, and this pain made her confused: How could this be? She just thought that Lord Lu was suitable. If Lord Lu was not available, she could still find someone else.

She will always find someone who is willing to have a home with her. She will have a home of her own, just like millions of people in this world.

We help each other and are no longer alone.

Many things in this life began to be changed by her, for example, Qian Yingying and her son survived, and Lord Lu's cousin also survived.

Xie Jiayi didn't want to see Hu Jiao again. Her face turned pale and she told Ruyi, " Send Miss Hu to Mr. Lu. " Ruyi agreed and ordered two maids and eunuchs to send the master and servant over.

He followed the princess carefully and saw her stagger, so he and Caiyue stepped forward to support her.

Ruyi was worried and asked tentatively: " Princess, are you afraid of this girl and Mr. Lu ..."

Xie Jiayi stopped, looked at the red leaves all over the mountain, and said softly, " This princess is not afraid of anything! " After a while, she slowly said, " As for her and Mr. Lu, that is their business. What does it have to do with me? "

The princess' words stunned everyone. Isn't it the princess's husband ? Does the princess not want Mr. Lu anymore ? Caiyue and Ruyi frowned slightly, not knowing what the princess was thinking at the moment. However, the princess could say no to the prince she had loved for ten years, let alone others.

Caixing and Bubu didn't think much of it. If the princess didn't like it, then she didn't like it. Just like the crabapple cake from the north of the city, the princess never wanted to eat it again after sleeping. If she didn't like that one, they could always find another one that the princess liked. But a merchant, no matter how talented he is, can't stop the princess from changing her interests. If the princess likes him, she will praise him. If the princess doesn't like him, she will find someone else to praise him.

Everyone was thinking about the princess's thoughts when they heard someone coming hurriedly from the front. It was the servant who stayed in the princess's courtyard.

" Princess, the prince is here and is waiting in our courtyard. "

## Chapter 34

" Princess , the prince is here and is waiting in our courtyard. "

Xie Jiayi said "oh", but her heart was still confused , she kept thinking , " it turns out Caixing made a mistake ", " it doesn't matter , my princess doesn't have to have him, I didn't think of him anyway ", " there must be someone else who is better ", " there must be someone else who is better ".....

" Princess , the wind is blowing, let's go back quickly. " Ruyi didn't say that because she couldn't keep His Highness waiting for too long.

Xie Jiayi looked up, and it was not the wind. It seemed that the red leaves that had covered the trees just now were now falling. She seemed to be in the endless falling of leaves , and all the colors were falling. She saw that there were already branches , trembling in the wind. The maple leaves of Yongtai in the eleventh year had finally ended , but it was a pity that she did not seem to have enjoyed them properly.

Xie Jiayi tightened her cloak and looked forward, " Let's go. "

Let's go , this is not a place for her to stay for long. I'm afraid that after tonight , all the maple trees on the mountain will be empty.

The princess and her entourage headed towards the courtyard where they were staying temporarily.

, she saw the guards of the East Palace standing in line. She knew He Sheng, and he immediately bowed and saluted when he saw her. Gao Sheng was guarding the door of the hall , and he also came to greet her. Xie Jiayi paused at the door , and Caiyue took off her cloak . As soon as she entered the door, she saw His Royal Highness the Crown Prince sitting at the top.

He was still wearing a plain robe , holding a book in his hands , and had a cold face as usual. Seeing her come in, Xu Shixing lifted his eyelids to take a look at her, and said in a lukewarm voice: " You didn't even tell me you were coming to Dajue Temple. "

" I've told His Majesty. " Xie Jiayi replied indifferently.

Xu Shixing clenched the book and sneered, " You chased people all the way to the temple. You don't feel ashamed. I feel ashamed for you. "

Xie Jiayi was already feeling uncomfortable, and when she heard the prince's words, she felt a sense of defeat and loss. She sneered, " Your Highness has chased people all the way to the temple. Your Highness doesn't feel ashamed, so why should I be afraid of losing face? "

Xu Shixing put the book on the table with a " pop " sound. Gao Sheng, who was serving beside him, stepped forward and said, " Princess, His Highness has received the imperial order to come to the temple to take the sutra written by Master Huineng. "

Regarding Lu Chenan's matter, Xie Jiayi was already ashamed, guilty, and annoyed because she had ruined someone's marriage and tried to interfere. When she heard this, she realized that she was overthinking again, and her face flushed. But if she admitted defeat, she would not be Princess Kunyi. She bit back: " I came to the temple because I had something to do. What right does Your Highness have to slander me? My reputation is bad enough, but Your Highness still thinks it's not enough. You have to join others in making up stories about me. Are you doing it on purpose? "

As Xie Jiayi said this, the tears that she had been holding back could not be controlled and fell. She was really shameless. After chasing for a long time, the lovers finally got married. The cousin was gentle and pretty, which made her fake dignified and gentle look look so bad. But she still thought that this county horse was a sure thing . Isn't it ridiculous! She was talking about this and that, but she didn't know that the cousin was still alive and well. She almost became a bad guy like Zhang Jinyu who deliberately broke up the red line of others! There are so many lovers in this world, but this time she became a stumbling block for the lovers in someone else's story.

The more Xie Jiayi thought about it, the more she couldn't control her sobbing. Tears were falling down. She couldn't stop so she simply stopped. She was so unlucky that she couldn't even find a handkerchief. She gave up and raised her hand to wipe her eyes with her sleeve. But she still raised her head stubbornly, looking at Xu Shixing in front of her with hatred. She looked like she would bite him if he dared to laugh at her again.

Her crying stunned Xu Shixing.

" You ..." He paused, and seeing that the servants beside him were also stunned, Xu Shixing raised his voice and said: " Why don't you go down and get some warm water for the



princess to wipe her face. " Gao Sheng felt a chill in his back when he heard the prince's voice, and realized that he was sending someone away, so he hurriedly took everyone in the room downstairs.

Seeing that Xie Jiayi didn't even take the handkerchief, Xu Shixing rubbed his eyes with the back of his sleeves and hands until they turned red, feeling both distressed and angry.

Well, didn't he go up there to enjoy the moon with others yesterday? Now my cousin is here today.

He gritted his teeth, and finally couldn't bear to see her cry any longer, so he kicked the table leg hard and shouted at the door: " Where are the people? Where is the water? Are they all dead outside? "

Only then did Gaosheng dare to let Caiyue and Caixing go in to serve.

Then I heard Princess Kunyi crying inside, her arrogance not diminishing at all: " Why are you yelling? If you want to scold me, go to the East Palace! It's not your turn to be scolded by me! " Xu Shixing gritted his teeth and laughed: " Don't you even look at how ugly you are? How dare you yell at me. "

The word " ugly " pierced Xie Jiayi's lungs, especially since she had just played the clown for a pair of handsome men and beautiful women. She stiffened her neck and said, " Who is ugly? If you tell me, you will just talk nonsense and criticize others! "

But I didn't expect Xu Shixing to actually say: " Even though the snot bubbles are coming out, it's not ugly. "

Then the room suddenly became quiet.

Xie Jiayi's hands froze as she was about to rub her eyes. Nose ... snot bubbles ... Is this something that a dignified Princess Kunyi should have? This is something that should appear on the face of a beautiful young woman.

She suddenly turned around, with her back to Xu Shixing, and sniffed unconsciously ... she was completely stunned.

..... It's true ..... It's true!

Xu Shixing saw Xie Jiayi turned around and was probably nervous, and she even burped. Then he saw that she became even more stiff. If there really was a hole in the ground, she would have slipped into it and no one could stop her ... He wanted to strangle her to death, but at this moment he couldn't help laughing.

Never mind, she just loves to play. Let her go this time, but next time, if she dares to ... Xu Shixing stopped smiling, turned the jade ring on his thumb, and looked at the girl with her back to him, his eyes dark.

Caiyue and Caixing did not dare to breathe, and carefully helped the princess wash her face. When Caixing put the jade bracelet back on the princess' wrist, the two jade bracelets knocked together, making a crisp sound. She trembled and couldn't help but prick up her ears, fearing that the prince next to her would speak.

I don't know why, although the Crown Prince rarely gets angry, it's the Princess who is prone to losing her temper, but the servants in the Princess's Mansion in Haitang Palace are afraid of the Crown Prince. When the Crown Prince is around, they are all on guard while doing their duties.

Caiyue helped the princess to apply rouge again, and after looking at her carefully, she nodded to the princess.

Xie Jiayi turned around reluctantly, and met Xu Shixing's gaze on her face. She immediately felt as if her nose was about to run again, but she said stubbornly: "What are you looking at? I don't--" She couldn't say the word "snot bubble", but just said weakly and stubbornly, "It's obviously nonsense."

Xu Shixing saw that her eyelids and nose were still slightly red, which showed that she had cried so hard just now. He snorted, "I'm talking nonsense. How could our princess --"

Xie Jiayi's scalp immediately went numb, "You still say that!" If others knew about her dignity as a princess, she would not be able to keep it. She had a bad temper, she was extravagant and domineering, but at least she was still a beautiful princess. She couldn't lose her countless advantages ...

"Okay, I won't tell you." Xu Shixing sighed softly, lowered his head to look at his jade ring, and then raised his eyelids to look at Xie Jiayi: "When are you leaving?"

After asking, the air in the room became quiet.

Gao Sheng thought, if the princess stayed here, there would be another storm, and no one would be happy. He prayed silently in his heart, this little ancestor had played and made trouble, and even punished Miss Mingpei, it was time for him to go back ... Their job was already difficult, but they couldn't bear it if the princess annoyed His Highness again.

Xie Jiayi bit her lip and said, "I was going to leave today too."

As soon as these words were spoken, the quiet atmosphere in the room seemed to relax, and the people serving below silently breathed a sigh of relief.

Xu Shixing hummed, and glanced at Xie Jiayi again, "It just so happens that I have finished my errand, let's go back together."

Unexpectedly, Xie Jiayi was very well behaved this time, as if she had lost all her strength after crying. She missed her uncle the emperor. Xie Jiayi felt lost and tired, and after a while, she realized that the only person she could trust and rely on was her uncle the emperor. Thinking of this, she looked at Xu Shixing: "I punished your highness's maid. Your highness knows, right?" Xu Shixing seemed not to want to talk about Mingpei. He just nodded slightly and asked, "If there is anything else to pack, tell them to pack it up quickly."

Seeing how he was avoiding the main issue, Xie Jiayi sneered in her heart, thinking that maybe Xu Shixing rushed to take the task of going to the temple just for Mingpei.

Thinking about it this way, it was true. Xu Shixing had always disliked these monks and Taoists. He used to be the most impatient to come to Dajue Temple. Why did he come this time?

Because Mingpei came! It couldn't be because of her. It's not like she had never been to Dajue Temple before, and she never saw His Royal Highness the Crown Prince follow her.

She couldn't understand it, and after she understood it, Xie Jiayi was really angry. Doesn't this prove that what she said to the prince at the beginning was doubly self-indulgent ... Or it was Ming Pei who annoyed her the most. Just thinking about it made her feel as disgusted as if she had swallowed a fly.

Xu Shixing paused for a moment before saying, "If she makes you unhappy, I'll punish her when I get back."

This sentence made Xie Jiayi even more disgusted, " She? Who is she? "

Xu Shixing was stunned. Seeing Xie Jiayi looking like she was trying to smile but not smile, he could not help but said irritably, " Don't make trouble for no reason. "

" Who is looking for trouble? It's not that His Highness has been looking for trouble as soon as he came in. But for a girl to kneel down, is it worth it for His Highness the Crown Prince to sit in my little courtyard and wait for me to come back and cause trouble? "

Then he sat down and said, " I won't go with Your Highness. " He was annoyed when he saw me.

The impolite words made Xu Shixing's temples throb twice and the veins in his hands popped out. He had been made the crown prince since he was young, and no one had ever contradicted him like this, never.

Especially Xie Jiayi's obvious annoyance, as if he was some kind of dirty thing. Xu Shixing smiled grimly, his voice indescribably cold: " You know that the maids in my East Palace cannot be touched. You'd better be aware of it next time and take care of yourself. "

Xie Jiayi knew they were flirting, but she didn't expect that they would warn her. She was furious: " Okay, go back and tell her not to mess with my people again. If you mess with my people-- " Xie Jiayi said viciously: " Next time, I won't just make her kneel down. Next time, I will have someone break her legs! "

The situation became tense again, and the two ended in a bad mood.

Xu Shixing didn't understand what happened to them until he walked out with his sleeves swung, and until the sun shone on him. A deep fatigue came over him, and he numbly listened to the reports from people around him. Sometimes it was about the flood season on the Yellow River, sometimes there were students making trouble in a certain academy in the south, sometimes there was something going on with the Fourth Prince, and sometimes His Majesty met with the virtuous concubine again ...

There were endless things to do, and he listened to them one by one, suppressing his anger and the feeling of powerlessness, and gave orders one by one. Finally, he called Gao Sheng, who responded quickly and waited for His Highness's orders.

Xu Shixing did not speak for a long time, standing beside the lotus pond with his hands behind his back. After a long while, he said calmly: " Go and see if the princess has finished cleaning up. "

Gao Sheng thought to himself that in order to get the anger out, they still had to ask the Eastern Palace, and hurriedly took the task away.

Xu Shixing looked at the pond water without lotus flowers. This winter had obviously come later than in previous years, but he felt so sad.

As for the small courtyard where Lu Chenan was temporarily staying halfway up the mountain, he had just had Hu Jiao sent directly to the Lu Mansion, and Lu Chenan heard that Princess Kunyi had already set off to return to the palace.

" Back to the palace? " he asked, looking up while holding the pen.

As smart as Lu Chenan was, he immediately realized that something had happened that he didn't know about.

## Chapter 35

Xie Jiayi led people back to the princess's mansion , and Ruyi Caiyue led people to pack up the princess's clothes and belongings. Ruyi saw the maple leaf that the princess specifically asked to give to Lu Chenan, and asked the princess if she wanted it back.

Xie Jiayi's eyes fell on the fiery red maple leaf . After a long while, she slowly shook her head , but what she said was: " Find a book to put it in. " It's a pity to waste such a beautiful maple leaf .

This October was indeed a troubled time. Not long after the princess returned home, she heard that some of the Yellow River in the north had burst its banks , and many people were affected again. At this time, the river in the south was still being repaired at the urging of the princess. The people were in a state of excitement. In addition to disaster relief, everyone was concerned about large amounts of money being invested in the safe and sound south. On one hand, there were the river sections that had burst their banks and the displaced victims , and on the other hand, the princess was stubbornly using large amounts of money to repair the river in the south where nothing had happened.

This contrast is no different from " the rich are feasting and drinking, while the poor are freezing to death on the streets . " The private discussions about Princess Yu Kunyi's reputation became increasingly unfavorable , and even Lu Chenan and his servant, who were studying behind closed doors in Dajue Temple, heard some of it.

When Mingxin came in with the vegetarian meal, he told her what he had heard , " Sir , what do you think the princess wants? She could use all that money to repair the Yellow River or give out porridge to help disaster relief . Why not do anything else? People say the princess has money but nowhere to spend it, so she just likes to throw it into the river to hear the sound. "

Lu Chenan then took his eyes off the book , coughed and said, " She did this for her own reasons. " Using her own strength , she spent all her wealth to repair the river, which was a matter for the country and the people. There were so many nobles and wealthy people in Dayin , but none of them did the same thing as her. It was ridiculous that everyone slandered her just because she didn't spend her personal money according to the wishes of the majority . And those who did nothing were clean.

She was just the princess of Dayin . The Yellow River had problems every year, and they were extremely urgent every year. Except for the crown prince, none of the wealthy and powerful people said they would donate money to completely repair the river. It was not that they had no way, or they had no money. They were still relying on the money allocated from the national treasury to enrich themselves. This year, the Yellow River breach was better than in previous years, and the scope of the disaster victims was much smaller, but everyone was blaming the princess.

He put down the book and sneered. It was impossible to say that there was no one behind the scenes fanning the flames. However, she was a woman after all, and she was so stubborn. She didn't know that public opinion could kill without bloodshed , and she didn't know that those who flattered her in front of her might be plotting against her behind her back.

Lu Chenan couldn't help but cough twice again.

Mingxin looked worried: " Young Master is sick again, he must be feeling very uncomfortable. " If he wasn't feeling very uncomfortable, why would Young Master be so quiet recently? He set out corn rice, two vegetarian dishes, and a bowl of vegetable and tofu soup.

Lu Chenan ate only a little bit, then waved his hand, rinsed his mouth and hands, and asked for tea.

" This tea was given by the princess. "

Hearing this, Lu Chenan paused with his hand holding the teacup, looked at the tea in the cup, put the cup down, turned around and coughed a few times, then waved his hand to let Mingxin go down to eat, as he wanted to read.

" Sir, " Mingxin said worriedly, " Sir, you are so knowledgeable, are you still worried about the Spring Examination? You have been working too hard recently and you are getting less and less sleep at night. How can your body bear it if it continues like this? "

Lu Chenan did not answer, and waved his hand again to let him go. Mingxin packed up the food box and went down with a worried look on his face. Although the young master had a good temper, he did not like disobedient servants.

Looking at the book in his hand, Lu Chenan was thinking of Xie Jiayi.

She had a change of heart.

Smart people don't need to explain things explicitly, many things can be understood just by being pointed out.

When she turned around, the distance between them was like a chasm, out of reach. Lu Chenan squeezed the book tightly. There was no expression on Qingjun's face. His throat was itchy again. This time he suppressed the urge to cough. The long white fingers holding the book showed light blue blood vessels. It took him a long time to lower his voice. Low way:

" Besides reading, what else can I do. "

Ranking first and earning yourself a chance. But try your best, it's just a possibility. This is the distance destined by identity, such an unreachable distance.

The voices in the room were very low.

On the day she left half a month ago, everyone said that the princess and the prince had a bad temper. " Getting angry " , in Dayin, probably only the prince had the status and qualifications to get angry with her.

No one could even see her easily when she didn't want to.

" Prince ..."

This time, Lu Chenan's voice was even lower, so low that the words faded away as soon as they came out of his mouth, like a long sigh.

At this time, the Crown Prince was discussing the subsequent disaster relief matters with the officials of the Eastern Palace, but someone who came in from outside brought news that the Second Prince would take over the next disaster relief.

Upon hearing this, even the old man Wang, who was responsible for teaching the prince to read and reminding him of the various rules of conduct, was stunned. He was the old minister selected by Emperor Yuanhe to assist the prince, and was also an important force supporting

the prince. After all, Emperor Yuanhe knew his children and grandchildren very well. To say that they were like wolves was polite. The power of plunder and destruction surged in their blood. To this end, he not only selected the next emperor, but also chose Xu Shixing, the most talented among his many grandchildren, and also decided on the next emperor of Dayin.

The Prince's tutor, Lord Chen, was also shocked. The Crown Prince had always been in charge of the Yellow River management, so why did the Second Prince have to take over the disaster relief? Everyone knew that the Second Prince was a member of the Fourth Prince's faction. The Fourth Prince's faction had become very popular recently. The Xian Consort's birthday a few days ago was not a birthday celebration, but she received more gifts than the De Consort's birthday. Since ancient times, it has been difficult to be a Crown Prince. There are very few people who can succeed to the throne smoothly. All kinds of signs have made the people below have more thoughts when choosing their side. Even the officials of the prospective Crown Prince's faction have sent their family branches to quietly stand on the side of the Fourth Prince. The emperor's heart is unpredictable. But they all know that His Majesty does not like his son, the Crown Prince. However, it was all due to the Yuanhe Emperor's decree, but as time passed, the influence of the decree had been shaken. If His Majesty really wanted to depose the Crown Prince, the Crown Prince would have a lot of mistakes that could be caught.

The younger officials were even more horrified when they heard the news. They were all capable people. They boarded the prince's ship to become famous and capable officials of Dayin. But if the ship capsized and they didn't get ashore in time, they would still be famous officials ... At this time, they all began to make calculations in their hearts. All the recent signs were not good. Several of them had been contacted by people from the Fourth Prince in private ... They should think carefully about how they should treat the people from the Fourth Prince's side. Just in case ... they should leave themselves a way out.

The prince in front of the meeting hall looked at the various expressions and reactions of the people below him. On his face, he still looked noble and steady, but he sneered in his heart. He was afraid that if the disaster relief had really convinced the second prince, half of his people's hearts would be gone.

Mr. Wang and Mr. Chen were not only worried about the status of the prince, but also worried about the disaster in the north. It was not a big disaster in the first place, but if it fell into the hands of the second prince, they didn't know what would happen in the end. The second prince is arbitrary and arrogant, the fourth prince is cunning, and everyone who is attached to them by the party is like a gangrene attached to their bones. The money and food they have passed through are stripped down layer by layer. How much money will be left in the hands of the victims in the end?

The meeting hall was silent for a while. The person who came to report could only be heard saying that the second prince and the fourth prince had donated a lot of money. Even the virtuous concubine donated the most money among the concubines. The fourth prince strongly recommended the second prince to take charge of the disaster relief. His Majesty has already With this intention, the cabinet is being summoned to the Qianqing Palace for discussion. Lord Wang and Lord Chen frowned when they heard this. If money is used to buy this job, the prince really has no hope. Lord Chen thought of the second and fourth princes who are good at making money and have caravans under them. The prince can't do such a thing. How can a

crown prince compete with the people for profit? Not to mention the position of the crown prince, there are so many eyes watching. If there is any extraordinary behavior, just impeachment – the East Palace can't bear it.

Lord Wang lowered his old eyes, thinking more. The prince might not have no money to take out, but – he looked up at the prince who was silent all the time. Even if he had money, he couldn't take it out. Everyone knew that the prince was honest. Even the Defei, who was relying on the Duke of Yingguo's mansion, was not short of money. She might not be unable to compete with the virtuous concubine. It was just that the Defei, like the prince, established an image of diligence, thrift and respect. Usually, she was so frugal that she wanted to wear a silver hairpin on her head. If the birthday gifts were too gorgeous, she would pretend to return them. Now if he took out all this money, let alone please His Majesty, I'm afraid His Majesty would not be able to sleep well.

It's not that there is no way, but – Lord Wang lowered his eyes. It's just that it's ridiculous and not something an old minister like him should say.

He waited quietly.

As expected, someone who couldn't wait spoke up first. An official from the Imperial Academy asked tentatively, " Can we ask Princess Kunyi to file a complaint with His Majesty? "

Lord Wang and Lord Chen were both shrewd people. They drank their tea slowly while holding their teacups, as if they hadn't heard anything. What kind of talk is this? A country's political affairs actually have to rely on a little girl who has just reached the age of marriage. It's not decent. If it gets out, people will laugh at it. But it's a strange phenomenon in this dynasty. His Majesty looks gentle, but in fact, his heart is the most unpredictable. Sometimes, for no reason, His Majesty suddenly shuts up and doesn't show up for several days, claiming to be sick. This means His Majesty is unhappy.

The only person who can really talk to His Majesty is probably this little princess who has been held by His Majesty since she was six or seven years old. The study room of Qianqing Palace was a forbidden area that others could not enter, but for the little princess, it was a place that could be entered easily. Which veteran has never seen the princess there? At first, they all faced each other nervously. There was a mat on the ground next to them. The little princess was cutting paper or lying on the ground playing marbles. Eunuch Xi was waiting silently beside her. With.

At that time, some people thought it was ridiculous. After all, it was the center of power and the holy land of the dynasty.

But His Majesty will do this in this matter, and no one else can do anything about it. Fortunately, although I had heard many rumors about the little princess being domineering and mischievous, the little princess in the study room of Qianqing Palace was really well-behaved, and she remained silent throughout the whole process. If the subject's mental state is good enough, it can be treated as if there is no such thing as this little girl, she is too quiet.

Princess Kunyi is the only person who can break the current predicament.

Everyone in the East Palace meeting room knew about it.

## Chapter 36

Princess Kunyi is the only person who can break the current dilemma , and everyone in the East Palace meeting room knows it. They just don't know why the relationship between the East Palace and Haitang Palace broke down? Fortunately, the princess stayed away from the East Palace and did not stand in the team of the Fourth Prince's Mansion , otherwise the East Palace would be even more anxious.

The person who proposed it just waited , and no one else dared to say anything about it . After all, it really shouldn't be done this way. But there was no other way.

So for a while, some people were sitting quietly and some were drinking tea.

Seeing His Royal Highness the Crown Prince grinning through gritted teeth, is there really no solution? He couldn't say it, but all of his officials were happy to accept tributes , couldn't they donate it for the country and the people, and compete with the Fourth Prince. They just didn't want to , holding on to the money like holding their lives , each one holding on tighter than the other. In the final analysis , they still doubted him and left a way out for themselves.

, he got even more angry when he saw these people . The princess had been talked about so badly these days. He arranged for someone to bring up this matter , and used the respectable words of the royal family , hoping that these people would find a way to control public opinion. In the end, everyone disagreed , saying that in this situation, the people should not be silenced, which made the Fourth Prince's party more popular and had the upper hand. They also said that there were so many important events in the country , and their stalls were so big that they needed manpower everywhere , and they really didn't have the spare energy to manage this matter.

Now that people need it , they are all waiting eagerly.

Sometimes the prince really wanted to capsize and throw all these people into the water. But he couldn't. He had to keep his position as the prince. In the future, he wanted to be the master of the country and let the Xu family's country be passed down from generation to generation. This was the request of his grandfather, Emperor Yuanhe. Until the death of the previous emperor, he still held his wrist tightly and stared at him, refusing to die, until he promised to work for the country of Dayin for his whole life, not slacking off for a single day, and doing everything to make Dayin's country last forever.

To this day, there is still a scar on his left wrist, which was left by the dying Emperor Yuanhe's nails. Xu Shixing, who was less than eight years old at the time, realized for the first time how terrifying the power of a person at the end of his life was. He was afraid that if he didn't swear, the late emperor would not let go. He suspected that even if the late emperor died, no one could separate his hand with the nails that were embedded in his skin, bones and blood.

The prince slowly exhaled, still looking cold and self-respecting: " This matter should not involve the princess. " Even if it was a conclusion to the matter. Xie Jiayi had offended the second and fourth princes before, and she was now facing the pressure of public opinion and the financial pressure of the southern river. If she spoke up for this matter again, it would not be good for her reputation. In the eyes of others, it was just the arrogant princess interfering in the affairs of the court. No one said it was good. Instead, she was instigated by the fourth prince's party to make



her situation more difficult. And as long as she opened her mouth, she would offend the fourth prince again.

Xu Shixing turned the ring on his finger. He was no more confident than others about whether he could ascend the throne smoothly. In fact, the emperor's mind was unpredictable. The more he understood his grandfather, his father, and himself, and the more he dug into the secrets of these dynasties, the more he felt that the future was unpredictable. Especially when he was able to use a word to summarize what the previous emperor inherited from his mother's family, and merged it with the talents and characteristics of the Xu family's bloodline, he created a kind of crazy thing, which was passed down from generation to generation in their bloodline. It gave them endless energy and talent, but also made them full of bad deeds and ugly.

His father, the emperor, looked so normal. Thinking of this, Xu Shixing raised the corners of his mouth, just as normal as him ...

Ever since she started amassing money to build the southern river channel, she has ceased to be a princess of the dynasty who only cares about herself. She has joined the game. So don't drag her into the vortex anymore.

Although His Royal Highness the Crown Prince was aloof and indifferent, he was self-respecting and courteous. Although he rejected the proposal of his subordinates, he also used gentle words to comfort them. He listened carefully to the arguments of the other two young men, nodded when necessary, and then pointed out the inappropriateness in a reasonable and well-founded voice.

No one knew that the prince looked very patient when he smiled at the young official in front of him, but in fact he had only one thought in his mind: another fool with a weak stance.

Ming Pei, who came to deliver soup outside the meeting room, handed the lunch box to Gao Sheng with gentle hands and feet. She pointed to the meeting room with closed doors and windows. They were discussing important matters. She was afraid that a little girl like her would be disturbed. It was a bit cute. Gao Sheng smiled and whispered as he took the lunch box:

" It's okay now, we are talking about the princess's matter. " Seeing Mingpei's eyes wide open, Gaosheng thought that Mingpei was also a confidant of the Eastern Palace, and besides, the matter of the princess was not that important, so he just mentioned it briefly.

Ming Pei is a very smart person and is paying close attention to the current situation. He understood the current situation just by hearing these two sentences.

As she walked back with the empty food box, she pondered over it bit by bit, walked slower and slower, and finally made up her mind. She handed the food box to the little maid beside her, adjusted the hairpin on her head, and turned to Haitang Palace with the other two maids.

Ming Pei quickly calculated the gains and losses of success or failure. Regardless of success or failure, she would gain more than she would lose, and it was time for her to stand up. She had to let people know that there was someone named Ming Pei in the East Palace. Although going to Haitang Palace would inevitably lead to criticism and denunciation, she could get the reputation she wanted from the officials and servants of the East Palace.

Her status was too embarrassing, and the only thing that could help her get where she wanted was fame.

The last hesitation was completely eliminated, and Ming Pei walked towards Haitang Palace faster and more steadily. When His Majesty the Qianqing Palace, Prince Xuan and the princes went to the study, Ming Pei happened to step into the Haitang Palace.

She didn't look at the people from Haitang Palace in surprise or ridicule. She just said that she wanted to see the princess, and then she waited quietly under the sun.

When her forehead touched the cold water-polished blue tile floor and she spoke her request, the two girls from the East Palace who were kneeling with her were stunned, fearful and respectful.

What I was afraid of was the princess sitting in the hall.

What she admired was Ming Pei's words, which were reasonable and logical, and her sincere heart towards the East Palace and the Crown Prince, as well as her compassion for the people and the victims of the disaster. Even though she knew that the princess didn't like her, she still came here for these reasons and knelt in Haitang Palace.

After hearing what Miss Mingpei said, they both felt that they were no longer just ordinary maids in the Eastern Palace, but had their own feelings and responsibilities.

Finally, Ming Pei concluded: "I know that the princess is tired of me, but for the sake of the prince and the victims of the northern disaster, no matter how humble I am, I want to use my humble body to pray to the princess to go to His Majesty Qianqing Palace to support the prince in handling disaster relief matters." Although she couldn't say it explicitly, she had fully hinted that if the disaster relief really fell into the hands of the second prince, the first people to suffer would be the victims, and the prince's status would also be threatened. The disaster relief was successful, and the credit was due to the second and fourth princes. If there were any mistakes in the disaster relief, the first fault would be the prince who had renovated the Yellow River channel in the past two years.

Ruyi had a calm face, and now she looked at Mingpei who was kneeling below. Caiyue and her gang might not know anything, but Ruyi, who often traveled outside and understood the current political situation, could see through this situation. This was to put the princess on the spot. If the princess agreed, she would offend the Fourth Prince's party, and if she didn't agree, she would offend the East Palace. And whether the princess agreed or didn't agree, her reputation would be bad. If she agreed, it would be meddling in the government affairs and being restless. Those people would have more reason to link it to the princess repairing the southern river. It was all proof that the princess misled the emperor with one word and was a disaster for the court. If she didn't agree, it would be that the princess was narrow-minded and selfish because of her own grudges, and didn't care about the people ... The princess killed officials for the southern river, and she had offended so many people. What others said was just a matter of talking.

The most important thing the princess should do at this time is to stay away from the troubles, but Ming Pei drags the princess into the troubles for the sake of the prince. In Ruyi's eyes, the princess is not going to be the prince's consort, and the prince's gains and losses have nothing to do with their Haitang Palace! Even the prince is not as important as his master.

Xie Jiayi leaned on the upper couch, tapping his hands on it occasionally, looking at Mingpei with a sneer.

Ever since Ming Pei came in, the hall has been quiet, and at this moment you could hear a pin drop.

Not to mention Ming Pei, even the two maids kneeling behind her actually had some unyielding pride at this moment. This was the righteousness that Ming Pei talked about, saying, " Although I am a humble woman, living in the deep palace, I also want to do something for the people in the disaster area. Even if I am punished for it, I am willing to do it and have no grudges against others .".....

Sentence by sentence, he really knows how to speak.

After a while, Xie Jiayi finally spoke: " Since you are here, kneel down outside under the crabapple tree. " Then she turned around and told Ruyi: " Have someone watch over her.

Mingpei is an adopted maid. She sacrificed herself to feed the tiger for the sake of the people. This princess will help her. "

It was already the end of October, and after a few north winds, the weather had turned cold. When serving the master in the palace, one naturally could not wear too thick clothes. Usually, one stayed indoors, so it was cheap. However, such clothes would look too thin when kneeling outside in the wind.

" I, the princess, will show mercy and not punish you two. Go back to your duties. Your Miss Mingpei keeps saying that she is willing to sacrifice herself, and I, the princess, can only fulfill her wish. You two little girls don't have to frown. Your sister Mingpei is very happy. " After saying this, Xie Jiayi no longer looked at the people kneeling below, and left with a wave of her sleeves.

Ruyi hurriedly ordered Bubu to watch the matter, staring into Bubu's eyes: " No matter who comes, it won't work. Without the princess, you just watch carefully and make her kneel down, and have fun. "

Bu Bu responded with a " De Le " . What's so difficult about this? Brother Ruyi looked like he was afraid that he might not be able to do it well.

Ruyi hurried towards the princess. When she caught up with the princess, she had already left Haitang Palace. It seemed that the princess was going to Qianqing Palace.

Ruyi hurriedly stepped forward and said, " Princess, this Mingpei wants to use the reputation of the princess to serve the East Palace. " How could she really get her wish? Now that the princess is gone, the humble servant's contribution will be great.

" I know. " Xie Jiayi's voice was crisp and cold.

" Princess? " Since she knew, why should she do what she wanted? Even a slave could take the blame for the princess. She couldn't find any other stepping stone, and she was still addicted to climbing up to Haitang Palace!

Xie Jiayi suddenly stopped and let out a long breath. She looked at the tall red walls on both sides, covered with green glazed tiles, magnificent and solemn, even the corridors, full of royal momentum.

" Because she's right. " Except for her boring bullshit about risking one's life for the people, she was right about everything. Xie Jiayi knew the Second Prince very well. He was just trying to make money to stir up trouble when he was asked to help . When the trouble really came out, he and the Fourth Prince brought a bunch of people to fight with the Crown Prince to determine

who was right and who was wrong. It would be good for them if there was chaos. If there was no chaos, the Crown Prince would succeed to the throne smoothly, and they would have no chance.

chaos?

The death of Prince Min Huai caused a great chaos. Until ten years ago, Prince Min Huai launched literary inquisitions one after another, causing chaos year after year.

The Northern Di tribe has become stronger and stronger over the years. All the tribes in Simon said they would pay tribute to Dayin, but they were actually fence-sitters, standing on the side of whoever was stronger. Twelve years ago, wasn't it the same? The leader of the Tata tribe was repeatedly conferred titles by Dayin, and the emperor personally bestowed him with the title of King of Loyalty, but in the end, didn't he rebel? He brought his troops and directly joined forces with the Northern Di tribe, catching the Northern Di tribe off guard.

Xie Jiayi raised her head. The sky was so blue, without a single cloud.

That day, the sky of Sucheng was so blue, without a single cloud. Until that day, her biggest worries were that she couldn't fly a kite or turn her little windmill with a bell on such a day, and that her brother forgot to buy her Haitang cake ... Until that day, Sucheng became an empty city overnight.

She looked at the blue and peaceful sky, which was so blue that it seemed like tears could drip from it.

Dayin couldn't stand the chaos, and her emperor uncle couldn't stand it even more.

Xie Jiayi waved her little leather whip, looked at the worried Ruyi, and smiled. The sixteen or seventeen-year-old girl smiles like a blooming begonia flower, innocent and innocent, making people feel happy just looking at her.

She smiled and said: " Ruyi, I am of royal blood and a descendant of the Xie family. "

There is no need to say anything else, Ruyi understands everything.

His princess has always known what the royal family is and what the Xie family is.

Know better than anyone else.

## Chapter 37

Xie Jiayi brought Ruyi to the study room of Qianqing Palace . As expected, there were cabinet ministers, the prince, the second prince and the fourth prince inside, discussing the Yellow River disaster.

Lord Wang has already given up . The Second Prince offered 50,000 taels , and said nice things , and took out all the money in the Prince's Mansion. Judging from your Majesty's attitude, as long as someone in the six ministries praises the Second Prince for his service to the country and the people , your Majesty will naturally take this job from the Crown Prince to the Second Prince.

It's a good thing that the prince is capable.

The prince being capable is also a bad thing.

Lord Wang's hair had long turned white, and he was no longer able to say anything as he held the tablet. The emperor knew what was in his mind . He had experienced three dynasties, and

his old eyes had seen clearly. His Majesty was still alive , and the prince was already so capable , which was enough. Not to mention , His Majesty had never liked the prince. The father and son were like magnets with the same poles . They could barely get along if they were far away. But when they were close, they were never close ... His Majesty's fatherly kindness was never for the prince. He even speculated that His Majesty disliked the prince just because he was the prince chosen by the previous emperor .

The crown prince standing aside looked up and saw the fourth prince's half-smiley eyes, and saluted him in a pretentious manner , saying something like " Third brother has worked hard these days , and it's time to give second brother a chance to serve the court . " The second prince even directly asked for orders , and his words implied that if he, the prince, didn't come out to do something , he would have no place to stand. In the end , it was just a hint that he, as the crown prince, could not tolerate his brother's ability.

The two ministers of the Ministry of Personnel and the Ministry of Works all spoke in accordance with His Majesty's wishes, and began to praise the Fourth Prince and support the Second Prince. The Minister of Revenue was his grandfather, but in this situation today, he did not say a word. With his status, anything he said would make His Majesty suspect that the Crown Prince was forming a clique and that the Duke of England had lost his impartiality.

Seeing that the overall situation had been decided, Mr. Wang lowered his head and closed his slack old eyes. Mr. Chen's forehead was sweating, but there was nothing he could do to save the day. I'm afraid that in the end, the prince's control of the Yellow River in the past two years will not only be ineffective, but also have mistakes. Fighting comes and goes, regardless of whether they are at a disadvantage, the common people will suffer if they succeed or fail.

At this moment, a crisp voice came from the nervous Qianqing Palace study room: " No! I don't agree! "

As soon as these words came out, everyone present was stunned, and then looked back. They only focused on arguing and did not notice that Eunuch Xi had gone out at some point. At this time, Eunuch Xi came in from the door, accompanied by Princess Kunyi who had been able to enter the imperial study directly since she was a child.

Emperor Yongtai was also stunned. He frowned and scolded, " Kunyi, stop making trouble! " Before the people on the Fourth Prince's side had time to relax, they heard the Majesty, who had just put on a stern face, immediately relax, " Don't you see what I and my ministers are doing? What kind of words are you saying? " This sentence was obviously supposed to scold the princess, but the tone didn't sound like that.

The second prince glared and scolded! Scold hard!

Even if you don't scold her, you have to scold her severely. Punish her! Punish her severely! Even if she is not punished, she should be kicked out immediately! This is a place where she can come as a woman, and it is time for her to show up as a woman!

Seeing that the others hadn't reacted yet, he took a step forward and said, " Kun Yi, you are so bold! Father has already reprimanded you, why don't you leave now! "

The second prince spoke in a loud voice, and at this moment, he was so angry that he couldn't even suppress his anger, or murderous intent, towards Xie Jiayi. This cousin had stood on the side of the crown prince and opposed him since she was young, and had ruined his plans. They

were happy that she had fallen out with the East Palace, but who knew that she would come out to ruin their plans again.

Everyone saw that Princess Kunyi seemed to be frightened by the Second Prince, so she stopped and moved closer to Eunuch Xi. Eunuch Xi hurriedly supported the Princess, but before the Princess spoke, His Majesty was already unhappy. His Majesty, who had been kind to the Second Prince just a moment ago, now gave him a cold look.

When he saw this, the Second Prince Guijianchou felt a chill in his heart, sweat broke out on his back and his face turned pale. He shut up and dared not say anything.

His Majesty did not let go: " Why, you are talking to your sister like this in front of me? Do you want to kill her when I can't see you? "

As soon as these words were spoken, the second prince fell to his knees.

The others also knelt down, and His Majesty became angry.

Their Majesty was always moody. However, the only thing that was constant about their moody Majesty was that they treated Princess Kunyi like the apple of their eye and doted on her to the utmost. Not to mention that their Majesty's only daughter, the eldest princess, could not compare to her, even the princes below were nothing in front of such doting.

Qin Zhili, the new prince of Taining Marquis, was called by His Majesty to report the relevant money and grain data. He had heard countless people say that His Majesty favored Princess Kunyi, but it was still shocking to see it with his own eyes this time. His Majesty indulged and favored the princess to such an extent! Taining Marquis had a lot of dealings with the Fourth Prince in private. By sending him to the Ministry of Revenue, he was standing on the side of the Crown Prince. After all, everyone knew that the Ministry of Revenue belonged to the Crown Prince. But even on the surface, he couldn't stand on the side of the Crown Prince. In the past six months, the Crown Prince had been losing more and more in the dispute with the Fourth Prince's party. It was because His Majesty was on the side of the Fourth Prince.

Some even privately said that Your Majesty wanted to depose the Crown Prince, but was hesitant because of the late Emperor.

But now, when Qin Zhili saw His Majesty's attitude towards Princess Kunyi, he felt that everyone still underestimated an important factor, that is, Princess Kunyi's influence on His Majesty.

Previously, he only thought that His Majesty favored the princess, but the princess, a little girl, could openly enter the study where His Majesty and the ministers discussed matters, openly speak, and openly say " No " and " I don't want to " , but His Majesty only reprimanded her on the surface, without actually showing any annoyance ...

This was really shocking. Qin Zhili felt that he had to tell his father everything that happened today . Their Taining Marquisate was no longer as good as before, and his father wanted to bet on the fourth prince, hoping to revive the family by following the emperor. After all, the prince was the legitimate side, and standing with the prince would not show their Taining Marquisate, and it would not be their turn to make a contribution ... But just looking at the situation today, things have to be considered in the long run ...

Not only Qin Zhili, but other experienced ministers in the court also had countless thoughts in an instant.

The Fourth Prince had a gentle look on his face and looked at Princess Kunyi with doting, but in his heart he wished he could skin her alive.

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi, his eyelashes trembled, and then he lowered his eyes and looked at the golden bricks on the floor of the imperial study. Lord Wang's eyelids moved, but still no reaction. Lord Chen suddenly raised his head and stared at Princess Kunyi who came in. He thought that he was a bit naughty ... but, it was a good naughty thing ... It made things turn around ...

Emperor Yongtai waved to Xie Jiayi, his expression unchanged, and even a bit serious: " Come if you want to, sit on the chair next to you and read or write, there is no room for you to talk. " Hearing His Majesty's words " Come if you want " , everyone in the room felt mixed emotions . This is a " come if you want " kind of place ... Last time when they were discussing something, a concubine sent some snacks, but the snacks were not delivered, so this concubine was confined to her room for half a year along with her snacks.

What were your majesty's original words?

" The study is a sacred place, the center of the country. How can you girls from the harem set foot in it! "

The words are still ringing in my ears, and now it has become " Come if you want to "... who was always steady , felt that he didn't close his mouth in time several times today. He was really frightened by the attitude of His Majesty and shocked by the princess's favor ...

Then the princess said in a crisp voice: " Your Majesty, I will not sit down, so as not to disturb Your Majesty and the ministers from discussing state affairs. "

Some people couldn't help but complain in their hearts: So the princess also knew that this was the place where national affairs were discussed. If the princess didn't say it, they couldn't help but suspect that the princess had fallen asleep during her nap and was talking in her sleep as soon as she came in ... Although it was a bit outrageous, it was easier to accept than the princess going straight to the imperial study and influencing the emperor's decision with her own strength.

The key point is that His Majesty did not blame at all.

This is not only outrageous, it's scary!

What was even more frightening was that the Yongtai Emperor, who had been pretending to be stern and scolding a second ago, actually laughed. His Majesty actually laughed, and glared at the princess with a smile: " You also know that you have disturbed my discussion of state affairs with my ministers. "

Oh my God! Everyone in the palace shouted in their hearts. Especially those on the side of the Fourth Prince, they felt as if they were walking on cotton, and their faces were paler than the wall behind them.

After so many of them had been pushing for two months, this sixteen-year-old princess turned the situation around with just one sentence.

The key point is that His Majesty laughed, and the little princess became serious instead.

A pretty face as young as a flower, dark almond eyes, black and white, when serious, it's like a child pretending to be an adult. The princess said solemnly: " Your Majesty, I don't want my second brother to go to disaster relief. "

, who was still kneeling on the ground and didn't dare to stand up without the Emperor's order, stood up and glared at the Princess: " You—— ! "

" Me? What do you mean by 'me'? Don't you know what those people under your tutelage do? I went to the south a while ago, and that Hu was one of your tutelage. His son raped and killed a woman, and according to the Dayin Law, he should have been hanged, but with all the evidence, they managed to get him only sentenced to exile for 3,000 miles! And that's it. I heard that he was exiled halfway and went to another place to eat, drink and have fun! "

The princess continued to stare at her with her black eyes: " And your followers went out to be officials, and they took advantage of my caravan! That caravan is mine, if it were someone else, they would have been fleeced! Meeting your followers is more frightening than meeting bandits! With such greed for money, you led people to disaster relief, and you relied on your followers. The relief money was fleeced before it even got to the destination! "

The princess spoke clearly and quickly. When she finished her words, everyone in the hall fell silent.

Not to mention the Second Prince, even the Fourth Prince, who always looked good-tempered and approachable, turned pale. The Second Prince gritted his teeth and glared, but facing the scrutiny of His Majesty, he could not say a single word of rebuttal, and could only cry out that he was wronged.

" Are you wronged? Are the things Kunyi said not true? Would Kunyi frame you? "

The second prince, who was crying out for injustice, choked. This was revealed by the princess, and when His Majesty asked him about it, how could he dare to say no? The fourth prince argued again: It is true " that the people under my second brother are not well disciplined , but \_"

the Fourth Prince said " but " , Princess Kunyi continued: " But I am only mentioning these two things to save face for my second brother. There are many more. I just don't want to waste such important time for His Majesty and the ministers, so I won't complain! "

This sentence blocked the Fourth Prince's words, and his face became even uglier: How much does she know? If she continues to pester him, I'm afraid that this devil who is fearless will reveal all his affairs. Others dare not, but what else can she not dare to do? This is just a firecracker. If she gets angry, she will dare to explode anyone.

He had known since childhood that he could not be tough with Princess Kunyi. Princess Kunyi was fearless when she got angry. She was not easy to mess with. She was not afraid of fighting, but most people cherished their lives. Especially the rich and powerful, the more powerful they were, the more they cherished their lives.

When the Fourth Prince thought about this, he became even more speechless and broke out in a cold sweat.

Only the prince, who remained calm throughout, looked up at Xie Jiayi again.

After Xie Jiayi finished speaking, she bowed to His Majesty and left without hesitation. The others were left with mixed feelings . At this time, the people on the prince's side were grateful, and their eyes looking at the prince were inevitably more meaningful: such a princess is worth many of them, and she should be made the crown princess, so that the crown prince's position would be stable ...



Therefore, the prince will continue to be responsible for disaster relief.

Some people feel relieved, while others feel empty-handed.

The princess looked at no one from beginning to end, only at His Majesty. Before leaving, she glanced at Old Master Wang who had remained silent. This old man, for some reason, was special, but the princess always felt that Nanny Chen would sometimes notice him. She took a closer look, and he was an old man who couldn't be any older. Now he was only dressed in a rigid manner, but it was said that he was very elegant when he was young, and he even made up the ancient score "High Mountain". For half a year, he played the ancient music "High Mountain" all night long on a high hill every full moon night. Xie Jiayi suspected that this anecdote about Old Master Wang was fabricated. How could this man not play the piano all night long? Who was he talking to? And he played all night long, for the moon to listen? It was this old minister who had nothing to do with her. In her previous life, he came to advise her when she was in the most difficult time. He said, "Empress, you are too young and take some things too seriously. You are luckier than most people if you have seen some good things. Don't be obsessed. Obsession will hurt yourself. " " You will understand when you grow up. Some things are helpless and you have to accept them. Otherwise, how can you live? " " People have to live, don't you? Your relatives who have passed away will be so sad to see you like this. "

Lord Wang was walking slowly, and when the crown prince passed by, he called out to him, "Your Highness, the princess's move not only stabilizes your job as the disaster relief officer. " The princess's move actually stabilized the hearts of many people who had been shaken, and stabilized the crown prince's position which had been precarious since half a year ago. He nodded to the prince, put his hands behind his back and slowly walked out of the palace. The prince was left with Jixiang, standing there, watching the old minister leave, thinking about what Mr. Wang said. The prince suddenly lowered his head and smiled: He naturally knew. He knew that Zhao Zhao had him in her heart.

## Chapter 38

Xu Shixing stood with his back to the setting sun, with his hands behind his back, for a long time, and then slowly smiled.

The Crown Prince, who always held himself in high regard in front of others, had the urge to stretch himself, but even though there was no one around except Jixiang, he just raised his hand and gently rubbed his temple. He hadn't slept well for many nights. Now that a big thing had happened, he felt very tired, but this tiredness brought with it an indescribable sense of relaxation.

He went towards the East Palace with the setting sun behind him.

Before arriving at the East Palace, I met Gao Sheng who came to greet me.

The prince frowned, "What a panic, what a mess. "

When Gao Sheng saw the prince, he seemed to have seen a savior. He knelt down and said, "Your Highness, you are back! Miss Mingpei went to ask the princess for help for your Highness's matter. In such a cold weather, she was punished by the princess to kneel in

Haitang Palace in thin clothes . It has been almost an hour! " At this point, Gao Sheng's tone was filled with sadness: " Miss Mingpei has not recovered from the last time she was punished to kneel in Dajue Temple . When she gets a little cold , her knees hurt so much that she breaks out in cold sweats! As a result, this time , the princess not only punished her to kneel , but that dog servant Bubu also asked for ice and made Miss Mingpei kneel on it! If she kneels again, I'm afraid Miss Mingpei's legs will be crippled! "

When Jixiang heard this , he looked at His Highness.

The prince's face had changed , and he seemed to be squeezing out words from between his teeth: " Did she invite the princess? "

" Yes , yes , Your Highness. We are begging. The maid who came back said that Miss Mingpei begged desperately . As long as the princess is willing to help Your Highness, she would rather hand her life over to the princess and let the princess vent her anger, Your Highness! " Gao Sheng's voice was sad and mournful, and he kowtowed as he spoke. He couldn't see the prince's face, and he hadn't heard him speak for a while, so he didn't know what His Highness was thinking. He was anxious and couldn't help but ask His Highness why he was asking these questions at this time, why not save Miss Mingpei first and then talk about other things!

Then the prince's voice was indescribably strange: " Since she has given her life to the princess, she has gotten what she wanted. Why are you so anxious? "

Gao Sheng was speechless all of a sudden and stammered: " Now people outside say that Miss Mingpei is a true loyal maid, whose behavior can be included in the Biographies of Famous Women. She is loyal to His Highness and has a public-spirited heart for the people ..." He spoke in a panic what he had heard.

The prince's tone became even more strange: " It's only been an hour, and the outside opinions have come out? "

" This ..... it's because the two girls who followed were released by the princess, and they told the story in the East Palace, and then ..... it spread out. "

" I am quite quick in passing messages from the East Palace. " Gao Sheng was even more confused by the prince's words. In panic, he thought about the scene he saw when he went to Haitang Palace with people just now. His heart ached. He hated that Bu Bu, who used to look down on someone who followed him and called him grandpa. Now, relying on the princess, she dared not even give him face!

The prince suddenly changed color and asked, " You went to Haitang Palace? "

Gao Sheng was shocked: " It was urgent, I didn't have time to ask for permission, I just thought that Miss Mingpei was doing this for His Highness, I should protect her for His Highness ...

Nanny Liu also went to ask for her, but Bubu refused to let her go, saying that no one could let Miss Mingpei get up without the princess's order. Nanny Liu led people to help her up, but Bubu actually drew a knife and said that if Miss Mingpei got up, he would chop off her head and let her kneel down again! "

Jixiang shuddered with fear when he heard this. Just by listening to it, he could tell that the situation was tense.

Gao Sheng wanted to complain, but he was kicked by the Crown Prince without expecting anything. Gao Sheng cried out " Ouch " , covered his heart and fell to the ground, then quickly stood up and kowtowed, enduring the pain.

Then I heard His Highness's cold voice: " Am I dead? You all dare to act on your own. How come it's your turn to make decisions in the East Palace? "

Everyone knelt down at once, not daring to breathe. Gao Sheng kept saying, " Your Highness, spare me , " " Your Highness, spare me, " " I won't dare to do it again ."

The prince couldn't help but turn his neck. Before he said anything else, he heard that Nanny Liu had also arrived.

He lowered his eyes and remained silent for a long time. Everyone else felt that every second of the prince's silence was stretched to infinity. They could even hear the pounding of their heartbeats, but they didn't know whether it was their own or that of the person kneeling next to them.

Just as someone came to report, Madam Liu came over with her people, obviously very anxious. The prince then raised his eyes and looked towards the person who came.

Nanny Liu was so anxious that she almost forgot the rules . She wanted to call out "Your Highness" from a distance, but she was immediately met with the look of His Highness looking up at her.

Her panicked mind froze all of a sudden, she felt a chill down her spine, and the hairs on her body stood up.

What kind of look is that!

She had seen this look before!

I have seen it in the late emperor and I have seen it in Your Majesty today!

Twice, both times she felt like she was in hell, and she didn't know how she managed to walk out alive!

She actually saw it again today.

Nanny Liu didn't even care about her manners. At her age, she actually raised her hand to rub her eyes in public. When she looked over again, there was no " that look " there . The prince was looking at her kindly, just like usual.

Nanny Liu slowed down her pace and came over hesitantly . She couldn't help but look at the prince again. He was cold and kind, indeed the same prince as usual.

She ..... she was too anxious, or maybe she was driven crazy by the people in Haitang Palace, and was frightened by Bu Bu's big knife. Now she is scared when she thinks about it. He looked like a caring little eunuch, and he usually called her "maid" and "maid". He had a dimple when he smiled and a pair of pointed little canine teeth. But he turned hostile in an instant. I'm afraid that if she really pulled him up, their girl's head would really be chopped off by that scoundrel ... Even if he was chopped off afterwards, their girl would not survive, and it would be useless even if she lost her life.

Aunt Liu thought that she must have been frightened and frightened, which made her dazzled and confused.

She thought so in her heart, but when she faced the prince, she was more respectful than usual. She explained the matter in detail, not daring to be anxious, not daring to urge, and not even

daring to use the Empress Defei to pressure the prince. She only said lightly that the Empress was very anxious, and dared not say anything more. After saying this, she bowed her head and waited by the side.

The prince nodded, "Ming Pei was indeed punished for me. Even if mother didn't tell me, I would have gone to get her. I feel bad for tiring Madam to make an extra trip. Madam is so old." After hearing what the prince said, Madam Liu's nervousness finally eased. The prince has always been a man of plans and filial piety, and he never disobeys the queen's words. She thought to herself that her nervousness just now was completely groundless, and she was just scaring herself. She couldn't help but spit fiercely in her heart. It was all because of that wolf cub Bu Bu. He must make him pay when he finds a chance! But a servant dared to ignore the queen's wishes. Even the princess had to give her face. She didn't believe that if she asked for this servant on behalf of the queen today, the princess would still not give it to her!

The prince, along with his entourage, turned around and headed back to the palace.

When they arrived in front of Haitang Palace, Nanny Liu was eager to go in, but saw the Crown Prince paused at the door.

She hurriedly called out, "Your Highness?"

The prince smiled and responded, "Mammy." Then he walked inside. As "Your Highness the Prince has arrived" was shouted one after another, the servants in Haitang Palace who had been so arrogant not long ago knelt down to welcome His Highness.

Ma Liu looked at Bu Bu standing aside, and Cai Xing who was following the sharp-tongued Cai Yue who was not daring enough to say anything but stabbed someone in the face, and sneered. Looking at Ming Pei, who was kneeling on the ice under the crabapple tree, with a pale face and shivering, Nanny Liu burst into tears. "Your Highness, look, this is how they torture the people in the Eastern Palace, they--" Nanny Liu choked up and went to help their girl.

Then someone who came around the pavilion asked directly: "Who are they? Mammy, are they talking about me?"

She was dressed warmly, in a bright red embroidered dress with a white fluffy skirt. She looked very warm, and she was even holding a hand warmer carved out of a whole piece of jade.

Madam Liu didn't dare to move forward. This was also someone who could turn hostile at any time. With His Majesty's support behind her, Madam Liu didn't dare to go forward to help. She could only bow: "I dare not. I am ordered to take Miss Mingpei back. The princess has been punished. If she continues to punish, she will be a bad person and the princess's reputation will be bad."

Cai Xing, who was kneeling, lowered her head and rolled her eyes. Their princess was not afraid of having a bad reputation. This old fellow was used to relying on the queen and the prince to act in a pretentious manner.

Sure enough, the princess said, "Oh, Madam, I probably don't know. I don't have much of a reputation."

Everyone ...

Nanny Liu thought that the princess would not let them go, so she looked directly at the Crown Prince, her old face expressionless.

But then I heard the princess say: " But after kneeling for so long, I feel relieved. You can take her away. I don't want to look at her face that has served her country and her people anymore. "

Everyone: .....

The princess' words made everyone in the garden look at Ming Pei. At that moment, they all had the same curiosity: what kind of face does one have to serve the country and the people ... Aunt Liu hurriedly helped the person up, but Ming Pei could no longer stand and almost caused Aunt Liu to fall onto the ice. It was only after several people nearby came forward to help that the person was finally helped down.

Gaosheng glanced at the prince, then stepped forward and put a dark red cloak on Mingpei, who was shivering badly. Mingpei was tortured to the point of being unrecognizable, but she was still struggling to bow, trembling as she said: " Your servant ... your servant ... thank you, princess ... for your righteousness ... thank you, princess, for your punishment ... thank you—— "

" Many servants in the East Palace and Changchun Palace felt sad and their eyes turned red when they heard this.

Just as she was feeling touched, she heard Princess Kunyi interrupt her directly: " Are you done yet? Are you trying to disgust me on purpose? "

Everyone: .....

After saying this, without even looking at Ming Pei, he looked directly at their Crown Prince: " Your Highness, can you manage the people in your East Palace? Your servants have even taken advantage of me. If there is a next time, Your Highness, can you kill this kind of person? He is so annoying that he keeps talking all the time! "

The first time Aunt Liu saw the princess and the prince getting along after the breakup, she saw that the princess was not polite at all when speaking to the prince, which frightened her so much that her face turned pale. She had originally wanted to use the princess and the prince to criticize the princess, but now she didn't dare to do so.

Baba looked at the prince, but he only heard the prince respond very coldly: " I will punish them when I get back. There are still rules to follow. "

Just like that ... Nanny Liu felt that it shouldn't be like this ... But after the prince said this, he looked at the crabapple tree and stopped talking.

Aunt Liu was really shocked and angry. She hadn't been frightened or angry for many years. The princess didn't dare to do anything, but at least she had to take away the servant named Bu Bu from Haitang Palace! The East Palace and Changchun Palace should have some face ... Seeing that no one spoke, she said dryly, " Princess, this old servant has conveyed the Queen's message. The Queen wants to ask this Bu Bu from your palace to question her. "

As for what he did in the past, it was none of her business. They wouldn't beat him to death, and the princess wouldn't tear her face off with her queen just for a little eunuch.

No matter how much the princess behaves, she still deserves this.

After saying this, Nanny Liu lowered her head and waited. When she lowered her head, she met Bu Bu's gaze looking at her. Nanny Liu smiled grimly.

However, she did not expect that the eunuch was not as scared as she had imagined. Instead, he smiled, revealing his dimple and two small fangs, full of confidence.

Then Madam Liu heard the princess's usual delicate and crisp voice: " No. "

The rejection was straightforward and without even an excuse.  
Nanny Liu was stunned again.

## Chapter 39

" no. "

The princess's answer was straightforward and without hesitation . Madam Liu was confused. She just wanted a palace maid to come over and talk to her. She was not even a close palace maid of the princess , nor was she the chief steward of Haitang Palace like Ruyi . She was a little eunuch who had drawn a knife against her , the consul madam of Changchun Palace , and the princess refused without even thinking about it?

She looked at Xie Jiayi with a look of shock after being rejected. After a while , she finally realized that the princess had completely embarrassed her, the old nanny, and the Changchun Palace behind her for a little eunuch, in front of so many servants from three palaces.

Aunt Liu's face gradually turned red: " My lord, this servant wanted to beat me and kill me . Your Majesty wanted to call him over to question him, but you really didn't want to? "

Such things happen in the palace . Even if the masters want to tear each other to pieces in private , they still remain calm and smile when they meet . They use their servants to express their opinions . If the servants who are used to express their opinions go too far , the masters will throw the servants out directly and give them a beating. Your Majesty is kind and who would dare to beat someone to death?

Unexpectedly, the princess refused to listen: " My servant will obey my orders . If he doesn't listen to me, I will beat him to death. Madam, if you think my servant did not do well , then it is my fault . How about you take me back and explain it to the queen? "

Who dares to do this? Madam Liu kept hitting a wall , and her chest was filled with anger , but her arrogant heart was discouraged. She forced a smile and said , " I dare not ," and then stepped back and supported Mingpei again.

Xie Jiayi snorted and laughed: " Not only this time, but also in the future, without my order, the servants of Haitang Palace are not allowed to follow anyone anywhere! "

As she said this, she smiled and asked the prince: " Your Highness, do you think this is a good idea? " Now that her uncle is here, she can protect herself. In the future ... in the future, she needs the prince's golden mouth. Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi looked at Xu Shixing with a little more eagerness.

Xu Shixing looked at her smiling face and said slowly after a while: " Of course it is good. "

He saw that her smile became even brighter after hearing his answer, and turned to his servants in Haitang Palace: " Why don't you thank me! Not only does this princess protect you, but our Crown Prince also protects you! "

The speed at which she climbed up the pole made Xu Shixing's mouth twitch. It was indeed her. The servants of Haitang Palace were all beaming with joy, kneeling down to express their gratitude to the princess and the prince. Especially Bu Bu, he looked proudly at Liu Ma and

Ming Pei standing aside again, but unexpectedly Ruyi looked over, he felt his skin tighten, and quickly bowed his head respectfully, not daring to look around anymore.

Until everyone left, only Xie Jiayi and Xu Shixing were left in the yard.

The last time we stood here together, the crabapple tree was in full bloom. Now, the tree is left with only bare trunks and branches.

Xu Shixing stood with his hands behind his back, watching for a while before calling softly, "Zhao Zhao, I am very happy today. "

Xie Jiayi thought that this was a victory that was of great importance to the court. I would be happy too ... She stroked the whip and said, " I punished the people in His Highness' room. I hope His Highness is not unhappy. "

Xu Shixing turned to look at her and said word by word: " I don't have anyone in the room. "

Xie Jiayi said "oh" indifferently, thinking that it was only a matter of time.

this casual " oh " made him angry, but he couldn't do anything about it. After a while, he couldn't help asking: " Zhao Zhao, why? " Why did you help him? This was something they didn't need to ask, but he wanted to ask it at this moment. The distance between him and Xie Jiayi was so far away .

" You are the prince, and I, the princess, have to keep you busy. " Xie Jiayi replied, flicking the whip.

" The East Palace is no longer the hot stove. " Before this, everyone could see that the hot stove was no longer his East Palace.

" Then I burned the wrong one. "

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi who didn't care, and he gritted his teeth in hatred, but there was still a place in his heart that was warm and messy. He couldn't be angry or laugh. This is her.

" Zhao Zhao, don't be afraid. "

" I've never been afraid. " Xie Jiayi's small whip hit the pile of rockery stones on the side with a snap.

" Second Prince and Fourth Prince, I will protect you. "

Xie Jiayi immediately said: " I don't need Your Highness to protect me, but Your Highness, please remember what I said today and protect the servants in my house. " This is how you repay my kindness.

Xu Shixing gritted his teeth and said, " Don't worry. "

Xie Jiayi suddenly laughed, and her laughter was like a silver bell, spreading across the garden shrouded in the dusk. She smiled and said, " Your Highness, it is not easy to make a promise, but a gentleman's word is as good as a whip. Your Highness's promise, I have remembered it. " This time, don't eat your words again.

" I won't break my promise. " Xu Shixing didn't even know why Xie Jiayi suspected him. Even if it was Mingpei's identity, he had gone through the whole process, and no one would know.

Xie Jiayi smiled again, with a hint of sarcasm, but she was sure of the other party and said, " Indeed, the prince is the heir to the throne of the Great Yin family, how could he break his promise? In this way, all the servants in my mansion will have someone to rely on for the rest of their lives. "

Xu Shixing stood in the setting sun, feeling that he really couldn't understand Xie Jiayi. However, he always felt that they still had plenty of time to make long-term plans. He thought that after this period of time, he would definitely find out what happened to her.

The arrival of November completely brought the capital city into a cold winter. Bu Bu got up in the morning and rubbed his hands and jumped on the spot. He looked at the icicles hanging under the eaves and stepped on the stone platform to reach them. Before he could touch them, he saw Ruyi coming from afar, so he quickly slid down and walked forward with a smile.

" Brother, is the princess going to the palace today? " As the weather turned cold, His Majesty fell ill again. The princess stayed in the palace this month. During the day, she was busy visiting His Majesty and chatting with him to relieve his boredom. At night, she took Ruyi Caiyue to look at the account books sent from several places.

Qian Yingying gave birth to a son, and the princess held a grand ceremony for the third day and the full moon. The child's mother named him " Zuo ", and the princess directly asked for an imperial decree to give the child the royal surname " Xu ", which shocked everyone in the Qian family. Master Qian was so shocked that he did not call his concubine for three consecutive nights and walked around in the study room with his hands behind his back. He realized that the princess was not just using his daughter to fool around, but really took his daughter, who could not even fart, seriously.

He was completely puzzled. He had so many smart and capable daughters, each more beautiful than the other. But this legitimate daughter, born to the first wife, was sullen every day and could not even speak a word. The servants could bully her. If there was no wet nurse to keep her in check, I'm afraid half of her dowry would have been stolen by the servants. She was only pretty in appearance. How could she have caught the princess's eye?

If he really caught the princess's eye, he would have to think about it. As for Song Ziming ... maybe he wouldn't have to try so hard to curry favor with him. Not to mention the money he had sent, one of his concubines had given Song Ziming's little star a set of top-quality pearl headwear some time ago. The biggest pearl on it was as big as a longan. This was also his idea. He married his second daughter to him to keep Song Ziming under control, but this daughter ended up beating Su Yan's maid, and the two rooms started to quarrel. The money he provided to Song Ziming this year alone was several thousand taels, and this spoiled daughter was causing trouble for him. Why offend Song Ziming's beloved? It was equivalent to leaking money to him, and it was wasted.

As a result, his wife quarreled with him over this headgear, which gave Mr. Qian a headache. Judging from the situation, if he can marry the princess, Song Ziming ... who is he? He married his daughter and treated a girl he bought from outside like a treasure. He really thought that Qian Dawei had no opinion at all!

Ruyi in Haitang Palace glanced at Bubu and said, " You've been through a lot this year, but you're still not steady at all. "

Bubu stuck out his tongue, " Brother, the princess said I was still young. " Bubu was the youngest, not even fourteen years old. He had a cute baby face, but his martial arts skills were forced to be trained by an old eunuch in the palace with the most sinister methods since he was a child. Later, the old eunuch died, and Bubu offended someone. It was just some dirty things of



the eunuchs. He fell in love with the handsome Bubu, but he refused. This person recognized a eunuch in charge of the Chuxiu Palace as his godfather, and a few words took half of Bubu's life. When the princess and Ruyi saw Bubu, he had been wrapped in a mat, waiting to be carried out and thrown into the mass grave at night.

Ruyi never disagreed with anything the princess said. Even though he didn't think fourteen was too young, if the princess said it was young, then it was young.

" I'm going to meet two business managers on behalf of the princess. You will be accompanying the princess for the next few days. "

" Are we going back home? " Bubu was surprised.

Ruyi looked at him with a half-smile, Bubu quickly put away the surprise, stuck out his tongue again, and quickly assured: " I will definitely do my job well. "

Ruyi then turned around and looked up at the icicles under the corridor. It was the end of the year again.

The time for ancestor worship at the end of the year is approaching.

Ruyi's silence also affected Bubu, and he also became silent.

The next day after Xie Jiayi returned home, she met Lu Chenan in front of her own teahouse. Lu Chenan was wearing a black cloak, which made his eyebrows and eyes look even more pale. When he saw Xie Jiayi, who was alone with Bu Bu, he was stunned for a moment, then raised his hand and bowed from a distance .

This was the first time they met since the night they watched the moon at Dajue Temple.

It seemed like a gust of cold wind was blowing, and Lu Chenan tilted his head and put his fist to his lips, coughing non-stop. Xie Jiayi didn't care to be stunned, and hurriedly led Bu Bu forward, anxiously turning around: " Are you okay? Do you want to see a doctor? Or –"

Lu Chenan stopped coughing and said, " It's windy here. I was just about to go to the teahouse to sit down. "

" Oh, I want to go to the teahouse too. "

Xie Jiayi, who originally felt extremely ashamed when seeing people, was ready to say hello and run away, but for some reason she found herself sitting in the side room with Lu Chenan again. This was Xie Jiayi's private side room, and it was in this room that she had asked for advice about the southern river last time.

The room was cozy, with smokeless red snail charcoal burning and the light and sweet scent of crabapple incense lit.

These days, Xie Jiayi didn't allow herself to think about Lord Lu at all. She was almost touching Lord Lu, which made her feel ashamed. Especially since Lord Lu's cousin was so good, although it was only a brief contact that day, Xie Jiayi had already realized that she was a good girl. On the surface, she looked as dignified and quiet as Zhang Jinyu, but she was completely different from Zhang Jinyu who pretended to be a good girl.

It is truly " dignified and graceful " .

They were a match made in heaven, so there was no place for a domineering and arrogant monster like her to interfere. The key point was that she delayed their meeting and almost snatched their marriage. My God, in his previous life, Lord Lu was the only one who stood by

her, the queen, until the end, but she almost blocked his fate with the person he had been thinking about all his life in his previous life.

The key point is that Xie Jiayi couldn't help but pick at the corner of the table while sitting there. She was about to like Hu Jiao, but when she knew that Hu Jiao was Lu Chenan's cousin, Xie Jiayi immediately disliked the innocent girl. She realized that she was disgusted with Hu Jiao, and she didn't want to look at her any more. She couldn't help but want to lose her temper when she heard people talking to her nicely ...

My mother wrote in her notes: There is an ugly beast living in everyone's heart. All we have to do is keep an eye on it, lock it up, and then one day destroy it.

Hu Jiao, who had just experienced a great shock that day, was strong and beautiful, but Xie Jiayi opposite her saw the ugly beast in her heart poking out.

She was a princess, and when she knew Hu Jiao was her cousin, she envied her.

Or rather – jealous of her.

Then he rejected her.

Xie Jiayi, who had sent Hu Jiao away, felt scared. She had played the role of being dignified and gentle in front of Lu Chenan for so long, but now it was like a joke. She seemed to have to squeeze herself into a dress that didn't fit her and looked miserable. But when she was miserable, Lord Lu said she was fine. Lord Lu's confidence made Xie Jiayi really think she was fine.

But the next day she met the original owner who didn't need to force her way in, and who was gentle and calm even in a mess. She was wearing coarse clothes, her hair was messy and hanging down, and she looked awkward in her expensive cloak. She came here through mountains and rivers just to make a meeting.

She clearly had nothing, but Xie Jiayi was so jealous of her.

She has her Lord Lu.

Xie Jiayi tried her best, but she was just a clown trying to pick up a bargain. But the real owner was still there, so her attempt to pick up a bargain ended in a hurry and embarrassment.

Xie Jiayi was thinking about this vaguely. She thought she should greet him very nicely and appropriately, and then leave. She should ask the teahouse owner to warmly entertain Lord Lu, because Lord Lu is always Lord Lu.

She raised her eyes to look at Lord Lu opposite her, but Lord Lu was looking at the tea in front of him.

## Chapter 40

Xie Jiayi raised her eyes to look at Lord Lu opposite her, but Lord Lu was just looking at the tea in front of him.

As if he noticed the other person's gaze, Lu Chenan looked over. When their eyes met, Xie Jiayi smiled very unnaturally. Lu Chenan read a little guilt from her forced smile, and he reached out to hold the cup tightly.

At this moment Lu Chenan understood that there was no misunderstanding as he expected, and there was no need to do anything.

She just changed her mind.

Lu Chenan's face became paler and paler, and the usually gentle man even showed a bit of coldness.

His voice was as gentle and pleasant as always, with a hint of politeness: " Long time no see , Princess . I hope you are well. "

Xie Jiayi read politeness and alienation from his words. Yes, I'm afraid that at this time he has already fallen in love with his cousin. A man like Lord Lu , once he has someone he really likes , should be like this with other women.

Xie Jiayi paused and said dryly, " Recently , I 've been busy. "

" Busy ", Lu Chenan picked up the teacup and tasted the word "Princess" with the bitter tea. He no longer looked at the girl opposite him , but felt that today's tea was much more bitter than that day. Lu Chenan then noticed that the people following the Princess had changed , and the tea in her wing was brewed by her people . Maybe this child was not good at brewing tea. Otherwise, how could one make such bitter tea that is so bitter that it can penetrate one's heart?

" Does the princess have any other instructions? If not , I will take my leave first , so as not to delay your work. " Lu Chenan's voice was obviously cold , but when he mentioned the word " busy " , there was still a hint of self-mockery.

When he said this, he still didn't look at the girl in front of him , but lowered his eyes to look at the shaking tea. His confused mind thought of the day when she suddenly left Dajue Temple: Was it because of the prince? It was because of the prince.

She and the prince ...

In fact, he already knew it.

His little princess was not naughty enough, not selfish enough. She was the princess of Kunyi , no matter what she did, she didn't have to feel so guilty. He didn't even need to look at her to read all her unnaturalness, embarrassment, embarrassment, and uneasiness ...

It's okay to be nice to him, but don't be so soft-hearted towards others in the future.

People with conscience are too easy to be manipulated by others.

And the more favor she gets, the more resentment she gets. The more people lean on her, the more people plot against her. But if she does something wrong, she will be embarrassed and easily manipulated.

He didn't want his princess to be controlled by others.

Lu Chenan exhaled lightly, and then smiled at the person opposite him again. As expected, when she saw his gaze, the fearless princess immediately shifted her gaze like a panicked deer, swallowing nervously.

" Princess, it's just a misunderstanding, don't mind it. " Lu Chenan wanted to smile at her, but found that he couldn't. He thought of the news Mingxin brought back that day, that the prince and the princess had a falling out. Only the prince could have a falling out with the princess, and even if they did, they could still see each other. They still had countless opportunities and countless time to reconcile.

But if he wasn't the prince, once he made her feel guilty and disgusted, he might never have the chance to see her again.

When Lu Chenan saw the princess hearing this, she felt even more embarrassed. Her hands, which were already nervously scratching the corner of the table, scratched even harder, her face turned red and pale, and she hesitantly said: " I ... didn't mean anything else ... I just made a mistake ... I was just fooling around ... Mammy scolded me, I won't do it again ... I really didn't mean anything else! " She stretched out her right hand to swear, as if she was afraid that he wouldn't believe her.

Lu Chenan's left hand, which fell on his knees, suddenly clenched and quickly stopped him, saying, " My lord, there is no need to say more. I understand everything. " He felt his throat itchy and a sweet and fishy feeling in his throat. Lu Chenan suppressed the sweet and fishy feeling and endured the itchiness in his throat. He smiled at the princess and said, " It's better to talk about it. My lord, you don't have to hide from me. "

" No ... I'm not hiding. I'm just busy ... really busy. "

Lu Chenan still smiled and nodded.

If Ruyi was here, she would probably be able to see the clue. His smile had changed. Before, it was all in her eyes, but this time, only the corners of her mouth were raised.

Princess Kunyi was not someone that anyone could meet. The reason he could meet her again and again was because she had made a mistake.

Lu Chenan suddenly stood up and said, " Princess, I really have to leave. "

He smiled again and said, " Goodbye. "

He left very quickly, and when Xie Jiayi responded with a " hmm " , Lu Chenan had already left the room. Mingxin then reacted, picked up his master's cloak and chased after him.

Xie Jiayi slumped on the table.

Bu Bu didn't understand what happened to the princess, so she stood behind quietly. She saw the princess buried her head in her arms and didn't raise it for a long time.

It was snowing outside, the first snow of this winter.

It was not until they reached the street corner that Mingxin caught up with his young master.

Lu Chenan turned his back to the street and turned into an empty alley. He coughed so hard that the veins on his hand that was holding the wall popped up. Finally, he slowly squatted down holding the wall. Because no one passed by in the alley, a thin layer of snow had accumulated. Mingxin saw a hint of red on the thin layer of snow. The young master coughed up blood again. How could this happen? Mingxin was panicked and tears fell. She cried, " Let's go back and find the mute slave ... I told you long ago that you have been sick since you came back from the temple. Why do you come out every day ... "

Lu Chenan stopped coughing, smiled with a pale face, and watched the snow getting heavier and heavier, like tearing cotton wool. It was cold on his face. He could even smell the coldness, penetrating into his lungs.

He looked at the snow all over the sky and said softly, " No need to come out again. "

He already had the answer he wanted.

In fact, he should have known it long ago, but he, who didn't believe in coincidences, found all kinds of coincidences for her. He found the coincidence that she left without saying goodbye, and he found the coincidence that she had no news since then.

Now, it's just a natural proof.

If she doesn't show up, it means she is unwilling.

That's all.

Snow fell on Lu Chenan's pale face, which was cold but sobering. He leaned against the wall and smiled softly: It's a pity that I always claimed to have seen through the warmth and coldness of human nature and the world, but in the end I am just a poor mortal. I have to see it with my own eyes before I can understand it.

Xie Jiayi, you won't understand.

What do you mean to me?

You don't understand, ever since I stepped into the capital at the age of nine, looking at the towering palace walls, I have been hoping that you would come out.

He stood up with the help of the wall, wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth with his thumb, and said with a smile: " Why worry? Your son has vomited before. He will get used to it after vomiting a few times. " He took the cloak from Mingxin's arms, shook it and put it on, then turned to look at Mingxin: " Are you still not leaving? "

After saying that, he strode out of the alley and headed towards the side courtyard of the Lu Mansion.

Mingxin was still standing in the snow with tears in his eyes. He felt that the young master who had just vomited blood did not even look like a sick young master at this moment. Is vomiting blood really not a big deal? He was stunned for a while before he ran up and caught up with his young master. The master and servant braved the wind and snow and went to the remote courtyard of the Lu family.

When Xie Jiayi returned to the Princess's residence, a thick layer of snow had already fallen. At dusk, Nanny Chen, who had already accepted that the Princess did not like Lu Chen'an, came over with a stack of picture albums.

She asked the maid to light the lights, and then turned to the princess and said, " Princess, please take a closer look, let's pick more. " According to Nanny Chen's idea, many noble ladies in the capital city set their sights on this group of new juren. Even if Jieyuan was not to their liking, there was also Yayuan, and so many Jingkui ...

" Princess, please take a look. This time, Yayuan is the son of the Grand Tutor. He is seventeen years old, which is just the right age. His sister, as you know, is the noble lady who plays the guqin very well. "

Hearing about the daughter of the Taifu family, Xie Jiayi, who had been listless, finally became more energetic. Wasn't she the one who wanted to be the Crown Princess in her previous life? Later, she got married, and her sister simply said that if she couldn't marry the Crown Prince, she would never marry again. As for the Taifu's legitimate daughter, Chen Yinsheng, she really kept her word and built a Taoist temple at home to cultivate immortality ...

Xie Jiayi is also familiar with this man's younger brother. Five years later, there was no girl in the brothel who didn't know Chen Lichuan, the young master of the Wang family in Beijing ... After the spring examination that year, the two most popular people in Beijing were not the No. 1 scholar, but Lu Chenan, the No. 3 scholar, and Chen Lichuan, the No. 2 scholar. It is said that Chen Lichuan was very unconvinced at first, and told everyone that he took the exam for the No. 3 scholar and he also looked like the No. 3 scholar, so how could he be the No. 2 scholar?

Later, when he met Lu Chenan, he was convinced ... What he said to everyone became " Since Zhou Yu was born, why was Liang born ?" Zhou Yu sighed about his talent, but this young master from the Taifu Mansion sighed about his appearance ...

Xie Jiayi felt that it was hard to describe these two siblings ... In the previous life, she heard that there was a list of weirdos in the capital, and the three of them were on it ...

Since it was already opened, she simply read on. Nanny Chen found out that the princess didn't like the son of the Taifu family that she favored, so she immediately promoted the prince of the Taining Marquisate. " It turns out that he is also a student of the Imperial Academy. Among these noble sons, he is one of the best in reading. What's more rare is that I heard that his house is very clean and he doesn't have a maid. "

She even found out everything about the other person's house, which shows that Nanny Chen put in a lot of effort, and also shows that Nanny Chen really values Qin Zhili.

Xie Jiayi snorted. This Qin Zhili was indeed a romantic man. But he was really a good romantic man. Xie Jiayi really looked up to him. But he had a sweetheart, and he married the illegitimate daughter of the Baoning Marquis. It seemed that he would marry her in the spring of next year. As a result, he had no children for three years, and he was determined not to take a concubine. People outside said that he loved his wife, and at the same time, they said that his wife was jealous. The reputation of the Baoning Marquis's daughter for being jealous was only slightly worse than that of Xie Jiayi ... But the status of the Baoning Marquis's illegitimate daughter was far worse than hers . The noble ladies and relatives in the capital did not dare to gossip about her, the queen, openly, and they all enjoyed gossiping about this illegitimate daughter.

At that time, Xie Jiayi guessed that they were envious and jealous. Their own family had a lot of backyards, and there were ridiculous yards that were not enough to share, and they were expanding outward. How could they not envy the Taining Marquis's son who would rather have no children than have only one wife? But the more they envied, the more they hated, and the more they belittled the Baoning Marquis's daughter who could not have children. Later, when it was heard that the wife of the prince appeared, all the noble ladies kept silent and only winked at each other. It was equivalent to excluding her from the circle, and the reason was very grand, she was not virtuous, violated the seven reasons for divorce, and lost the noble ladies' people. The son had no son, and the daughter-in-law did not allow him to take a concubine, which made Taining Hou's wife hate her. It was said that Taining Hou's wife was trying to control the prince's wife in various ways, and she wanted her to serve her in bed every night. At the end of the sentence, she was blunt and unpleasant, " You can't have children anyway . "

It was not until four years later that the wife of the Marquis of Taining finally understood why Qin Zhili married a concubine. She thought that the love was just a scam. It turned out that this man already had a lover and was determined to keep his virginity for his lover. He would rather pretend to have a secret in front of his wife than consummate the marriage. If it were someone else who encountered such a thing, they would just swallow their anger, but the wife of the prince did not. She directly chose a place with many people to shake it off and asked for a divorce on the spot.

The Taining Marquisate hated her, and the Baoning Marquisate could not tolerate her either, thinking that she had lost face. She went to the temple to become a nun, and only the Queen,

Xie Jiayi, praised her courage, and was attacked by the scholars for this ... This attack lasted for a long time, so Xie Jiayi was deeply impressed. In the end, she came to a conclusion that, except for Lord Lu, the scholars were not good people. They were better at using dirty words to curse people, and they were louder than one another when it came to moral integrity. But in her opinion, these self-proclaimed scholars did not do much good themselves.

Xie Jiayi looked at them one by one in the candlelight. Facing Nanny Chen's expectant eyes, she could only respond truthfully, lest Nanny Chen silently prepare, and then she would have to run into others every few days. Nanny Chen was very good at arranging these things, and it was very natural for people to run into each other, sometimes several times a day.

" I know this. He sold all his antiques to pursue an otaku ..."

" When this guy sees a pretty girl, he wishes his eyes were on her. If I really marry such a guy, I'm afraid I won't be able to resist digging out his eyes and hanging them on the wall to dry ..."

Seeing that it was the end, Nanny Chen quickly put it away and stopped Xie Jiayi from looking at it. " It's too late, don't look at it today. " Her fragile old heart couldn't bear it. After all, these were carefully selected by her, and seeing that the princess didn't like any of them ... She could still comfort herself by saying that maybe there would be someone she liked later ...

" They all look good, but why are there so many messes behind them? "

" Is there no good one ..."

Nanny Chen couldn't help muttering while holding the album.

Xie Jiayi looked at the candlelight and sighed.

There are good ones, but they are not hers.

## Chapter 41

While Nanny Chen was busy recruiting people and Xie Jiayi was busy collecting money, time passed day by day and now it was the twelfth lunar month , the real end of the New Year.

The whole capital city was bustling with activity . Not to mention the many new vendors selling various New Year's goods , even the vendors selling buns and steamed buns were shouting louder than usual . Everyone had a smile on their face , and everyone was busy working enthusiastically.

The disaster on the Yellow River was originally lighter than in the past, and it was completely quelled under the management of the Crown Prince of the Eastern Palace. I heard that the victims had already drunk hot corn and bean porridge. " The porridge was so thick that even a chopstick wouldn't fall over! " , " I don't believe that the porridge the victims drank could be thicker than the porridge we drink in the suburbs of Beijing " , " That was the porridge cooked by His Royal Highness the Crown Prince , how could it be the same? " " No wonder ".....

Statements like these were everywhere , and after this disaster relief effort , the prince's status in the hearts of the people became even higher.

After hearing these comments, Xie Jiayi only said one sentence: " My reputation is declining , but your highness's is rising all the way. " It was indeed right to stay away from him , otherwise

everyone would spit at her and say that she was not worthy. Now she didn't want to be worthy of him at all. From now on, only people would say that she was arrogant and domineering, and no one would say that she was not worthy . It was great.

, the palace maid Ming Pei also became famous . No one knows who made the story of Ming Pei kneeling for the crown prince , pleading for the people of the world , and asking the crown prince to preside over disaster relief vivid and dramatic. There is a maid who endures humiliation and is brave enough to serve the people, a timid maid as a foil, righteous and moving speeches, and a happy ending, which corresponds to the good ending in reality. This part of the book became popular all of a sudden.

Ming Pei, the loyal maidservant of the Eastern Palace, also began to be mentioned.

Ruyi, who was standing next to the princess, pondered. The princess was right. Ming Pei had the support of the Duke's Mansion and Changchun Palace. Otherwise, even if she was favored by the prince, she would not have the financial resources and manpower to make such a big show. Behind this, people and money were needed to push it. They could also do this for the princess, but the princess only said, " It's better to use this spare money to buy bricks "....

Xie Jiayi held the hand warmer and pondered the secrets. Without her, the jealous Crown Princess, Zhang Jinyu began to find a new way. Unfortunately, no matter how much she jumped, she could never become the Crown Princess, let alone the Queen. She lowered her head and thought about her experience of seeking medical treatment in her previous life. After two years of hard work, Xu Shixing finally found the King of Medicine Fang Zhongzi, but he didn't come out at all, and no one could help him. This "someone" included the emperor's will. In the end, it was Xu Shixing, with the dignity of an emperor, who personally walked into the mountains and solved the puzzles and chess games of the King of Medicine according to his requirements, and finally asked this person to come out, so that her body, which had been ruined beyond recognition, could give birth. It can be said that she exchanged her own life for that child. She and Xu Shixing had argued about this a lot, and Xu Shixing disagreed after hearing Fang Zhongzi's diagnosis. But when she asked him if she wanted to adopt a child from the side line, he remained silent.

Xie Jiayi stroked the jade heater in her hand: Will Xu Shixing go to the Medicine King Mountain for Zhang Jinyu this time? She can wait and see. At least this time she is not alone with Hehuan in her body, someone is with her ... And she has already chosen the queen, she wants to help Chen Yinsheng take the position.

Xie Jiayi knew that the person who helped Zhang Jinyu to do this was undoubtedly the Duke of Ying. However, she never expected that among those who fanned the flames, there was someone who was completely unexpected to her.

" Has there been another letter from the north? " In the October letter, Zhang Dahu had made another step forward. Zhang Dahu was a talented general and a good fighter, and he had the support of the Duke of Ying and the Eastern Palace, so he naturally rose faster than others. Xie Jiayi just didn't expect him to rise so fast.

" The recent heavy snow has blocked the roads. I'm afraid it will be after the New Year. "

" Bring the letter from the North as soon as it arrives. "

" Don't worry, Princess. "



Xie Jiayi hugged the stove in silence for a while before speaking: " How are the preparations for the ancestor worship going? "

Ruyi's heart twitched, but she still answered calmly : " Don't worry, Princess. "

In a blink of an eye, it was the day of ancestor worship. Most of the nobles in Dayin chose this day to worship their ancestors. The Duke of Yingguo's Mansion started preparing early in the morning. The gates of various places were opened, and the people from several families gathered in the main house of the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion, which was the mansion of Concubine De's father. Although the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion was conferred the title of Duke at that time, there were constant discussions and oppositions, but Emperor Yuanhe made a dictatorial decision for the position of the crown prince. In addition, the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion, both sons and daughters, were indeed promising. Concubine De's brother made meritorious contributions in the northern battlefield and is now a general. If the princess had not changed her mind temporarily, she should have been able to take over as the governor of Shaanxi and Gansu. In the end, she missed it. It is unknown when the next opportunity will come.

After more than ten years of operation, the British Mansion has a solid foundation and is becoming more prosperous.

Defei's younger brother, the current Prince of Yingguo, has become the Left Vice Minister of the Ministry of Works. Defei's father, the current Duke of Yingguo, is the Minister of the Ministry of Revenue. The Duke of Yingguo's Wang family has its roots in the Huaibei and Huaibei regions. Originally, they were just a country gentry family. Their ancestors passed the imperial examinations and became Jinshi. It can be said that they have been scholars for generations, but the highest-ranking one was only a fifth-rank official.

It was not until the generation of Defei's father that their family succeeded in the imperial examination and moved to the capital. The capital was large and not easy to live in, so one of the two daughters was sent to the family of Zhang, the then Grand Secretary and later Prime Minister, as a concubine. One was selected to enter the palace and became a maid. Both daughters succeeded. One was later promoted to the Prime Minister's successor by Prime Minister Zhang despite the pressure, and the other became the emperor's concubine and gave birth to a prince, and later became the crown prince.

Now, the Wang family, the original family of the Duke's Mansion, has become a big gentry entrenched in Lianghuai and firmly controlled the Lianghuai area. The first thing the local officials who serve for three years do is not to hand over government affairs, but to visit the Wang family. They have formed a tight network in the local area. Not to mention deceiving the princess, to be bold, even the amount of tax silver paid every year, how much good or bad, is also up to them. Investigate? The interests of local officials and gentry are the same, and they are of the same blood. Who and what should they investigate? They have formed a network in the local area, and they also have people in the capital, and they are big shots, who can reach the sky.

The Duke's Mansion was prosperous, and people from several branches in the Huai River region had been coming to the capital two months ago. Duke Yingguo was the head of the clan, and it was his responsibility to preside over the ancestral worship. At this time, more than a

hundred men, led by Duke Yingguo, entered the ancestral hall, and as the music started, they began to worship their ancestors.

The women were led by the old lady of the Duke's Mansion. There were two rows of women below them, many of whom were wearing phoenix crowns and bridal robes according to their ranks. One look at the women's side showed that more and more men had become officials in the Duke's Mansion in recent years, and their ranks were also rising year by year. The old lady looked at them with satisfaction, her children and grandchildren were all capable.

Duke Ying was even more excited when he saw the people in the ancestral hall. He had a feeling that their Wang family would rise to a higher level. As long as the crown prince ascended the throne and the queen mother was in power, they could imagine any prosperity.

At the same time, the ancestor worship ceremony at the Princess's Mansion had already begun. But unlike the bustling Yinggong Mansion, the Princess Mansion was exceptionally quiet on this day every year. Uncle Zhong personally accompanied his princess to the ancestral hall, the door of which was wide open and spotless.

Xie Jiayi looked up and saw rows of tablets placed on the table.

Her grandfather had four sons and two daughters, and the sons below married and had children, which meant that the Xie family must have been a prosperous one. The Xie family army guarded the north, generation after generation, year after year.

People kept dying in battle, and people kept being born. But no one expected that twelve years ago, the last two branches of my grandfather's family died overnight. Now, she was the only legitimate heir left in this branch.

This is Xie Jiayi's personal ancestor worship.

Under the guidance of Uncle Zhong, she performed the ancestor worship ceremony step by step.

Outside the ancestral hall, Nanny Chen, Ruyi, Bubu, Caiyue and Caixing were waiting quietly. On this day, even Bubu had a gloomy face and stopped talking. At the end of the twelfth lunar month, people were already setting off firecrackers. The sound of firecrackers could be heard everywhere in the capital, and the air was filled with a faint smell of gunpowder that belonged to the New Year. On this day, the Princess's Mansion was a place of mourning and silence.

Xie Jiayi came out of the ancestral hall and several people hurried to greet her.

The ancestral hall was chilly and the princess was afraid of the cold, so Nanny Chen took the cloak from Caiyue's arms and put it on the princess, and also stuffed a hand warmer into her arms. They watched the princess go into the study alone, and the others did not dare to follow her.

They all knew that the princess wanted to be alone for the next period of time.

The study was already burning with charcoal, and it was warm. On the couch by the window, a soft pillow fluffed by the nanny and a freshly dried blanket were already prepared.

Xie Jiayi sat cross-legged on the couch and carefully opened the notebook.

No matter how careful I was, the pages were frayed after reading them year after year. The whole family was so happy when they heard that my mother had her. Not long after she was born, the whole family started preparing this notebook for her. My father, mother, and brother all had their own place in the notebook. Whoever thought of something would write it down quickly.

When she was three or four years old, she knocked over a teacup and almost wet this book. Nanny Chen reacted very quickly, picked it up, patted her chest in fear, and kept saying: " My little master, this will be your dowry in the future ..." She kept nagging for a while.

Xie Jiayi flipped through the pages gently, year after year. In fact, she already knew every word in it. She had a bad memory, but she memorized every word. But she still read it carefully every year at this time, as if she had never seen it before, as if they were preparing to accompany her during the New Year.

" I'm here. " Xie Jiayi's voice was low and soft.

" I have obtained two top-grade oriental pearls and three pieces of emerald jade, which I have already given to your mother and will be included in your dowry. " These are what my father said.

My brother's words were much more straightforward. Every time he spoke, he would say, " Zhao Zhao was not well behaved today. I was very angry and wanted to beat him up, but I couldn't do it . " " In the end, Zhao Zhao was even angrier than me, so he beat me up, and it was very quick. "

" You're already so fat, and you still have to eat sweet-scented osmanthus candy every day. If you keep eating like this until you get married at the age of sixteen, will I still be able to carry you, brother? "

" I didn't bring sweet osmanthus candy for Zhao Zhao, so she learned to find other excuses to complain. She is still young, her brain is not very good, and she is more cunning than I was when I was a brother .".

As for the mother, she simply regarded this diary as a guide for educating her daughter. At the end of the diary, she sighed, " Seeing that my precious daughter is so stupid, I am worried ..." Xie Jiayi laughed so hard that she even sobbed.

She sobbed and whispered: " Do you miss me? " After a long time, she whispered again: " I miss you "...

The Lu family's ancestor worship has never had anything to do with Lu Chenan, but this year is of course different. The Lu family wanted to bring this descendant into their own ancestral hall, but Lu Chenan was too ill to get up and still did not participate in the Lu family's ancestor worship.

Mingxin was still indignant when she went out to buy things, " Every year our young master is not allowed to offer sacrifices to the ancestors. This year, seeing that our young master has made progress, he comes. Humph, our young master even pretends to be sick and won't go. Our young master also has a temper! " Although Lu Chenan was indeed sick, he was not unable to get out of bed as outsiders thought.

Mingxin bumped into Ruyi who was on her way out to meet the shopkeeper.

Ruyi heard that Lu Chenan was so ill that he couldn't even attend the ancestral worship, and she was suspicious. He was such a smart man that he got the whole truth out of Mingxin in a casual conversation. Mingxin kept saying, " You ignored us in the past, but now you can't afford us . " The 14 or 15-year-old boy held his head high, looking very proud.

Ruyi said goodbye with a smile and left. He had long felt that something was wrong with Lu Chenan. Since the princess didn't want this prince anymore, he no longer paid attention to him.

But Ruyi was still very surprised that she had never participated in the Lu family's ancestor worship.

What kind of person would never worship their ancestors?

## Chapter 42

After Emperor Yongtai led the royal family and officials to the southern suburbs for sacrifice , all that was left was the New Year. A few days had passed since the Princess's Mansion had offered sacrifices to their ancestors, and the mansion had slowly returned to its former bustle from the silence of the day of the sacrifice . Uncle Zhong led the outer courtyard , and Nanny Chen arranged the inner courtyard , and they were also making final preparations for the New Year.

In the midst of the excitement, only Princess Kunyi was still listless, but she forced herself to smile. The servants all knew that the princess was homesick , so no one dared to say anything else, and they only used other things to attract the princess's attention. But this year, the princess seemed to be particularly lonely. Things that attracted the princess's interest in previous years , this year the princess just smiled and said: " It's interesting , you guys go and have fun. "

Bu Bu held the singing mynah bird in one hand and the dancing sparrow in the other , and said to Ruyi with a bitter face: " Brother , Mammy always said that the princess has grown up . So this is what growing up is like. I feel like I can't find anything to make the princess happy. Looking at the princess , I want to perform dancing in circles for her ..."

Ruyi looked at Bubu and said: There is no need to do that . Your master will think you are crazy.

Even " if there are no fun things , it's okay to have fun people. " Ruyi kicked the snow under her feet. These days, it's hard to find someone who can make the princess feel fun.

Nanny Chen, along with Caiyue and Caixing, started to sell the album of portraits of young masters from the capital to the princess . Xie Jiayi took a glance at it and saw that Nanny hadn't taken it out for some time . It turned out that she was looking for a new one . It looked a lot thicker at a glance.

Nanny Chen knew that the princess had been hiding in the tent recently to read the book left by her family. Her princess wanted to read it, but she couldn't bear to flip through it, which made Nanny feel distressed. Nanny Chen used to have this and that requirement for the princess, but now she only had one requirement, that the princess should like it and that she could play with the princess.

The master's home was long gone, and she had to help the princess build a new home for herself.

Seeing the princess's uninterested expression, the nanny couldn't help but say, " Princess, His Majesty's health has been worse this year than last year— "

" Mammy, don't say anything! " Xie Jiayi immediately interrupted Mammy Chen and covered her ears.

She suddenly thought of the spring of the thirteenth year of Yongtai in her previous life, when her uncle the emperor held her hand and asked her in his last moments: " Zhao Zhao, are you happy? ..... Is there anything else ... you want from your uncle? "

She nodded and shook her head with tears on her face.

She watched with her own eyes as her uncle's breath weakened. She put her head close to his moving lips and heard him say: " ... This time, I ... will go too ... Are you ... willing to ..."

that " you " ? Are you willing to do what? Uncle didn't say anything else. He said, " Go ... get ... a branch of crabapple ... " Uncle looked at her as if he was looking at another person. In his dry eyes was a smile that she had never seen before.

Xie Jiayi stood up to get the crabapple flowers. Halfway through her run, she turned back to look. Her uncle was still looking at her with a burning gaze. She thought, it's not too late, it's not too late.

So she immediately turned around and ran out.

This was her uncle's last words in that world, and also his last look to her. When she came in holding Haitang, she heard the sad voice of Eunuch Xi: " Your Majesty – has passed away! "

After a round of earth-shaking cries, Concubine De stood up among the crowd. Concubine De, who had always been gentle and kind to her, looked at her with an indescribable strangeness, but she was only concerned with being sad and didn't even think much about it. Later, thinking about when the Queen Mother changed her attitude towards her, Xie Jiayi thought of the look in Concubine De's eyes on the day His Majesty passed away.

She gradually realized that Concubine De had changed her attitude since the day His Majesty left.

Her world was already brewing earth-shaking changes.

This time, this time she will let her uncle the emperor worry less. His uncle the emperor will definitely be able to live through the spring of the thirteenth year of Yongtai and see the crabapple blossoms bloom in the fourteenth year of Yongtai.

She covered her ears, refusing to listen to the nanny's implication. This time, she kept trying, she would definitely be able to do it.

Nanny Chen reached out and moved Xie Jiayi's hand away from her ear, " Princess, please listen and consider it ! " Princesses in the previous dynasty were forced by the empress dowager, not to mention the princess. Her master was not in a hurry, but she was. She had to let the young master settle down as a princess and build a family while His Majesty could still make decisions for her.

" What if, Your Majesty ... Princess, you have to have your own family. " Nanny Chen did not allow Xie Jiayi to escape. She looked into her eyes and spoke earnestly.

" I have Nanny, Caiyue Caixing, Ruyi Bubu ... " Xie Jiayi replied blankly, her mind was dull. When her family was about to leave, she couldn't keep them. Couldn't there be someone who would always accompany her and not leave? If she could expect a little more, she could let her die first.

She didn't want to be the one left behind.

Never wanted to.

Xie Jiayi held the thick book and lowered her head to read it. A teardrop fell on the book Princess ,The people in the book all wanted to marry her .staining it dark blue Kunyi , but which one really wanted to marry her as a person ...

For their future, for their parents and relatives, and even for their loved ones who they didn't know where they were, they all extended olive branches to the Princess's Mansion ... But they didn't even know what the real Xie Jiayi was like. After drinking, they might even tell their close friends or their beloved maids that Princess Kunyi didn't allow people to have concubines, and she was really jealous. She was spoiled by His Majesty and dared to have any ideas and make any requests ...

But when they are sober, they are still polite and can always express to His Majesty how much they " love the princess "...

Then, she didn't know when she would have to face the change of face, and face the truth that she didn't know when it would appear. Even the prince who had grown up with her and promised her to be together for the rest of her life would suddenly give her a truth that almost made her collapse. Even then, he still said, " Zhao Zhao, you must believe me " " Zhao Zhao, you should know how I feel about you "...

But she doesn't want someone's heart. What does she want someone's sincerity for? Roast it and eat it? She only wants someone who keeps his promises, someone who will never betray her or leave her no matter what. A pair of people for a lifetime, just a pair of people. No mistakes, no more.

What belongs to her, no one is allowed to touch it. What you promised her, you can't leave. She always made it clear what she wanted and what she didn't want, but others always had so many secrets and truths.

They have a girl who saved their lives and is hiding somewhere, a childhood sweetheart who may be hiding right next to them ... There are too many reasons that they have to do.

Everyone's reason is filled with blood and tears, but it is so cold.

Xie Jiayi's eyes were full of tears. In order to avoid being seen by the nanny, she lowered her head and flipped through the book page by page. In fact, she could not see anything clearly. Suddenly, she closed the book with a " snap " , took out a handkerchief to wipe away her tears, then stood up and walked out.

" Mammy, please wait. " Xie Jiayi left this sentence, put on the cloak that Ruyi brought, and went out.

Ruyi hurried to prepare the carriage, and when Xie Jiayi walked out of the Princess's Mansion, the carriage was already waiting.

She got into the car without saying a word, sat for a while, and uttered three words through the curtain: " Fu'anfang. " Ruyi, who was standing next to the coachman outside the curtain, understood at once.

It had been snowing for quite some time now, and the entire capital city seemed to be shrouded in white.

There are only two days left until the Chinese New Year. There are fewer people on the streets and all the businessmen have gone home to stay with their wives and children, preparing for the New Year.

The princess's gorgeous carriage drove through the center of the empty street and headed towards Fu'anfang.

Xie Jiayi clenched her hands and slowly exhaled.

She said to herself over and over again: I am not a virtuous person. I spent a lot of money on this county horse, why should I give it to someone else? She even thought of several options for where to live after the wedding, and she had thought about how to tell Lord Lu, why should she give it up! She was originally planning to build a memorial tablet for this cousin in the ancestral hall, why should she give it up!

" I'm not a good person , " " I'm not a very good person to begin with, " " You're not a good person to me . "... Xie Jiayi murmured unconsciously.

The carriage was running smoothly , but Xie Jiayi felt a little uncomfortable and dizzy.

Her face grew paler and her hands clenched tighter.

Later, she couldn't help but put her thumb joint to her mouth and bit it a little bit. She felt the car slow down and stop! Xie Jiayi bit her thumb joint and looked at the curtain of thick red felt embroidered with golden crabapple flowers hanging down quietly.

She heard Ruyi's voice: " Princess, we're here. "

Xie Jiayi didn't even know how she got off the carriage. When she came to her senses, she was already standing next to the corner gate at the back of the Lu Mansion. The big stone was still placed under the wall next to it. She had asked her subordinates to find it when she climbed over the wall last time.

There was a thick layer of snow on the rocks.

" Princess, should we go through the door or the wall? " Ruyi asked.

Xie Jiayi looked at the corner gate. She was a princess. Even if the Lu family opened the main gate to welcome her, she might not enter. Why would they let her go through such a small corner gate in the corner of the Lu Mansion? There was no door at all. She had to climb the wall to be worthy of her status as a princess of the northern land.

" Then I will help the princess clean up first. " He also laid a felt mat to prevent the princess from feeling cold.

" ..... Slow down ..... slow down, wait. " Xie Jiayi, who was standing at the wall, was stage fright. Her heated brain slowly calmed down in this snowy place.

The snow was still falling, and Ruyi and his servants were standing silently behind the princess waiting.

He held a large oil umbrella for the princess, and saw the princess's expression constantly changing. He couldn't help but think that if he had known that the princess still valued Mr. Lu, he should have gone to save the woman at that time. If he had been slower, or even not much slower, the woman would probably not have survived ... But now everything is a foregone conclusion, and without the princess's order, nothing can be done.

Fuanfang is full of wealthy families, and every household is bustling with activity. No one would have thought that behind this high wall, in the snow and ice, there was a group of people sitting silently.

But that doesn't mean no one knows.

At this moment, inside the high wall, the moment the carriage stopped, Lu Chenan looked at the mute slave.

Meeting the gaze of the mute slave, the mute slave nodded.

Lu Chenan quietly clenched and unclenched his hands where no one could see.

But after waiting for a long time, there was no movement. Lu Chenan almost doubted his ears, wondering if they were not working well because he had not practiced for a long time. Could it be that she had left ...

He no longer cared to hide himself, and hurriedly stood up and walked to the wall, then stopped at the foot of the wall.

The people are still here.

## Chapter 43

People are still here.

She hasn't left yet.

Lu Chenan could feel his own nervousness. He looked at the high wall in silence.

Outside the high wall was another person who had also been silent for a long time. A piece of flying snow fell under the umbrella and hit Xie Jiayi's face. She woke up with a start.

Xie Jiayi was not a virtuous person, but she did not want to become the kind of person she hated the most. If she did so, what was the difference between her and Zhang Jinyu, who made her feel sick when she saw her in her previous life?

Hu Jiao was a good person, but she was so unlucky to meet a princess like her. When she didn't know anything, Lord Lu, who was supposed to love her all his life, was snatched away from her.

Xie Jiayi thought, Lord Lu is very good, there is no one better than him, but if it is not mine, it is not mine. I want such a good person, and others want it too. If I were to be reborn, I would just rob someone else of their marriage. Lord Lu might have already found someone else, and even if they haven't had time to live and die together, I know their marriage, but I still want to interfere. What's the point? I want a peaceful life without leaving, and Hu Jiao wants it too.

Why can I take her away ... If I can take her away, Zhang Jinyu took mine away in the last life, so why can I hate her with a clear conscience?

She looked up outside the umbrella and saw that the snowflakes had turned into snow particles, falling down in small pieces.

Xie Jiayi looked at it for a long time before saying to Ruyi, "Go back."

Ruyi was stunned, and immediately walked towards the carriage at the entrance of the alley with the princess, holding an umbrella.

Just then, the corner door next to it creaked open.

Xie Jiayi was so frightened that she wanted to turn around and run, but the person that Xie Jiayi wanted to avoid at all costs had already walked out of the corner door. He was wearing a green shirt, and his slender pale hands were clasping the wooden door, looking at the panicked girl in red outside the door.



His eyes were calm, and he said softly: " Hey, why is the princess here? "

Ruyi's hand holding the oil umbrella moved, and she felt that Master Lu didn't look surprised. If you don't look at his princess, you can tell what surprise looks like by looking at Mingxin behind Master Lu.

Mingxin was really quite surprised.

The young man suddenly stood in the snow without a cloak. He hurried into the house to look for an umbrella and a cloak. He was so anxious that sweat broke out on the tip of his nose.

When he came out with his things, he heard the young man say, " Remember, we have to go out and buy some paper. "

He understood every word, but he didn't understand why he suddenly had to go out to buy a roll of paper. There was plenty of paper at home.

When the corner door opened and he saw the princess outside, he was even more surprised.

Why was the princess outside their home's corner gate in the freezing snow?

Why would his son go out to buy paper in the snow?

How could it be such a coincidence in the freezing snow? His son suddenly wanted to go out like he was having a hysteria, and he ended up meeting the princess whom he hadn't seen for a long time?

Mingxin's small heart was filled with great confusion. This world, which used to be very simple in his eyes, now made him very confused.

Xie Jiayi did not answer Lu Chenan's question, because she didn't know why she was here, so she had to ask back: " Mr. Lu, why are you going out at this time? "

Lu Chenan didn't say anything. Mingxin stared at him blankly. Then he realized that the young master's eyes were asking him to speak, so he immediately replied, " The young master was just about to take me out to buy some paper. "

Xie Jiayi hummed and nodded seriously. Then she realized that she had not yet explained why she was here, so she hurriedly looked at Ruyi beside her.

Ruyi replied: " My princess was chasing a bird and ended up here without realizing it. "

Xie Jiayi thought, yes, it is to chase the sparrow. Ruyi is Ruyi, always reliable. She quickly nodded in agreement with Ruyi.

Lu Chenan's eyelashes trembled, and he said in a low voice: " How can there be sparrows in a snowy day like this? " He raised his eyes and looked at Xie Jiayi. Xie Jiayi was glanced at by his dark eyes, and suddenly felt embarrassed as if she had been found out of a lie. She felt her face getting hot uncontrollably, and she was thinking about how to explain the fact that sparrows came out in the snow. Some sparrows must be very hungry, and they have to come out to find food in the snow ... And some sparrows have babies, so they have to go out no matter how cold it is ... And ...

Her mind was in a mess, and she called out again: " Ruyi. "

Then she heard Ruyi behind her calmly reply: " Yes. "

Xie Jiayi: .....

It is still as wishful as one wishes after all.

You see, Ruyi said yes, and Lu Chenan nodded. He was the one who was guilty. When it came to the point of lying, he should be skilled and bold, and stick to the " yes " no matter what the

other party asked . There was a sparrow, and it was chasing the sparrow. Xie Jiayi nodded secretly, that's it.

Lu Chenan couldn't help but curl up the corners of his mouth.

" Is the princess going back? " he asked softly.

Xie Jiayi hummed, and asked politely: " Are you and your servant just going to walk over there like this? " This place is not close to Desheng Street. The key is that Lord Lu is not very strong, and it is snowing.

Mingxin muttered as he held his things: " It's hard to hire a car at this time. "

After saying this, everyone looked at the princess's large and warm carriage.

Xie Jiayi: .....

She thought that a man like Lord Lu, once he had someone in his heart, would definitely not ride in the same car with another woman. Others could refuse, but as a princess who was generous and wanted to win over Lord Lu, she had to be polite.

Unexpectedly, after being polite, Xie Jiayi waited for Lord Lu to reject her and then said, " Then let's say goodbye . " " Then-- " As soon as Xie Jiayi said "Then-- " she realized that Lord Lu did not reject her. Lord Lu said, " It is better to obey than to be respectful. "

She looked at Lord Lu, puzzled, " Then please get in the car. "

Until the curtain of the carriage was lowered, Xie Jiayi didn't know what happened to Lord Lu.

Lord Lu shouldn't have been like that. She asked tentatively, " Miss Hu, are you okay? "

Lu Chenan's eyes flashed. He had a hunch that something might be related to Hu Jiao. He replied, " She has been entrusted to the care of the old lady of the Lu family. There is a difference between inside and outside. I have never seen it. " He is now the champion of the provincial examination. He has suddenly become a golden nugget and a hot commodity for the merchant Lu family. As long as he passes the imperial examination without any accidents, his cousin will be a distinguished guest in the Lu family. No one will dare to treat her wrongly. When he passes the imperial examination and enters the officialdom, it will be easier to find a good family for her, which can also be regarded as an explanation to the deceased.

" You've never seen her?! " Xie Jiayi finally understood why Lu Chenan was not avoiding suspicion now. He had never seen his cousin before and sent her to the backyard of the Lu family.

Xie Jiayi's surprise surprised Lu Chenan. He explained, " When she came, she had to fast and burn incense. Later ... I was sick, and after I recovered, there was a difference between inside and outside. I was also preparing for the exam, so there was no reason why I had to see her. " He added, " I only heard that there was such a cousin before, and she only asked me to lend a hand in the future, and there was no other request. "

He saw that Xie Jiayi seemed a little uneasy again. She unconsciously put the joint of her thumb to her lips and bit it gently, as if she had encountered something very difficult.

" Princess? " he called softly, not understanding why she was nervous.

" Ah? " Xie Jiayi looked up at him, and after a while she slowly said, " You should meet her. She came from so far away to seek refuge with you, you should meet her . " She affirmed herself and nodded, " You should meet her. "

Three times, Lu Chenan's eyelashes trembled slightly. The princess would repeat her words three times when she was nervous.

He didn't even understand why the princess cared about her cousin.

I could only follow her words and say, " I've made a note of it. I'm also afraid of getting sick.

Besides, I'm studying at home anyway, so I thought it would be the same if we could meet next year when the results are announced. "

" Announce the results? " Xie Jiayi nodded, " Okay, let's announce the results. "

At this moment, she was seized by the thing called fate. In her previous life, Lu Chenan and Hu Jiao met on the day when the results of the autumn examination were announced. In this life, so many things have changed, but the two still meet on the day when the results are announced. The only difference is that unlike in her previous life, it is the day when the results of the spring examination are announced.

Their fateful meeting was when Lord Lu passed the imperial examination. Passing the imperial examination and having a wedding night, is that right? So the first meeting of lovers was arranged by fate on the best day.

Xie Jiayi looked at Lu Chenan blankly.

She changed a lot of things, but she couldn't change a certain fate. She was a little scared. If she had had a bad idea just now, what would she face? In March next year, when the results of the Spring Examination are announced, Lord Lu will see the girl of his destiny. He will fall in love with her at first sight, and that love will last a lifetime. But if Lord Lu agrees to her, he will definitely not let her down. He will only deliberately suppress and restrain himself. Is this what she wants?

Can Lord Lu suppress his feelings? Will there still be a day when ...

She didn't want to be an immovable stumbling block in someone else's true love.

How could Xie Jiayi be a supporting role for others? No matter how bad her story was, she had to be the only protagonist.

At this point, all the struggles were clear. Xie Jiayi's confused eyes gradually became clear.

Lu Chenan looked at her beautiful and clear eyes as if they were covered by a layer of fog. As the fog dissipated, he saw her clear eyes again. But he felt flustered, his heart ached, as if something was moving away from him .

But he didn't even know what had happened, or why he was so confused and flustered. Lu Chenan felt like he was walking in a fog, and he couldn't understand her.

Lu Chenan frowned and chose to ask directly: " Princess, do you think there is something wrong with my cousin? "

Xie Jiayi smiled, her usual bright self again, " How could that be? I think she is just like Lord Lu, a very good person. "

Xie Jiayi thought to herself, "I can't get a very good person, so I'll be the one who applauds the very good Lord Lu." In addition to the flood in the south, at least I did one more good thing in this life. I helped a pair of lovers come together.

Her smile was both sweet and bitter.

The carriage stopped at this time, and it turned out that it had arrived at the famous stationery shop on Desheng Street. Lu Chenan just felt that this section of the journey was so short, if he

had known earlier, he would have chosen another excuse to make this section of the journey longer.

But it's here.

Lu Chenan got out of the car and bowed to thank the princess for seeing him off.

I heard the princess say: " Mr. Lu, I hope I can call you Lord Lu soon. "

Once he passes the imperial examination and enters the Hanlin Academy, Mr. Lu will become Lord Lu.

Lu Chenan bowed again, and when he looked up, he saw that the heavy curtains with a bright red background and crabapple embroidery in gold thread had fallen, and the carriage was rumbling away .

He looked at the carriage going farther and farther in the snow , and didn't even have the chance to ask: When can I see the princess next time?

There are some questions that you cannot ask. You have no qualifications, no position, and no opportunity.

Mingxin scratched his head: " Sir, shall we go in? "

But he heard his son hum and say, " Go back. "

## Chapter 44

every year . The time passes quickly and in the blink of an eye it is the twelfth year of Yongtai. Xie Jiayi's southern project was only suspended for half a month during the Chinese New Year . After the Chinese New Year , as soon as the imperial court issued the seal , her project resumed. As for the places that were most severely flooded in the previous life , the Princess's Mansion kept a close eye on them.

She knew that the rain would start in July and last until September , and three full months of abnormal rainfall would turn the South into a real hell.

This time, she wants to stop this giant beast for His Majesty and Dayin.

The people sent out by the Princess Mansion are backed by Princess Kunyi, so they can do business well . The Princess can get all the permits that others cannot get. Cheng Shu is in the north, and Qian Yingying, who has already finished her confinement in the capital and in the south, helps her to manage the business . Ruyi and Caiyue have an overview. Xie Jiayi is still thinking about overseas business routes , but unfortunately , she lacks people. There is always a shortage of truly capable people .

The money from the business of the trade routes and shops in various places was collected and sent to the Princess Mansion in the capital . Under Ruyi's arrangement, it was divided into three parts: one for buying and storing grain , one for continuing to expand the business , and the largest part was currently transported to the river projects in various parts of the south. Once the project started , it was like a huge beast swallowing money with its mouth open.

In March, the results of the spring examination were announced, and Lu Chenan, the first place winner, once again became the top place winner. Not to mention others , even Xie Jiayi, who already knew how powerful Lu Chenan was, was surprised . You have to know that in his

previous life, Lu Chenan's trajectory was second all the way , and finally he was selected as the third place winner. How come he came straight from the first place winner to the third place winner in this life ? This posture must have made him the top place winner.

Sure enough , after the palace examination in April, Lu Chenan personally selected the top scholar, and the third place winner this time was the 18-year-old talented Chen Lichuan, the young master of the Taifu Mansion.

On the day of the parade of the top scholar, Xie Jiayi, sitting in her own teahouse, had a very complicated mood . This was another change she had actually seen, and it seemed to have nothing to do with her rebirth, but the results of the imperial examination in the twelfth year of Yongtai had indeed changed, and the rankings of the top three had all changed. In particular, Chen Lichuan, who had always lamented that he had not won the third place in the imperial examination in his previous life, had actually fulfilled his wish in this life ... Thinking of that peacock-like young man, Xie Jiayi felt even more complicated .

At this time, Ruyi reminded in her ear, " Princess, the Lu family's wives have also booked a private room in our teahouse today. They have just brought everyone in and seated them next to us. " Lord Lu is now a rising star. Regardless of whether he will be a princess in the future, there is no doubt that the princess will win over Lord Lu.

Xie Jiayi flipped through the account book and asked, " That Hu Jiao is here too? "

" Here I am. "

She just paused her hand as she flipped through the account book, nodded, and didn't ask any more questions.

Armored guards led the way, music and ceremony preceded, and the Jinshi passed by on horseback, making the streets bustling. Whenever a young and handsome student was selected in the first class, the people would always be more enthusiastic than usual that year.

" I heard that the threshold of the Lu Mansion has been trampled down by official matchmakers, and the old lady of the Lu Mansion now cares about Mr. Lu's diet and daily life three times a day. " Ruyi looked at the street where a group of people were rushing over even though the top scholar had not arrived yet, and slowly spoke about what the princess might be concerned about.

Xie Jiayi smiled. This was a regular and quantitative way to care for her grandson. If it was less, it wouldn't show the Lu family's care, and if it was more, it would make the Lu family elders seem less dignified. Three times a day was just right.

" Even today when she came here, Miss Hu was also pulled by the old lady and sat next to her. "

Xie Jiayi nodded again. She hadn't even gotten married yet, but she had already become a wife because of her husband. That was very good.

" Princess, the scholars are here. " Ruyi was on a mission assigned by Nanny Chen. Nanny Chen said: " When the team arrives, you must remind the princess to look carefully, one by one. Sometimes, no matter how well a portrait is painted, if it is not lifelike enough, the princess may lose her appetite when looking at the portrait. Maybe it will be better to see a living person ..." Her appetite was whetted.

After the guards of Li Yue who led the way, the first person was Lu Chenan, the new champion of the 12th year of Yongtai in their Great Yin. He was born in a merchant family at the age of 19, but in this complicated place of the capital, he first won the first place in the county exam and then the first place in the imperial examination. Some people felt sorry for him. How could such a great person not win the first place in the county exam? Otherwise, he would have won the first place in the six - yuan exam . It was a pity. When they saw the champion in person, no one cared about the pity. If his grades were not really good, he would have been selected as the third place by His Majesty if he was not careful.

When it was the turn of the third place winner Chen Lichuan, everyone said in unison: " This third place winner is also good-looking! That is ... also good-looking! " The simple affirmation of the enthusiastic people did not make Chen Lichuan happy, and the " also " made him hear something else. At the subsequent Qionglin Banquet, Chen Lichuan's words " Since there is Yu, why is there Liang ?" were heard again , and there was also an explanation " This top scholar's appearance makes me, a third place winner, a little embarrassed "...

Xie Jiayi leaned over the window frame to watch the gorgeous excitement, to see Lord Lu who was about to show off his unparalleled talent. In her previous life, she had never left the palace on this day. It turned out that Lu Chenan looked so good in a red robe on this day.

In a daze, she seemed to see Lu Chenan, who was riding a horse, turning his head back.

Xie Jiayi was startled and immediately retracted her body. She felt that she had almost become a green leaf in someone else's marriage. The other person was attracted to her at first sight, but she, a princess, was just looking at him eagerly. How embarrassing it would be.

At this time, Bu Bu came in and saluted the princess, and asked mysteriously: " Princess, guess who I saw in a secluded private room just now? "

Before the princess could guess, Ruyi pushed Bubu's head with her hand and said angrily, " If you have something to say, please tell the master. It's not okay to be so playful. "

Bu Bu was so surprised that he forgot about his composure. Hearing this, he quickly replied seriously: " My lord, the woman in the corner room wearing a hat that covered her whole body looked familiar to me. Then I went to the next room and heard that it was Ming Pei! "

" She? " It seems that Mingpei has not been in the palace since the last incident. Was she arranged by Concubine De to stay at the Duke of Ying's Mansion? Sure enough, she is not idle when she comes out . " It's not surprising that she comes out. " At this point, Xie Jiayi couldn't help asking again: " Why is our teahouse so soundproof? "

" Soundproof, Princess. It's just that different rooms have different soundproofing effects. " Ruyi replied. All teahouses in the capital city have these tricks. This teahouse was opened under his supervision. In addition to the special room for the princess, there are also a few rooms that are particularly not soundproofed.

Xie Jiayi picked up the teacup with an " I understand " look, and just after taking a sip of tea, she heard Bubu's excited voice, " Princess, another man came in later ! The son of Marquis Taining! " He looked at the princess with his round eyes. He was a man. It's not that the princess disliked Mingpei. They could go and catch the adulterer.

" Puff " , the tea in Xie Jiayi's mouth sprayed out.

She widened her eyes and met Bubu's confident gaze. The latter nodded and hurriedly cleaned the princess' clothes with Ruyi.

After hearing this, Xie Jiayi was so surprised! So Zhang Jinyu and Qin Zhili knew each other at that time, and they were in a relationship that allowed them to meet in the same box privately? You have to know that she is a slave in the palace, and meeting a man privately is a serious crime. She, Xie Jiayi, can see whoever she wants, because she is a princess. For example, the eldest princess can not only see whoever she wants, but also let whoever she wants be her lover. For their identities, the first thing is safety. The worst thing is that it will make people know that it is not good.

She and the eldest princess both have bad reputations anyway, so who cares?

Zhang Jinyu is different. She is such a cautious person, but she actually met a man in secret ... Many things suddenly connected in Xie Jiayi's mind, making her so angry that her face turned red!

In the previous life, there were two main forces to depose the empress. One was Song Ziming, and the other was Qin Zhili! Five years later, Song Ziming was a young cabinet minister, and Qin Zhili was the assistant minister of the Ministry of War, another capable minister! Xie Jiayi had always been against Song Ziming, because she knew that no matter how passionate Song Ziming's words were, his original intention was not right. It was just for his beloved, and he said one thing and thought another. If he had the guts to force himself on her and said that he was just angry for his beloved, and used the national system to deal with her, she would bah.

In her previous life, whenever she passed by Song Ziming, Xie Jiayi would smile at him and nod in a very dignified manner. To outsiders, this was the manner of a queen who was courteous to others. She said to Song Ziming in a gentle voice, " Song Sir is a hypocrite and a coward. "

Then she raised her voice so that others could hear, " I still admire Song Sir's style. Keep up the good work. "

In the eyes of other ministers, this was because she, as the queen, was still tolerant of the backbone of the deposed empress, so much so that many followers wavered in their positions. The most terrible thing about her as the queen was that she had no children and was extremely jealous, threatening the stability of the country. However, she also had merits in the eyes of the ministers, and this " tolerance " was one of them.

But she really gave Qin Zhili enough face. After all, Qin Zhili was indeed a capable minister, and he was also famous for loving his wife. Even if such a person scolded her, she would still tolerate it. It was not until he and the concubine of Baoning Marquis came to a head that she began to dislike this person. But she always thought that at least he was fair in deposing the queen. After all, she had not offended the Taining Marquis's son ...

From the looks of it now, it seems like he has offended someone before. It turns out that this person's grandfather is Zhang Jinyu's man?

Xie Jiayi stood up and walked around the room twice: How could these two people who had nothing to do with each other get together? There was no way that the Taining Marquis's son would have used the relationship of a palace maid, unless they had known each other earlier, long before Mingpei was sent to her.

That is, Marquis Taining went to the prince's manor and met Mingpei who was hiding there at the time ... Xie Jiayi thought about it and felt that it had a bit of the flavor of a storybook. At that time, Mingpei was probably either dressed as a little girl or simply disguised as a man, but she was different from the other respectful little girls, which made the prince Qin Zhili think that you caught my attention ... So he fell in love with you but couldn't say it, and then he spent his whole life as a minister to protect you?

Xie Jiayi accidentally revealed the truth.

The boy who was eavesdropped by Bu Bu came in and replied. Bu Bu said excitedly: " Princess, it turns out that the man has feelings for Ming Pei! " Then he stepped forward and repeated Qin Zhili's original words, saying that he had decided to marry the concubine of the Baoning Marquis's mansion, and then said something like " My heart is as firm as a rock, and it will never change in this life. "

As a fan of all kinds of vernacular literature, Xie Jiayi immediately imagined the scene in the two people's room at that time. It was clearly Qin Zhili who proposed to marry the girl from the marquis's mansion, but as soon as this sentence came out, the two of them must have looked at each other in silence, one blushing, and the other blushing too. However, Qin Zhili must have looked at his dream goddess-like object with fiery eyes. What was in that look? It must have been pain and powerlessness, burning his loyal and passionate heart.

After hearing the reply, Ming Pei should have been shy at first, giving the other party some room for imagination, and then immediately asked the other party to be serious, otherwise she would leave immediately, " There is no need to say such words again . " But she said, " I have no control over my life, and I know you are the same . "

So the two of them remained silent, facing side by side this world controlled by bastards like Xie Jiayi.

Xie Jiayi tasted the flavor, she tasted it carefully, and she tasted something wrong. She continued to taste it, and then Xie Jiayi, who was immersed in the storybook, remembered a very important fact, Zhang Jinyu was going to be a concubine, which was because she, Xie Jiayi, was cruel, otherwise she would have aspired to be a queen since she was a child.

Xie Jiayi was thinking about a question very seriously: Xu Shixing made me a green-headed turtle. In a sense, did Zhang Jinyu, whom she hated so much, avenge her? Although it didn't necessarily make Xu Shixing green, there was some ethereal green after all ...

The taste made her silent, and she shook her head to shake off the messy thoughts. Back to Zhang Jinyu and Qin Zhili, she never expected that the person this thick-browed and big-eyed prince had in his heart was Zhang Jinyu.

After being surprised, Xie Jiayi was very angry. Even the bitch Concubine Zhang actually had a bitch man who kept his virginity for her and dared to charge into battle for her against the queen ... This was really infuriating.

Zhang Jinyu and Su Yan, these people she hated the most had them all. But she, who claimed to be a chivalrous and righteous woman wearing a phoenix crown and a red robe, did n't have them . Her childhood benefactor Qian Yingying didn't have them, and neither did the eldest princess sister she liked!



As a man who only wants to be the wife, even if she is not a princess, she has to be the wife even if she marries a sesame oil seller. Xie Jiayi hates this kind of girl who marries others as decorations. He actually has a face that his heart is toward the moon, and he moves himself with pain and sweetness every day. The key is that if you have the guts, you can tell the truth to the girl and her family. You can use money to get a man who knows the truth and is willing to come in as a cover, and Xie Jiayi will be convinced. At least he is a man with guts.

As for Qin Zhili, even if Baoning Marquisate doesn't love this concubine, if he dares to tell the truth and insult Baoning Marquisate, Baoning Marquisate will have to bring servants to spit and curse at the sign of Taining Marquisate even if they don't want to flatter or be greedy. If Taining Marquis doesn't send twenty gifts to pretend to be his grandson and apologize, Baoning Marquisate will not give up!

He married an unfavored concubine just to please her. Even if he saw that the truth was exposed, no one would support him. This kind of love that stepped on the legal wife and looked at others eagerly really made Xie Jiayi want to feed the dog every time she saw it ... Marriage is for the faint-hearted. This is the right status. There is only one reason for the love without status, that is, it is not worthy of this status. From Song Ziming to Qin Zhili, they were sneaky and moved her to tears ... Whenever she saw such a man, she had to enforce justice for him, so that her martial arts and chivalrous heart would not be in vain.

Xie Jiayi was so excited that she felt like she was about to slay demons and monsters. She felt that the little whip that had been silent for a long time had a place to use again.

She cracked her calfskin whip and looked at it with satisfaction: This princess relies on you to defeat all those dogs in the world who don't treat others as human beings.

Bu Bu asked beside him: " Princess, do you want to catch him? "

Xie Jiayi stroked the smooth and soft sandalwood handle of the whip in his hand and pondered for a while, " Don't grab it. "

Bu Bu responded, thinking that it was a pity to miss such an opportunity. Ever since he knew that Ming Pei had hooked up with the Changchun Palace and the East Palace behind the princess's back, he regarded Ming Pei as a servant who betrayed her master. Ruyi had said that people who betray their masters will die. It was a pity that they had to watch such a thing live forever.

Xie Jiayi was thinking that Zhang Jinyu was connected to too many things. If she was really ruined, many people would fight to the death with her. But what Xie Jiayi needed now was to stabilize the situation. She had to get over the flood in the south this year and the chaos in the north next year. These were the real big things.

There can't be any chaos until the big thing is over.

Zhang Jinyu is not worth her risk.

Her not-so-smart brain couldn't stand being messed up, and her uncle the emperor's body couldn't stand being messed up even more.

Once the situation got out of control, she would miss important things for such a thing. Even if she died, she would be beaten to death by her mother when she saw her parents. Her father was probably in a hurry to save her, so he could only look at her for a second and turn his back

to her under her mother's glare. In addition, her brother who called himself a hero of the north could laugh at her three hundred times a day.

If they were two poles living in the same storybook, the story of Zhang Jinyu could not be about the early death of her beloved Bai Yueguang, leaving her as a princess to be regarded as a thorn in the eyes of her family who secretly doted on her, the prince who truly loved her, the brother who doted on his sister, and the East Palace who was her childhood sweetheart. She killed Zhang Jinyu, and the storybook became a story about these people gritting their teeth and plotting to ruin her, to avenge Bai Yueguang who died early. She didn't like that. She wanted to see the story of——.

She took a long breath. She lacked everything now, both time and people. She had to keep steady. Xie Jiayi stopped at the table and turned the teacup: I won't touch you, I will touch the men behind you.

The story she wanted to see was the story of the person standing opposite her being destroyed bit by bit, and in the end, only the beauty Bai Yueguang hidden in the dark was left. She really wanted to see if Zhang Jinyu at that time was still as steady, dignified and elegant as in her previous life. Did Zhang Jinyu really have those things that she, as the queen, didn't have? Now that Song Ziming has lost the Qian family's wealth and offended the princess, he has already had a hard time. His once smooth career path has come to a standstill. If he continues like this, let alone entering the cabinet, it will be difficult for him to even move up a level. Next it is Qin Zhili's turn.

## Chapter 45

, the newly minted Jinshi also had a small Qionglin Banquet held for them by the Crown Prince and the princes to demonstrate the inheritance of the Dayin Dynasty's emphasis on talent.

The Little Qionglin Banquet was held in the famous Fanhua Garden in Beijing, where famous flowers from all over the country were gathered. At this time, in late spring and early summer, a batch of flowers had just withered, and a new batch had already bloomed. The various peonies carefully cultivated and raised in the flower room were blooming in all colors, and even the daylilies beside the rockery and stone path were in clusters, and the hosta flowers along the wall were blooming like a snow. As soon as you get to the waterside of Fanhua Garden, you can smell the fragrance of lotus flowers. Looking over, you can see a lotus leaf that reaches the sky accompanied by graceful hibiscus. In addition to the common single-headed and double-stalked lotus, there is also the rare four-sided Guanyin, with four flowers blooming on one stem.

Fanhua Garden is a royal garden. No one has the chance to enter without the royal invitation. Every new Jinshi has the opportunity to enter Fanhua Garden as a guest of honor. Naturally, everyone cherishes it and is very excited. On this day, the sons of the nobles in the capital and the legitimate sons of the dukes and marquises will also be invited to come.

The exception this year was that the ladies were also invited, which was specially ordered by His Majesty. The nobles understood the intention and guessed that His Majesty was using

this opportunity to choose a horse for the princess, after all , the youngest and most promising talents of Dayin were in this garden that day.

The day before, Emperor Yongtai hugged a thin blanket and looked lovingly at Xie Jiayi who was grinding for him , and reminded her: " Tomorrow , you must take a good look at it. "

Xie Jiayi shook her wrist, which was a little sore , " When can I not go for a walk ? There will be so many people tomorrow , what can I see? I guess there will be a lot of people in front of the Changzhou crabapple tree that Tete moved from the south. When the time comes, should I look at the people or the crabapple? " She didn't listen carefully to His Majesty's words. She just felt sore in her heart when she saw the weather and His Majesty was still covered with a thin blanket. Those who are both masters of the medical field and newcomers in the medicine world in the Imperial Hospital are so useless. Since she was reborn, she has sent people everywhere to inquire about the whereabouts of the King of Medicine Fang Zhongzi, but there is no way to find him. Who knows where he is hiding in the deep mountains at this time ...

" Look at the person. " Emperor Yongtai replied with a meaningful tone.

There was a little sweat on the tip of Xie Jiayi's nose, but Emperor Yongtai did not sweat at all even under the thin quilt covering his face.

Xie Jiayi was just complaining that the imperial physician had just said that the medicine would make her sweat. Where was the sweat? When she heard the Emperor Yongtai's emphasis, she began to think about what His Majesty had said. She said in her heart, "Oh, it turned out that His Majesty had directly prepared a real-life booklet for selecting county horses for her. She immediately said, " I have to take a good look at it. "

" I think this Lu Chenan is pretty good. "

The name of Lord Lu suddenly came out of Emperor Yongtai's mouth, which scared Xie Jiayi. She looked at His Majesty, thinking that His Majesty knew what she had been thinking at that time, and asked His Majesty not to make an order for her: " If Your Majesty likes him, promote him. "

Of course Lord Lu is good, he's just too good, otherwise she wouldn't feel so sad when she thinks about him now.

Xie Jiayi found it uncomfortably that it was not that the world was unfair, but that only those villains in her eyes had people who loved them wholeheartedly. Hu Jiao was the most decent woman, but she also had someone like that. Thinking about it this way, there was nothing wrong with the world, but with her. She was just not a good person, and she was unlucky. She just didn't have any.

It's a painful realization.

Emperor Yongtai saw that the little princess's mouth was pouting as she thought about it, and he couldn't help but smile: " Go and see, whoever you like will be yours. "

" What if he has someone he loves? " Xie Jiayi couldn't help but ask this question, hoping that her smart and wise uncle the emperor would give her some advice.

" That's yours too. " Emperor Yongtai said without hesitation. The gentle voice of the gentle emperor brought out the cruelty unique to Emperor Yuanhe at this moment: What sweetheart? As long as Zhao Zhao likes someone, he won't have a sweetheart.

Xie Jiayi felt the emperor's uncle's usual doting, and she smiled: " Uncle, don't worry, no matter who he is, I will never let myself be wronged. "

Emperor Yongtai looked at the little princess, whose face and temperament were becoming more and more like Pingyang, and shook his head helplessly. Thinking of the girl in red riding clothes under the bright spring sun , he pulled the reins and laughed: " What a joke, how could I, Pingyang, be wronged? " But in the end, how much wronged she must have suffered. Such a person who was afraid of pain, committed suicide by slashing her throat with a sword. How painful and scared she must have been.

Emperor Yongtai felt that everything from his heart to his hands was cold, and he shouldn't think about it.

He controlled his slightly trembling hands and gently told the princess to go back. He wanted to sleep for a while. His voice was tired: " Xizi, send the princess off well. "

Today was the day of the Xiao Qionglin Banquet at Fan Hua Garden. The garden, which was usually heavily guarded and closed, was visited by an endless stream of carriages and horses since morning. Students in elegant blue robes, noble young men from the capital, and elegant daughters of the nobility all dismounted from their horses or got out of sedan chairs and carriages in front of the garden.

The banquet was held in the garden, and tables had already been set up amidst the lush flowers and trees.

There is a two-story attic at the back. When the windows on all four sides are opened, the cool summer breeze with the fragrance of flowers will pass through the hall. Standing there, you can see the flowers, trees, terraces and pavilions in front, and the clear water lake of Fanhua Garden in the back.

Xie Jiayi, Caiyue Ruyi and the other two were leaning on the window lattice, watching the passers-by carefully. Suddenly, a maid caught her eye: Zhang Jinyu! She was wearing the same green shirt and pink skirt, and she was the most conspicuous among the maids. She was also putting tea cups on the table. Others put them there, and the gentlemen only saw the tea cups. But she put them down gently, and the people in front of the table could not help but look up and stare at her.

Why is she everywhere? The maids serving in the garden are fixed. Who let her in?

Xie Jiayi had long stopped reading those old-fashioned stories about talented scholars and beautiful women. She only read the most unusual ones. In those most unusual stories, it was not the poor scholar and the daughter of a noble family, but the poor girl and the noble son. Of course, no one would read such stories, after all, the poor girls were basically illiterate. The ladies still liked to read the stories about the daughter of a noble family, and the scholars preferred the stories about the poor scholar and the daughter of a noble family. But there were still people who could write stories that no one would read, and Xie Jiayi loved to read these unusual and weird stories.

Watching those concubines waiting for selection running around the palace as if they were at home, thinking that they would be on the path that would lead to meeting princes and nobles, Xie Jiayi would always giggle and pat the quilt.

Now she couldn't laugh anymore when she thought about this kind of storybooks: Why did she think that Zhang Jinyu was just like the heroine in the storybooks, she could be everywhere ... If others knocked over the teacup, they might be scolded, but if she knocked over the teacup, she could make eye contact with the young man opposite ...

After thinking about it, Xie Jiayi associated herself with the supporting actress in those storybooks who was of noble status, had a bad temper, and tortured the heroine. It seemed that all of the above were true ... This was simply breathtaking!

At this time, the Crown Prince came in with Gao Sheng. Xie Jiayi, who was already unhappy, asked, " Did you arrange for Ming Pei to come in? How come I don't know which maid can come into the garden if she wants! "

Xu Shixing hadn't seen Xie Jiayi for a while. He had expected that they would not leave on bad terms this time, but he didn't expect her to rush him in the face. He exhaled slowly: " My mother mentioned it, but it's not worth your concern for a place as a maid in the garden. "

" It's just a quota for a maid in the garden? All the maids in the palace want to serve in the garden that day. Why can she come in just because she wants to? Did you give her a favor and make her feel strong? "

" What are you talking about! "

Xie Jiayi said that what happened in his bedroom was just like talking about boiled water, but the other party was very casual. On the contrary, Xu Shixing pinched the corner of his robe, feeling slightly embarrassed, and a slight blush appeared on his ears. His tone became even more dry and stern: " You are a girl in the boudoir, how can you know these words! "

As soon as the prince said this, the four servants behind the princess all lowered their heads to their chests.

" Or what stupid book have you read again! Where's Nanny Chen beside you? What kind of books can a girl like you read? And you guys, you've been looking for these for the princess everywhere. You've led her astray. Which of you can survive! "

Xie Jiayi didn't agree with that. How come men can talk, look, touch and do it, but women can't look or talk? We all have one head, two eyes, one nose and two ears, so who is not a human being? She thought so in her heart, but said: " I'm sixteen years old. If I don't know these, I'm a fool. Your Mingpei doesn't say anything, but she knows more details than me ... "

" You! " he said.

" What's wrong with me? I'm asking you. You're changing the subject because you feel guilty. These are all old tricks I use, but they don't work on me at all. Why could Mingpei come in? What was she doing here? What business does she have in this garden? " Xie Jiayi never knew what it meant to be in the wrong. Her aura was something that no one could suppress. At this moment, she raised her head and asked Xu Shixing one question after another.

Xu Shixing exhaled slowly again, looked at Xie Jiayi who was not giving in at all, suppressed his temper and explained: " She just knew that there were Changzhou crabapples in the garden, and mother liked the fragrance of crabapples, so she wanted to pick some Changzhou crabapples to make some fragrance for mother. "

This statement directly stirred up a hornet's nest for Xie Jiayi! The Changzhou crabapple trees in Fanhua Garden were transplanted by Emperor Yuanhe for her mother, and the cost was not

cheap. For this reason, both her mother and she, who later inherited these two crabapple trees, walked around in Dayin wearing a hat of luxury. Just this one thing, the luxury of mother and daughter can be recorded in the history books.

" That's my Begonia! " Xie Jiayi's eyes turned red and she said this with gritted teeth. What? Concubine De likes the fragrance of crabapples. Bullshit! Later, the Queen Mother wanted to find an excuse to clear out all the crabapple trees in the palace! What? Let Zhang Jinyu in? " She is just a bitch . " She is just your dog cousin, and you are a bunch of dogs and bitches! Xie Jiayi was originally a bad-tempered person. At this time, she wanted to point at them and scold them.

Xu Shixing never expected Xie Jiayi to be so angry. Before he could react, he explained, " Don't worry. I told her that she would only pick up some fallen flowers and not climb your crabapple tree. "

" That's my crabapple ! " Xie Jiayi's eyes were full of tears, her head was buzzing with anger. She controlled her tears not to fall, and said the same words, that's hers, no one can touch it! Especially Concubine Zhang and the Queen Mother can't touch it! The fallen flowers are also hers, no one else can touch them!

" Okay, your Haitang, I'll have someone tell her not to touch her at all. " At this time, Xu Shixing had forgotten that he was still in front of people. Fortunately, there were only a few servants around, so he unconsciously used the soft voice he used when the two were alone together, and coaxed her.

" Now, right now! " Xie Jiayi raised her head, holding back tears, and pointed outside the window with a small whip!

" Okay, right away. " Xu Shixing comforted Gao Sheng, and turned to him and said, " Go and do it now. Don't let her touch even a leaf or a petal. "

Gao Sheng was stunned for a moment, then quickly agreed and went out.

Xu Shixing watched him walk out, then turned around and said, " Is this okay? " At this moment, there were only him and Xie Jiayi in the room, and a few of Xie Jiayi's personal servants, so his voice inevitably softened.

Xie Jiayi nodded, took out a handkerchief and wiped her face roughly. The anger in her voice had already disappeared by half, and she said in a buzzing voice: " I want to kick her out. "

Xu Shixing, who was staring at her, was stunned and said slowly: " I'm afraid this won't work. "

## Chapter 46

" I'm afraid that wo n't work. " Xu Shixing said slowly.

Xie Jiayi put down her handkerchief, looked at Xu Shixing across from her, and suddenly smiled. She had seen Xu Shixing at this moment , as well as the tone of his voice , more than once .

The first time was when she found out about Xu Shixing and Mingpei, who had drunk and slept together . She was completely stunned. For a long time, she couldn't say a word, as if she didn't even have the strength to speak. Xu Shixing asked her , " Zhao Zhao, what do you want ? Just

say it. " The first thing she said after that was , " I want her to die. " Xu Shixing paused and slowly replied to her with five words , " I'm afraid that's not possible. "

The second time was when her Ji'er died . That was her complete breakdown . She collapsed quickly . Her well-nurtured body seemed to have been touched by a switch. Life quickly left her body . She soon became sick and looked like a human. Xu Shixing half-knelt beside her bed , almost begging, and asked her over and over again , " Zhao Zhao , what do you want ?" She said that she wanted the eldest prince to die with her son. Xu Shixing still paused and replied to her with these five words.

The last time was when that dog servant in Yongshou Palace broke her Ruyi. At that time, His Majesty had not been to Zhaoyang Palace for more than half a year, and she had never left Zhaoyang Palace. She was helped by Caiyue and Caixing to find His Majesty. At that time, His Majesty's eyes were bright. After so many quarrels and breakups, so much unbearable ugliness, he should still be willing to see her. Xie Jiayi wanted to beat the servant to death, but Xu Shixing's happy expression froze for a moment. At that time, Xie Jiayi knew that she would hear those five words again. After half a year, she looked at the man again and found that she really had no feelings for him. She heard those five words.

Hearing these five words, Xie Jiayi was not angry, but only felt emotional. How wonderful it is that she is still so young and has the opportunity to find the most honest and trustworthy gentleman in the world. You keep my life together, and I keep my loyalty to you. We move forward side by side and give each other a home.

She just wanted a family, someone to pay tribute to the rows of tablets of the Xie family with her, and to give birth to a child so that the tablets of the Xie family could be passed on forever.

Ruyi Caiyue thought that the princess would be furious again, and the two were ready to go forward to persuade her under the pressure of the prince, saying that the princess was so angry, so she should not get sick because of a girl who betrayed her master. But before they went forward, they saw that their master was not only not crazy, but not even angry.

Xie Jiayi wore a 12-piece emerald Shu brocade long skirt, a creamy white embroidered Shu brocade short jacket, and an emerald shawl. The tail of the emerald long skirt was embroidered with a circle of twined flowers, and the same color round flower embroidery was coiled on one side of her creamy white jacket, which was indescribably fresh and lively, just like this summer with lush trees and blooming flowers.

After hearing what Xu Shixing said, she just smiled slowly. Her sight shifted from Xu Shixing in front of her to the second-floor attic where they were. The windows on all four sides showed that it was a vibrant summer. In the distance , there were birds singing, human voices, and a few cicadas chirping in harmony with the scene.

Her eyes looked at Caiyue, Caixing, Bubu, and finally landed on Ruyi, whose waist and legs were still intact. She looked at him, thinking of Ruyi, whose waist and legs were broken at that time, and whose first words when she saw her were: " Princess, it just looks scary, it's nothing serious. " On his pale face, he smiled as usual when he saw her for the first time.

And her Caiyue and Caixing hadn't appeared for several days. Something must have happened to them, how could she not know, but she had no way to seek justice for them. And Bubu, in the end, only Nanny Chen and Bubu were left by her side. When Bubu heard her cough, he ran in in

a panic. He was not a stable person to begin with. When he saw her vomiting blood, he smiled with a pale face and hid the handkerchief so that she wouldn't see it. He fell down as soon as he turned the corner. Xie Jiayi knew that his legs must have gone weak.

And here I am, sixteen years old, healthy, not broken, standing.

Xie Jiayi turned around and said something completely irrelevant: " Look, I'm so beautiful! " The princess handed the whip to Ruyi beside her, lifted her skirt and ran to the window to look out, then turned back and smiled: " Let's go down quickly! " Then she saluted the prince and went to the direction of the banquet with the four people.

Xu Shixing, who was already prepared to face Xie Jiayi's unreasonable demands and was about to send her servants out to explain the situation to her, was stunned.

When he came to his senses, Xie Jiayi had already gone downstairs with her people like a fluttering butterfly.

Xu Shixing frowned unconsciously. Something had happened since Xie Jiayi woke up from her nap and stopped going to the East Palace. He could feel that something must have happened, but he checked all the people Xie Jiayi had met during those days and found no clues. He even suspected that Xie Jiayi knew Mingpei's life experience, but after checking, he was sure that it was impossible and there was no loophole.

Besides, if Zhao Zhao really knew, she would have reported it to Your Majesty long ago.

Ming Pei will definitely die.

What was going on? Xu Shixing thought about it again, but still got nothing. He came to the window and looked at Xie Jiayi walking in front of him. She was the most conspicuous person in the garden. When she appeared, the crowd talking at the banquet in the distance fell silent, and many people looked at her secretly.

One by one, they pretended to be calm and started talking. Xu Shixing snorted. Who could not know what these so-called scholars and nobles were thinking? They dared to covet the princess without even considering their own status. If the court did not need them, they would have been

---

Xu Shixing slowly closed his eyes, then slowly opened them, his eyes regaining their calmness.

He stared at the emerald figure for a while, then turned around and headed in that direction.

At the banquet, Mingxin whispered excitedly: " Sir, it's the princess! " In such a rich and luxurious place, Mingxin was afraid of embarrassing his own son, and was nervous and tense, especially those who came from wealthy families. The servants they brought with them all had an air of superiority, and they spoke in a very kind manner, which made people feel uncomfortable.

That is to say, it is their young master. Even if the Lu family does not have any high-ranking officials, it doesn't matter. Whenever their young master sits or stands there, he outshines those who slightly raise their chins.

Seeing the princess at this time, Mingxin actually felt like seeing a relative. Only after meeting those royal nobles could he realize how approachable the princess was.

Lu Chenan had already noticed the person coming over. After hearing Mingxin's words, he looked forward like everyone else, as if he had just discovered something.



Looking at it from afar , it is as bright as the sun rising in the morning glow; looking at it from close, it is as dazzling as lotus emerging from green waves.

It turns out that Cao Zijian was not exaggerating at all, but being realistic.

It was as if the group of people who had been frozen in time had resumed their laughter and chatter. Anyone who paid close attention could notice that those who had started talking were somewhat absent-minded, and many of them had their own calculations and thoughts.

Who is Princess Kunyi? She is the real pearl of Dayin.

Whoever can hold this pearl in his hand will surely be rewarded with fame, wealth and splendor.

No matter how much fame and wealth one has, it is not enough. Moreover, being a princess means overwhelming wealth, amazing power, and a meteoric rise to the top.

As for the princess being jealous and not allowing concubines, many people have already thought about it. The princess herself is a beauty, so if she doesn't want to take a concubine, then she won't. His Majesty may not be able to hold on for three to five years. If something really happens, no one will jump out and chop off your head and skin you. Men's things are never wrong. Women, after being jealous and making a fuss, will get used to it. This is all about the future, and in front of us are only beauties, power and wealth.

There are even those who are serious on the surface. When they see a woman's white hands, their minds will already see " half white arms " and " half-covered pink breasts that look like dark snow " . They think that if they can marry a princess, even if they don't take concubines, they can't have singing girls or servants. When they talk about servants, they think of the one who just sent them a food box: white as snow, with thin shoulders and waist, and dignified eyes with a touch of charm. The most tasteful and stylish, if you keep a few such servants, what else can you be dissatisfied with.

The seats for men and women were placed together, but separated by a few screens. The screens were not high, and the nanmu frames were covered with thin silk like cicada wings, so that they could see each other. Especially the seat arranged for the princess was on a higher platform, which was more conducive to seeing each other.

It cannot be said that Dayin's restrictions on women were not strict, but these rules and etiquette were nothing in front of royal ladies like Princess Kunyi. Even if they did not have any rules, there were still many people seeking to marry them.

Xie Jiayi had already seen Lord Lu, but she only glanced at him and turned away. Instead, she kept looking at Qin Zhili. Many people were secretly paying attention to the princess's movements, and soon someone noticed the direction of the princess's gaze.

Some people were shocked. Could it be that the princess liked guys with thick eyebrows and big eyes like Qin Zhili?

More and more people started talking to Qin Zhili, hoping that they could catch the princess's eye. As long as the imperial decree of marriage hadn't come down, everyone had a chance. They could never accept their fate until the end.

On the female side, the seats of the Baoning Marquis's mansion were a little further back on the right side. Xie Jiayi also glanced at the third illegitimate daughter of the Baoning Marquis's mansion. In the previous life, they got married in the winter of this year, so it must have been decided by now.

Xie Jiayi observed Qin Zhili very carefully, so she saw everything that others didn't notice. Whenever Ming Pei passed by, Qin Zhili would hold the teacup and drink water slowly, but follow Zhang Jinyu's back with his peripheral vision. Xie Jiayi could see the calmness and forbearance in Qin Zhili's eyes, which was disgusting.

The third girl over there, probably because she was teased, was too shy to even look in Qin Zhili's direction. But when others weren't paying attention, she would still pretend to look at the flowers and glance over.

But she didn't know that her mature and steady fiancé in the crowd had another person in his eyes and heart.

Xie Jiayi felt like she was watching a live version of a script. The part about the third young lady of the Baoning Marquis's Mansion was cruel and ruthless, but as for the part about Qin Zhili and Zhang Jinyu, the uneducated Xie Jiayi pondered for a long time and felt that she had found the most appropriate description, which was this sentence: disgusting.

She waved her hand and whispered instructions to Ruyi, who left quickly. Not long after, a little palace maid, under the pretext of delivering fruit to the noble lady, handed a note to the third young lady of the Baoning Marquis's Mansion.

When Xie Jiayi saw the third girl who saw the note, she was stunned at first, and then her face turned pale after reading it, but she quickly recovered and socialized with people around her freely again.

Caiyue asked in a low voice while pouring tea for her princess: " Princess, does she not believe it? If she does not believe it, what should we do? "

Xie Jiayi took a sip of tea and replied: " No big deal, believe it or not. Your master is a princess, not a bodhisattva. " She had already told her what she should know, and she didn't care whether she believed it or not. If it wasn't for the fact that she was someone who could be helped up, Xie Jiayi wouldn't have gone to such trouble to send her this note.

The one she wants to take care of is the one with thick eyebrows and big eyes.

Xie Jiayi looked at the Taining Marquis's son sitting in front of the desk with great interest, watching intently and blatantly. Soon, everyone noticed it, and no one could pretend to be indifferent and talk to Qin Zhili anymore:

It is extremely obvious that the princess favors Qin Zhili.

While Lu Chenan was chatting with others calmly, he had already taken in Xie Jiayi's every move. " Brother Lu, Brother Lu? " A Jinshi student beside him called out in confusion, " Brother Lu, what do you think? " He was asking about a kind of ancient movement proposed by a student in the south.

Lu Chenan responded to his question naturally, as if he had never been distracted. Hearing this, the other party's eyes lit up and said, " That's right, that's right. It's true, Brother Lu. Listening to your words is worth ten years of reading. "

The latter replied with a smile , " Thank you very much. " The moment he brought the tea, he noticed that the person on the high platform not far away simply supported his chin with one hand and looked carefully at the " Prince of Taining Marquis " sitting opposite him .

The prince, who was sitting at the top of the table, listened attentively to what the people around him were saying and could not help but grit his teeth.

## Chapter 47

Qin Zhili had someone close to him who was very close to him , and they found that their good friend was somewhat absent-minded today. Everyone in the room could see that the princess paid the most attention to her good friend, but Qin Zhili himself seemed not to have noticed it. Xie Jiayi's attention caused everyone in the garden to start looking at Qin Zhili carefully, either openly or secretly. This was the time!

She nodded to Bu Bu who was already prepared.

Caixing received the message step by step , and turned to the corner in front of the banquet with excitement . Sure enough, he saw Mingpei appear again with a team of maids carrying tea and snacks. He couldn't help but sneer . She was really someone who climbed up to the East Palace. When she came to Fanhua Garden, she was doing the job of a team leader and a senior palace maid . It couldn't be more respectable.

He and Caixing came out from the corner and stood aside, smiling at the leader. As expected, Mingpei was stunned when she saw them and stopped. The maids behind them didn't know what was going on and also stopped.

Cai Xing said to Ming Pei, " Princess , you ignored your duty and sneaked into Fan Hua Garden . You must be plotting something bad . Kneel here first . We will investigate the matter first. "

This sentence made Ming Pei, who was always well-dressed, lose all her face: Kneel here? They were all young talents , the future pillars of the court , and over there were all noble ladies! She came in to secretly observe these people and find someone useful and willing to befriend them for the Duke's Mansion . If she knelt like this , how would she stand in front of these people in the future?

Ming Pei, who was full of vigor and vitality, was now trembling all over , with her lips turning pale . " I am His Royal Highness the Crown Prince— "

Bubu didn't even give her a chance to speak . " This is the princess's order . How dare you disobey me? " As soon as he finished speaking, he raised his foot and gently tapped her leg. Ming Pei fell to her knees. The timid maid behind her shuddered, and the cups and plates collided with each other, making a loud noise.

Everyone in the garden had noticed this place, and the leading maid was seen kneeling there trembling.

At this time, they noticed that the focus of the garden, Qin Zhili, suddenly stood up. Just as he was about to remind Qin Zhili of the princess's attention, this friend was startled by Qin Zhili's sudden rise, " Brother Qin, what are you doing? "

Qin Zhili came back to his senses at this point. He was in such a crowded place . Although he was extremely worried, his mind and eyes were filled with the woman in the pink dress, but his expression quickly returned to normal and he smiled, " I wonder what happened over there? "

At this moment, he seemed to be just like everyone else, just curious about the sudden incident. But he had no idea that his every word, action and expression would be seen by those who were interested. Such an obvious abnormality could not help but make people think carefully.

Some people have already looked at the prince, who looked normal at this time, and then looked meaningfully at the kneeling maid over there. What else can't be seen? I didn't expect that one of the most outstanding figures among the sons of this generation of noble families would be said to be not interested in women. He is a typical child of other people's families, who can study and do jobs. Which second-generation ancestor has not heard his grandfather and father say that he is not not interested in women. This is someone he likes, and it seems that he is very interested in her.

The third lady of the Baoning Marquis's mansion first received the note, and then saw that the princess paid special attention to Qin Zhili. She seemed to be at ease in socializing, still in high spirits and cheerful and natural, but in fact she was confused. At this time, she saw Qin Zhili's reaction. It was not what he said when he proposed marriage, "I felt that the young lady was worthy of being the wife of the prince of the marquis's mansion at first sight", and he also said that he appreciated women who were "dignified and calm". She thought he was talking about herself, but she didn't know that he was talking about someone else.

He also said things like "no concubines" and "no one else".

Although Gu Xinlan was born out of wedlock, she was very competitive since she was young. She was a hundred times more attentive than her other sisters in studying, learning the piano, and managing the household. She grew up with her stepmother, flattering her stepmother and her brother, trying to make herself useful to her. When she first heard that the prince of Taining Marquis's mansion wanted to marry her, she was skeptical. But when she heard a few words from the prince during the marriage, she thought it was because of her outstanding appearance that the prince fell in love with her.

These days she was looking forward to getting married, dealing with all the relationships in the Baoning Marquis's mansion, trying hard to please others, and not daring to neglect for a moment. She thought she was used to it, but when she heard that someone was willing to sincerely propose to her, and it was such a famous talent in the capital, Gu Xinlan thought it was a happy ending after all the hard work, and she was full of thoughts about being the most virtuous wife, the most filial daughter-in-law, taking care of the rear for him, so that he would have no worries.

Looking at Qin Zhili's reaction at this time, one of the two points in the note has been confirmed. Qin Zhili really has a lover, but he cannot ask for marriage.

Is the second point also true? The second point is simply outrageous. It says that Qin Zhili is determined to remain faithful to this woman for the rest of his life and will never consummate the marriage with his wife.

If it is true, if it is true ... she felt creepy when she thought about what Qin Zhili said at that time. What kind of situation would she be put in? The key point is that she was full of gratitude and admiration for Qin Zhili who promised her the position of wife and not to take concubines. She was determined to repay him even if it meant going through mountains of swords and seas of fire.

It was summer, but Gu Xinlan felt cold all over as she sat there. As if sensing something, she looked in the direction of the princess, but her scalp went numb. She saw the princess raise her glass to her, shook it, and then turned her gaze back to the men's table.

It's the princess!

The note is the princess's reminder!

With her status, not to mention being a concubine's daughter, even a legitimate daughter, she was not worthy of being dealt with by Princess Kunyi. Her life and death, honor and disgrace, were just a matter of a word from Dayin Mingzhu. The slave who was skinned and sent to the temple for cultivation were the real legitimate daughters, the most arrogant, but she also had the qualifications to be arrogant.

As a concubine, she was not even worthy of being compared to a noble lady like that, not to mention Princess Kunyi.

Gu Xinlan stared at Qin Zhili blankly. When she knew the truth, she realized that the prince who was steady and proper in her eyes was full of flaws. The more he suppressed himself, the more flaws he showed. He probably didn't even notice that he was the focus of everyone in the garden. He didn't notice that the princess had been looking at him constantly from the beginning, and then stared at him directly. It was so obvious, but he didn't pay any attention to it. Gu Xinlan almost wanted to laugh: How could such a capable and clever prince be so slow today? It was just that his mind was not focused.

Bu Bu had already received the order, so he smiled and said to Ming Pei who was kneeling: "The princess has verified it. Since it is indeed the order of His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, you should just do your job as usual." After that, he left with Cai Xing.

Ming Pei gritted her teeth in hatred. Everything was going well, but it was ruined by Xie Jiayi's senseless move. It was impossible for her to work normally. At this moment, those people seemed to be chatting and laughing, but in fact, they were all laughing at her. In front of so many people, she was forced to kneel down just because two servants told her to!

Ming Pei didn't know at this time that Qin Zhili's feelings for her had already been exposed to many people with clear minds. In his previous life, Qin Zhili was able to risk his life for her because of Gu Xinlan's ability to withstand all the pressure and manage Taining Marquis' Mansion in an orderly manner. But all this was gone when she knelt down and Qin Zhili suddenly stood up.

Qin Zhili caught the attention of the princess, and was the target of suppression by other talented people who wanted to be the princess. For a long time to come, he would have to follow in Song Ziming's footsteps and feel what it meant to be difficult. In particular, there was also implicit suppression from above.

Zhang Jinyu had carefully woven had already broken in one place, and would sooner or later become a hole. While they were calculating others, the people they were calculating were waiting behind them.

Seeing that Xie Jiayi had come up with this thing out of nowhere, Xu Shixing finally had a reason to glare at Xie Jiayi.

She was getting more and more outrageous. There was Lu Chenan before, and now they were going to create a Taining Marquis's son?

Xu Shixing couldn't even control the chill around him. For a moment, the voices in the garden became low, and everyone around the prince was silent. This silence quickly spread to other people. No matter who the princess made the focus, the real center of the garden, the person

they really wanted to cling to, was the crown prince at the top – this was the real center of power in the dynasty, and the one they all had to bow to.

And the princess is the shortcut to Zhongnan.

The prince put down his wine glass and stopped talking. Soon everyone was silent.

They didn't even dare to look up at the Crown Prince who was wearing a dark blue robe with a four-clawed dragon pattern. They controlled their own movements and even put down their cups and bowls very lightly, hoping that the low pressure from above would pass quickly. Just now, many people tried to attract the attention of the Crown Prince by talking loudly, but now they all hoped that the Crown Prince would not notice them.

In the dead silence, Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi, who was resting her chin on her hand, happily watching the show and the people. The latter only realized belatedly that the atmosphere in the garden had suddenly become quiet.

She slowly turned her head and met the prince's dark eyes.

It was the gaze that made her feel a little strange and slightly cold.

Xie Jiayi was stunned. Is this Xu Shixing? For a moment, she even thought she saw someone else. She blinked and looked over again.

Xu Shixing lowered his eyes and picked up the wine glass again.

Xie Jiayi looked carefully and suspected that she had made a mistake. This was indeed Xu Shixing. The Crown Prince who was devoted to the country, full of attention to government affairs, and was proud and self-respecting. He was enterprising and constructive, but definitely not cold and destructive.

Although no one dared to look up at His Highness, as soon as His Royal Highness the Crown Prince picked up the wine glass, everyone immediately followed suit and raised their glasses, and the atmosphere became lively again.

Lu Chenan, who was sitting on the left near the top, shook his glass and remained silent. From then until the end of the banquet, Lu Chenan never glanced in the direction of Xie Jiayi again.

It was not until he returned to the side courtyard of the Lu Mansion where he lived that he put away the gentle smile on his face and stared blankly at the afterglow of the setting sun casting a shadow on the courtyard.

The mute slave was still tidying up her herb garden. One of the herbs was opium, which was in bloom at this time, with gorgeous purple-red flowers.

The hibiscus tree next to the medicine garden had gorgeous pink and white flowers that made people happy in the morning, but now they have withered.

Hibiscus, also known as Shunhua in ancient times, blooms in the morning and withers in the evening, and its flowering period is very short.

With the arrival of June, the rainy season in the south came, but this year, it came so violently and suddenly, and never left once it came.

Xie Jiayi stood in the Princess' Mansion at the end of June, watching the rain falling from the sky. The river project in the south was still being rushed forward in the rain. She had to finish it by July, otherwise it would be too late.

Who knew that at this time someone came down and said:

" My Lady, I have verified that the river channels in the Huai River and Huai River regions have only been repaired superficially. "

Xie Jiayi's eyes suddenly changed. The person who replied felt his legs weaken.

## Chapter 48

" The river channels in the Huai River area have only been repaired superficially. " The people on the fast horses lowered their heads after saying this , not daring to look at the princess's reaction. It was not that they were not serious about the inspection, but that there were not enough people. Huai River was not in the key area given by the princess , and everyone in the palace was united in covering it up , so they were kept in the dark.

" What does it mean to repair the surface? " Xie Jiayi shifted his gaze from the days of rain to the servant kneeling in front of him.

Bubu and Caixing behind her still had smiles on their faces , they hadn't figured out what was going on. But Caiyue's face had changed, and she signaled Bubu to go to the account office and call Ruyi , who was still busy reconciling accounts and transferring money to the south . Although she didn't understand what the princess was doing, she understood the effort she put into it. Especially in recent days, with the arrival of the rainy season in the south, the princess has found it difficult to fall asleep.

He took a few steps back quietly , then turned around and disappeared around the corner, walking along the back porch to the accounting office in the front yard.

The person who answered the phone thought about what he had found out , swallowed his saliva and replied: " The Lianghuai area is only superficially covered . We don't have enough people . There are various disturbances in several areas near Lianghuai . We can only suppress these disturbances and complete the project according to the time given by the princess. The Lianghuai Wang family is a clan member of the Yingguo Mansion , the largest and most prestigious family in the area . They are the most cooperative in this river project , but ... something went wrong. "

Xie Jiayi's people were sent to the areas that suffered the most disasters in the previous life. The original river channels there were the most rudimentary , and repairing them would cost the most money and manpower , and would cause the most noise. She was like an octopus in the sea, grabbing this and that , scratching money everywhere. When the project was about to be finished , the natural disaster was right in front of her, and she was told that the project in the Huai River area was not going on at all, and was just a superficial cover-up.

Xie Jiayi didn't speak for a long time.

Ruyi came over in the rain holding an oil-paper umbrella, not even bothering to put on rain boots and a raincoat, and the corners of his robe were soaked. His face was paler than usual, and when he entered the backyard and saw the people in the corridor, he immediately raised his eyes to see the princess's face.

Through the rain, he saw that the princess's face was pale.

He walked more quickly and came into the corridor. Thinking that he was wet and cold, he stood half a step away from the princess and then bowed: " Don't worry, princess. The fact that this matter can be kept secret must be a conspiracy between the upper and lower levels. For such a

large river project in the south, we are already seriously overdrawn in those key areas alone. Everyone from top to bottom, including the princess, has been exhausted. It's not our fault that the situation in Lianghuai area occurred. I'm going to say something inappropriate, but omissions are inevitable for such a large project. " Ruyi has followed Xie Jiayi since childhood and knows her best. He had long felt the princess's extraordinary sense of urgency and mission in repairing the river.

He was afraid that something would go wrong and the princess would blame herself, so he first explained the situation in the south and then consoled her: " Princess, you have done your best. The areas you mentioned will be finished in July. We followed our own people throughout the process and there were no mistakes. We guarantee that they will be repaired exactly as you requested. "

Xie Jiayi listened to Ruyi's words, calmed down from the panic, nodded, and asked them to change and wash before talking. She looked at the rain and tried to think about what the situation in the Huaihe River region was like in her previous life, but she couldn't think of it at all. It was a natural disaster that swept half of Dayin. Except for the worst-hit areas, she remembered that the court could not take care of the areas that could barely support the civil unrest.

Lianghuai should be one of such areas.

At this time, Ruyi, who had changed his clothes, came over. He moved closer to the princess and told her the news he had asked in detail. He emphasized again: " The first question is where did the silver go? " The amount of silver that the princess transferred to the Lianghuai area alone was 120,000 taels. " Also, it is not difficult for the Wang family to collude with the government, but how could they let so many scholars and common people in such a large place keep silent about it and help the government and gentry to cover it up? " This is too difficult.

" Could it be a school or a college ... " Xie Jiayi suddenly thought of what she had seen from His Majesty some time ago. A memorial from a place in the south said that many schools had been built to provide free books, paper and ink for students. Poor students were not charged a penny, and other students were only charged one or two taels of silver per month. A new school was also built to provide more children with the opportunity to study and make progress. It was said that the tuition was so low that even the children of the families selling incense oil and candles in the town could go to school. At that time, His Majesty also mentioned that the Wang family was indeed good at doing things. She just hummed casually. The Duke of Ying's Mansion was the best at winning people's hearts. It would be strange if there was no such thing.

She also thought that although she was doing it for fame, she was doing human affairs after all. As long as she was doing human affairs, she could do whatever she wanted to do to gain fame. That day, His Majesty was feeling better and could sit up to read memorials. She relaxed and focused on her own affairs. At that time, she was looking at several places where she would need money. She could not rely on the caravans going west and overseas for the time being. Even if everything went well, it would take half a year or a year to go back and forth. Princess Kunyi, the richest princess in Dayin, was scratching her head and thinking about where she could dig out some money. The southern river was under construction, and the food and treatment on the construction site had to keep up, otherwise there would be chaos. She was



already thinking about whether she had two boxes of jade Ruyi jade statues that she had saved in previous years. Otherwise, she could take them out or pawn or sell them to support herself for the time being.

Many people knew that the princess had started to build a trade route caravan last year. With the support of the dynasty, she could do everything with ease. The wealthy families in the capital were envious. They all thought that the princess was so rich that no wonder she was willing to throw silver into the river to hear the sound. They must have too much silver to spend, and no amount of money could buy the princess's happiness. Who knew that at that time, the princess could not move except for her dowry, and the cash had been emptied. At some points, looking at the account book, she even felt that she was very poor.

As a result, the Duke of England actually used the money she allocated for river repair to help the people. She did all good things, no wonder everyone kept it a secret.

But no matter how good it is, it is not something a human should do.

Xie Jiayi sneered.

Ruyi quickly understood what was going on from the princess' words. The people sent to investigate were on their way again, but it was estimated that this was the case. Only in this way could the Duke of Ying dare to deceive them! The Lianghuai region could unite to deceive them! Ruyi gnashed her teeth in hatred. This was treating the princess as a powerful noble who didn't know the people's worries. The Duke of Ying's Mansion came out to be the spokesperson for the people against the powerful! Even if they were to investigate, the princess would still be against the will of the people. What was even more terrifying was that they were winning over the students from the south. If the princess held the Duke of Ying's Mansion accountable, she would inevitably have to confront those students. A group of students from the south had died a few years ago, and even caused a governance crisis in Dayin. Even His Majesty could not confront those scholars from the south again.

The worst case scenario is that they want to be like Bi Gan, and the princess will be a witch who brings disaster to the country.

What a great plan, it finally hit the Princess' Mansion!

They are so bold that they step on their princess. Aren't they afraid that the princess will not make a fuss? Once a fuss occurs, they will pretend to be famous ministers who plead for the people and fight against the powerful!

" Princess, don't act rashly. " Ruyi reminded that this matter should not be acted rashly. The Duke of Yingguo's Mansion has done good things and won the hearts of the people. I'm afraid they have already prepared how to deal with it if the matter is exposed. The princess is dealing with the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion, which is to deal with the turbulent public sentiment in the south, and to deal with the students all over the Huai River and Huai River.

" I know. " Xie Jiayi bit her thumb and watched the rain outside the corridor which had been falling for half a day and was getting heavier instead of getting lighter.

" Ruyi, you never ask me why I must repair the southern river? " Ruyi knew too well how much money Xie Jiayi had invested in it. It was an amount that would shock anyone who knew it. Even the most loyal person would probably dissuade it again and again.

Ruyi smiled. Seeing that the princess was willing to talk, he felt relieved: " Whatever the princess wants to do is what I want to do. " Not to mention that the princess must have her reasons, even if the princess just wanted to repair it for fun, he would help his master to do it bit by bit.

At this time, everyone else in the corridor had been sent away, leaving Xie Jiayi and Ruyi alone, with the sound of heavy rain in their ears.

She said to Ruyi, " You will see it soon. "

" Princess, what did you see? " Ruyi was confused.

" I saw that the rainy season in the south had not ended in September, and I saw the flood in the south that had not happened in the two hundred years from the previous dynasty to my dynasty. " That flood submerged half of Dayin and directly shook Dayin's rule. The north and the west took advantage of the fire to loot, and the south, where the country had been destroyed, also began to riot. The chaos started from this year. From then on, Dayin was struggling in the midst of wind and rain. Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi sighed. Prince Xu Shixing was indeed unlucky. He took over a broken dynasty and had to get it back on track.

She understood that he had no choice.

She just didn't accept it.

Ruyi was completely stunned after hearing the princess' words. Ruyi, who was always calm in dealing with things, stuttered: " ... Princess ... Princess ..." His mind was a little confused and he didn't know how to react, because Xie Jiayi looked at him with such a firm gaze.

Xie Jiayi whispered: " Ruyi, I dreamed about it, and I knew it would happen. "

The Duke of England, a beast that had been entrenched in one place, had made a wrong move this time, and she would use this opportunity to uproot it. How high could the Duke of England, a mansion without any foundation, rise even if it was a foreign relative?

But——, Xie Jiayi looked at the increasingly heavy rain, her face pale.

The next day, the sky cleared in the capital and everything was back to normal.

Princess Kunyi met Song Ziming with his concubine Su Yan and Zhang Jinyu. They just came out of a bookstore in the capital and were discussing the book hall in Lianghuai.

Xie Jiayi looked at Ruyi behind him with a half-smile: " What a coincidence? Could it be that this was the idea of these two people? "

Ruyi also smiled: " What a coincidence. " The Duke of Ying's Mansion could not be touched at this time, but this tone made him feel uncomfortable, not to mention the princess. At this time, he heard them talking excitedly about Lianghuai Academy and discussing whether it was possible to do so in the capital. They were really talented people with the world in their hearts and women who served the country and the people!

But you shouldn't touch the money of their Princess Mansion!

At this time, Song Ziming and the others had already noticed the princess's situation and their faces changed. But Ming Pei didn't know if she hadn't noticed it yet, and she finished her sentence calmly: " It's a pity that the national treasury can't afford this expense. I'm afraid it's hard to do such a good thing that benefits the country and the people in the capital. " If the Lianghuai region can do it with 100,000 taels, the capital region must at least double it.

Xie Jiayi stepped forward and pointed the whip at Mingpei:

" It seems that this was your and Song Ziming's idea. "

Ming Pei was neither humble nor arrogant, and calmly answered the domineering princess:

" It seems that the princess already knows everything. "

## Chapter 49

" It seems that this was your and Song Ziming's idea. "

" It seems that the princess already knows. "

To others, this was Ming Pei being neither humble nor overbearing in the face of the powerful, but to Ruyi, this was just the other party relying on him. If they dared to touch the money of the Princess's Mansion , they had naturally made all the preparations.

This is a provocation , but it is well prepared.

But she was too confident , and that was a mistake. Ruyi stepped forward and slapped her without saying a word. A servant dared to challenge the master with a proud face . If he didn't hit her, then he, as a servant, would be derelict in his duty.

Song Ziming and Su Yan were both staring at Xie Jiayi's reaction nervously. No one expected that Xie Jiayi would not react at all. The servant next to her slapped Ming Pei as soon as she finished speaking.

What followed was clearly the voice of a eunuch in the palace, thin but sharp: " Who are you to dare to challenge the princess! I have been a servant for several years , and I still haven't learned how to answer my master? If it weren't for our master's kindness , how could you have lived to this day when you dared to answer the master with your chin raised ? You are just a servant who can hold your head high in front of the royal family! "

Ming Pei just replied , only caring about the princess's reaction, but she was stunned as soon as she finished speaking. The key point is that no one has changed the topic to the Hedao Yinzi Book Hall , and the people around only heard that it was an offense , but most people thought it was okay to slap her. But only Ming Pei knew that this slap was not only on her face, she even felt that her back teeth were a little loose , but judging from the reactions of others , she couldn't see anything on her face.

She couldn't believe it , and touched her face blankly , and there was really no swelling at all.

Ruyi retreated back to the position behind the princess , as if nothing had happened.

Qin Zhili, who had received the news early in the morning, saw this scene, his eyes were bloodshot, and he glared at the bullying servant behind Princess Kunyi. As expected, like master, like servant. Ming Pei was devoted to helping the poor scholar. Although she was a slave, her intelligence and character were unmatched by any noble lady in the capital, not to mention slaves. However, she was convicted by these high-ranking princesses just because of a word and was bullied again and again.

Thinking back to the last time Fan Huayuan was also punished by Princess Kunyi, this was no longer the master and servant, it was clear that the princess regarded Mingpei, who was both beautiful and talented, as a thorn in her side. If it weren't for the protection of the East Palace from Changchun Palace, Mingpei would have died long ago next to such a ferocious princess.

Just by watching these two times, Qin Zhili could already imagine what kind of difficult life Mingpei must have had in Haitang Palace, as " all the women were jealous of my beautiful eyebrows, and spread rumors that I was good at sex . "

He could no longer pretend to ignore it, so he stepped out of the crowd and said loudly: " My lord, I have heard of this woman. She kneeled down to plead for the victims of the Yellow River disaster and broke her knees. Later, she made plans for the Lianghuai region. The Xiushen Academy that is envied by scholars today is where Lord Song and this woman made suggestions to Duke Yingguo for the benefit of the students in Lianghuai. How many poor children have been able to go to school, study, and cultivate themselves. " After saying this, he bowed solemnly to Princess Kunyi:

" I think that women like this who are as good as men should be treated with courtesy, even if they are princesses. "

The crowd was just watching the fun at first, but when they heard that the woman who was beaten was actually the East Palace maid who had pleaded for the disaster victims a while ago, they immediately felt respect and sympathy for her. When they heard that she was actually related to the Xiushen Book Hall mentioned by many people, they were even more amazed. The people tend to side with the weak, not to mention such a courageous and knowledgeable woman.

Looking at the weak woman covering her face at this time, we can see that she is neither humble nor arrogant, and has a strong character.

Someone in the crowd shouted, " Even if you are a princess, you should respect such a role model among women! " Then there were many voices echoing.

Song Ziming saw the opportunity and immediately linked the princess's anger to the river: " I know that the princess may have embezzled the princess's money for the Lianghuai Wang family, which is why she is so angry with Miss Mingpei. " At this point he raised his voice: " But princess, Miss Mingpei and I have already read the hydrology and water volume in the south for hundreds of years. The river in the south does not need the repairs that the princess has made, which is just a waste of money and labor. But at the same time, how many poor students don't even have a place to study. They don't have paper, so they can only write on the ground. Without lights, they study hard under the light of the snow and moon, or even with the incense oil and candles in the temple, but without books, they can't do anything, princess! "

Song Ziming also bowed solemnly like Qin Zhili: " I would like to thank Miss Mingpei for her personal intercession on behalf of the disaster victims in the north. I would like to ask the princess to forgive Miss Mingpei's idea of embezzling the silver on behalf of the poor students in the world. Instead of throwing the silver into the river where nothing happened, it would be better to let the poor people in the world have books to read. What do you think? "

One is Qin Zhili, the other is Song Ziming.

One is the son of Taining Marquis's mansion, and the other is also an outstanding champion of the imperial examination. Although he was polite, he was polite and restrained. He forced Xie Jiayi into a corner and asked her to pardon Mingpei for embezzlement in public. This was to use public opinion and the people's words to let her forgive Mingpei and the Duke of Ying's mansion for embezzlement.

Behind them stood the common people of the capital.

Beside them stood Zhang Jinyu and Su Yan, who were standing proudly.

On the princess's side, there were only her and Ruyi.

She looked at these people, they could be more justified, this time, she didn't need to come, soon, the sky would slap these people down. She even hoped that they would shout louder, the public opinion of the Duke's Mansion had not yet risen, it was time to come, so that they could save the money of the Princess' Mansion to create public opinion afterwards.

Qin Zhili saw that Ming Pei's frown had not relaxed, so he knew that the slap must have hurt a lot, otherwise a stubborn girl like her would never show any pain. He was furious:

" My lord, let me speak frankly! My lord thinks that the money embezzled is your own, but she doesn't know that it is the people's money, the people's blood and sweat! Miss Mingpei's plan is not embezzlement, but taking from the people and using it for the people. In my opinion, if my lord hadn't insisted on throwing the money into the river, not only the Huai River, but also the entire south, even the capital, all the poor students would have books to read, and the self-cultivation school would be able to keep out the cold in winter and the heat in summer! My lord didn't repair the river, but threw the school where all the poor students in Dayin studied into the river. Miss Mingpei didn't embezzle the money, but salvaged the self-cultivation school from the Huai River! "

It was spoken passionately, and more importantly, it moved the hearts of the people.

If the princess had not insisted on repairing the river, their children might have been able to go to free schools and study. When people think of this, how could they not be excited?

Someone shouted in a rage: " The princess should apologize to Miss Mingpei. The princess shouldn't have hit Miss Mingpei! "

These were either extremely passionate young people who were easily instigated, or agents of the Duke's Mansion who came prepared.

At this moment, Xie Jiayi felt like she had returned to her previous life. She was surrounded by people who opposed her and pleaded for the imperial concubine, but here she was alone with Ruyi who was protecting her. Unlike her previous life, she was no longer panicking. She saw how everything happened. It had nothing to do with right or wrong. It was not that she had done something wrong, but that they had a way to make her do something wrong. It turned out that in her previous life, she, the queen, was not necessarily so unbearable. It was just that she had taken advantage of the situation, so there were always people who wanted to prove her unbearableness.

Amid the excitement, no one actually wanted to listen to the people in the Princess's Mansion anymore. They could only hear what they wanted to hear. They wanted to hear about free schools and free academies. Why could the people in the Huai River and Huai River regions have them, but they didn't? Because this domineering Princess wouldn't allow it!

Ruyi protected the princess to prevent anyone from bumping into her in excitement.

Ruyi raised his eyes gloomily and looked at the target people in front of him who were getting excited.

At this time Ming Pei raised her hand. At this moment she was not a maid, but a heroine who commanded the support of hundreds of people and was the spokesperson for public opinion.

The crowd immediately quieted down, and she raised her voice, " It is not right for the two gentlemen to praise me so much. I have seen the sufferings of the people just like you all. As a slave, I know how difficult life is for the people. " Just one sentence made the people, who already had a good impression of this adopted maid, even more grateful that she was a poor person among them.

After the applause, she was about to speak again.

But she heard an unusually gentle and clear voice, speaking before her: " The mutton-fat jade bracelet on Miss Mingpei's hand is a good thing, I'm afraid it's worth more than a thousand taels. As for the eloquent Lord Song, the carved jade hairpin on the hair of the concubine next to you must be the work of Gu Ziang, this man will only carve precious jade materials, I'm afraid this hairpin is also a good thing worth a thousand taels. Miss Mingpei, you are a slave with only two taels of salary per month, and Lord Song is a good official with only three hundred taels of salary per year. I wonder if your jade bracelets worth more than a thousand taels and jade hairpins worth a thousand taels are taken from the people? Are they considered the people's blood and sweat? The two ladies are wearing a three-story house owned by the common people, and wearing two shops in a good location in the capital. If I heard it correctly, you are accusing the princess who took out money to repair the river for my Dayin? "

The man himself seemed to find it funny: " Why don't you two women put these valuable things into the school, or even throw them into the river for us ordinary people to hear? "

The person who spoke was Lu Chenan, who was in the crowd with a clear mind. Many people immediately recognized that this was the young top scholar in their Dayin University, who was handsome enough to be the top scholar.

Lu Chenan looked at the few people in the crowd who were speaking righteously with a smile, but did not look at the princess in red standing opposite them.

Everyone was stunned by his words. What a guy, a three-story house on the wrist, a shop in a good location on the head! This really opened the eyes of the people below. They thought he was their spokesperson, but now they realized that they had just sympathized with the girl who was embarrassed by the nobleman. A jade bracelet of hers was a fortune that they could never earn in their lifetime. How could they, the real lower-class people, be pitiful!

Moreover, Lu Chenan not only drew everyone's attention to the bracelets and hairpins of the two women, who wouldn't want to see what was going on? It was even more murderous , and people couldn't help but complain. According to the top scholar, where did they get these bracelets and hairpins? The princess is rich, everyone in Dayin doesn't know that. She is Princess Kunyi, the descendant of the only legitimate princess of Emperor Yuanhe, the descendant of the Xie family who has guarded the north for generations, and is favored by the emperor. How can she be so precious? If the most honorable princess of Dayin is not precious, who else can be worthy of it? But how can this slave and concubine be so much more precious than them who live in the open air and are busy every day!

The onlookers looked at the bracelet, the hairpin and the woman, and their faces changed.

Zhang Jinyu, Song Ziming, Qin Zhili and four others immediately changed color!

With just a few words, Lu Chenan has completely changed the current focus and reversed the entire situation. No matter what the two girls say today while wearing these bracelets and hairpins, the people below will not listen. Lu Chenan knows people's hearts very well! They

thought that the newly promoted champion was a modest gentleman, but they didn't expect that his words were like a poisoned sword, pointing directly at the vital point, killing the throat with blood!

Qin Zhili glared at Song Ziming immediately. Why was a concubine of a fifth-rank official wearing a jade hairpin carved by Gu Ziang himself?

Song Ziming was even more annoyed. Who on earth was Lu Chenan? How could he have such a sharp eye? What normal person could tell the origin of a jade hairpin with just one glance? Could he be a scholar from a merchant family? He must be a noble who had seen the finest things in the world, or a craftsman who carved jade every day!

Zhang Jinyu was even more bloated and stuffy. She was just raising her hand to suppress the people's comments, and she was very proud of herself. She didn't expect that she would be grabbed by this person in an instant. She was wrong. No wonder this person was valued by the princess that day. He was neither a mere decoration nor a parasite from a lowly family who could only study and take the imperial examinations. This person should not be underestimated. Such a reaction, such means, among all the people she has ever met, no one can match him. Xie Jiayi is indeed a noble family, and even if she falls in love with someone else, she can still get the best.

When the toer who was lurking in the crowd saw that the situation was not right, he began to urge people to disperse according to what the prince and Mingpei said.

Meanwhile, Ruyi winked at the guards of Qiao Zhuang in the crowd. Want to leave like this?

These people want face, but the Princess Mansion only wants people's substance. If these four people don't leave something behind today, no one can get home safely! Ruyi really didn't understand what gave them the courage to climb up by stepping on the Princess Mansion. They really didn't know that in this world, biting on iron plates will break teeth, and kicking hard stubble will break legs.

After this meeting, the prince of Taining Marquis's Mansion and the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion officially offended the princess. However, Lu Chen'an, a Hanlin editor who had just entered the court and had no foundation, offended the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion, the Marquis of Taining's Mansion, and Song Ziming, the leader of the literati.

His life will not be easy.

The crowd dispersed, and ever since Lu Chenan appeared, Xie Jiayi stared at him blankly. This scene was too familiar, he had always stood up like this, time and time again.

When the matter was over, he just bowed from a distance and did not give Xie Jiayi a chance to come forward and speak. He turned around and left with Mingxin.

" Ruyi, our people just need to not leave any evidence. " Xie Jiayi instructed, and then he started beating them.

" Don't worry, princess. We can't argue with those scholars who talk about morality and justice, but when it comes to beating people up, our people are all professionals. " Ruyi replied, " Princess, is there anything you want to leave behind? "

Xie Jiayi pondered: " Don't go too far. Remove two teeth from each of the three people who spoke just now. Let them know that it hurts to be toothless. "

Bu Bu Bu Jue, who was in disguise and was going to do something, asked, " Just two teeth? "

Xie Jiayi looked at him: " How many teeth do you want? " Why do they need so many teeth? Two will be enough.

Bu Bu scratched his head: " Not to cut off one of their legs or something. " Just take the teeth? Wouldn't it make our Princess Mansion seem easy to bully?

Xie Jiayi looked at Bu Bu: " ..... We are the Princess's Mansion, not the Second Prince's Mansion, so we still have to abide by the law. "

Ruyi saw that only two teeth could be left, so she said quickly: " Don't worry, Princess. We are just teaching them a lesson. They won't go on like this . " Then she kicked Bubu's calf, telling him to get back to work.

They, the Princess Mansion, would not play tricks on others, but if someone played tricks on them, they couldn't let them go so easily. They had to leave something behind.

## Chapter 50

After returning home , Xie Jiayi asked one more question, " Ruyi, is Lord Lu – angry? "

Ruyi bowed her head and said, " Princess , Lord Lu has just entered the court and must be very busy. "

" Busy? " Xie Jiayi felt that the words sounded familiar , but she also felt that they made sense, so she nodded and said, " Maybe he is busy. " He was busy with court affairs , but he also had to take care of his cousin's affairs. In his previous life, everyone knew that when Lu Chenan's cousin got into trouble, he was busy preparing a dowry for her.

At that time, Cai Xing sighed that even though she was an orphan, she could marry someone like Lord Lu , with both the betrothal gift and the dowry.

, word spread that Song Ziming, Qin Zhili and Ming Pei were put into sacks , and their teeth were broken out. If you ask who did it , even if someone insists that it was revenge from the Princess's Mansion , more people don't believe it . " Nonsense, when has the Princess ever beaten anyone secretly ?" " The Princess skinned people openly . " " Could it be related to their bracelets and hairpins? "..... The maid's bracelets worth a thousand taels and the concubine's hairpins worth a thousand jin left a deep impression on the people , deeply irritating everyone who worked hard to make a living by counting copper coins. They made them suspicious, is it so glorious to be a slave or a concubine these days? Some people even looked at their own daughters who were not bad looking.

The speculations became more and more outrageous , and the only consensus reached was that it could not be the Princess Mansion , and someone must have framed the Princess Mansion. This was not the style of the Princess Mansion , and everyone in the teahouse who thought they had brains was sure of this. If you want to know what the style of the Princess Mansion is , it was that day when someone came up and slapped you in the face because they didn't like you, and last year when Lord Song had an affair, someone slapped you in public, this is the style of the Princess Mansion! It must be a frame-up, but it was a pity that the frame-up was so clumsy that it could not escape the sharp eyes of the people.



Having offended someone, Lu Chenan of the Hanlin Academy was indeed targeted. The runners-up and third place winners all had the opportunity to show their faces in front of His Majesty and the Crown Prince, but Lu Chenan, the champion, was sent to the dusty former dynasty history museum and sat on the bench. Soon his colleagues also realized that the champion had offended someone. After further investigation, they were shocked. Why offend anyone else, but offend the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion. That was the home of the Crown Prince's maternal uncle. To be honest, once the Crown Prince ascended the throne, the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion would be in power.

But Lu Chenan seemed to be completely unaware. He concentrated on correcting the boring scriptures when he was asked to do so. Even when he was sent to the Old History Museum, where all Jinshi candidates knew that once they entered, they would never get out, he remained normal and devoted himself to sorting out these old books that no one read.

A month has passed, and Lu Chenan, the then popular top scholar, seems to have been completely forgotten in the Old History Museum.

During this month, Xie Jiayi has been keeping an eye on the southern river with all her heart, and the news has been coming and going every three to five days. The princess is keeping a close eye on this side, and even if the officials in the south complain, they have to keep a close eye on it and dare not make any mistakes. This princess is the kind of person who dares to kill people as soon as she arrives, and she kills people who have backers in the court. In the end, she killed them, and there was not even a wave in the capital. It's not that the backers are useless, but that no matter what backers are, they are unreliable to the princess.

Fortunately, the money given by the princess was sufficient, and the laborers had good food and treatment, so there was never a shortage of people applying for work. Although the project was urgent and useless, it was at least not difficult to do. The local official who was most closely watched by the princess looked at the project that was about to be completed, and the river channel was indeed beautifully built!

" But the princess is still a child after all. She thinks whatever she wants. This money should be spent on the Yellow River. Using it here will only end up in a bad way. " The prefect and his close aides sighed.

The aide was a lame old man with a goatee. He was a famous figure in the literati circle in his time. He once carried a statue of Confucius to the Imperial Examination Hall and was convicted for this and wasted ten years. After being pardoned, he was already a lame man and could never take the imperial examination or become an official again. He twisted his beard and looked at the rain outside, which never stopped. He said slowly: " Didn't Dongweng think that this rain might not stop? "

The prefect shook his hand and said, " Mr. Chen, you are from the north, so you still don't know the weather in the south. This is how the rainy season is. It seems that it can't stop. Once August ends, it will stop and start as soon as it is said to stop. "

The man called Mr. Chen looked at the rainy day and said nothing more.

At this time, the Princess Mansion in Beijing

Xie Jiayi had just finished reading the newsletter. The river courses in the two prefectures and three other counties that she was most concerned about had been successfully completed. One

of the two huge rocks that had been hanging over her since her rebirth had suddenly become much lighter, not to mention falling to the ground.

Only then did she free up her hands to think carefully about how to deal with the Duke's Mansion that dared to embezzle her money, and she could also free up some manpower to see if the rivers in the Lianghuai area could be saved.

Only then did she realize that her Lord Lu had been sitting in the dust pile of the old history museum of the Hanlin Academy for a month!

When people inquired, they found out that not only the Duke's Mansion, but even the Taining Marquis' Mansion, which was already on the decline, dared to find someone to target Lu Chen'an! This is really, she just turned her eyes, and the people over there bullied her. Do they really think that her Princess Kunyi is dead?

Xie Jiayi only entered the second palace, but the prince of Taining Marquis's mansion was suspended for improper performance of his duties and ordered to stay at home for self-reflection. The Marquis's mansion, which had always wanted to cheer up and move forward, suffered a major setback again. Taining Marquis had no idea what had gone wrong in his family, and things were getting worse and worse these days. The prince of Yinggong's mansion was about to get a good job, but it was given to the young prince of Taifu's mansion – the new third place winner.

If you let my people sit on the bench, I will make sure your people have no benches to sit on. The prince of the Duke of Ying was so angry that he broke several teacups. He finally understood why the Fourth Prince, the Second Prince and others hated Princess Kunyi so much. For them, things that required careful planning were just a matter of words in front of this princess. They tried to figure out the weaknesses of His Majesty and took advantage of His Majesty's suspicion. Every word they said was based on the emperor's mind, but Princess Kunyi could get whatever she wanted!

The Duke of England was experienced after all. Even though he saw his son was so angry, he still drank his tea quietly.

" Father? " Having such a princess would ruin so many things for them, and now they couldn't even touch a newcomer who had just entered the officialdom and had no foundation. Before the princess left the Meridian Gate, the Hanlin Academy invited Lu Chen'an from the Old History Museum back in a friendly manner. Those who had stood aside and watched the fun of this unlucky champion a few days ago turned around and went forward to flatter her. After all, no one knows how powerful the backing of a man who even the Duke's Mansion cannot suppress is.

" What's the hurry? " The Duke of England took a sip of tea. Princess Kunyi, just by listening to the title you can tell how favored this person is. Even the princess can't use " Kun " easily , but she can.

" She has been on the edge of the cliff without knowing it. " The Duke of England said slowly.

" If it weren't for the ancestral rules, I, the prince, would have been deposed if she said that. She's on the edge of a cliff? I'm afraid that if I accidentally offend her one day, she'll stretch out her hand and push me, her son, off the cliff. Father, the princess is really capable of doing this! "

He could see that other people were cautious in doing things, wanting to gain benefits and be praised by others, and in short, to look good. But this princess didn't care what others said. She did whatever she wanted.

It seems like he has the mentality of a child, but when this child is favored and has power, it is very scary.

The Duke of England laughed and said, How long do " you think it can last? " He pointed to the sky .

" Father? " The prince was horrified. Since his father said that, he must have received some news. He might have already read the emperor's pulse case.

" When the time comes, a princess without a family to rely on – the more arrogant she is now, the more ugly she will be. " I thought she was smart this time and chose to give up the position of Crown Princess. After all, how could a single person without a family to rely on sit firmly on the position of Crown Princess and Queen. But I didn't expect that she started a business and had already seized several trade routes in a short period of time. Making a fortune every day is an understatement. I don't know how many people have been eyeing the princess, and now she has the support of His Majesty, so naturally no one dares to move. But once this backer is gone, Princess Kunyi will be like a child holding gold, walking in a busy city.

The Duke of England closed his eyes. The princess was holding a mountain of gold and silver. I heard that His Majesty was thinking of giving the princess a copper mine.

Money can tempt people, and those who haven't thought about it yet just don't know what the princess has in her hands. Your Majesty, he really wants to give all his private treasury to the princess.

The greatest favor is here. The greatest favor is here.

" As for now, doesn't she care about her reputation? We can just step on the princess to become famous. " A princess with a bad reputation, her death is not far away after the death of the emperor. The son is still young, and he is still angry with a dying person at this time. It is a pity to lose the lucrative job, but compared with the resources in the hands of the princess, it is nothing.

The Duke of Ying's Mansion now wants to gain fame and take over the things in the hands of the princess. When the time comes, who knows how many hungry wolves will pounce on them. What they should consider is not the princess who is doomed to die, but the families who are also jealous of the things in the princess' hands.

The Duke of England shook his head. Even if others did not dare to touch the domineering princess, his daughter would never let the princess live a glorious life. A woman's jealousy is terrible. Especially when this jealousy has been burning for twenty years.

His two daughters have ambitions comparable to men, and are even more ruthless than men.

The old Duke of England is indeed a shrewd and far- sighted man . Unfortunately, he doesn't know that this time Princess Kunyi not only relies on His Majesty, but also on heaven. What she wants to stop is the disaster from heaven, and what she wants to achieve is a truly extraordinary achievement.

Soon, the people in the Princess's Mansion knew where the Duke's Mansion's money was spent. They had a wide network of contacts and good public opinion, so they had to invest a lot of money every year to manage these exchanges.

Almost overnight, half of the people in Da Yin knew about the Princess Mansion's nonsense. The Duke's Mansion took the pressure to move money to benefit the local area, and used the money thrown into the water by other regions to build the Xiushen Academy and the Erudition Academy for poor students in the Huaibei and Lianghuai regions. The people in the Huaibei and Lianghuai regions were grateful, and the Wanmin Umbrella was sent to the Wang family's ancestral home in the Huaibei and Lianghuai regions countless times, but they just didn't accept it.

Public opinion spread like wildfire, instantly spreading throughout the capital.

The Princess's Mansion still did not take any action. It was already the end of August and the rain in the south had not stopped yet, but the Duke's Mansion could not wait any longer. Xie Jiayi looked at the sky. The public opinion that the Duke's Mansion had created at this time would be a trap for them in the future. They were digging the pit deeper and deeper.

At the end of August, the rainy season in the south was almost over. The river project of Princess Kunyi had been completed. There were also a few places where Xie Jiayi had allocated money but had no spare energy to strictly supervise. However, the officials and gentry in those places were not the relatives of the dukes and marquises in the capital, nor were they nephews like the prince. Although they were greedy for the white silver, they were even more afraid of the reputation of the skinning princess. This lady could make the gentle emperor skin people for her!

Even if the money was allocated by the court, there were still layers of exploitation below, but not many people dared to take the money from Princess Kunyi. In this way, even in a few places without strict supervision, one of which was adjacent to the Lianghuai area, the construction was successfully completed. The last project quality inspection was completed at the end of August and returned to Beijing to report.

After hearing the news, Xie Jiayi let out a long sigh. The pressure on her heart finally eased, and she smelled the fragrance of osmanthus in the early autumn air.

Only then did I notice that not only the begonias were blooming in the yard, but also the osmanthus flowers.

Ruyi was relieved to see that the princess was satisfied. In order to meet the deadline recently, he had been taking a nap on the table with the account book in his arms for many nights.

Although Uncle Zhong had always disagreed, he was sincerely happy to see that the princess had actually accomplished such a great thing. Not to mention Nanny Chen, Caiyue and others around the princess. The princess's mansion was filled with joy, just because their master had a smile on his face.

Xie Jiayi suppressed her smile and looked at the begonia flower in full bloom outside the window.

Ruyi knew what decision the princess was about to make, so he didn't say anything and just waited quietly. Bubu was still whispering to Caixing: " Those bastards from the Duke's Mansion have been jumping around for so long, it's time for us in the Princess' Mansion to deal with them! " Caixing nodded frequently, hoping that the princess would resolve this matter and vent

her anger. Did she really think that they were easy to bully, or did she really think that they were good-tempered?

At this time, Xie Jiayi looked at Ruyi, and Ruyi knew that the princess had made a decision.

" How much more money can be squeezed out of the account? "

" The princess wants to –"

Xie Jiayi paused, bit her lip, and then slowly said, " Send money to the Lianghuai area, and repair as much as you can. "

" Princess! "

Bu Bu and Cai Xing both exclaimed in surprise.

Why should we repair it? Isn't this just admitting defeat to those bastards?

## Chapter 51

At the end of August , the princess's people withdrew from various places and rushed to Lianghuai with silver. However, they did not expect that when they arrived at the place, they were boycotted by scholars and common people in Lianghuai.

The heavy rain was still falling , and the convoy of the princess's mansion was blocked by the vast number of people from Lianghuai and Huaihe at the gate of the mansion. The leader was none other than Shouben, the son of Uncle Zhong from Princess Mansion . He put on his oil coat and got out of the car . He pushed aside the crowd and moved forward. It got on the outside of his oil coat, slid down the oil coat , and landed at his feet.

Soon it turned into a mess in the heavy rain. This is the attitude of the people in the Lianghuai area towards the princess's mansion.

The people standing in the front were all scholars wearing straw raincoats , followed by the angry people. They had all heard that because the Wang family built a free school for them , the skinning princess in the capital made things difficult for the Duke's Mansion , saying that even the Duke's Mansion's prince was implicated by the people in the Huai River and Huai River area and lost his job. And the Donggong maid from the Duke's Mansion who came up with this idea was punished by kneeling and slapped . It was said that she was whipped by the princess' whip so hard that there was no good spot on her body.

The crowd blocked the carriage of the Princess's Mansion , and the officials behind were just trying to smooth things over . They were busy persuading this side and that side, but in fact they were also making fun of the Princess's Mansion.

At this time, who in the southern region didn't envy them in Lianghuai ? They all said that they could study here , and this good reputation had spread throughout half of Dayin. The mansion closest to them , unlike them, had no support from the Duke's Mansion , so they had to bite the bullet and watch the silver turned into a useless river. The people below were clamoring for schools and books, and clamoring for the government to learn from Lianghuai. Now the government there was suppressing the people and was in a state of panic.

Unlike them, they are united. Although the prefect is afraid of this difficult princess, she has connections above her and the support of the people. No matter how powerful this princess is, she can't do anything about the people's united petition.

Shou Ben only glanced at the rotten vegetable leaves on the ground and sneered: " Our princess mansion is here to repair the river channel to prevent the heavy rain this year from causing the bank to burst—— "

Before he finished speaking, there were boos below. The whole mess was filled with ridicule and anything. The leading scholar presented a package of things wrapped in oil paper and said loudly: " This is a gift from us people in Huaihe and Huaihe to the princess. It is the historical precipitation situation and original situation in the south of Dayin." There is a river situation! We are grateful for the princess's sympathy for the people, but we also ask the princess to look through these books. So much money should be used to do practical things for the people instead of throwing it on these flashy projects. No matter how beautiful the rivers are, we the people! No need, we can't accept this favor! ”

Other scholars followed and shouted: " Even a servant in the Duke's Mansion is willing to study the hydrology books in the south for the sake of our people. She is willing to seek truth from facts and risk offending the nobles to do practical things for our people. Please do the same, Princess! "

Waves followed and shouted: " Please do the same, Princess! "

" Please reward the maidservant who pleaded for the people! "

" Please come to the Duke's Mansion to comfort the loyal ministers who are dedicated to serving the people! "

The people behind followed suit and shouted out their demands loudly, with such force that it shocked everyone.

It made the princess and her party look extremely thin and insignificant. Shou Ben clenched his molar teeth after hearing this. He said " reward " and " comfort " nicely , just to make their princess bow her head and admit her mistake. It's a shame that they took orders from the princess to rush to repair the Huaihe River. If the princess hadn't given the order first, the dense crowd in front of them would have thought they were who they were. The princess's mansion was so free that they were willing to bring money to be scolded. !

This is really a curse that comes from a thousand miles away ...

The situation was at a stalemate, and public opinion demanded that only if the princess exempted the maidservant and the Duke's mansion from liability, would they be willing to let in the people from the princess' mansion. The people from the Princess's Mansion had no choice but to stay outside the mansion first, and sent people to report back to Beijing urgently, waiting for the Princess's next instructions.

September soon entered, and the weather actually cleared up.

Shou Ben looked at the suddenly clear sky with his hands on his hips and cursed: " This damn weather is always sunny! I really don't want to come to this damn place anymore. Next time the princess sends no one, don't send us! "

The guard next to him held a knife and complained: " People smash dog poop on our door every day even if it rains, and it's even worse on this sunny day! If it weren't for the fear of causing trouble, he would have caught him and beaten him up! "

One person said: " These people just deserve to be beaten! "

The scholars who led the people to ask for help from Tian Yiqing became even more enthusiastic. The princess's river course became a complete joke, a ridiculous decision made by a powerful man who slapped his head.

However, the reply from the Princess's Mansion had not yet arrived, but the south, which had been sunny for two days, immediately began to rain heavily again. The rain was even more violent and heavy, with a reckless energy, as if the sea water in the south had reached the sky and poured down to the south. The most terrifying thing was that it had been raining for seven days in a row, and there was no sign of stopping.

We have entered the dry season. In previous years, this time of year is the time to dry books and quilts. September 15th should be the lively drying festival in many areas in the south, but the entire south seems to be shrouded in a new round of rainy season, which they have never seen before!

The shouting scholars and the people who were being led by the rhythm were now huddled in their houses in fear, looking at the endless rain and becoming more and more panicked. not far from Lianghuai , Mr. Chen was fanning himself with a feather fan, looking at the black rain that was not melting away. The prefect had gone from being calm and composed to panic. He also looked in the direction Mr. Chen was looking at, and kept muttering: " What's going on? This has never happened before ..." Finally, he looked at the black cloud pressing towards the south again in horror, and said in a trembling voice: " Mr. Chen, this rain-- "

" This rain will not stop. " Mr. Chen said slowly, " In five days, the water level of the reservoir will overflow the original dam. " After saying this, he locked his dark eyes with the prefect: " Do you know what this means, sir? "

The prefect was already filled with fear: " ... the dam will ... break. "

" Sir, this was the lowest part of the river bank. Let's break the bank first. Then it will be the nearby Huifu and Taifu, and then – Lianghuai. "

" We ... we have the dam that the princess raised ... reinforced ..." The prefect was speechless. He had never thought that this day would come. " The princess ... "

" The capital said that the princess dreamt of a flood in the south, and the dams burst, and the water spread over a thousand miles! This is God's blessing to Dayin, and the princess was given a dream. This is God's blessing to Dayin! " Mr. Chen's eyes were burning with fire. " Sir, I have a way for you to be promoted right now. You submit my memorial and report that the princess is the lucky star of Dayin! " Mr. Chen almost fell into madness: " Sir, the princess is the lucky star of Dayin. This sudden natural disaster destroyed the south, which means half of Dayin was destroyed. After the flood, there will be plague. After the natural disaster, there will be man-made disasters. That is chaos, real chaos! Internal chaos will be followed by external disturbances. The northern Simon and the small southern countries will inevitably invade. This is the princess sent by heaven to save Dayin's fate! "

Mr. Chen had already felt that the climate in the south was abnormal this year. He had told many people in the mansion, but no one took it seriously. All kinds of strange phenomena had occurred, but people who could not see or imagine them were like blind people. Only the princess saw it!

The prefect swallowed his saliva and said, " Then Liang Huai—— "

Lord Chen suddenly laughed strangely: " The people in Lianghuai are still stopping the princess from repairing the river. All the officials in Lianghuai are finished this time, and the royal family of Lianghuai is also finished! The people of Lianghuai-- " He didn't say anything else, but the prefect shuddered, fearing that everything was over.

" Sir, please prepare to resettle the disaster victims in the Huai River and Liang Huai regions. "

Disaster victims? Their government office was not adjacent to the Huai River area, so how could the disaster victims come here? The prefect looked at the dark clouds and heavy rain, " Maybe, maybe it won't be this bad, maybe it will stop tomorrow, or in a few days ..."

Before he could finish his words, there was another burst of lightning and thunder, followed by even heavier rain, which seemed to be pouring down with a whistling sound.

" Sir, I am not from the south. The masters around you are all from the south. Ask them if they have ever seen such heavy rain. "

No one has seen it.

At this time, all the people in the Lianghuai area who opposed the Princess Mansion's rush to repair the river seemed to be speechless. The leading scholar licked his lips and said hesitantly: " Maybe ... maybe ..." But he himself couldn't say what maybe meant.

Because they had never seen such reckless and overwhelming rain.

The rainy south has never seen such a deadly rain.

People who came in from outside in the rain were already soaked even though they were wearing straw raincoats, not to mention umbrellas, which had broken down a few days ago. Instantly everyone looked at him. He didn't even wipe the water off his face. He just said, " With this kind of rain, the dam can only hold out for three days at most. "

The person sitting in the back stood up suddenly, and spoke with an uncontrollable tremor in his voice: " Where are the people from the Princess's Mansion? Let's invite them in! " At this time, no one cared about the adopted maid from the Wang Family and the Duke's Mansion. The roaring sound of rain outside the house had scared them out of their wits. Although no one said it, everyone knew one thing in their hearts: this rain would not stop.

" The people from the Princess's Mansion have already withdrawn from Lianghuai. They left notices and posted them everywhere. "

" Withdrawn? " Why did they withdraw?

" What notice? "

" If you want to survive, escape and move out of Lianghuai. "

" Move? How to move? " Their houses and properties are all here, their schools, libraries, and shops are all here ... The house was silent, and suddenly someone started crying, the sobbing mixed with the sound of the endless rain outside, like a sad omen, making people feel uneasy.



It was already mid-September when the people at the Princess Mansion received the reply. The south had already been enveloped by the rainy season that had never been seen before. There seemed to be a big hole in the sky, and the rain poured down endlessly, seemingly forever. It's far from over. Many inns have stopped, even very urgent information has slowed down under such conditions, and private messages from the princess's mansion have also slowed down.

As soon as Shouben read the letter, he said one word: " Let's go! "

At this time, after nearly twenty days of rain, they had long lost their original anger towards the people of Lianghuai. The never-ending rain had proven the correctness and innocence of their princess mansion. But – they can't save Lianghuai. The princess's request in the letter is to leave Lianghuai and inform the people that life is the first priority.

Shouben knew from the princess's letter that the rain would not stop.

At this time, the people of Lianghuai surrounded the government and the Wang family mansion, asking them to give an explanation. Leave? No one was willing to leave until the very end. If they left, they would leave their hometown and their land, farmland, chickens and ducks ... would all be gone.

The Wang family of Lianghuai is their last hope. Haven't so many of them calculated it? Didn't they calculate that the Lianghuai dikes don't need to be repaired in the next 20 years? It will be fine, it will be fine ... The people who are reluctant to give up their property and are anxious are waiting for the Wang family and the government to give them hope. They are all for the people who dare to offend the powerful people above. They will definitely find a way for the people.

It was already the end of September, and the rain showed no sign of stopping.

The people surrounded the government office and Wang's house in despair. Suddenly, someone said, " The Wang family has secretly moved away! " The crowd suddenly became chaotic. The gate of Wang's house was broken open by the terrified people. The crazy and angry people passed through the many doors from the outer courtyard to the inner courtyard. As expected, the masters of the main families were no longer there ...

The Wang family's relocation was the last straw that broke the camel's back.

The Lianghuai region quickly fell into chaos.

The people, crying and wailing, began to take their half-packed belongings, driving horse-drawn carriages, ox-drawn carts, pulling the old and the young, dragging their families out. Some who could not bear to leave their wealth behind were still scrambling to stuff their quilts and cabinets into the already overloaded carts, crying as they stuffed them, their tears mixed with rainwater, because these were all saved up year after year. These quilts and cabinets were all saved up bit by bit by the whole family who were reluctant to eat and drink. They couldn't throw them away, because what else would they have ...

The children had long been infected by the atmosphere of panic, and they kept crying. The slaps of their parents could not stop their own children from crying, but they could not stop other children from crying. An old man saw that his family was stuffed with boxes and half a bag of food, and even the children were driven out to run after the cart. Looking at his daughter-in-law's face cursing and unhappy, he slowly climbed down and said with a forced smile: " You go, I'm old, I'll take care of the house. " The son wanted to persuade him, but the place where the old man sat was soon filled with a large wooden box, and soon the ox cart was full again.

Petty thieves also came out at this time, making the already chaotic area even more chaotic. From time to time, people wailed, " Our basin was stolen by someone who was a bastard , " " Silver, silver is gone , " " My dowry box is gone ."..... This is a family fleeing, and everything that cannot be taken away is gone. Many people are holding on to this and that, and are busy in the tense rain. They also comfort themselves with the propaganda of the Wang family and the government at that time, that their dams in Lianghuai were the best built at that time ... heard a loud " bang " not long after they left Lianghuai .

Everyone stopped and looked back in panic.

They had indescribable expressions on their faces, some were terrified, some were blank. They were carrying the elderly and children, pulling ox carts and donkey carts, and at this moment they all turned their heads to the direction of Lianghuai – their hometown.

I don't know who started it first, but suddenly there was a chorus of cries, seemingly everywhere. In the cries there were " the dam has burst ", " it's flooded ", " everything is flooded ", " there's nothing left ", " dead, all dead " ...

The neighboring areas of Huaibei and Huaibei had already made preparations, but the water still came. They wore straw raincoats and rolled up their trouser legs, standing in the muddy water up to their calves, looking at the Huaibei and Huaibei people whom they envied just a month ago. Everyone stared at them in a daze, crying and wailing ...

A woman murmured: " My daughter and son-in-law have moved to your place with their son ..."

It is said that if you want your children to have a bright future, you should go to Lianghuai, where there are free schools ... As she spoke, she seemed to realize what had happened. Did her daughter and son-in-law escape? ..... She soon joined the crying crowd, crying and asking if anyone had seen her daughter and son-in-law, and her seven-year-old grandson, " who was taller than the average child, wearing a robe, like a little scholar ..." Has anyone who escaped seen ...

Everyone else looked in silence at these people who came with their families, the elderly and children – just now, they had a new identity – disaster victims.

The torrential rain was still falling, unconsciously and mercilessly.

They all became victims of the disaster.

In the prefectures and counties around Lianghuai, the people who had gone to the government to make trouble just a month ago were now scared. They hated their own government for not having the courage, and hated the princess for being domineering and not listening to people, building useless dams, leaving their children without free books to read and free schools to attend ... But now, looking at the tragedy next door, they suddenly knelt down one after another, calling on God.

" It's God's blessing that the princess was sent down! "

Otherwise, they will all be like the people in the Lianghuai region. Not only them, but almost the entire south will be like the Lianghuai region at this time.

Amid the howling, a new cry of fear rang out: " The princess is the lucky star of Dayin! " " The princess descended from heaven, save my people! " " Princess Kunyi, the lucky star of Dayin! " In the sound of thundering rain, those who escaped the disaster were both crying and laughing. Their relief at having escaped was mixed with great fear. They didn't know whether to cry or

laugh. The only thing they knew was to kneel in the rain and cry out for the princess who had saved them from the disaster.

" Princess Kunyi, the lucky star of Dayin! "

The disaster in the south spread to the capital.

## Chapter 52

The disaster in the Lianghuai area spread to the capital.

Along with this, there was also heavy rainfall for three whole months in the south, which had not been seen in a hundred years.

When the capital city first received the news from the south , the overwhelming public opinion instigated by the Duke of Ying was still accusing the princess of making trouble and promoting the fact that the Lianghuai royal family was serving the country and the people and that the loyal female servants of the Eastern Palace were as brave as any men.

The students have gathered to attack Princess Kunyi , especially the students from the south, who are all filled with righteous indignation and gathered at Donghua Gate . They will not leave until the emperor gives them an explanation. They want Dayin to learn from Lianghuai in every way, to tear down the dam of the princess's nonsense , and to have self-cultivation academies and erudition schools everywhere.

" If a servant girl can fight against the rich and powerful for the people, we scholars should speak up for the people even more! I, Liu Shaoxian, will be the first to stand up. As long as the princess doesn't admit her mistake and the ridiculous dam is not demolished , I, Liu Shaoxian, will always dare to denounce the rich and powerful who are ignorant of the sufferings of the world! " Under the sun, the person who was speaking was so excited that his chest heaved and his saliva flew.

Just when the fight was in full swing, urgent news came from the south . The newspaper deliveryman shouted: " Urgent! It has rained heavily in the south for several days in March. The sky is pouring down with heavy floods! The rivers in the Huaihe River area have burst their banks! "

The urgent report whizzed past the students who had gathered to attack the princess.

The indignant students felt as if cold water was poured over their heads. They stopped making a fuss and just stood there in the sun of the capital , with their mouths open and their eyes wide open.

, someone asked in a dry voice : " What did you hear? "

After a long while , a tentative and uncertain voice responded , " ... the dam ... broke through ..."

The person who responded seemed to have no idea what he was saying , but his voice was trembling.

Under the sun, he suddenly shuddered , eyes widened , " There is a real flood in the south, the dikes in the Huaibei area have burst! " His voice was filled with panic that could not be concealed. He was a student in Huaibei, and his family and relatives were all in Huaibei. " Shaoxian, did you hear that? " He looked at Liu Shaoxian, who was also a student in Huaibei,

and was so aggressive just now, but saw that the other person's face turned pale as if he had seen a ghost. He suddenly lost his balance, it turned out that he had heard it right.

"Is it ... Lianghuai?" a student who also came from the south asked, sweating anxiously. He grabbed the clothes of the Lianghuai student and said hurriedly: "Is there Huifu? Have you heard of Huifu?... Three months of heavy rain ... Does three months of heavy rain only fall in Lianghuai?" His home was in Huifu, and he was panicked.

He was completely panicked, and many of the students from the south were also panicked. The disaster must be serious, as three months of heavy rain was unprecedented.

The student from Lianghuai who was being held back shook off the man, howled, and looked at his companions with red eyes: "You built the dam, and you are still talking nonsense here!

Lianghuai didn't build the dam, and Lianghuai suffered a disaster! Did you hear that? It's Lianghuai, it's Lianghuai!" He didn't even know whether his family, clansmen, and his wife who hadn't married yet were dead or alive. It was ridiculous that he was still here proud of Lianghuai for resisting the pressure of building the dam, and running around and shouting for the Wang family of Norin.

Liu Shaoxian seemed to be crazy, he ran back at full speed, his family only had uncle and aunt who were not very filial and grandmother who had a weak leg, his face was covered with tears, but he just ran back. It seemed that his hometown in Lianghuai was just in front of him, and he wondered if his grandmother who raised him since he was a child had escaped ... What world, what pleading for the people, at this moment he just wanted to know, that grandmother who stayed up all night to drive away mosquitoes for him so that he could sleep well and have energy to study the next day, had escaped.

He is a juren, and he will surely pass the next spring examination and become a jinshi. He also wants to be an official, a high-ranking official, and a good official ... He vaguely thought about what he promised his grandmother and ran forward desperately.

In front of Donghua Gate, someone murmured under the sun as if in a dream: "The princess' dream ..." has come true.

"Princess——"

Someone whispered, "Princess Tiansheng, please save the people in the south ..."

The person sent by the palace was none other than Eunuch Xi, who was close to His Majesty. This was the importance that was given to the scholars of Dayin. Everyone knew that although Eunuch Xi was a eunuch, he was also a person who was always by His Majesty's side and a real celebrity.

He came here and looked at these crazy scholars in front of him, and didn't say anything at first. Now he knew, if it wasn't for the urgent news, what were they thinking, what were they trying to force their little princess to do!

His Majesty has been in poor health these days, and the princess is busy taking care of him, but there is an uproar outside, as if their princess has committed a heinous crime ... After all, the little princess only used the money she earned to repair the river in the south, so how could she be considered a crime?

They paid money to build the river channel for Dayin, and in the end they even asked the princess to apologize to the officials and even to the servants ... It's only because His Majesty is

not in good health and the princess is filial that she didn't want to tell His Majesty. If His Majesty heard it, Eunuch Xi would breathe a sigh of relief, for he is afraid that what happened ten years ago would happen again.

No one knows how much your majesty wants to be a modest gentleman, but some people force your majesty to peel off human skin ...

Now is a clear sign from heaven: the princess is a lucky star.

Eunuch Xi looked at the gathered scholars for a while, waved his whisk and raised his eyebrows and said: " Your Majesty has ordered me to persuade you all to go back. I believe all of you students know that the Lianghuai area has suffered a disaster, a big disaster, the whole area is flooded! Disaster relief is now the court's top priority, and we will discuss other matters later-- "

The sentence "we will discuss other matters later" was said by Eunuch Xi meaningfully. At this moment, no one said that the princess was " guilty " , and the prefectures had already submitted memorials saying that the princess was the " lucky star of Dayin " . His Majesty was very pleased to hear that, and he felt better and could even sit up.

Thanks to the princess's blessing, Dayin escaped. Who dares to say that His Majesty indulged the princess in her mischief?

The first person to hand in the petition is blessed.

I'm afraid that soon there will be too many memorials like this to count.

The princess's dream helped Dayin avoid a disaster in the south. His Majesty was muttering that it was probably because the deceased Princess Pingyang was worried about Dayin and sent a dream to the princess.

Who dares to put the blame on the princess now? His Majesty is in better health now. If you hear it again ... humph, someone will be in trouble, very unlucky!

Eunuch Xi announced his intention, glanced at the group of scholars, flicked his whisk, and went back.

The rest of the people had pale faces, and no one knew whether it was because of the sun or because of fear.

" This ... are the Self-cultivation Academy and the Erudition Academy flooded ? "

Someone shouted: " Where are the schools? The whole Huai River and the Yangtze River are flooded, and the people have become disaster victims! "

" Because ... "

" It's because they embezzled the money that the princess had intended to use to repair the river! "

" The Princess's Dream— "

" I'm afraid it's God who blesses Dayin and sends a message to the princess in her dream !

" Finally, a scholar shouted out this sentence.

As more and more news from the south reached the capital, just as Eunuch Xi had expected, more and more memorials were about the princess being the " lucky star sent from heaven " .

Princess Kunyi was born to be " Heaven's blessing for Dayin " , and Princess Kunyi became the greatest auspicious sign for Dayin.

Merchants from the south brought more and more news from the south to the north, to the capital. Everyone held their breath and listened to the heavy rain that was pouring down day

and night. When they heard that the princess's dam had stopped the surging water, everyone breathed a sigh of relief. Everyone who came from the south would talk about these, the displaced victims, the heavy rain that was pouring down day and night. " Someone in our area has already built a shrine for the princess. As long as we are in the south, if anyone says anything bad about the princess again, we will all turn hostile! "

There were even many people from the south who knelt down and kowtowed in the direction of the Princess's Mansion from afar . They had all said bad things about the Princess. Little did they know that the Princess was carrying the destiny of Dayin and was acting under the guidance of heaven to save the country and the people. Everything the Princess did was for their own good. They felt guilty and grateful, so they didn't dare to approach her and only kowtowed from afar .

Along with the " Lucky Star of Dayin " , there was also resentment towards the Lianghuai Wang family, especially those disaster victims who had lost their homes and land. Don't expect them to be rational. The floods had completely cooled down the dizzy brains of the people, and everyone could really think about this question soberly at this time: Since the Lianghuai Wang family wanted to benefit the people, why didn't they take out a penny of silver? You have to know that they are the largest landlords and rich people in Lianghuai. Everyone realized at this time that they had gained fame and profit, and blackened the princess into a piece of charcoal, but in fact all the silver came from the Princess's Mansion, and they didn't take out a penny. This kind of anger of being fooled, and the pain of being torn apart and displaced because of it, once it erupts, it is very terrifying.

This time, the Princess's Mansion finally spent money to add to the public opinion, in fact, to remind people that this idea was proposed by the Eastern Palace's maidservant and the leader of the literati, Lord Song. " What maidservant? This is really a disaster star! No wonder it is said that the Princess can't tolerate this maidservant. The lucky star can't tolerate the disaster star! " The people understood it immediately and quickly found the root cause of all the conflicts. Two stars fell from the sky, one blessing and one disaster. The disaster star was so confusing that it almost deceived everyone and harmed their lucky star Princess.

The imagination of the common people is always the richest. They don't know the name of the adopted maid yet, but now they all start to call her Yinghuo. There is a star called Yinghuo, which will bring disasters once it appears in the world. Who made the Duke's Mansion promote the deeds of this niece in addition to the deeds of the Lianghuai Wang family in the public opinion war? They wanted to make her famous, so that it would be easy to get into the East Palace in the future and move up. Unexpectedly, the title of Yinghuo disaster star was suddenly pinned on this niece who they had high hopes for.

Zhang Jinyu, who was lying in the backyard of the Duke's Mansion, was so angry that she tore the quilt. She wanted to bite her teeth hard, but the sharp pain immediately made her realize that she had lost two teeth, and her mouth looked a little deflated. The Duke's Mansion hired a famous doctor for her, and at a high price, her teeth were replaced, but she couldn't get them back to their original appearance.

Everyone said that it couldn't be the Princess's Mansion, even the people in the Duke's Mansion said so. Everyone said that if the Princess really wanted her dead, she wouldn't be alive at all; the Princess wanted her teeth, even if she wanted to break her arms and legs, it would only take

a word, and there was no need to be so sneaky. In everyone's eyes, she was seen as an ant under the Princess's feet. Zhang Jinyu's eyes burst with strong hatred, she hated this huge difference in status, she was also a rich lady, she hated the feeling of crawling at the feet of others. Obviously, she was ten or a hundred times better than those royal ladies. But those who were not as good as her just had good luck and good fortune. The world is so unfair, the law of the jungle.

But in the end, despite her hatred, Zhang Jinyu began to doubt herself. Was she really wrong? She even suspected that it had something to do with the third illegitimate daughter of the Taining Marquis's mansion, or the legitimate daughter of the Taifu family who was eyeing the prince. Why did they bring the Taining Marquis's son and Song Ziming with them just to frame Xie Jiayi and cover up the truth? She had long seen that these two girls were not ordinary people. They were no less cunning than the princess. Each of them was more cunning than the other. It's just that one pretended to be generous and the other pretended to be – in short, they were definitely pretending. Nowadays, except for idiots like Xie Jiayi, who doesn't put on a good face to live?

She had clearly come out of it, but a heavy rain from the sky made all her efforts go to waste and put her in such a sad and difficult situation. Zhang Jinyu clutched the quilt, her eyes red, she refused to accept it!

In the main courtyard of the Duke's Mansion, the always healthy old Duke suddenly fell ill. With a cool towel on his forehead, Duke Ying slapped the bed and shouted: " Stupid! Stupid! " He usually looked at his brothers and knew why they were so stupid at this time. Since they had made a mistake, they couldn't make it worse. How could they run away? They should pretend to stand with the people. At least there was room for redemption! Now – " It's over! " Duke Ying fell down all of a sudden.

He didn't know that this idea was not unknown in the Wang family, but it was tacitly understood and no one said it out loud. Who would want to be the one who stays and waits to die when they are already rich and powerful? If they die, they will have nothing. All the benefits were taken by other families, especially the branch in Beijing. They supported silently in the rear, but in the end they couldn't even save their lives. Who would be willing to do that? The terrible rain that darkened the sky and the earth further stimulated people's desire to escape.

A steward was still circling outside the Duke's room. He had already paid for the appointment. Although everyone guessed that Song Ziming and the other two were not beaten by the Princess's Mansion, the blame would be put on the Princess's Mansion. The story was already prepared, and it pointed out that the rich and powerful bullied people. It was guaranteed to be a big hit. Now, everyone outside was defending the Princess and scolding them. Should they say it or not?

The manager was sweating with anxiety, fearing that if the book was published, the storyteller would be kicked off the stage. But the money had been spent, and the master had the final say on what to do. He had no idea that the master could not care about these petty fights, and that the master was heartbroken – fearing that the foundation of the Duke's Mansion would be destroyed this time.

When the servants in the Princess's Mansion heard about the beating of the three people, they all held their heads high and shouted, " It's right, let them know that they have teeth that are not good at slandering others! " " Teach them to remember in the future that if they bite on iron plates, their teeth will break! " " This is why shameless people must have no teeth! " The people in the Princess's Mansion were so unabashedly gloating, as if they wanted to let people know that whoever dared to slander their princess would lose teeth and legs and suffer great misfortune, and see who would dare to step on the Princess's Mansion for fame and profit in the future. But the more they said so, the more people felt that it was impossible for them to do it. In Fu'anfang, Hanlin editor Lu Chen'an still lived in the courtyard facing the lane, but this place was no longer remote. Apart from other things, the lanterns hung here during festivals were more numerous and better than those hung elsewhere, and they were personally selected by the Lu family's ancestor, Mrs. Lu, just like the lanterns in the old lady's yard.

There were a few more servants in the yard, but the yard was still as quiet as usual. The servants all knew that the young master liked to be quiet, and was the golden phoenix that flew out from the younger generation of their Lu family. No one dared to be disrespectful to him, and they all bowed their heads and worked seriously. Even those who talked too much did not dare to say more after being glanced at by the mute slave's cold eyes.

Mingxin came in and heard that the young master had asked for a charcoal basin. He was wondering, although the weather was a little cold, it would take some time before the young master could use the charcoal basin. When he came in and took a look, he saw the young master throwing pages of paper into the fire.

Mingxin learned a lot from following Lu Chenan. He recognized at a glance that this was exactly what the young master had been writing day and night in recent days after he came back from duty. He was immediately shocked: " The young master spent so many days to write this, how can he just throw it away! " He saw sheets of paper with beautiful small calligraphy written on them were swept away by the flames as soon as they entered the brazier and turned into ashes. Lu Chenan threw the last piece of paper into the brazier and said calmly, " It's no longer useful. "

" Why can't it be used? " Mingxin felt sorry for his son's hard work these days and nights. How could it be useless? He only knew that the son was writing about the southern river and the princess. He hurriedly told her everything he had learned, and finally said: " Everyone is talking about the princess's river repair. In my opinion, it's time to use it. Whatever you do, just burn it. " Lu Chenan looked at the paper that was completely devoured by the fire, then he looked up and asked someone to move the brazier away. He just raised his eyes and replied: " Really? "

This " really? " encouraged Mingxin, and he began to tell with excitement all the things he had heard about the princess from the streets and from the servants nearby.

Lu Chenan listened quietly the whole time, until Mingxin was so exhausted that he had nothing more to tell his master, then he smiled embarrassedly: " I have talked too much. I know that you don't like to hear these gossips, but I still said so much. "

Lu Chenan blinked his eyes, but didn't say whether he wanted to listen or not. He just pushed a cup of tea over and smiled faintly:

" In this way, the princess becomes even more noble. "



"Of course not!" Mingxin had something to say when he heard this. After drinking the tea given by the young master, he immediately said with great interest: "Not to mention that His Majesty loves the princess. Those common people and scholars who scolded the princess before have now changed the subject and said that the princess is the lucky star of Dayin. They also said that many places in the south have built ancestral temples for the princess." A ancestral temple, that is something that ordinary people can have.

This is what half of Dayin's people are saying to the princess: it's hard to repay the great kindness, so we're building a temple to express our gratitude. Lu Chenan smiled, but still just replied indifferently: "Really?"

The mute slave heard Mingxin seemed to have found a new topic and began to talk about Nanbian's words of gratitude to the princess. She did not hear her own master's voice again. Through the half-open window, she saw her own master leaning against the desk, with his eyes downcast, but he was listening carefully to Mingxin's incoherent trivial words.

The mute slave couldn't help feeling sad and quietly left the window, Mingxin's excited voice still ringing in his ears.

East Palace

Gao Sheng followed the prince out of the dungeon, his face as pale as a dead man, and when the sun shone on him, his feet trembled and he almost fell down. The prince glanced back at him, and he gritted his teeth and calmed himself down, and followed the prince in front.

As soon as he lowered his head, he saw a dark mark on the hem of the prince's dark blue dragon robe, which was splashed with blood. He suddenly thought of what happened just now, and his stomach churned, but he suppressed it and just waited on the prince to change his clothes with a pale face.

He Sheng brought the confessions obtained in the dungeon over the past few days to the freshly cleaned desk of His Royal Highness the Crown Prince, and waited for his master's instructions with his hands hanging down and his head lowered.

Then he heard the cold voice of His Royal Highness the Crown Prince: "My grandparents are really getting more and more successful." This earth-shaking public opinion was not only caused by the Duke of Ying's Mansion, but also by the Fourth and Second Princes, and the Taining Marquis' Mansion was also worried. The Crown Prince turned the ring on his thumb and said after a while: "He Sheng, what do you think I should do?" Behind this public opinion against the princess, it was actually the Duke of Ying's Mansion who planned it. Not only did they take away her money, but they also stepped on her hard. It would be strange if she wasn't angry. It was just that Xie Jiayi was so stubborn that she could only think of one thing at a time. She didn't have time to spare, and if she did, she didn't know what she would do.

He Sheng could not discuss the Duke of Yingguo Mansion and the Princess, but since the prince asked, he had to answer. He could only bite the bullet and answer: "Maybe there is some misunderstanding here, it will be fine once the misunderstanding is resolved." This was not nonsense. If there was no misunderstanding, why did the Princess protect the Duke of Yingguo Mansion and then turn against him. However, He Sheng thought again, it was not just the Duke of Yingguo Mansion, the Princess didn't even want their East Palace master. For the fearless little Princess, what was the Duke of Yingguo Mansion ...

The prince didn't say anything, so He Sheng was a little scared and could only continue dryly: " Fortunately, the princess is born with a lucky star, and the master doesn't have to worry about the princess. The princess is a lucky person, and God blesses Dayin—— "

But she heard the cold voice of the prince above: " Which eye of yours can see me worrying? " What a joke, he has so much to do, and he is worried about that heartless little guy. After going to Lu Chenan, she didn't know which one she would set her sights on. She didn't worry about others, she was having fun ...

He Sheng was speechless: Don't worry, there are so many things to deal with that it's hard to breathe, but Your Highness can still find time to investigate the public opinion in the capital ... This is the most difficult thing to investigate, but Your Highness can actually unravel the mystery and find out the people who are at the source one by one ... But in just half a month, Your Highness has already been to the dungeon three times ...

But he couldn't say these words, He Sheng complained in his heart, their highness also has to save face. Now it is obvious that the princess doesn't want their highness, no one can be too stubborn, let alone the most honorable prince of Dayin.

He Sheng then hurriedly said: " I said the wrong thing ... I meant to say that the princess is indeed very blessed. It must be the ancestors who sent a message to the princess in a dream that helped our Dayin survive this disaster. " It's never wrong to praise the princess for being blessed. If this blessing falls on anyone else in Dayin, it would probably be taboo for the emperor, but it falls on the princess, so just praise her. His Majesty will be happy, and His Highness will be happy too.

Xu Shixing followed He Sheng's words and grasped a point that had always made him uneasy, " Dream? " Yes, her insistence on repairing the southern river was derived from a dream that seemed very absurd earlier.

He suddenly thought of the afternoon when all the changes began. After checking, he found nothing unusual, except that the princess was frightened and had a nightmare.

What else did she dream about?

Xu Shixing thought about how Xie Jiayi's attitude had changed since that day, and he unconsciously clenched the confession in his hand.

At this time, someone from Changchun Palace came in a hurry and asked to see Gaosheng outside. Judging from Gaosheng's attitude, it was obviously a serious matter. Xu Shixing held on to the confession even more tightly and did not speak for a long time. Finally, he slowly loosened his grip, smoothed the crumpled paper in his hand, and was silent for a few breaths before turning to Gaosheng and saying, " Let someone in. "

The person who came was Nanny Liu who served the Empress of Changchun Palace.

As soon as he saw Madam Liu, Xu Shixing's eyes flashed, knowing that it must be something important. Madam Liu knelt down as soon as she came in, and Gao Sheng couldn't stop her. He heard her say in a panic: " Your Highness, go quickly. His Majesty is going to order Miss Mingpei to be beheaded! If you are late , it will be too late! "

" Your Highness, do you still remember what happened when you were seven years old? The grace of saving your life, the Queen said that if the entire Zhang family didn't care about

this little blood left, Your Highness should also remember that the girl saved his life! Not to mention, the entire Zhang family was created for Your Highness! "

As she spoke, Aunt Liu started to cry, " The Wang family is in trouble. Her Majesty said that they can't be saved! " " The Duke's Mansion is also ... But the old lady has gone there with the walking stick given by the late emperor. Her Majesty said that as long as the late emperor is here, the Duke's Mansion should be fine. But Miss Mingpei, except for His Highness, no one can save her! "

As soon as His Majesty was able to sit up, he started killing people . He didn't intend to chop off Ming Pei, but he just chopped off Ming Pei. The Lianghuai Wang family had been killed or exiled , and only the women survived.

This was a beheading that followed the will of the people and was the best way to appease the disaster victims in Lianghuai. Whether it was Concubine De, the Duke's Mansion, or the Eastern Palace, they all knew that their best option was to remain silent.

But His Majesty did not stop.

The more Emperor Yongtai read the memorials from the south, the more he was afraid. If it wasn't for Zhao Zhao, he would be the sinner of Dayin. A great disaster of a hundred years happened when he was in power. This was the greatest denial of the emperor by heaven. Because of Zhao Zhao, everyone knew that the gods would bless Dayin. Even in such a great disaster, the gods were willing to send down the gods to protect him. Naturally, it was because he, the emperor, was still virtuous.

Emperor Yongtai supported his forehead and smiled softly. He didn't care whether he was a virtuous emperor or not, but if a disaster really happened, he would be sorry to the people of the world, and he would not have the face to see her even if he died.

" The people are the most important, the country is second, and the emperor is the least important. " She said this is what a good emperor should be like, and she said it so seriously that people had to take note of it.

" As a princess, I live the way I want. " " If one day – , I will also do my best to ' sacrifice my life for the country and regard death as returning home ' . " She said so and did so.

Sacrifice for the country ... Emperor Yongtai felt a pain in his heart. That day, she had hidden her two children and was ready to sacrifice for the country. She brought her sharpest sword, not to kill the enemy , Pingyang knew that she could not kill the enemy at all . It was to lure the enemy away and then kill herself.

As a princess, she knew that she must not fall into the hands of the enemy .

Every time he thought of the princess who smiled brightly and cried loudly, Emperor Yongtai thought that he should do better. He tried his best to abide by the ethics of the world, abide by the rules of the world, and play a role that could satisfy her.

No one should destroy his hard work.

I have followed all the rules of this world, but I just want your daughter to not have to follow these rules.

The author has something to say:

The people are the most important, the country is second, and the king is the least important. – Mencius

Sacrifice your life for the country, and regard death as returning home. – Cao Zhi

### Chapter 53

When Xu Shixing was brought into the study room of the Yangxin Palace by Eunuch Xi , the old lady of the Duke's Mansion had just left. When the old lady left, she left behind the handwriting of the late emperor and the cane given by the late emperor. People in the palace knew that the Duke's Mansion would be fine.

The late emperor wanted to protect the Duke's Mansion , and this was the cane that supported the prince. So even though Changchun Palace had panicked long ago , they knew that nothing serious would happen to the Duke's Mansion , but – Your Majesty acted very quickly, and the foundation of the Duke's Mansion – was destroyed.

It was early October , but the brazier was already set up in the Yangxin Palace. As soon as Xu Shixing entered , he was greeted by the warm air mixed with the scent of crabapple flowers. He saw Emperor Yongtai wearing an outer coat and holding a pen to write. Opposite the kang table, Xie Jiayi was sitting cross-legged, flipping through a book with one hand and slowly eating the snacks on the kang table with the other.

" Why did the prince come? " After Xu Shixing bowed, Emperor Yongtai did not give him any chance to say anything else and asked directly.

Xu Shixing was in a hurry and didn't know the situation of the imperial study . He only knew that the old lady of the Duke's Mansion had left , but he didn't know that Xie Jiayi was still there.

When Emperor Yongtai asked him the purpose of his visit , he was stunned for a moment and unconsciously glanced at Xie Jiayi first.

The other party also raised his dark eyes and looked at him , which made Xu Shixing choke on the words he had been thinking about for a long time . He opened his mouth , but no words came out.

The normally calm Crown Prince's mind was in a mess at this moment. He found that what he wanted to say had become so difficult.

" Crown Prince? " Emperor Yongtai urged again.

" Your son , your son has come here because of the disaster in the Huai River and Huai River regions. " Xu Shixing himself did not know why he changed the subject . Saving lives is like putting out a fire , and Mingpei cannot die.

" Well, you are thoughtful. I have already arranged for disaster relief. " At this point, Emperor Yongtai seemed to be interested in talking: " Thanks to Kunyi this time, otherwise the consequences would be disastrous. Kunyi is indeed my Dayin's lucky star! God bless my Dayin!

" The topic suddenly changed, and Emperor Yongtai's face changed: Regarding " the matter of the Lianghuai Wang family embezzling silver, the Duke of Yingzhou only thought that the clan members were bold and they knew nothing about it. " At this point, Emperor Yongtai smiled:

" For the sake of the Crown Prince, I will believe that they know nothing. I will only deprive them of their hereditary rights. Crown Prince – do you have any objection? "

It turned out that just now, Emperor Yongtai issued an order to downgrade the title of the Duke of Yingguo Mansion from the next generation. In other words, when the old Duke of Yingguo died and the Duke of Yingguo's son succeeded to the throne, the Duke of Yingguo Mansion would become a Marquisate Mansion.

The prince kowtowed slowly, " I have no objection. "

" Very good. I have to give an explanation to the people of the world for the hundreds of thousands of people affected by the disaster in the Huai River and Huai River regions. " At this point, Emperor Yongtai said, " As for that maidservant who has been making a lot of noise recently, is she actually someone from your palace? How could you let her live when she flatters the lord of disaster like this? "

Emperor Yongtai obviously knew more. When he talked about this person, he stared at the prince's reaction and said slowly: " I have already ordered people to arrest her. When the time comes, she will be handed over to the Dali Temple for conviction. What kind of adopted maid is this? She is just a slave who betrayed her master. She dared to step on my royal princess to gain reputation. She is really bold. I actually heard about this incident. The disaster was caused by such a slave? She deserves to die. "

The king said that she deserved to die, so she deserved to die even if she didn't deserve to die. Xie Jiayi saw Xu Shixing kneel down and kowtow again, " I beg your Majesty to have mercy and spare my life. "

Xie Jiayi didn't even blink as she saw the Crown Prince of the Eastern Palace, who was always so aloof and proud in front of others, knock his head on the water-polished blue bricks in the imperial study.

Emperor Yongtai looked at the Crown Prince, his tone was emotionless, calm but meaningful, " I said she deserved to die, and the Crown Prince begged her not to die? "

Xu Shixing's hands were firmly dug into the cracks of the water-polished blue brick floor. He felt that the imperial study was so quiet at this moment, so quiet that he could hear his heartbeat. He didn't need to look up to see Xie Jiayi's appearance. Her eyes were dark, clear and clean, like a pool of water, but sometimes there was no bottom.

The prince kowtowed again, and Xie Jiayi could only see the two golden-threaded four-clawed dragons on his shoulders slowly lowering and lowering. She heard Xu Shixing's voice slowly and firmly:

" I am attracted to this girl, and I beg Your Majesty to show me mercy. "

Emperor Yongtai's voice still showed no emotion: " Is this the person the prince likes? "

Xu Shixing was silent for a moment, then replied, " Yes. " The cold voice fell on the water-ground bricks, and he felt as if the sound would break. He desperately tried to dig his hands into the cracks in the ground, digging so hard that his fingertips were about to break, but he didn't feel any pain.

" When did the prince choose her? She's just a servant. I will pick a better one for you when the time comes. " Emperor Yongtai asked slowly, and then said this.

Eunuch Xi glanced at His Majesty and then at the princess.

Emperor Yongtai only stared at the crown prince, but the princess withdrew her gaze from the crown prince, slowly picked up a piece of crabapple cake, and put it into her mouth, looking completely unconcerned.

Xu Shixing was silent for a while again before he replied, " I have been attracted to this girl for many years. Please show me mercy, Your Majesty. "

" How early are you talking about? " Emperor Yongtai seemed to be purely curious, but every question he asked made Xu Shixing's hands clasp tighter. " I heard that you sent this slave to the princess five years ago? Was it after that, or before? "

This time, the prince who was kneeling below did not answer for a long time.

Emperor Yongtai said nothing.

Xu Shixing finally answered: " Yes – at that time. "

" Then why not send her directly to the Eastern Palace to serve, but to the Princess's Palace instead? "

This time Xu Shixing only paused, and replied: " She wanted to go to the princess's palace, so I followed her wishes. " He kowtowed again, and this time the kowtow was so deep and loud that even Eunuch Xi, who was used to hearing it, felt his body tremble. Then he heard the prince say: " I have never asked you for anything, but this time I beg you to spare her life. I am willing to take the punishment for her. "

Every word and sentence is clear.

After Xu Shixing finished speaking, no one spoke in the imperial study for a long time.

Emperor Yongtai patted the back of Xie Jiayi's hand. Xie Jiayi was stunned, as if she didn't know what happened, and looked at His Majesty. Emperor Yongtai tapped her nose and pointed at the white porcelain plate on the kang table. Xie Jiayi then noticed that the mountain of crabapple cakes in the basin had been eaten by her and only a few pieces were left.

Only then did she realize that her stomach was bloated and uncomfortable.

Xie Jiayi took out a handkerchief and wiped the corners of her mouth.

Emperor Yongtai then spoke: " Kunyi, what do you think we should do? It's rare for the Crown Prince to be so fond of a woman, and I am also moved. Logically, I should give this woman to the Crown Prince. But she has offended you after all, and I am afraid that I have wronged you. It's really a dilemma. What do you think I should do? Should I spare her or not? "

Although the brazier was far away , Xu Shixing suspected that the room was too hot, making it hard to breathe, and it was airtight and suffocating.

Sweat seemed to be dripping down his neck and collar, which was very unbearable, but he couldn't move at all.

He knelt there, his back straight and his head lowered.

Looking at the water-polished blue bricks that had been wiped so clean by the servants in the imperial study that a person's shadow could be seen through them, he almost suspected that he could see her shadow among them. However, when he looked hard, he found that everything was blurry and there was nothing.

There wasn't even any shadow of himself.

There was nothing but a cold feeling beneath my knees.

But his whole body and mind were filled with a suffocating fire, which made him feel suffocated. He felt that this suffocation was spreading endlessly and would follow him forever.

At this moment, he felt dizzy and thought that perhaps he would never be able to leave this room, or escape from this suffocation.

Or maybe he never really came out of it.

" Since Prince Brother has asked so, I will just do what he wants. " Xie Jiayi couldn't help but stretch out her hand to take the Begonia cake, and there was a light pat on the back of her hand . It turned out that His Majesty had hit the back of her hand with the rolled-up book in his hand.

Xie Jiayi quickly retracted her hand and heard His Majesty say angrily: " You only know how to eat. "

Xu Shixing heard Xie Jiayi's voice and replied, " It's none of my business. I don't want to eat and just sit there and listen. How can a servant deserve my listening? " Eunuch Xi beside him hurriedly brought a cup of hawthorn tea to help digestion. After seeing the emperor's expression, he smiled and said, " Your Majesty, please let the prince stand up. The ground is cold. Don't hurt your prince by kneeling on it. "

Emperor Yongtai asked the prince to stand up, and then hesitantly said, " Well, since Kunyi is willing to help you, I will spare the life of that maidservant and reward you as a servant.

However, when he said this, Emperor Yongtai stared at the prince and said, " In the future , this girl will never be promoted to a higher position. "

It is not known which sentence made the prince's already pale face even paler. He just lowered his head and answered, " Yes . "

Emperor Yongtai looked at him for a while, and he seemed to see something else in this face.

For a moment, he was not even looking at the prince. He suddenly understood the past, understood the unusual behavior of Emperor Yuanhe that day, and it turned out that the late emperor knew everything. The late emperor knew him, and even more so Pingyang. It turned out that everything was destined to be an absurd delusion of his own before it even started. The look in the eyes of the late emperor when he looked at him that day was strange, mocking, but also compassionate.

After a while, Emperor Yongtai waved his hand and asked the prince to go back.

Before Xu Shixing left, he glanced at Xie Jiayi, but in his hurry he didn't even see her expression clearly. He left the imperial study and saw the sun setting in the west. Dusk enveloped most of the imperial palace, and everywhere was tinged with a chilly loneliness and coldness. This was the late autumn of Dayin, cold and inhuman.

He had only taken a few steps when someone who had been waiting on the side came forward and bowed his head and said, " Your Highness, the Queen is waiting for you. "

Upon hearing this, Xu Shixing smiled suddenly.

The Empress is waiting for him. It seemed that he had not heard these words many times, but it also seemed that he had heard them too many times.

Gao Sheng didn't know why His Highness was laughing, but he felt that this laugh was creepy.

He followed His Highness towards Changchun Palace, and as he walked, he started to jog, because His Highness in front of him was walking too fast.

After reaching Changchun Palace in one breath, Xu Shixing stopped suddenly.

He looked up and carefully examined the plaque of Changchun Palace, as if he was seeing it for the first time. He looked at it for a long time before he stepped inside. When he reached the main hall, he saw that Madam Liu had returned and was helping Concubine De to wait.

He told the result in a few words and then stood aside indifferently.

Concubine De first breathed a sigh of relief, then frowned, " If she is not promoted, wouldn't that be unfair to the child ? Just wait and see, when the time comes - when the time comes –"

Xu Shixing suddenly spoke up, " Mother, this is the order of His Majesty, and I dare not disobey it. "

You could hear a pin drop in Changchun Palace. Concubine De and Madam Liu were both shocked. They looked at Xu Shixing with horrified and strange eyes. Could it be that the prince had gone crazy?

The prince had always been filial and obedient, and had never spoken to the empress in such a harsh tone. In fact, the prince was very quiet, and he would never speak unless the question was asked to him. So Xu Shixing's sudden words stunned the two people who had watched him grow up.

Concubine De was shocked at first, but when she understood what her son meant, she became angry again. This was – contradicting her! What can you say about not disobeying the emperor's order? The previous emperor granted the Duke's Mansion hereditary succession, but when it came to Your Majesty, it was just a downgrade! Who can predict the future? Of course, the one who has the final say can predict it.

She stared at her son: " Have you forgotten—— "

Xu Shixing wanted to laugh when he heard that. He hadn't forgotten, he just remembered too many things. So many that he – Xu Shixing closed his eyes and realized that his hands had been clenched tightly. He slowly loosened them.

He interrupted Concubine De's words: " I have never forgotten it, and mother, you don't have to mention it every time. One life for another, isn't that enough to repay your life-saving grace? Do I have to give my own life back to her? " Yes, he couldn't pay it back. There were so many people in the Zhang family, how could he pay it back?

Concubine De had never seen a prince like this before, and she was stunned. When she came to her senses, she realized that she was once again contradicted by her always filial son. She thought about what she had done for him over the years, the look in her sister's eyes before she died, and how she had planned for him in all the wind and rain over the years!

Her eyes were about to spit fire: " The Zhang family has paid so much for you! Is it just Jinyu who saved your life? Mother doesn't need to mention it again and again, it annoys you! The entire Zhang family died for your position as the crown prince. In order to save you, Jinyu didn't have time to help his own brother – you are so good, you can say such conscientious words! Before your aunt died, she entrusted her daughter to you. You promised, you wouldn't have forgotten it, right? Well, I finally raised a good son with a conscience! " She covered her chest and gasped.

Defei's tears came down.



Aunt Liu also started to cry, calling the Empress "Empress" all the time, saying: " The Empress has been ill over the years, please be more docile to her, Your Highness. If you don't understand and sympathize with the Empress, how can the Empress survive? The Empress has suffered a lot, Your Highness! "..... Changchun Palace was in chaos for a while.

By the time Defei had reclined on the couch and caught her breath, His Royal Highness the Crown Prince had already knelt in front of her.

Concubine De said coldly: " You don't have to kneel. You can forget the sacrifice of the Zhang family today, but tomorrow you will forget us mothers ! "

" Son, how many days have you forgotten to water the trees? "

The person in Defei's words made Xu Shixing, who always had a straight back like a poplar, tremble slightly. It was that kind of overwhelming suffocation again, and he could not get out, never get out.

His back was still straight, but it seemed to have collapsed completely.

The prince kowtowed heavily, his voice returning to his usual cold and controlled tone: " I dare not. "

By the time he walked out of Changchun Palace, night had already fallen.

He pulled down the white middle layer of his dragon robe and took a deep breath, but it was no use. He stood still and slowly, bit by bit, carefully pulled his collar straight, looking like the neatly dressed, never messy, invincible prince again.

He did not ride a horse or sit in a sedan chair, but just walked silently. After walking for an unknown amount of time, he suddenly turned around and asked Gao Sheng: " Princess, have you come to the East Palace? "

Gao Sheng was stunned by the question. The princess had not come to the East Palace for a long time, and he didn't know why His Highness suddenly asked this question.

Xu Shixing smiled and continued walking forward alone.

Only Gao Sheng and He Sheng followed behind him.

Gao Sheng heard what the prince said but didn't hear it clearly. He was about to take a step forward to see what the prince said, but was pulled back by He Sheng next to him.

He Sheng heard clearly what His Highness said:

" Yes, she won't come again. "

## Chapter 54

In the study of the Yangxin Palace , Emperor Yongtai closed the memorial tiredly. Eunuch Xi saw the opportunity and quickly tidied up the table on the kang, brought a cup of health tea , and said with a smile: " This is the recipe that the princess specially asked for . Your Majesty must drink it. "

As soon as he smelled the tea , Emperor Yongtai smiled on his thin face: " She even built a river for me. She has really grown up. "

" Isn't it? I am still scared now. If it weren't for the princess, this time I would really be-- " Emperor Yongtai drank two sips slowly and said, " It's going to be a mess. The more I read the memorials from the south , the more worried I am. " Earlier, he thought that someone below

had read the emperor's mind and exaggerated the princess's contribution. But later, as the news from the south continued to come in, Emperor Yongtai was so frightened that he broke into a cold sweat.

" The princess has made such great contributions , why did His Majesty agree to let her go to disaster relief? " Eunuch Xi asked more questions when he saw that His Majesty was willing to talk .

" Parents who love their children plan for their future . I am also like this as an uncle. " Emperor Yongtai sighed. Kunyi not only needs people who remember her , but also officials who are familiar with her.

He reached out and picked up the handwritten note tucked in the book on the table. It was the handwritten note left by the late emperor to save the Duke of Ying's house, and it was the late emperor's painstaking care for the prince. Emperor Yongtai looked at the handwritten note and said slowly: " The late emperor. " Every blade of grass from the late emperor was precious and could not be disobeyed. He asked Eunuch Xi to put away the late emperor's handwritten note and whispered: " Zhao Zhao , you have already made unprecedented achievements twice. " Eunuch Xi was startled and looked at His Majesty in astonishment: His Majesty never wanted to mention the princess's first meritorious service . That memory was too bitter for His Majesty , it was the death of Princess Pingyang.

Emperor Yongtai saw that the usually experienced and thoughtful Eunuch Xi seemed to be at a loss, and he laughed softly. His voice was filled with helplessness and desolation, as well as the calmness acquired through the years: " What can't be said? After all these years, is there anything I can't bear? " As he said this, he coughed twice and looked at the crabapple tree outside the window with a smile.

He once asked Zhaozhao what Pingyang said at the end of that day.

He had thought about the scene of that day again and again, how she hid her children, and the look she gave them in the last moment. Zhao Zhao said that she called her mother very quietly, not wanting her to leave. Her mother also said her last words to her daughter in a very quiet voice: " Zhao Zhao, listen to your brother from now on. " Then she looked at her thirteen-year-old son, said nothing, nodded, and turned away.

Then, she drew her sword and committed suicide. Later, someone investigated and said that the princess had made thorough preparations. If she didn't have time to draw her sword, she had poison on her collar, so she would die as soon as she lowered her head.

Thinking of these things again twelve years later, Emperor Yongtai looked at the crabapple blossoms and felt that life was really long. But the life of Pingyang was so short.

It's a nice day outside the window, a cool and beautiful autumn day in the north.

The people who went to repair the river in August only withdrew from the Huai River area, and the materials brought to repair the river suddenly became disaster relief materials. The people who were needed had all gone there. This time, Xie Jiayi brought only Ruyi and Caiyue with her, except for the guards sent by His Majesty to protect her safety.

The river still needs to be repaired, but disaster relief must be done first. As for how to repair the Lianghuai region – Xie Jiayi lifted the heavy curtain and looked back. There was a green-curtained carriage behind, which belonged to Lu Chenan and his servant. Emperor Yongtai also

sent Lu Chenan from the Hanlin Academy to assist with disaster relief and river reconstruction with the officials of the Ministry of Works who were in charge of this matter.

Xie Jiayi brought few people with her, but she had quite a few boxes and guards, so it was quite difficult for her to pass through all the carriages and see the green carriages at the back. If Ruyi hadn't pulled her back, she would have almost been killed.

She hadn't seen Lord Lu since the last time Lu Chenan helped her out on the street. Xie Jiayi looked at the lowered curtain and couldn't help asking, " I wonder what Lord Lu has been busy with these days? "

A qualified servant must know what the master wants to know. Ruyi answered: " In addition to editing books in the Hanlin Academy, Lord Lu has also been summoned by the emperor several times and drafted imperial edicts for the emperor. He is highly valued by the emperor. " These are what the princess knows. The next thing is what the princess wants to know, " Privately, Lord Lu is preparing a dowry for his cousin. "

What Ruyi was thinking was that his cousin was finally going to get married.

Xie Jiayi thought of Caixing's words in her previous life: what does deep love and loyalty mean? It means marrying you, not only giving you a betrothal gift, but also preparing a dowry for you. She snorted sourly in her heart, not knowing whether she was snorting at herself or others, but she said: " Don't talk about dowry, we are here to provide disaster relief and help His Majesty get things done. " If this matter is done well, the flood in the south, a natural disaster and man-made disaster that once shook the entire Dayin, will be completely over. Without this incident, His Majesty will be well taken care of and will be fine.

As Princess Kunyi went south, the people told each other that Dayin Fuxing had arrived, and they immediately had more hope. As for the officials, more than half of the money for disaster relief was taken away every time, but this time when they heard that the princess was coming with them, they dared not move. This lady, if she did something wrong, she would take out the imperial sword. The phrase she liked to say the most when she came last time was, " Cut it first and talk later . "

So when the local officials received the disaster relief money from the court, they were all wide-eyed. This was real gold and silver transported all the way from the capital, and everyone knew the tricks involved, but this time there was almost no loss.

The local disaster relief funds have become visibly thicker. With more money, post-disaster reconstruction is no longer constrained and is moving faster.

It was already the end of October, and Xie Jiayi had been in the disaster area for a month. On this day, Ruyi was called over to check the accounts, and Xie Jiayi waved his hand and let him go. There were officials and guards everywhere, so there was nothing to be afraid of.

She brought two guards in plain clothes, and dressed herself in plain green, and went to the dam that was being rebuilt. She just wanted to take a look from a distance , but she saw a green figure beside the river on the high ground. Who else could it be but Lord Lu?

a distance in the past month , and the other party just bowed and turned away.

Xie Jiayi knew that he must be in a relationship, and they all knew to avoid suspicion. Thinking of this, she felt like she had accidentally eaten a sour plum that had not been soaked in sugar.

She looked up at Lord Lu and thought that the only way to win over Lord Lu was to win over Mrs. Lu .

Thinking about these things, she went to the top of the ridge. Both banks were crowded with people, all craning their heads to look into the river where the muddy waves were rolling.

Xie Jiayi also stretched his head to look inside, not understanding what they were looking at. He heard a bunch of random voices around him saying, " This is where two people were swept away a few days ago, and we can't find them at all. " " Where can we find them in such a big river? " When the person next to him said something, the people around him took a breath, and the more they heard it, the more they shrank back and stretched their heads forward.

Over there, Lu Chenan was revising the blueprints with the people from the Ministry of Works. He turned around and saw the crowd of people behind him. He frowned and said, " This temporary guardrail is still not enough. Let's send people to-- " He paused before finishing, " Evacuate the crowd. No one can get close. "

After finishing his words, he stuffed the blueprint into the hands of the official from the Ministry of Industry, said he had something to do, and strode towards the crowd.

Seeing the little head that was watching the fun shrink, Lu Chenan gritted his teeth unconsciously: How could she come to such a dangerous place alone?

Xie Jiayi in the crowd was still trying to study the situation in the river based on what the old lady next to her said, when she heard a sentence that seemed to be squeezed out from between teeth. It was right behind her, but it was very low, but Xie Jiayi could hear it clearly in the huge and noisy crowd:

" Princess, are you here to watch the fun? Can't you see clearly? Why don't you squeeze forward? "

Before Xie Jiayi could even nod, she felt a chill on her back.

She slowly turned her head, and it was indeed Lord Lu, standing beside her, his dark eyes looking at her quietly. Xie Jiayi's first thought was: Are Lord Lu's eyes always this dark? They look like black gemstones, so beautiful ...

Realizing what she was thinking, she touched her nose embarrassedly, reminding herself again and again in her heart, " Don't look at what is inappropriate . " " Don't look at what is inappropriate . "

Before Xie Jiayi could say anything, the crowd suddenly surged like a tide. The people in front were pushed against the guardrail, cursing. Suddenly, someone shouted:

" Someone fell into the water! "

Xie Jiayi stood up and took a look. She saw a small head floating in the waves. It was obviously a child. It was not far from the shore .

Saving lives is like putting out a fire. In a flash , she pulled out the whip, climbed over the guardrail, and went down the river bank as light as a swallow.

Standing on a mound of earth, she stretched out her whip and rolled it around the child in the water. With a little effort, she brought the child over along the current. At this time, several people came over from behind, obviously also helping to rescue people, but they couldn't come down because their bodies were too heavy. Xie Jiayi grabbed the child and tried her best to lift

him up. The three big men above held each other's hands, and the one at the bottom leaned over to catch him.

Seeing the child being taken into the hands of the big man, the crowd on the shore shouted with joy.

Before Xie Jiayi had time to rejoice, she felt the earth slope beneath her feet suddenly give way and she sank down!

When she tried to take a breath and land, she had already fallen into the water. Xie Jiayi knew how to swim, but she didn't know that the cotton-filled robe on her body felt as heavy as a thousand pounds in the water, making it impossible to move. She paddled forward with all her strength, but the whirlpool of the waves suddenly swept her away.

At this moment, she couldn't hear the shouts of the people on the shore, nor could she see the face of the man in green clothes that turned pale instantly. Lu Chenan chose the landing point in just a moment, jumped into the water, stretched out his hand and pulled the obviously stunned man into his arms, and the other party immediately clung to him.

" Don't struggle. " This is a futile advice for people who fall into the water. But Xie Jiayi was such an obedient person in this life-threatening situation. She gave up struggling in an instant, which surprised Lu Chenan in the waves, but he didn't have time to think about it.

He knew the speed and condition of the river best, and he couldn't swim up. He could only hold the person in his arms tightly, press her head into his arms, and was swept away by the whirlpool .

The most dangerous area was just ahead, the one with the most rocks, and the water would slow down after this area. Lu Chenan hugged Xie Jiayi, who had obviously fainted, tightly, and tried to calculate the glimmer of hope in the passive vortex.

They could only survive this by calculation, using leverage, and relying on their luck. Or if they were unlucky, they would encounter the rapids below and both of them would be sucked into the depths.

At this time, the ability to swim was of little use. Even Lu Chenan, who was very good at swimming, had swallowed countless saliva. The rest was up to fate. All he could do was hold the person in his arms tightly and protect her head.

When he came to his senses again, the two had been thrown onto the shallows. The first thing Lu Chenan did after opening his eyes was to look for Xie Jiayi.

Seeing her lying not far from him, his heart, which had been beating rapidly since he woke up, gradually calmed down.

He smiled palely: It was indeed Dayin's lucky star, luck was on their side this time. He stood up and was about to walk forward, but he felt dizzy. Lu Chenan took a break and stumbled towards Xie Jiayi again. After carefully examining her face, mouth and nose, he raised his hand and gently pressed her soft abdomen.

I saw the person under me spit out two mouthfuls of water and slowly opened his eyes.

Her confused eyes met his.

When Lu Chenan realized this, he found that he had been staring at someone for a long time.

He immediately looked away and sat down to the side.

The sun had already risen to the middle of the sky, shining on their wet bodies. Xie Jiayi sat up in a daze, with the river in front of her and a verdant mountain behind her, and birds chirping from time to time.

She looked at the people around her again.

The water on Lu Chenan's face dripped down his fair chin, but he just looked ahead, not knowing what he was thinking.

Then I heard the girl who had recovered beside me asked blankly: " ... You, you fell down too? "

Lu Chenan looked back at her, but was frightened by her black and white eyes. When she focused on someone, no one could help but feel frightened.

Lu Chenan thought.

" Yes, I am not as good as the princess, and I fell down too. "

" What should we do? " Xie Jiayi suddenly asked.

Lu Chenan turned his head to look at her, only to see that what was on her face were not drops of water that had not yet dried, but beads of sweat the size of beans.

He heard Xie Jiayi's voice with suppressed tears:

" My feet hurt so bad! "

" I want to cry. "

## Chapter 55

" My feet hurt so bad! "

" I want to cry. "

As Xie Jiayi spoke , beads of sweat rolled down her white forehead. Lu Chenan hurriedly stood up, bent over, and said " Excuse me " , then lifted her wet skirt and saw her feet . One of them was still wearing a short deerskin boot , but the other boot was gone. The garter straps of her white silk stockings had come loose , and the socks were loosely piled at her ankles, revealing her dazzlingly white ankles.

Lu Chenan glanced and turned away, unable to see any clues. He was afraid that it was the other foot in the small boot that hit the stone. He looked up at Xie Jiayi biting her lip to endure the pain , and without hesitation , he reached out and slowly helped her take off the boots that had just passed her ankles , and soon realized the problem.

Compared to the smaller ankle next to it , this ankle was already swollen . Lu Chenan carefully took off Xie Jiayi's boots , trying not to touch the swollen part , but he still heard her gasp.

Lu Chenan looked carefully, stretched out his hand , and heard the other party scream immediately: " No, no , no ... Don't move ..."

He raised his hand . " Dislocated ankle. "

Xie Jiayi looked up in despair , " Could it be that I was injured? " She didn't want to dislocate her bones. When she heard about dislocation, she could still hear the sound of Uncle Zhong straightening the bones of the dislocated person and the latter's screams like a pig being slaughtered .

Xie Jiayi is afraid of suffering , but what she fears more than suffering is pain.

If she had to choose one , she would seriously consider the issue of survival. Life is hard , and perhaps this world is not worth enduring through pain and suffering ...

No amount of crabapple cakes could stop her from wanting to avoid the sufferings of this world. Lu Chenan was very calm, and he didn't give Xie Jiayi any chance: " It's a dislocation, and, " he lowered his head to examine the swollen ankle, " We can't delay any longer. "

" No, no, no! " Xie Jiayi hurriedly bent down and grabbed Lu Chenan's hand. The latter only felt two soft hands holding his right hand, which made his heart tremble and he could no longer move.

" Just let me dislocate ... don't move me. " Xie Jiayi felt that it was fine to be in pain this way. If she thought about it carefully, as long as she didn't move, it didn't seem to hurt that much.

She has to endure it, she has to dislocate it.

Lu Chenan lowered his head and didn't speak for a long time. Then he slowly pulled out his hand. He put it behind his back, stretched it out and clenched it unconsciously. It seemed that something in his hand would affect his judgment. He had to get rid of this influence and regain his sense of touch.

He looked at Xie Jiayi's ankle carefully again and was sure that he couldn't wait any longer. Xie Jiayi felt that his gaze was very dangerous. She didn't need anyone to help her at this moment. Just let her stay as she was. She didn't need help or rescue. She just needed to stay – dislocated.

" Sir Lu ... I don't think it hurts that much ... Okay, you're not an imperial physician, so don't be impulsive and don't do anything rash! " If Lu Chen'an snapped, she would not only have to endure the pain of slaughtering a pig , but also put it in the wrong position – what did Uncle Zhong say that time: " You put it in crookedly, take it off and try again. " The only time Xie Jiayi saw someone treat a dislocation, it ended in such a tragic result.

She had to hold on until she could see the orthopedic expert from the Imperial Hospital, and then have the emperor issue an order to have him cure her in the least painful way possible. She can do it, she can endure it.

If she feels pain, she can cry for a while ... it's no big deal.

When Xie Jiayi heard Lu Chenan say " hmm " , she retracted her leaning body and completely relaxed her tense nerves. Lord Lu had agreed. A gentleman like Lord Lu would stick to his word. As long as he agreed – she let out a scream.

Xie Jiayi discovered that it was herself who made the noise, and the instant excruciating pain made her want to kill someone !

" Don't, don't , don't ..." When she gritted her teeth and said the second half of the sentence, " Don't answer it , " Lu Chenan had already lowered his head to carefully check her ankle again, raised his head and glanced at her: " It's back. "

" You you you ..." Xie Jiayi's eyes were still filled with tears from the sudden pain, " You are so brave! I am Princess Kunyi! " She had already said it, but he still dared to move!

Lu Chenan raised his eyes and looked at him, his eyes were bright: I did not do anything wrong.

Fortunately, Xie Jiayi felt it and found that her painful ankle seemed to have really gotten better. Even if she moved accidentally, she didn't feel the piercing pain just now ... Lord Lu is indeed omnipotent!

She felt it carefully again and found only a slight pain in her ankle. She looked at the omnipotent Lord Lu expectantly and asked, " It still hurts a little. What should I do? " Would the omnipotent Lord Lu, like in the storybooks, reach out and grab some herbs and apply them to her ankle, instantly and completely relieving the pain and making her feel refreshed?

Xie Jiayi's confidence in Lord Lu was revived after this battle, and she looked at him with sparkling eyes. Lu Chenan glanced at her, and replied with two words with his thin lips: " Bear with it. "

Xie Jiayi: No, that's not what's written in the storybook ... There are so many herbs in the back hills, you can pick them ...

" What should we do next? " In the storybook, he would have to carry me, the princess, on his back, pick fruits for me, and grill meat for me ...

Lu Chenan wrung the water from his robe and uttered two words: " Wait. " The princess had already fallen into the river, so they were waiting downstream. It wouldn't be long before someone would arrive.

Xie Jiayi: ..... There are really no fruits or barbecue.

She glanced at Lord Lu, who was carefully wringing out the water from his robe: " I think you have something against me . "

Lu Chenan paused, " I dare not. "

Xie Jiayi was sure that Lord Lu really had something against her. "You dare not, you are too bold, you dare to turn your face away from this princess."

For a while, neither of them spoke. The midday sun was burning on their bodies, but unfortunately, it was the end of October. Even in the south, it was still chilly after climbing out of the river and basking in the sun in wet clothes.

Xie Jiayi shuddered silently and bit her pale lips.

Lu Chenan didn't even look at her. He just took off his coat with his back to her, wrung out the water inside, and then threw it into Xie Jiayi's hands: " Princess, please change into my coat first. If you get frozen later, I, your humble self, cannot afford it. " After saying that, he stood up and walked towards the mountain behind him.

Xie Jiayi silently took off her top, untied her wet skirt, and put on the robe that Lu Chenan had wrung out the water from. She immediately felt lighter and warmer, and she followed Lu Chenan's example by wringing out the water from her coat bit by bit. Although she had wrung out a lot of water, it seemed that new water always gathered and dripped down.

Xie Jiayi felt a little frustrated by the wringing. She felt that she might never be able to wring out this top and skirt.

Lu Chenan came back and put the dry firewood he had picked up at the foot of the mountain aside. He then looked at the princess who was sulking with her two outer clothes in the sun, still wringing out the wet clothes. She was completely enveloped in her green outer robe, looking even smaller, like a person made of glass, as if she would disappear if she wasn't careful.



His eyes fell on her already red hands. Even the cuffs of her robe, which he had just wrung dry, were soaked with water again. The long sleeves fell on the back of her hands, barely revealing her two slender white hands.

Lu Chenan squatted down and helped her roll up her overly long sleeves without saying a word, slightly exposing her wrists. He then took the coat from her hand, held it aside, and squeezed out the water.

Xie Jiayi saw the water flowing down Lu Chenan's hand to the ground.

Then she watched Lu Chenan squatting beside the firewood, bending over. She didn't know how he managed to light a fire in a short while. The fire was not too far from her, but not too close to her, so she could feel the warmth of the fire but not feel roasted.

Lord Lu, who was standing by the fire, quickly put her coat on and slowly dried it by the fire. The warmth made Xie Jiayi sigh comfortably, thinking that Lord Lu was omnipotent, and that was what was written in the storybook. The riverbank was very quiet for a while, with only the flowing river and the occasional bird calls in the mountains and forests behind him.

Xie Jiayi made small talk: " Lord Lu, what are you busy with in the Hanlin Academy? "

" I am not as busy as the princess. "

Xie Jiayi licked her lips. She remembered that Lord Lu seemed to still be angry with her. She picked at the corner of her outer robe and glanced at Lu Chenan by the fire, trying to guess what he was angry about.

Lu Chenan slowly added two sticks of firewood to the fire and said slowly: " It's been a year. "

" Ah? " Xie Jiayi showed enthusiasm to strike up a conversation, but she didn't understand and didn't dare to talk nonsense rashly.

" The princess naturally doesn't remember. "

Seeing what he said, Xie Jiayi thought to herself, how can we have a good chat? If you don't say anything, how can I remember it? I'm not like you guys, who have photographic memories. How difficult is it for me to remember something ... She tried hard to decipher the " one year " message from Lord Lu who took the initiative to speak .

Lu Chenan turned around and saw Xie Jiayi's face, which was very thoughtful. He slowly exhaled, " A year ago, the princess suddenly changed her mind. "

" Oh. " A year ago ..... A year ago she changed her mind ...

" Dajue Temple, the princess changed her mind. " Lu Chenan gently poked the fire, and the flames jumped up, making Xie Jiayi feel warmer. Lu Chenan turned his head to look at her and asked softly: " Can I know why the princess changed her mind? "

Xie Jiayi was stunned. She suddenly felt that something was wrong.

But people with good brains can think through everything after they figure out one thing, but Xie Jiayi needs time to think slowly. After figuring out one thing, she has to work hard to figure out the next thing, but she may not be able to figure it out. Fate gave her a noble status, but then took away her good brain.

Lu Chenan turned his head and looked at the burning bonfire again. He lowered his head and pursed his lips. He was speechless for a long time, and suddenly said: " Princess, if you want to choose Qin Zhili, Luo Cheng and the like, you might as well choose me. "

As he spoke, he just looked at the flames quietly, not looking at the people around him.

He felt a slight headache, but he finally said what he wanted to say. If the princess chooses them, then he can choose them too, so why not choose him?

Xie Jiayi almost didn't understand what Lu Chenan said. When she slowly understood, it was like thunder and lightning.

She felt that she had misunderstood Lord Lu's meaning. This was Lord Lu, the Dali Temple Minister who had never married for the sake of his cousin until his death. He had lived a lonely life and had broken the hearts of many girls in the capital.

Xie Jiayi's lips trembled uncontrollably as she stared blankly at Lord Lu who was sitting with one leg bent beside the fire.

Lord Lu didn't turn his head, but just stared at the dancing flames quietly.

Xie Jiayi felt her heart beating very fast, and Lu Chenan, who was standing next to the fire, looked extremely pale.

Before Xie Jiayi could calm her abnormally beating heart, she heard Lord Lu say softly: "Someone is coming." As soon as he finished speaking, something warm flew into Xie Jiayi's arms. She reached out and hugged it. It was a dried coat.

Lu Chenan had already stood up with his back to her.

She changed into her own clothes and said softly, "Lord Lu."

Lu Chenan's heart started beating uncontrollably when he heard the call, "Lord Lu". He turned around slowly and saw the girl holding his outer robe in her arms and reaching out to him.

Lu Chenan clenched and stretched out his hands behind his back again, then leaned forward to take his outer robe.

He was always suspicious, and during this period of time, his outer robe was stained with her sweet scent, which was vague and made him slightly dizzy.

He put on his outer robe, stood up and looked forward, and could already see a figure appearing.

The movement of more and more people showed that quite a few people came to search.

Lu Chenan saw the people walking in front of him clearly, they were all familiar to him, and he finally felt relieved. He turned to look at Xie Jiayi. This was his last chance to be alone with her.

He said the same words again, "Princess, if they are all OK, so can I."

As Lu Chenan heard this, his eyes went dark and he passed out.

The people who were already near were shouting and yelling, "Princess" and "Lord Lu" all the time, and the crowd was rushing towards here. Xie Jiayi didn't care that her feet were still aching, and she gritted her teeth and rushed to Lu Chenan's side, hugged him, and let his head lean towards her. Only then did she feel the sticky area behind Lu Chenan's head.

Xie Jiayi was shocked and took her hand, only to see it was covered in blood.

## Chapter 56

The person running towards the head of the crowd was Ruyi. After this, everyone realized that the eunuchs following the princess were probably all masters.

When Ruyi saw the princess, the panic that had been choking his heart suddenly dissipated , and he was saved. Ruyi forced himself to remain calm and hurried forward , only to see the princess's panicked face and her hands, which were covered in blood, standing in mid-air. Ruyi felt her knees go weak and she knelt down suddenly.

As soon as Xie Jiayi saw the person coming, she cried out in a sobbing voice: " Ruyi, come and see what happened to Lord Lu? " It couldn't be that she had been reborn and killed Lord Lu. She was shaking like a dead leaf in the wind , and her voice was shaking unrecognizable. She hugged Lord Lu tightly and looked at Ruyi for help.

Ruyi then realized that the blood was not from the princess . His tense nerves relaxed and he regained his composure. He glanced at Lord Lu and said with certainty, " Don't worry , princess. Lord Lu is fine. " Then he turned around and called for a doctor to the crowd . They came to search for the princess and brought two doctors with them.

The doctor fell behind and was carried by the princess's two tall guards . He reached the front without even touching the ground . Before he had time to kneel down and kowtow, he heard the princess's urging voice.

He stepped forward and looked carefully , then quickly replied, " Lord Lu hit a rock in the water. "

" Is it serious? " Xie Jiayi asked, staring at the old man.

As for whether it was serious or not , he couldn't tell whether it was serious or not. Ruyi looked at the doctor from behind the princess , " Doctor , can you tell me if it's life-threatening? "

The doctor finally understood what the princess meant and said hurriedly, " It's okay, it's okay! " Another doctor was sent over at this time, and after checking, he also said: " It's okay! "

" Then what's the hindrance? " Xie Jiayi breathed a sigh of relief and asked again.

" This? I've seen people who have hit this place before, and they forgot everything that happened when they woke up ..." Another doctor echoed, " Yes, it's true. "

Xie Jiayi was stunned when she heard this.

The people who came later were all overjoyed, and they all looked for the princess with their heads held high, fearing that the princess would really be in their territory and something would happen when they followed her. It was simply unimaginable. Not only did they find the princess, but they also saw that she was fine except for a sprained ankle. Everyone said, " The princess is really a lucky star " and " She is really blessed with a long life . "

Someone pushed a young official from the Ministry of Industry in the crowd and said with a smile: " Your brother-in-law is fine, so you don't have to worry about being embarrassed to see your unmarried daughter-in-law, right? "

Xie Jiayi, who was being helped by Ruyi to get on the carriage, paused when she heard this, slowly turned around and looked at the particularly young and handsome official in the crowd. She blushed slightly at the teasing. Xie Jiayi asked slowly: " Who is your brother-in-law? "

The two of them were so happy that they were overjoyed. The princess heard what they said and bowed to her, saying, " We are talking nonsense. We shouldn't say that before we get married. I have already arranged to marry Lord Lu's cousin and we will get married at the end of this year. "

Xie Jiayi's breathing became more rapid, and she finally understood what Lu Chenan meant. She couldn't help but tighten her hands around Ruyi's sleeves, " Is it Miss Hu? "

" My lady, do you recognize her? It is Miss Hu. "

" Very good, a talented man and a beautiful woman, a match made in heaven. " Xie Jiayi said slowly, then turned around and was escorted into the carriage by Ruyi.

Someone outside the carriage teased the young man who blushed easily: " You are so lucky, our Princess Fuxing personally approved it as ' a match made in heaven ' ! "

Xie Jiayi leaned back in the carriage, gnawing on her thumb joint, feeling confused and – happy.

After returning to her residence, the princess directly asked someone to arrange Lu Chenan to live in her residence. She sat beside the ebony couch where Lu Chenan was lying and continued to chew her thumb.

The decoction had been fed to him. Although Lu Chenan was unconscious, he took the medicine obediently. His face was pale, even his lips were pale, but fortunately he was still peaceful, as if he was asleep. Only the gauze on his forehead reminded Xie Jiayi of the panic and helplessness she felt when she touched the blood on her hand.

Xie Jiayi bit her thumb and looked at Lu Chenan's peaceful sleeping face. This was her prince charming.

She didn't force it, she gave them a chance.

Now the opportunity has come to her, if she doesn't take it, she will be struck by lightning. Xie Jiayi thought silently, Miss Hu, please don't blame me, of course it's useless to blame me, this person is already mine, and I won't wait any longer. If anyone dares to take advantage of him again, I will not let him off.

She thought of Lu Chenan's words again and thought to herself: I gave you the chance to run away, but you insisted on running back.

Then she saw Lu Chenan's face, which was paler than gauze. Thinking of the impact on his head and the doctor's words, Xie Jiayi paused while chewing her thumb: Ah, this can't be like what is written in the book. He forgot everything he said before because of the impact on his brain ... Could it be that he forgot that he wanted to be my princess? If he turned around and saw Hu Jiao, and fell in love at first sight again –

Just as Xie Jiayi was lost in thoughts, the person on the couch moved his eyelashes and opened his eyes.

Xie Jiayi jumped up holding the chair. She felt pain in her left foot and forced herself to suppress a cry of "ouch". She moved closer to him to look at his expression: " Are you awake? " She sensed a trace of confusion in Lu Chen's quietly opened eyes that made her panic.

Lu Chenan propped himself up and tried to sit up, but Xie Jiayi hurriedly pushed the pillow over to him, and Lu Chenan was stunned.

Xie Jiayi, who had been carefully observing Lu Chenan's expression, felt that she had observed the truth: He was stunned! He must not recognize me!

He looked at me as if he were a stranger.

When Xie Jiayi heard Lu Chenan finally speak, the first thing she said was hesitant : " You are \_\_\_\_\_ "

With a bang , Xie Jiayi thought, is this fate? I messed up the rhythm of his life, but he still forgot about me and wanted to go back to have a look at Hu Jiao forever! But, but she is going to get married! In a panic, Xie Jiayi seemed to have grasped something that could convince herself, yes, Hu Jiao is going to get married! Lord Lu, Lord Lu, that's not good, it's better for him to be my princess!

In a hurry, Xie Jiayi's face darkened, his heart turned black, and he made a decision!

Then Lu Chenan asked, " I am your unmarried wife, don't you remember? "

She was shocked when she said it out loud! It turns out that her brain can be so clever ... She can be so clever at the critical moment that she can scare people to death.

She opened her mouth slightly and saw Lu Chenan, who was sitting on the green satin pillow with a pale face full of shock.

What? Xie Jiayi thought to herself, you broke your head and you still don't believe me! I can't be your wife who has never been married, why are you looking at me like this? She will spread the news later, and ask the emperor uncle to write the date of the imperial edict two days earlier, saying that it has not been issued yet. She, Xie Jiayi, is the wife of Lu Chenan, the master of Lu, who has never been married!

She swallowed her saliva. Being looked at by Lu Chenan like this, even someone as shameless as Xie Jiayi couldn't help but blink. She rubbed the corner of her clothes with her thumb, which had bitten off a red mark, but a look of certainty appeared on her face.

She also nodded affirmatively to Lu Chenan, as if this would add weight to her words.

She heard Lu Chenan ask: " I am—— "

Xie Jiayi went all out and said more confidently: " I'm not a married man. " She looked at him again and nodded. Xie Jiayi looked calm and confident, but she was so nervous that she didn't even notice Lu Chenan's strange expression.

Seeing the princess and him in the same room, with no servants around, Lu Chenan understood what the princess meant. But this understanding made him feel uneasy, as if the moon had suddenly fallen into his arms, so joyful yet unreal, like a dream. With the previous experience as a lesson , he wanted the princess to confirm it in person this time.

However, he didn't expect that the words that the princess said would make him stunned.

After a long silence, Lu Chenan soon understood what the princess was doing.

She is a person whose thoughts are written all over her face.

Lu Chenan lowered his head, biting his lips to hold back his smile, and had to cough twice to clear his throat. Then he heard Xie Jiayi hurriedly say, " Ruyi has already called the doctor, you ... you have a head injury ... don't worry if you can't remember ..." Xie Jiayi saw that Lu Chenan did not object, but just lowered his head, and his shoulders trembled slightly.

She clasped her hands together and emphasized again: " You just need to remember that you are my princess, don't forget it again. " The princess thought that as long as someone like Lord Lu remembered this, on the way back, no matter whether it was Hu Jiao, Zhang Jiao or Wang Jiao, they would definitely not look at each other again.

The two of them were destined to be incompatible, one was going to get married, and the other was favored by her. Xie Jiayi's heart had turned black at this time, and her mind was full of thoughts about not letting them meet again, and she had to keep this status, tightly.

Her thumb couldn't help but dig into the base of her other hand. After she had taken advantage of the man, she looked up guiltily and glanced at Lu Chenan again, but she met his eyes as he looked up at her.

There was a smile in his clear eyes, which made people want to ask him what he was thinking about that made him so happy.

Xie Jiayi comforted herself and said: You see, Lord Lu is also happy. He was the one who chose me, I am not against his choice. Thinking of Hu Jiao, she thought: Lord Lu insisted on making me a princess, no one can regret it in the future. She, Xie Jiayi, is not the one who will suffer losses, if her people dare to bully her, she will be ruthless.

Seeing the changing expression on Xie Jiayi's face, Lu Chenan finally couldn't help laughing out loud. The sound seemed to be laughing in people's hearts and falling on people's ears.

Low, neither light nor heavy.

It sounds very nice.

Xie Jiayi unconsciously raised her hand and touched her ears.

Lu Chenan clenched his fist and placed it on his lips, coughing twice before saying, " Princess, did you choose me? "

This is what he was about to ask.

Lu Chenan's smiling gaze deepened slightly: Princess, since you chose me this time, you are not allowed to say you made a mistake again, and you are not allowed to suddenly turn around and leave again.

He sighed almost from the bottom of his heart: he didn't know if he could withstand her turning around again.

When the moon no longer shines on you, what can mortals do to keep the moon?

Xie Jiayi paused while touching her ear. She felt something was wrong. This didn't look like someone who had lost his memory. That's not what was written in the storybook ...

" You—— " Xie Jiayi swallowed again unconsciously, hesitating and asking.

Lu Chenan leaned against the pillow and lowered his eyes, then laughed again, then raised his eyes to look at Xie Jiayi and said softly: " Princess, it was I who asked you if you could choose me, did you agree to it? "

This is the sound of a bang——

Xie Jiayi opened her mouth slightly, unable to close it. She felt that her whole face was about to be cooked by the superstitious book of words she believed in ... The book of words was all lies!

She turned around suddenly, and her left foot hurt again. She cried " Ouch " , and even though Lu Chenan called her from behind, she did not turn around and shouted Ruyi to the outside of the door. But even if she didn't look, she could feel Lu Chenan's smiling eyes on her.

She seemed to be able to see him biting his lips and chuckling, and Xie Jiayi felt her face getting even hotter.

Xie Jiayi murmured, " I was really soaked in the river water ... The doctor was right. We should be careful of fever ... I think I have a fever ... Yes, I have a fever ... I am feverish ... I am confused ... "

Seeing Ruyi coming in, Xie Jiayi felt like she saw a savior, " Ruyi, quickly get the doctor to see Lord Lu! " She said without turning back, and without asking for help, she walked out directly

with gritted teeth: " This princess is not feeling well, she needs to go back and take good care of herself! "

Xie Jiayi heard Lu Chen'an's smiling voice behind her: " Princess, I will come to visit you later. "

" No, no, no, I need to rest! " She didn't want to see anyone for the time being, and least of all, she didn't want to see Lord Lu.

She is not a smart ghost, she is an awkward ghost ...

I have lived for twenty-two years, and I rarely get smart once, but I have fallen into the ditch of smartness ...

Bumping into the doctor, Xie Jiayi paused, gritted her teeth and said to the doctor: " Go check on Lord Lu, he's awake ..." She gritted her teeth and added: " His brain is fine. "

" Nothing happened at all. " Xie Jiayi emphasized through gritted teeth.

" Please come and take a look at it for me later. " Xie Jiayi raised her hand and touched her forehead with the back of her hand.

The doctor asked hurriedly: " What's wrong with the princess? "

Xie Jiayi was very serious: " I think there might be something wrong with my brain. " Even from a distance , she wondered why she heard Lu Chenan's laughter again.

Understatement, neither too light nor too heavy.

It sounds very nice.

## Chapter 57

By the time Xie Jiayi regained the courage to see people , her left foot was completely healed.

It was already mid-November, and Xie Jiayi watched Ruyi take away the last pile of account books. She felt relieved as the account books were taken away. It seemed that once upon a time , those account books were not piled on the table , but piled in her heart.

Caiyue gently wiped the princess's hands and face while saying, " After looking through the account books day and night , it's finally all settled. Others only know that the princess repaired the southern river, but they didn't know that if the river was not repaired, our princess would probably have her dowry taken away. " Even so , there were still those heartless people in the capital who talked about the princess as making money, as if their princess's mansion was really full of gold and silver. They were all wives of officials , so how could they not know that the princess would not get the money to repair such a big river project if she didn't go around looking for money ? They thought that repairing the river was like making a golden statue for the Buddha in the temple , and that thousands or tens of thousands of taels of silver would be enough? It's really ridiculous . You only see what comes in , but not what goes out.

Cai Yueyuan was also from a poor family, and hated natural disasters and man-made disasters. She couldn't help but think in her heart that if it weren't for this natural disaster , she didn't know what the princess would have planned for those people . She was afraid that she would have to bear the stupid words of these stupid people for the rest of her life. Now, everyone has changed their tone. Amitabha , they finally shut up.

Xie Jiayi also smiled cheerfully: " Yes , it's finally over. " Although there was still a disaster , it did not really damage Dayin's foundation. The money for disaster relief was also ready , and although the national treasury was still in trouble, it finally got through. The 12th year of Yongtai in the previous life, when natural disasters and man-made disasters were gradually approaching the climax, finally passed without any danger.

Thinking of this, how could Xie Jiayi not be happy? She had just received a letter from the palace the other day. Although winter had arrived in the capital, His Majesty had not fallen ill this winter. He said that his appetite had not deteriorated, and he had even told her to pick up some light and delicious snacks from the south and bring them back.

Both disaster relief and river management are on track, and they are about to return to Beijing. For more than half a month, Xie Jiayi really hadn't seen Lu Chenan again. He just came back from the dike and the mountains every day and came to pay his respects. The princess wanted to rest, and Lord Lu just nodded and went back. But the next day, after finishing a day's work, he still came, stood in the afterglow of the setting sun in the south, paid his respects to the princess, and then after listening to Caiyue's obvious excuses, he nodded seriously and asked the princess to rest well.

The winter in the south is different from the damp cold in the north. Caiyue put a cloak on the princess, put the warm hand warmer in her hands, and followed her out the door.

Xie Jiayi, who had been stuck in the account pile for half a month, finally walked out of the courtyard. The once desolate streets were filled with people again, and the houses destroyed by the flood had been repaired and tidied up. Although people still looked miserable, they had hope. As long as the people of Dayin had hope, they could work hard and their lives would get better day by day.

Xie Jiayi brought Caiyue with her, and the plain-dressed guards followed them closely. She had unknowingly reached the dike again. It was time to get off work. The implementation of work-for-relief had allowed many disaster victims who had no place to stay to earn a living to support their families again. At this time, they had all gone to the place at the west end where they were given meals.

The guardrails on the embankment were reinforced, more dense, and repainted. There were special people watching over it, and no one was allowed to get close. The mighty river was restrained again, and now it was glowing a gentle red under the setting sun, flowing quietly into the distance .

Xie Jiayi held the hand warmer and looked forward along the river. She knew there were dangerous rapids and jagged rocks ahead, and further down there were wide mudflats and slow-moving rivers. There were deep mountains on both sides of the slow-moving river, and in the deep mountains there were bursts of birds singing that she couldn't name.

She already knew that the locals called her " blessed with good fortune " . It was not good fortune, but someone was always protecting her amidst the turbulent waters and rocks.

Xie Jiayi turned around and saw that there were not many people on the river bank, so the tall figure in a blue robe was particularly conspicuous. He was squatting with his robe lifted up, pointing at a corner of the river in front, and talking to a young man from the Ministry of Works who was wearing green court robes. The other person nodded frequently and was busy writing down something in the booklet in his hand while listening.



A young girl looked over the railing at the embankment. She probably saw some family members working on the river. She didn't see anyone, but saw two young officials on the other side. The girl seemed stunned. When she came to her senses, her face turned red. She raised her hands to cover her tanned face and ran away in a hurry.

Lu Chenan explained in detail the structure that should be used to measure the angle of the bend, then stood up and looked towards the river.

As if he sensed something, he slowly turned his head and met Xie Jiayi's clear and bright eyes who were looking at him from a distance .

The river breeze blew the hems of his robe and blew her falling cloak.

Xie Jiayi saw the setting sun cast a shadow on Lu Chenan's face, making his eyes and brows look even more gentle and calm.

Lu Chenan saw the evening wind by the river blowing the few strands of hair hanging down from her temples, lingering and winding around her fair and small jaw, full of attachment.

At this moment, they all felt like this was a dream that had never happened.

Lu Chenan thought, I really walked up to her side.

Xie Jiayi thought that her fate had changed and she came to Lord Lu.

No one knew who took the first step. The two finally came together without saying a word. They both looked silently at the silent river, watching the tiny pieces of gold in the twilight swaying in the waves.

„Princess " the last section of the most stable river channel you asked for will be repaired by March next year. " Lu Chenan leaned sideways to help her block most of the wind.

Xie Jiayi nodded, and her voice was full of joy, making the listeners happy too.

" Lord Lu, are you ready to return to Beijing in three days? " Xie Jiayi tilted her head to ask him. Lu Chenan saw the wind blowing her soft hair to her lips. She raised her hand to push her hair aside. The tuft of hair fluttered under her chin, making people want to help her put it behind her ear. Lu Chenan curled up his hands hanging at his side and put them behind his back. He moved his eyes away from her sparkling eyes and the tuft of hair under her chin.

Looking at the river, the broken gold on the river bank is like her sparkling eyes. Looking at the river bank, the weeping willows swaying in the wind are like her naughty hair, the willow branches brush across the river surface and then return, waiting for the wind to blow again, it will brush across the river surface again, stirring the river water, stirring up waves, and then return to its original position as if nothing happened.

The willow branch disturbed the calm surface of the river, but the river was completely unaware. There is no way the river can do anything.

Return to Beijing. Three days later, they will return to Beijing together.

" I'm ready, is the princess ready? " Lu Chenan asked, turning his head to look at Xie Jiayi again. Perhaps because of the dusk, Xie Jiayi felt that there was an expectation in his eyes that she couldn't see clearly. She even understood his questions, but she didn't understand them. However, she felt her heartbeat faster for some reason.

She stroked the hand warmer and said slowly: " Of course it's ready. "

Xie Jiayi heard Lu Chenan's chuckle. She looked up at his quiet profile and saw the corners of his mouth slowly curling up. He said slowly under the setting sun, " I have nothing but this thing to give to you, the princess. Thank you for giving me the Begonia Pendant. "

Throw me a wooden peach, and I will repay you with a jade. It is not a reward, but a token of our everlasting friendship.

You gave me a Begonia pendant, and I gave you a Begonia pendant in return.

Xie Jiayi smiled while holding the hand warmer, stretched out a white and tender little hand, tilted her head, and waited for his " not a reward, but a friendship forever " . Seeing the princess holding out her hand early and waiting for his gift, Lu Chenan couldn't help but smile.

When Xie Jiayi saw the object that Lu Chen placed in her palm, she was stunned.

A piece of warm jade fell into her palm. This was a piece of jade that was rare even in the imperial treasury. To be more precise, she had never seen jade of the same material since she became a princess. It was so warm that it seemed to have been rubbed by people for countless generations. Otherwise, it was hard to imagine how such a smooth jade could exist. It was obviously very hard and precious, but at first glance it looked like flowing water. The most rare thing was that it contained a drop of flowing red, like a crabapple pistil, giving life to the entire crabapple jade sculpture.

Xie Jiayi liked it at first sight. It was her 20th birthday gift. On her 20th birthday, Queen Dayin received countless valuable gifts, but there were only a few that could really make the queen stop and take a look. The gift came from Lord Lu Chenan, the then Junior Secretary of the Dali Temple. This was the most determined courtier who supported the crown prince and the queen. Xie Jiayi naturally asked someone to present his gift. At first sight, Xie Jiayi fell in love with it. In addition to its material, this piece of jade has another peculiarity in its carving. The flower is a crabapple flower, but the leaves are peony leaves on one side and hibiscus leaves on the other. At this time, the seventeen-year-old Xie Jiayi received this gift three years in advance. It was not presented to her by people, but was personally delivered to her by Lord Lu.

This piece of jade seemed to be her destiny, and she unconsciously held it tightly.

In the desolate cliff of time, the moment she saw this piece of jade, Xie Jiayi felt like a lost child, lost in fate again. She even had a moment where she couldn't tell whether all this was real or an illusion, and whether she was in her past life or this life.

Or maybe the previous life was just a dream, or maybe this life is like Zhuang Zhou dreaming of a butterfly.

And who is this person in green clothes in front of me?

She suddenly turned her head to look at the neat embankment and the long southern river stretching into the distance . It was not a beast that swallowed everything, but lay so docilely in the riverbed.

She turned around and looked at the person in front of her. It seemed that the whole world confused her, but this person was standing in front of her and personally gave her the Begonia Blood Jade.

She murmured, " Lord Lu? " Her voice was like a lost child who had been trapped for a long, long time.

It was soft and confusing, and it broke one's heart to hear it.

At that moment, Xie Jiayi's eyes seemed to contain all the heaviness of the world, and yet she seemed to have nothing. She was a lost child, a wandering traveler. She seemed to be unable to find her way home, nor herself. Seeing this, one would want to hold her in his arms and stop her from wandering.

Lu Chenan clenched his hands behind his back and said, " I am here. "

He didn't dare to look into the eyes of the person in front of him again. He just lowered his head to look at the corner of her cloak covered with white fur that was blown by the north wind, and asked her softly: " Princess, do you like it? " He was asking about the Begonia blood jade, but he was asking about more than just the jade.

" I like it. " Xie Jiayi's answer was about this piece of blood jade, but she didn't know if it was just this piece of blood jade.

She felt a little sad.

But she didn't understand why she was so sad when everything was fine.

The dusk deepened a little, and night fell. Perhaps it was the arrival of night that made people's expressions hidden in the faint night. Lu Chenan said in an extremely relaxed tone:

" Princess, this piece of jade is the only thing my mother left me. "

" She said, let me give it to someone I love in the future. "

His voice was very soft, but it sounded like a roar to Xie Jiayi's ears.

## Chapter 58

" Princess , this piece of jade is the only thing my mother left me. "

" She said, let me give it to someone I love in the future. "

Xie Jiayi was stunned when she heard this. The jade in her hand seemed to be hot . She suspected that she could not hold it , but she held it tighter. She held the jade tightly against the heater . Perhaps because she pressed too hard, she felt that her hand was very hot , but she could not tell whether the heat came from the heater or the blood jade in her palm.

" But ... but ... you gave it to me. " Xie Jiayi asked stupidly, you gave it to me in my previous life.

Lu Chenan chuckled again, his thumb rubbing a tiny cut on his index finger, which was caused by carving jade. His tone was still relaxed , as if it was not a big deal, and even a little indifferent: " Yes , I gave it to the princess. "

After a pause , he asked, " So , Princess , do you still like it now? " His feelings were clear and heavy , not a joke, and not at all lighthearted.

If his feelings are so strong , Princess , do you still like him?

Not just a qualified county horse , but a county horse that pleases her.

Happy.

Sometimes this is not a good thing. If you are pleased with it , you will think about it , have expectations , and even feel resentment. Lu Chenan asked Xie Jiayi , does she still like it like this ?

Does she want more?

His voice was still cheerful and smiling, and no one could tell that he was nervous.

" But ... the one you like should be your cousin, right? " Xie Jiayi was confused. She thought of Lord Lu in her previous life. The prince was weak and didn't look like he would live long, and she, the queen, was jealous and domineering, the most notorious woman in the entire Dayin. Which scholar and which serious minister would not frown when they mentioned them mother and son? And the dignified and virtuous Concubine Zhang, who was on good terms with officials and noble ladies, and her healthy and lovely eldest prince, although not the legitimate son, were also the eldest. The most important thing was the physique of the legitimate son – everyone in the court knew that her Ji'er had been raised with medicine since childhood and would not live for more than a few years.

But Lord Lu chose to stand for the queen's legitimate son. Lord Lu, who had always been noble, stood at the center of the storm and on the opposite side of the majority. But until his death, he did not change his original intention.

At that time, Xie Jiayi was having a hard time supporting herself in the palace. She could not imagine how the baseless Mr. Lu lived outside the palace and how much slander he faced.

Mr. Lu seldom smiled. Once the Queen saw Mr. Lu's smile, she realized at that time that this important official in the court, who clearly had a promising future, was firmly on the side of her and Ji'er, the queen and prince, who had no future. Still just a young man in his twenties.

But from the moment he stood beside them, his road ahead became difficult. He has to face the suppression of the princes with deep roots like the British Duke and the Taining House. He has to face the shame of Song Ziming, an official from a humble background who is known as a leader of Qingliu. He has to face countless slanders and slights.

Everyone's impression of Lord Lu is that he is taciturn. His outstanding talent and ability even make people forget that he is a handsome third place winner. In the end, he was only capable and silent, but it was a pity that he stood on the wrong side and took the wrong path, wasting his natural talent. This was the final verdict of Lord Lu by the court.

But at this time, Lord Lu is still such a gentle and smiling person.

What if it was her from the beginning ... It turns out that even in that life, there was someone who was always looking at her, and never changed his mind?

Everything has a reason. It turns out that there has never been a cousin. Has it always been her?

Xie Jiayi's throat was choked and she couldn't speak. She was afraid that she would burst into tears as soon as she opened her mouth.

But she didn't know that even though she didn't say anything, tears were already rolling down her cheeks.

In her previous life, she did not live a good life. In her previous life, Lord Lu was such a good person, but he did not live a good life.

Lu Chenan suddenly realized that Xie Jiayi was crying. At this time, the night was getting darker. There were people patrolling beside the embankment, some holding torches and some carrying lanterns. He could not see the people clearly, but only clusters of distant lights passing through the darkness.

His hand, which was raised uncontrollably, stopped halfway and fell back to his side. His voice was low and gentle, as if coaxing a wronged child. He said: " Princess, don't cry. Tell me what you want. "

Xie Jiayi cried so hard that her whole body was shaking. She tried to hold back her tears but couldn't stop sobbing. She said, " Lord Lu, please be nice to me this time. "

Her voice was nasal, delicate and soft, like a soft plea and a strong assurance: " This time, I want Master Lu to be well. "

Hearing her words, Lu Chenan was shocked.

"All right." These are just three simple words.

He was silent for a long time before he slowly replied: " I am willing to keep the princess safe . I wish the princess a safe life . "

Xie Jiayi burst into laughter, yes, they will all be fine this time. She is here, she saved Qian Yingying and her son, saved Hu Jiao, and saved the lives of thousands of people in the south. She will save the emperor uncle, and she will also save the 25-year-old Lord Lu.

A peaceful life , no one knows that the most naughty and mischievous Princess Kunyi just wants a peaceful life .

She won't be lost suddenly, and the people around her won't leave.

Lu Chenan felt someone tugging at his sleeves, and the sudden warmth made his fingers, which had been chilled by the wind, tremble.

It was the warmth of the princess protected by the stove and the cloak, approaching his coldness.

Na Nuan approached and left immediately, followed by the princess's delicate and crisp voice, with a little sob after crying: " We should go downstairs. I saw the patrol lanterns over there stopped there several times and looked here. " Probably knowing that it was someone from above, that person must be wondering why the nobleman from the capital would stand in such a place with nothing for so long, but they didn't dare to get closer, and the candles in their hands hesitated and stopped there.

Lu Chenan pinched the corner of his sleeve, then quickly let go, turned his eyes away awkwardly, and led the princess and her servant down the embankment from another gentler slope.

Since then, everyone around the princess knew that their mansion would have a prince, and when they saw Lord Lu again, they smiled more enthusiastically than the other. Even when they saw Mingxin, the people in the mansion would come forward to say hello and exchange pleasantries with him no matter how far away they were.

Mingxin has calmed down now. You know, when he first learned about the relationship between his son and the princess, the first thing he thought of was the " face-shou " that the servants of the Lu Mansion had been talking about . Mingxin was so anxious that he scratched his head and couldn't calm down. After all, everyone in the capital knew that the princess didn't have many close friends, except for an inconspicuous daughter of a merchant family and the most ridiculous eldest princess of Dayin. Everyone knew that the eldest princess had a face-shou, but no one dared to say much. The eldest princess was not a person with a good temper, otherwise how could she be so compatible with Princess Kunyi.

Before Mingxin could find out from his son, he learned from the people in the Princess's Mansion that his son had been regarded as the Marquis of the County, the legal husband! Mingxin was very happy, and he would teach those gossiping servants of the Lu Mansion a lesson. What did they think of their son? Even the Princess was not the kind of person who wanted a good-looking young man as her lover!

The princess wants to marry in a formal ceremony. Bah, bah, bah, no ... the princess wants to marry in a formal ceremony. His son wants to be the princess's husband in a formal ceremony! The princess and her entourage completed their mission. Except for some of them who stayed behind to continue monitoring local disaster relief and river management, the rest of them returned to the capital in a mighty manner.

As soon as he arrived in the capital, he received the reward.

All the officials who were on duty were rewarded, especially the new top scholar Lu Chenan, who was promoted two levels from the sixth rank. What was even more enviable was that he could directly walk in the Majesty's study and draft imperial edicts for the Majesty. This meant he was now a person in front of the emperor.

Before the nobles in the capital had time to feel jealous, even greater rewards were bestowed upon them.

Princess Kunyi was promoted to the rank of super-rank princess, and before Kunyi, she was given the title of auxiliary state. His Majesty personally wrote "Da Yin Fuxing" and personally acknowledged that the princess had protected the stability of the country and had "merits in assisting the country".

The princess's legendary achievement had spread throughout Dayin along with the month-long torrential rain in the south in September. Even the north had heard of the legendary princess's deeds.

Beidi Zuo Xiang lamented that a great opportunity was ruined by a child's stubbornness. They thought that such a natural disaster would be enough to destabilize the entire Dayin, and that would be Beidi's chance. But no one expected that someone would rebuild the river project in the south on his own. They thought it was just a playful reconstruction, and they were looking forward to the news of the breach in the south from the informants lurking in Dayin, but the rebuilt river actually withstood it.

The bearded left prime minister sighed again and again, thinking that it was indeed the Xie family. Even a girl had the ability to block the way of the Beidi people and become a major threat to them. The Beidi leader, who was sitting on the throne with a big horse and a golden sword, regretted losing such a good opportunity. The natural disaster that had not happened in a hundred years did not cause chaos in Dayin.

He looked at the picture of Dayin hanging on the wall of the study and recited: "Autumn osmanthus, ten miles of lotus, wind curtains and green curtains, and ten thousand families." Such a rich and fertile place has been longed for since he was the eldest prince. He had already made a vow to the Holy Spirit of the grassland: he must whip the whip to the south and see the prosperity of Qiantang with his own eyes! He wanted his people in the north to ride horses in the rich Dayin, and no longer have to live a homeless life. The vast Dayin will become a horse

pasture for them, the northern barbarians. His deep eyes looked deeply at the picture, and he took a long breath, the place that haunted his soul.

The Beidi leader stood up and walked around a few times before slowly settling down. He looked up at the Zuo Xiang and said, " There will always be a chance. I don't believe that Dayin will always be peaceful. " At this point he and the Zuo Xiang smiled at each other. It was impossible for Dayin to be peaceful.

" Emperor Dayin has always been missing the seal of appointment, one of the eight seals of the emperor. " The left prime minister said meaningfully.

A royal emperor who never received the imperial seal, and a folk hidden king who held the imperial seal, were they still afraid that Dayin would not be in chaos? The Beidi leader looked back at the scene and laughed, " Who wouldn't want such a kingdom, even if it 's just half of it. " He didn't believe that the legitimate heir who held the imperial seal would not be tempted! That would be their Beidi's chance.

He took a deep sniff, as if he could smell the fragrance of the lotus ponds in Dayin. The food in Dayin was more exquisite than theirs, and even the women in Dayin were more charming than theirs. The Beidi Wolf King slowly twisted his neck, waiting for an opportunity, and then pounced on it – he gritted his teeth and bit into Dayin, the piece of fat meat that the surrounding tribes coveted.

Thousands of miles of fertile land, where the strong live!

In the old part of the Xie family army in the north, Generals Ji De and Zhao Yi also heard the news from the capital and became even more excited. With the Xie family's main branch almost exterminated and all the leading generals of the Xie family killed in battle, the Xie family army had already been depressed and was constantly dispatched by people with ulterior motives. After more than ten years, the Xie family army had already been in pieces. The only ones left who followed General Xie in the past were Generals Ji De and Zhao Yi. For so many years, they have been pulling the brothers of the Xie family army under various oppressions. When they were about to lose control, they finally contacted the princess in the capital.

From then on, they also had someone to back them up.

Especially in the past two years, Princess Kunyi's caravans have spread all over the North and the West, and Princess Kunyi's reputation has spread in the North. Anyone can say that Princess Kunyi is not good, but the people of the North cannot. Anyone who dares to say so will be beaten by the remaining members of the Xie family army. This is their General Xie's daughter, how can she not be good!

Especially this time, as the caravan brought news from the capital, all the old members of the Xie family army were even more proud, and they kept saying " That's our princess " , " That's our general's daughter " , " I used to stand guard for the little princess " , " I also protected the little princess and the little general during the Lantern Festival and temple fair "..... At this point, the person who was speaking suddenly stopped and drank the big bowl of wine at hand, cursing the fucking sky that could freeze people into ice lumps.

They were all lieutenants now. They were the personal soldiers in front of General Xie's tent. At that time, they all thought that General Xie would always lead them and drive the Northern Di and Western Rong back to their nests, so that they would never dare to show up again. At that

time, they were all confident. They had General Xie. The young master, who was only a teenager, was also a better student than his master. Not only did he inherit the general's talents, but he also learned everything. He inherited a good brain from their royal princess mistress. At a young age, he sat in the big tent with the general and was able to come up with his own strategic ideas in front of the sand table.

They all thought ...

Later, without the general, the once powerful Xie family army was ostracized and stepped on by everyone.

" Fuck him, we can stand up straight in the future, we still have the princess! Who said that the Xie family is extinct? We still have the title of assistant princess Kunyi! " The man who spoke had a dark face and red eyes, probably because he drank too much. There was no other way, the north was too cold, the charcoal fire could not keep up, and everyone had liquor hidden in their arms and tents.

This man's name is Jiang Gan. He was one of the ten guards who escorted the young princess and the young prince to the temple fair. The other nine were all dead. He was able to survive because he was sent out as a scout by the general. He couldn't think about the city being suppressed that night. One day, he thought, one day he would cut off the head of the Tata leader Tarkdon for the general, and use the blood of the Tata tribe to sacrifice to the Xie family and the people of Sucheng.

Jiang Gan, who was drunk, could not help but howl, which seemed to be shouting, but also seemed to be crying.

A soldier under General Wang who was passing by in the distance curled his lips and said with disdain: " It's that group of people again, they are a bunch of lunatics! " The old logistics veteran who followed him did not agree with him this time. He said after a while: " You don't understand if you haven't been there. " You have never been a member of the Xie Family Army, so you don't understand the morale of the Xie Family Army; you have not been there that night in Sucheng, so you don't understand the hatred that is always in the hearts of the survivors of the Xie Family Army.

The north wind whistled past, like a howl, like a roar.

And in the distant capital, even in the bitterly cold winter, the aristocrats' warm rooms were still filled with flowers carefully grown in greenhouses, blooming in abundance.

The scent of flowers is intoxicating and the warmth makes one want to sweat. One always has to unbutton the top button of his casual robe to feel comfortable.

The Duke of Ying, who had already completely shrunk, carefully pondered the imperial edict of Emperor Yongtai : " Assisting the country, your majesty is really ..." Since ancient times, only the eldest princess who reigned in the court could be given the title of "Assisting the country". What on earth did your majesty want to give such a little girl? The worldly-wise Duke of Ying didn't understand. There were many ways to reward, but your majesty just gave her the title of " Assisting the country " . But no one objected. The princess's contribution was really great. Great and legendary, such a royal family member is exactly the object of people's pursuit and obedience.



The Duke of England, who had aged completely in an instant, had to cheer up and live. Once he died, the Duke's Mansion would become a Marquis' Mansion. So now he paid more attention to health preservation. While reminding himself to stay calm, he slowly said, "I wanted to step on it to help our Duke's Mansion move up, but I didn't expect that a yellow-haired girl would step on it to help us move up." As for them, they fell down this ditch and might not be able to get up for twenty years.

If a family is without people, it will lose its foundation.

Princess Kunyi's kick really crushed the Duke's Mansion. If it weren't for the handwritten cane bestowed by the late emperor, she would have been almost crushed to death. In this way, the hereditary succession was changed to a downgraded hereditary title. The Duke of Ying, who was so angry that he could not show his emotions, gritted his teeth and cursed.

The heavy rain that day was a pain in his nerves. He first begged for the rain to stop, and then he really hoped that the rain would continue to fall and break the princess's dam. Maybe they would still have a chance. Unfortunately, the weather never goes as planned ...

The Duke of England sat down dejectedly, stroking the armrest of the carved yellow rosewood chair over and over again: It doesn't matter, they lost this round, but as long as the prince and the queen are here, sooner or later those who have been taken down can come back, and those who have come back can be promoted again. There is a long way to go, even if it is twenty or thirty years later, they can always get up again.

He looked at the Crown Prince and eldest grandson sitting on his left. Both of them had been very depressed recently because they had lost their jobs one after another. Their usually well-behaved son had acted up a few times, not to mention their young grandson.

If it were in the past, he would have punished him according to the family rules, but now he can't do it. These are the only people in their Wang family, and they can't afford to have any accidents happen to them.

At this time, the person he sent out to inquire about the news came back. When the Duke of England heard the news, his drooping eyelids trembled.

Your Majesty, you really gave the copper mine to the princess!  
is simply——

What are mountains of gold and silver? These are mountains of gold and silver!

His gaze suddenly fell on the eldest grandson, and the grandson, who was sitting obediently, was startled. He was originally leaning listlessly because of the lost job, but when his grandfather looked at him, he immediately sat up straight.

The Duke of England suddenly saw a glimmer of possibility: the most outstanding thing about his children was not their intelligence, although each of them had extraordinary intelligence, but the most outstanding thing was their appearance.

This was true for his two daughters, and also for his children and grandchildren.

Why didn't he think of it earlier, if the princess didn't marry the prince, why couldn't the princess marry the grandson of Duke Ying? If he had thought of it earlier, there wouldn't be so many frictions and misunderstandings ... Duke Ying looked at his grandson, who was still outstanding even though he was a little depressed. Among all the talented people in the capital, who else was more qualified than his grandson to be the princess of Kunyi's harem!

It is better to reconcile enemies than to create them. The princess just doesn't understand. There should be someone around her who understands.

Xie Jiayi from the Princess's Mansion sneezed and muttered, " Don't tell me I caught a cold just because I opened the window for a while. If Madam knows, she'll nag me again. "

Then he murmured: " It could be Lord Lu who is talking about me. " After that, he heard Cai Xing beside him couldn't help but burst out laughing. Xie Jiayi said confidently: " What's so funny? If someone talks about you, you will sneeze. Someone is talking about me. " Why can't it be Lord Lu ...

The author has something to say:

Three autumn osmanthus, ten miles of lotus flowers, wind curtains and green curtains, and ten thousand homes.

Adapted from: " Wind curtains and green curtains, scattered across ten thousand houses. " "

There are three autumn osmanthus trees and ten miles of lotus flowers. " – Liu Yong

In "Helin Yulu", it is said that when Jin Zhuliang heard the song, he was attracted by the " autumn osmanthus and ten miles of lotus flowers " , so he decided to cross the river.

## Chapter 59

As soon as the Duke of England came up with this idea , he didn't expect that the first person to oppose it would be the grandson of the emperor. He almost jumped up. Marrying a princess? Everyone in the capital knows that if you marry a princess, you can't take concubines . You have to be secretive about everything. If the people in the princess's mansion find out everything , I'm afraid His Majesty will be the first to be punished. Apart from other things , what will happen to his beloved daughter if he marries a princess?

He fell in love with her at first sight . The courtesan who performed arts but not her body by the Qinhuai River was the most noble and strong-willed. He had to work hard to get her to agree and follow him back to Beijing . She was determined not to marry into the Duke's mansion and had said from the beginning that she would never be someone's concubine. If the wife he married could not tolerate her , she would leave without saying a word and would never bother to please others or be disliked by them.

But when he heard that the princess had acquired the copper mine , and thought of the trade routes that went north and south , the grandson's heart was deeply moved. After marrying the princess , even if Qingqing wanted to leave, he could build a golden house to hide her , and then the most valuable things in the world would be presented to Qingqing. It is said that there is a pearl as big as a pigeon egg in the princess's dowry , and every woman who sees it will be moved by it. Even if Qingqing is arrogant, she is still a woman after all . When the time comes, he will get the pearl and give it to her. Although he cannot give her the status she wants , he can give her a treasure that is enough to move any woman in the world.

As for the princess's disapproval , there is no such reason in the world. Not to mention that His Majesty will not live forever , even if His Majesty is alive , his wife has no children. At that time,

he does not believe that the princess will still have a clear conscience and not let him take a concubine. At that time, I am afraid that the princess will personally arrange it for him.

There is a way to make a woman childless.

Wang Jun, the grandson of the Duke of England, stroked his chin and nodded.

The grandson was confident that there was no woman in the world that he could not impress.

Even Qingqing, who was so beautiful that many dignitaries wanted to see her face but could not, he also moved her heart and brought this beautiful flower to the capital. Not to mention that there were always many noble girls in the capital who wanted to be his wife.

He was spoiled by women, but he did have the capital.

On this day, the palace Laba Banquet was once again made by Emperor Yongtai like a matchmaking meeting. All the talents of the right age in the capital were invited! Of course, it couldn't be too explicit, and some noble girls of the right age had to be invited symbolically. The virtuous concubine helped to make the list. Emperor Yongtai himself pondered the list of young talents. He had to settle the marriage of the princess while he could still hold on, and it would be best to do it quickly.

Not only that, Emperor Yongtai also brought Lu Chenan, who he had selected for a long time, with him, especially for the princess to see. So even though it was winter, the white plum trees were filled with young men in gorgeous clothes who wished they could wear spring clothes, and beauties with jingling jewelry.

This was probably the most colorful time in the garden in winter. The expensive incense worn by the young talents and noble ladies masked the scent of the plum blossoms, causing Xie Jiayi to sneeze several times in a row.

She covered her mouth and nose with a handkerchief, and muttered: " The guy who just passed by must have fumigated me all night. " The fragrance was so strong that even the usually steady Caiyue couldn't help sneezing. These gentlemen were going too far ... really too much. Xie Jiayi finally found a place under a plum tree where no one was standing. Before she could even stand still, she saw another young man from an unknown family coming over. This time, she didn't know if he was discussing disaster relief, the river, or his lofty ambitions ...

She never expected that the person who came was Wang Jun, the grandson of the Duke of Yingguo. Xie Jiayi called Ruyi, and Ruyi hurriedly moved closer to the princess.

This time, her feud with the Duke of England was dead, dead. But she wondered: Why, has it come to the point where her own grandson needs to fight? In fact, the nobles are not much different from the women in the harem. Even though they are fighting like black-eyed chickens, they still have to smile when they meet. Secretly, they want to slap each other to death, or scratch each other's face, but when they meet, they are still good to each other, and the sister is better than the younger sister.

Look, Wang Jun is doing the same thing. He's coming here with a smile on his face.

He is very polite, with a charming look in his eyes.

Wait ... Xie Jiayi figured out something was wrong. This was either a smile or spring in the eyes!

Wang Jun had a pair of peach blossom eyes that looked like he was drunk. Usually, there was always a hint of impatience in them, but when he looked at someone, it turned into a hint of affection.

Wang Jun did not approach like the other young masters. He just called her "Princess" from a distance and then looked at her silently for a while, with watery eyes and a smile on his lips. Everyone has left, but it seems that vague smile is still there.

Xie Jiayi thought, this is a master! It's a pity that he is a bit ugly ... She never thought that the Duke of Ying would have a plan to attack her, so they can only fight openly. In Wang Jun's spring smile, Xie Jiayi finally understood the saying: In the face of huge interests, let alone conflicts and frictions, even the hatred of killing one's father, one can still sit together and drink and eat meat with a smile.

Although there was no hatred between her and Wang Jun for killing her father, his uncles, cousins, and brothers also died indirectly at her hands. Even so, he could still laugh like this? Zhang Jinyu, who was in the hands of the Duke's Mansion, had been beaten by her people and her face was swollen. The places where she had kneeled were almost as big as Su Yan in her previous life. In her previous life, Song Ziming hated her so much that his eyes were red. It didn't make sense that the Duke's Mansion wanted to marry her?

She was afraid that she had misunderstood, so she asked the people around her: "Did you see Wang Jun's grandson just now——"

Ruyi Caiyue nodded, "Yes." Princess, you are not mistaken.

Caixing said: "The meaning is too obvious."

Bu Bu said: "It's so hot that it almost smells good."

Ruyi looked at Bubu: "Where did you hear these nonsense? How dare you say them in front of the princess?"

The princess said: "Ruyi, the description of 'bubu' is very appropriate. The simple talents of the common people always make people's eyes light up."

Ruyi: "The princess is right."

Xie Jiayi looked at Wang Jun, who had clearly walked away but turned back to smile meaningfully, and shook her head, "He dares to want my money." Is he overestimating himself, or is he looking down on her, the princess's knowledge and experience? The eldest princess also has a male lover with such eyes, and he is not even in the top three among the eldest princess's male lovers.

Caiyue and the others disagreed with the princess's statement and said, "The master is so beautiful, these people must be attracted by her beauty."

If it comes to flattery, it would be her Caiyue and Ruyi, because every time they praise her, they do so sincerely, leaving her no room for doubt.

Just like this time, Xie Jiayi also felt that what they said made some sense, but our sober princess still sighed: "You are only half right. This princess is beautiful," she sighed again, "but in front of the wealth I have, my beauty pales in comparison." They must have been attracted by her money, especially the Duke of Ying, who was probably attracted by her mines. Except for Lord Lu, she didn't have this money in her previous life, but Lord Lu also took a fancy to her.

She said disdainfully: "You look like this and you dare to dream of this princess's money. Tsk, man!" Your name is too self-confidence.

Xie Jiayi suddenly felt that the surroundings were unusually quiet. Something was wrong. It was because Caiyue did not show up in time. Caixing should have caught up by now.

She looked back with a smile, and her smile was like the Jinshui River frozen by the cold winter.

Xie Jiayi blinked, and the people in front of her were still there.

She felt like she was sealed away and forgot to even move.

Behind him was the living Majesty, with the living Lord Lu, Xu Shixing, and Eunuch Xi. The Crown Prince sneered, and although he immediately returned to his public appearance, Xie Jiayi knew him too well, and that sneer was not about who he was. What was Eunuch Xi doing hiding behind him, why was his head hanging so low, but his shoulders were shaking capriciously?

She didn't even dare to look closely at Lord Lu's expression at this moment.

Twelve words floated through her mind: " Ice Soul and Snow Soul ", " Moral Elegance ", " Dignified and Gentle " . Then they burst out one after another ...

Emperor Yongtai was the emperor after all, so he didn't need to hold it back. He first burst out laughing and waved his hand at Xie Jiayi, whose face was slowly turning red, which meant that it was nothing. But his majesty's smile was only slightly restrained, as if it was put into a bag, but the bag seemed to be unable to bear the weight and broke, and Xie Jiayi heard his majesty's hahaha laughter.

She felt that she shouldn't have a soul at this moment. If she didn't have a soul, she wouldn't have to be so embarrassed.

Obviously everyone was trying to hold back their laughter, or laugh loudly, and no one gave her a way out ...

Xie Jiayi finally regained control of her body. She stepped forward and bowed solemnly: " Your Majesty, Your Highness the Crown Prince. "

She never went to see Lord Lu. As long as she didn't, nothing would happen.

But Xie Jiayi still wanted to cry: this was her unmarried prince, she hadn't fully displayed her rich soul, she hadn't fully displayed her truth, kindness and beauty ...

His Majesty waved his hand and called to her: " Why are you hiding here? What are you talking about? " After His Majesty asked, the smile on his face, which had been controlled, burst out uncontrollably.

What can Xie Jiayi do? She can only play dumb. Even if the dignity is dropped and broken into pieces, you have to pick it up even if you can't pick it up.

" I didn't say anything. " Xie Jiayi blinked, innocent and innocent, and added: " It was windy just now, so you may not have heard it clearly. "

She tried her best, but out of the corner of her eye she saw Lord Lu tilt his head, cover his lips with his fist, and cough slightly.

Fortunately, His Majesty loved her and said with a smile: " That's right, there are many people in the garden ... " Perhaps His Majesty realized that there were many people in the garden at this time, but Xie Jiayi chose a good place, no one and quiet, " There are many birds, chirping , and with a gust of wind, it is really difficult to hear what people say clearly ... Even if you can hear it, it is easy to mishear it. "

" My dear, don't you think so? "

Xie Jiayi looked at her uncle the emperor with her dark eyes. She knew that His Majesty had done his best for the sake of her reputation as a girl in the boudoir ... His Majesty had not made excuses for someone so seriously for a long time ...

And even named names.

Lu Chenan replied: " Your Majesty is right. " His smiling eyes turned to Xie Jiayi, and saw that she had her hands clasped in front of her body, and her right hand was unconsciously rubbing the base of her left hand. Needless to say, that place must have turned red again. When she was nervous, she simply lost her sense of importance to herself.

Xie Jiayi looked back at him blankly and exerted a little more force with her right hand.

She thought that in Lord Lu's eyes, she probably didn't perform as well as in her previous life.

No matter how bad she was in her previous life, she was always graceful and dignified every time she appeared in front of him, she thought. In this life, grace and dignity seemed to be getting further and further away from her . Would Lord Lu still think well of a princess without her packaging ...

The prince beside the emperor raised his eyelids and glanced at the opposite side calmly.

Xie Jiayi originally wanted to hide away and look for Lord Lu. She did find a quiet place and met Lord Lu, but it wasn't supposed to be like this.

As soon as she was able to leave, Xie Jiayi bowed and slipped away from this embarrassing place with her group.

The three people behind her watched her back as she led the others away, passing through the plum trees and going far away. Emperor Yongtai said, " Ziyin, " he called Lu Chenan by his name, " go see the princess for me and tell her not to get cold in the cold weather. She is sick and refuses to take medicine, which gives me a headache. "

Lu Chenan bowed and accepted the order.

Xu Shixing suddenly felt as if a cold wind was blowing, but the plum branches clearly did not move, and the diligent and careful Eunuch Xi did not step forward to remind His Majesty to avoid the wind.

He felt as if he was alone in a cold storm. Everything around him was fine, but he felt freezing cold even though he was wrapped in his cloak.

Your Majesty, the person has been chosen.

His expression remained unchanged, but he unconsciously clenched his teeth.

However, I didn't expect that not only His Majesty had chosen the person, but Changchun Palace had also chosen the person.

## Chapter 60

When Lu Chenan caught up with Xie Jiayi , she was standing by the rockery, listening to the nobles in front of her talking about Lord Lu, the son of a merchant who had made it through the Dragon Gate. She had sent the people who followed her far behind her, with only Ruyi standing half a step behind her .

Lu Chenan had heard such words many times since he came back from the south . He had also heard worse things , which were nothing more than saying that he was a clinging man,

saying that he was just a poor concubine who lived in a stable and was not wanted by the Lu family. He lowered his head and smiled , and stopped Xie Jiayi before she whipped out her whip and rushed out.

Sure enough, the people who were talking loudly, laughing and cursing suddenly stopped talking like ducks with their necks stepped on. It seemed that they were not mocking Lu Chenan just now. After the usual greetings, they looked at the princess's face and said goodbye awkwardly and walked to the front.

Xie Jiayi waved the small whip, " Why are you stopping me? " You all speak so rudely , you deserve a beating!

Lu Chenan raised his eyes to look at her , and suddenly whispered: " Princess , I have silver , lots and lots of it. " Apart from Xie Jiayi , probably only Ruyi could hear it.

Xie Jiayi looked at Lu Chenan suspiciously, then looked at Ruyi . She suspected that Lord Lu was coming to laugh at her for showing off her wealth just now ... No way ...

If not , what does it mean to say that he has money in front of a princess like her who owns a mine ?

Lu Chenan didn't explain much. He just took out a voucher and handed it to Xie Jiayi.

Xie Jiayi took it and took a look , and her eyes immediately widened: This is a note payable on demand from the largest gold bank in Dayin . This is the highest-grade one in their bank . It is estimated that the entire Dayin has not received any. several people.

She looked at Lu Chenan in confusion: This is Mr. Lu, who is known for his coldness . He ... Xie Jiayi felt that the Lu Chenan she knew was not compatible with the Mr. Lu in her previous life ... He had money , he did have a lot of it, but obviously, Lord Lu didn't want anyone else to know that.

Xie Jiayi lowered her voice and asked, " Did your mother leave it to you? " Even though the Lu family was one of the four largest merchants in the south, they would not give such a certificate to a concubine's son. Could it be that his mother's identity was not simple?

" It's my father. " Lu Chenan said lightly.

Obviously, he didn't want to talk about this topic any more. Xie Jiayi only knew that the Lu family was one of the four major merchants in Jiangnan, but she didn't expect that they had such great power. You have to know that this level of credentials of this gold shop requires not only a lot of silver, but also connections.

She didn't ask any more questions, but silently handed the bill back to Lu Chenan. She tilted her head and got to know her Lord Lu again.

After Lu Chenan took it, he raised his hand and took the red crabapple purse embroidered with gold thread hanging on Xie Jiayi's waist. He opened the purse with his slender fingers, put the folded bill into the purse, and leaned over to help her tie the purse back.

" Princess, please keep it ... We—— " The word " we " seemed to burn his mouth. Lu Chenan paused for a moment and continued, " We will need it. "

Xie Jiayi thought to herself, "I don't lack money, so why would I need Lord Lu's money?" Almost immediately, she understood what Lu Chenan meant.

She looked away from him, and randomly whipped the rocks with a whip, muttering, " Okay, I'll keep it for you first. "

Lu Chenan glanced at her and smiled.

Xie Jiayi couldn't help laughing.

From a distance , Gao Sheng lowered his head like a quail, following behind Xu Shixing, who was wearing a bright yellow prince's robe. They were farther away from the two people over there, and couldn't hear what they were saying, but they saw the princess blushing and smiling as she walked towards them.

Xu Shixing stared straight ahead without blinking, without moving or speaking.

Gaosheng felt hot on his upper body, and his feet were frozen numb from standing there motionless.

At this time, a young eunuch came over, sweating profusely. He was from the East Palace, and it seemed that he had something urgent to ask His Highness. Gao Sheng waved his hand and asked him to be more gentle, so as not to offend His Highness at this time. The young eunuch immediately understood and slowed down his steps. When he came to the front, he walked even more lightly, with a look of anxiety on his face, and whispered the matter.

Gao Sheng cried out in his heart, why did the Prince go to Changchun Palace at this time? He hesitated for a moment, wondering how to tell the prince.

Then I heard the prince in front of me say calmly: " What's the matter? Tell me. "

After hearing Gao Sheng's reply, Xu Shixing looked at the two people beside the rockery again, then turned and headed towards Changchun Palace.

After hearing what Concubine De said, Xu Shixing, who usually had little expression, showed an incredible look and asked: " Matchmaking? " He suspected that there was something wrong with his ears.

However, Defei disagreed, as if she was talking about an ordinary court affair instead of asking the Crown Prince to match Xie Jiayi and Wang Jun. She said seriously: " I have been thinking about this for a while, and this is indeed a good idea. With the temper of the princess, your mother was afraid that you would be wronged if you were to be the Crown Princess. Now that Jun'er is willing to marry the princess for the sake of the family and for us mother and son, it is a good idea. " However, it would be unfair to Jun'er, because Princess Kunyi really has a bad temper and is not liked by others.

But it doesn't matter, Defei thought, even if they suffer for a while, she would not let the Wang family suffer forever.

Xu Shixing simply thought it was ridiculous, but whether it was Concubine De, Aunt Liu behind her, or Mingpei standing next to Aunt Liu, they all looked serious, as if this was nothing out of the ordinary, just a little difficult to deal with ...

He frowned slightly, and even suspected that maybe he was the only abnormal person, and maybe he had started to have a seizure. Otherwise, why did they all consider this matter so naturally and seriously, but no one thought that this proposal was absurd and ridiculous.

Good idea?

Is this an idea that a normal person could come up with?

But it was clear that they were all normal people. They were his grandfather, his cousin, his mother, the nanny who watched him grow up, and his cousin who sacrificed her life to save him ...



The initial sense of absurdity faded away, and Xu Shixing's voice remained the same, cold and reserved, " I'm afraid the princess won't agree. "

" So you want me to tell you. The princess has grown up in the palace, how many people has she met? What does she know? Jun'er used to keep his distance from her, and the princess has never met him. You should find some opportunities for them to meet. Didn't mother say that Jun'er is so sweet and considerate, how could the princess not like him? Mother still understands the mind of a young girl better than you do. "

Xu Shixing felt that every word in this speech was harsh. Just hearing it made his heart ache, but he just frowned, as if he was a normal person discussing normal things with these people, and said seriously: " I'm afraid they are not suitable. "

It seemed that Concubine De had never thought of a princess becoming a crown princess before. She was only thinking about how to make it happen. When she heard the word " inappropriate " , she didn't care at all. " As long as Jun'er is willing, there is no such thing as appropriate or inappropriate. "

Ming Pei beside him smiled softly and said, " Isn't your highness willing? "

Her voice sounded a little strange, perhaps because she was afraid that others would notice her new teeth, so she tried to cover them up when she spoke, making her voice sound shrill and not as calm and proper as before.

Before Xu Shixing could say anything, Concubine De immediately raised her eyebrows and said, " Why wouldn't the prince be unwilling ... The princess is more important now than before. If the princess marries into the Duke's Mansion, the Fourth Prince will be completely unable to make any waves. Concubine Xian and the others have picked several men to prepare for the princess. They are so funny. Each of them can be considered a son of a marquis, but compared to Jun'er ..." Concubine De smiled contemptuously, " The princess is unkind to us, and we have to win her over if we can. We can't be unjust. How could the prince be unwilling ..." Suddenly thinking of another possibility, Concubine De's eyelids jumped, her voice became a little sharp, and she looked at her son probingly: " You don't want to? "

She would not let go of any change in her son's face, and she would never allow that to happen. Her son could marry Xie Jiayi, but he would never be controlled by Xie Jiayi.

Xu Shixing's expression remained calm, and he said, " The princess won't agree. "

The prince's indifference made Concubine De feel relieved, but his confidence hurt her heart, as if her nephew from her mother's family was too unbearable. She snorted, " I don't believe that the princess can pick a better candidate than Jun'er in the whole capital! "

Xu Shixing's temple suddenly jumped: She might have really picked the right one for him.

Concubine De was still pondering: " Such a big mess has happened. Now our situation is getting more and more difficult. If we don't think of some solutions, the Fourth Prince will step on our faces. You can create some opportunities and let them have more contact ..."

It seemed as if he was no longer the man who wanted to marry Xie Jiayi, but had become the brother who wanted to find a partner for her.

When Xu Shixing walked out of Changchun Palace, he seemed to still hear those endless instructions in his ears, which were unavoidable.

" It's so noisy! " he said suddenly.

Gao Sheng, who was following behind, was startled and hurriedly lowered his already light footsteps even more. He waved his hands and glared at the group of people following behind him. The sedan chair behind him immediately slowed down its pace and followed from a distance .

Gao Sheng secretly looked at the prince, and his face looked starched, and it didn't get better because of the quieter surroundings. He saw the prince rubbing his forehead again. He didn't know when the prince had a headache. When the prince had a headache, the whole East Palace dared not breathe.

Gao Sheng couldn't help but secretly complain about Concubine De in his heart. She was busy arranging a marriage for her nephew from her natal family, but why didn't she arrange a marriage and a concubine for His Highness? With more women in the Eastern Palace, His Highness's headache might be alleviated.

However, no one dared to mention the prince's marriage without the approval of His Majesty. But two days ago, His Majesty summoned the Crown Prince to come over. He was supposed to talk about the Crown Princess, but somehow the topic went off topic and His Highness angered His Majesty. He knelt outside the Imperial Study for half a day in the cold weather. He helped Gao Sheng back to the East Palace, but His Majesty didn't even allow him to use the sedan chair. He had to face the desk full of official business even when he was sick, and he couldn't even find time to come.

Your Highness has always been disliked by His Majesty, and now His Majesty dislikes Your Highness even less.

Gao Sheng thought to himself that this was it, anyone would have a headache.

Xu Shixing, who was walking in front, stood up straight, and the dry cold wind from the palace city hit his face, stinging him. He stopped beside a column, put his index and middle fingers on his temples, and slowly exhaled.

Some things were getting more and more out of control, and what he didn't know was that some things were about to go completely off track.

## Chapter 61

The Laba Banquet was over , and all the young men and ladies who attended the banquet left the palace. Xie Jiayi said goodbye to Lu Chenan and went straight to the study of His Majesty in the Hall of Mental Cultivation.

When she came out, she was like a cheerful bird . Xu Shixing stopped when he saw her. It seemed that he hadn't seen her so cheerful for a long time. He felt that the depression in his heart had dissipated a little , and a faint smile appeared on his lips.

But this faint smile soon froze at the corner of his lips.

He heard Xie Jiayi say with a smile: " Brother Crown Prince, I want our Dayin's top scholar to be my princess , you must support me in the future! "

Xu Shixing felt a buzzing in his ears, but he still heard her words clearly.

He suddenly raised his hand and grabbed her wrist, saying in a deep voice: " You can't! " His eyes were fixed on her, dark and even a little cold.

Xie Jiayi stopped laughing, pried open his hands one by one , and said firmly: " Your Highness , I can do it. "

Xu Shixing looked at her coldly , " How many days have you known him ? You know what kind of person he is , and you let him be a princess? Xie Jiayi, how come I didn't know you are such a casual person? " These words were very serious . At this moment, Xu Shixing must hate Xie Jiayi. He wanted to destroy her directly.

For no apparent reason , she changed her mind.

Xie Jiayi laughed, seemingly unconcerned , and said crisply, " Your Highness , at least I know that he did not send his childhood sweetheart cousin to me. "

Sometimes a word can be an arrow that can pierce your heart.  
such arrow . But she has to use it slowly.

Sure enough, Xu Shixing's face, which was already paler than others, seemed to be even paler, as if the blood had been drained out in an instant. His coldness and desire for destruction instantly collapsed because of this sentence. The noble prince who thought he could control everything felt panic for the first time.

His voice was filled with unprecedented hesitation : " You ... you know. " She actually knew, how could she know.

" I know. " Xie Jiayi's lively face was expressionless for the first time. She still remembered how she felt when she first knew the truth in her previous life. That feeling of being unable to breathe was really uncomfortable. But now thinking about it, it seems that it is nothing, only a calm and peaceful feeling. It can be seen that human emotions are the strongest and the most fragile, because emotions can change. Time will turn the pain that once made her unable to breathe into a calm and peaceful feeling that serves as a tool.

" Brother Crown Prince, if you reveal her identity, she will die. " Xie Jiayi smiled at Xu Shixing's still pale and helpless face, " You know I have such a bad temper. I can't tolerate any grain of sand in my eyes, let alone such a thorn in my eyes. You, you and the Queen of Changchun Palace, bullied me like this, but I still saved Mingpei's life. I think I have lived up to our past friendship, don't you think? "

Xu Shixing was a very proud and self-controlled person. He thought that even at this time, he could still be calm and proud.

He just couldn't control his trembling right hand.

How could he not know Xie Jiayi's temper? That was why he decided to keep it a secret. He never thought that he would not be able to keep it a secret.

His face was still calm, and he put his right hand behind his back. Fortunately, he controlled his words. He obviously had so much to say. He had thought that one day, one day, when everything was settled, he would tell her about this matter in detail, and tell her that even though he was the prince, he had many reasons to do so.

But fate didn't even give him this day. When everything was getting out of control and he was desperately grabbing the reins that were pulling in all directions, she knew the truth.

He wanted to say that he was just afraid that she would be unhappy, or he should say that he just wanted to save Mingpei's life, but in the end all he could say was: " Zhao Zhao, I'm sorry. "

The two looked at each other, but Xie Jiayi still had no expression. She replied, " I accept your apology, Your Highness. "

They all knew that Xie Jiayi could forgive someone, but she would never get close to someone who had wronged her.

He watched Xie Jiayi disappear from his sight. Xu Shixing couldn't remember what he was going to do in His Majesty's study. He tried to think, it was to raise food and grass, the Northland was always restless in winter. He tried to think about what he was going to say, Zhang Dahu – thinking of this person, his temples jumped again, but he still calculated ruthlessly: Zhang Dahu could be promoted again with the military merits accumulated this winter. At that time, he would gather the old members of the Xie family and integrate the Northland army, so that he could fight against the Northern Di.

The person who took over the Northland must be his. He knew that the Fourth Prince was also eyeing the military power in the Northland. He had to move forward according to the plan.

Xu Shixing thought very seriously, going over in his mind what he wanted to say to His Majesty, the situation in the north, and the current political situation in Dayin.

My head is filled with thoughts and it hurts uncontrollably.

It was excruciatingly painful, but he continued to think over it again and again. He even felt that this pain was something he was grateful for, as it allowed him to focus his mind on the headache that was getting stronger and stronger, and not think about anything else.

Nothing else.

That day, Xu Shixing entered the imperial study as usual, summoned officials from the Eastern Palace to discuss countermeasures as usual, and reviewed memorials as usual. The winter night was eerily quiet and dark.

Finally everyone went downstairs and no one was staring at him anymore.

Xu Shixing could finally be alone in the darkness. He thought of the year when the crabapple blossoms filled the entire palace, and Xie Jiayi secretly climbed between the crabapple trees and opened her hands among the crabapple blossoms.

" Third brother, catch me! "

He caught her as if he had caught the entire spring.

In the darkness, Xu Shixing's voice was like a suppressed beast, " Zhao Zhao, you should believe that I can catch you. "

The sound was eerily calm.

It's a quiet hoarseness.

He wondered if there was something he had forgotten, and he stumbled to his feet in the darkness. Oh, he hadn't watered the tree yet. The tree couldn't die again.

Gao Sheng was trembling with fear, watching the prince carefully watering the strange tree under the dim light in the dark. Under the flickering dim light, the prince's face was pale, as if he had never seen the sun.

Since he came to the East Palace, he knew that this strange tree was not allowed to be approached by anyone except His Highness. This tree is also strange in that it blooms twice a year, but only one flower each time. One flower blooms in late autumn, and the other in

midsummer. When one flower blooms, the other withers. One tree, two flowers, but they always live and die, and never meet.

His Highness watered the plants little by little, expressionless. It was already four o'clock in the morning.

Soon, the Emperor Yongtai issued an order to grant the marriage, and with it came an additional title for Lu Chenan. Taking advantage of Lu Chenan's help in solving a murder case with great influence in the Dali Temple, His Majesty directly promoted Lu Chenan to the position of Junior Secretary of the Dali Temple. Some people said that this was against the rules. Rules? When has the matter of Princess Kunyi ever been in accordance with the rules? The lucky star of Dayin, the Princess of the Fuguo Kunyi, is the rule.

Sure enough, an even more unconventional reward soon arrived. Emperor Yongtai directly gave the newly-appointed No. 1 Scholar a dragon robe. Others no longer had the energy to be jealous, they could only envy him, because he was the county horse of the Princess's Mansion, and he was someone that caught His Majesty's eye.

Not to mention the Lu Mansion, even Hu Jiao, the newly married cousin, has a higher status in her husband's family. Whether it is the mother-in-law or the sisters-in-law, they all smile gently and kindly when they see Hu Jiao. There is no need to set rules. Such a sensible and sensible new daughter-in-law is loved by the elders.

The young couple had a very good relationship, which would be unbearable in the eyes of other mothers-in-law. But in Hu Jiao's case, her parents-in-law were just worried that their son was not considerate enough. Their beautiful and generous daughter-in-law was not only the cousin of the Duke, but also liked by the Princess Kunyi. On the day of their son's wedding, the head nanny of the Princess's Mansion came in person to deliver the gift. Such a great honor would not be achieved even if he married a noblewoman from another family.

After the princess repaired the river channel, she began to build the Xiushen Academy, which had been flooded in the Huai River area. This time, it was spread out from the capital to the surrounding areas. It was no longer called Xiushen Academy, but University Academy, which means "the way of the university is to manifest the virtues, to be close to the people, and to stop at the highest good." Part of this matter was handed over to Hu Jiao and his wife to help run it, which made the Liang family's parents-in-law, who married Hu Jiao, very happy. This was what a clean family like them should do.

As for women not being able to show their faces, their daughter-in-law didn't show her faces either. Women should also do something like the princess. If anyone says such sour words again, they will not agree. Looking at the noble lady who was sour but still smiled at her, mother-in-law Hu Jiao also smiled, thinking that if your daughter-in-law had such an opportunity, she would not nod, and you would force her to nod and push her forward. You are sour, but not only did her daughter-in-law help, she also helped.

Why is it that only men do such good things? Women do it too.

Changchun Palace saw that His Majesty had just issued an imperial decree to finalize the marriage of the princess, and her nephew from her mother's family had not yet made his move. In her eyes, such a big cooked duck had completely flown away. Empress Defei had a heartache for two days, and as the New Year was approaching, her heartache was barely relieved.

After all, it's not easy to get sick during the New Year in the palace.

I was already very angry with Xie Jiayi, but I had to use the opportunity of the New Year to entertain her. There was no other way. The Northland needed this descendant of the Xie family, this little ancestor who had lost all his relatives, to speak up so that the work of recruiting Dahu could proceed smoothly. Mingpei said that the old members of the Xie family army were all hardcore people who would not give in to any soft or hard tactics. Without the name of Xie Jiayi, it would be really difficult to deal with them.

Fortunately, although Xie Jiayi was not involved in the personnel affairs, she still supported the Eastern Palace. At present, the people in the Northland were either from the Eastern Palace and the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion, or from the Fourth Prince and the Second Prince. Even if she was ignorant, she would not support the Fourth Prince's party. If the princess had a bad relationship with them, then she had already been at odds with the Fourth Prince's party.

On the 16th day of the twelfth lunar month, Changchun Palace hosted a small banquet and invited the princess. No matter how ugly the quarrel between the two sides was, they still had to consider the big picture. This was the only meal left in the whole year, and they still had to eat it. As long as the princess had no intention of changing the prince, she would come.

Accompanied by the Crown Prince, who was more silent than usual, Concubine De couldn't help frowning when she saw her son. She was not a likable person to begin with, and now she was even more gloomy. Look at Concubine Xian, she is not as good as herself in every way, except that the son she raised is sweeter than herself. Don't say that His Majesty likes such a person, who can really like her! Even mothers like to coax their sons, like the Crown Prince, who is always taciturn. If you don't ask him, he would not say a word for ten days or half a month. Seeing this, Concubine De felt as if her heart was aching again.

Then look at Xie Jiayi, who has been busy untying the nine-linked ring on her hand since she came here. Concubine De really gritted her teeth to attend the social event. There are such ignorant people who come to other people's banquets after eating at home, and don't even say a polite word. When asked if the food is not to her liking, she directly said "I have eaten before coming here".

Is this something a normal person would do? But Princess Kunyi did it this way, and you still had to smile and praise her. Concubine De smiled so hard that her face became stiff. She felt that her heartache had not completely healed, and now she felt chest tightness.

The host and the guest came full, and the companions could only eat a few symbolic bites before letting the servants leave.

De Fei was very angry. The prince had been turning his wine glass with his head down since he came in, not saying a word. He rarely opened his mouth to eat, let alone speak. Fortunately, there was a caring niece who would occasionally say a few words to the side, so that De Fei could still force a few laughs. Otherwise, just looking at these two in front of her would really make her angry to death.

Mingpei's path suddenly became narrower. She could no longer hope to gain fame, and could only ask the Duke's Mansion to raise her status. A while ago, Mingpei saved the old lady of the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion, so the Duke of Yingguo's wife recognized her as her adopted daughter, so Mingpei could also sit down this time.

When Xie Jiayi heard this for the first time, she just snorted, "The Duke of Ying's Mansion is full of tricks. This time, they saved the old lady, and they will save the emperor in the future."

Since she came in, she didn't even look at Mingpei who was sitting below her. She came to the banquet because she didn't want to worry His Majesty too much. Xie Jiayi thought sadly that His Majesty still hoped that she could have a better relationship with Changchun Palace, after all, she would move into Shoukang Palace in the future.

At that time, Xie Jiayi asked what would happen if it didn't get better. His Majesty smiled and touched her head, telling her that she would never kneel to any woman in her life, and if it really didn't get better, he would ignore her. This gave Xie Jiayi the confidence and the mood to deal with Changchun Palace. She wanted to see if Changchun Palace would use the story from her previous life to impress her, the Princess of Beidi.

As she waited for Concubine De's story, she was thinking more about His Majesty's health.

Xie Jiayi couldn't find Fang Zhongzi, so she was desperate and tried all kinds of methods, even starting to research elixirs. Although she knew that nine out of ten Taoists who made elixirs were liars, there was always a chance that she would meet one who was not a liar. Fortunately, Lu Chenan suppressed her desire to make elixirs, but she became more and more anxious as the spring of the thirteenth year of Yongtai arrived.

Concubine De cleared her throat.

Xie Jiayi raised her eyelids. Here they are. Finally, it's time to get down to business. It's obvious that no one likes each other, but they're still talking in circles. She didn't believe that any of the four people at the table were really happy to attend the banquet.

Anyway, she was not uncomfortable. If Concubine De wanted to go around in circles, she could go ahead. She would leave when she had sat for enough time.

But obviously, Concubine De was also tired.

## Chapter 62

Defei's business began with a touching story.

This story has obviously been polished by a master, with a beginning, a middle, a middle, a patriotic heart, the scenery of the north, the cruelty of the battlefield, the bravery of the soldiers ... all the elements that Xie Jiayi likes are in this story. There is also a talented general who was favored by General Xie when he was a child. He is determined to gather the Xie family army and kill Tarkdun. He also wants to fulfill General Xie's last wish and drive the Beidi out of Dayin's north forever.

Xie Jiayi listened to this story again and still liked it. She liked to listen to stories about the North. She suddenly realized that she was not confused or ridiculous when she was 17 years old. She just did what she should do. She should contribute to the safety of the North, she should gather the scattered Xie family army again, and she should support a promising general who always remembered her father's last wish.

The winter wind was biting, but the charcoal fire in Changchun Palace was so warm, and the person sitting next to her was the elder she trusted at the time, and the husband she trusted

the most in her heart. In her previous life, when she was seventeen years old , what reason did Xie Jiayi have not to do it?

It's a pity that these people , as well as this story , are all deliberate .

" As long as we thank the general for the seal and the princess writes a letter, it will definitely work! " Defei was moved by what she said , not to mention that a princess in the deep palace was placed in such an important position to gather her father's old subordinates and fulfill her father's last wish. No one present in Changchun Palace thought that the princess would refuse.

Except for Xu Shixing who remained silent, he moved his lips but finally said nothing. His eyes were always on the wine glass in his hand, as if that was more important than the military power in the north.

" No handwritten letter, no seal. " Xie Jiayi replied directly.

Not to mention Concubine De, even Mingpei, Matron Liu and others were stunned.

" Princess, you didn't understand what I meant-- " Concubine De thought that it must be the princess's brain that didn't understand the situation in the North. Wasn't she clear enough? If they lost the initiative, it would be very likely that the Four Princes' Party, who advocated uniting with Simon to fight against Beidi, would seize the military power in the North. At that time, let alone killing Tarkdun for revenge, the princess might even watch Dayin being forced to reward Tarkdun again.

" I understand, I just don't want to give it. " Xie Jiayi said slowly.

Only then did Xu Shixing look up at her. He couldn't explain why, because such a good opportunity was rejected, but he suddenly felt indescribably relieved.

Only then did he smell a faint scent of crabapple. He didn't know whether it was brought by Xie Jiayi or if Changchun Palace had specially ordered the crabapple scent for the princess.

Concubine De didn't know what to say. Was this princess so heartless and foolish? What kind of anger was she getting out of? She didn't even want to avenge her own father? She didn't even care about her own father's last wish? She only wanted to enjoy herself in the capital and care about her own pleasure ...

Concubine De and Mingpei, who was sitting below her, looked at each other.

Since this way doesn't work, we can only try another way. Concubine De was speechless, and the prince was not willing to talk at all, so Mingpei had to speak.

Just as she was about to speak, she saw Xie Jiayi rolled her eyes, choking on the words that were about to come out of her mouth.

Xie Jiayi didn't need to look directly at her, she knew from a glance that Zhang Jinyu had something to say, she was really fed up with this person. It seemed that all the truths in the world were on her side, and even Guanyin Bodhisattva could not save all living beings like her. As expected, Zhang Jinyu started talking about the interests of the country and the family. She said that as a woman, she should also consider the interests of the country and the people . She also began to tell a story about the people in the north who suffered from the invasion of the Northern Di people.

It's ridiculous that you have to tell me such a story!



Zhang Jinyu's story made Aunt Liu weep, and the maids around her had red eyes. Xu Shixing saw Xie Jiayi yawn out of the corner of his eye ...

Nanny Chen and Ruyi Caiyue, who followed the princess, had more stern faces than the other. Xie Jiayi and her servants were like four stone-hearted people who could not be influenced by the atmosphere of the main hall.

Oh and of course there is also the equally hard-hearted Crown Prince. You can't even tell from his expressionless face whether he is listening or just distracted.

Ming Pei felt that Xie Jiayi and the servants she brought with her were so cold and indifferent that it was outrageous! Her story only moved a bunch of Changchun Palace servants who did not need her to move them.

When she thought about her own words, she wanted to go to the Northland immediately to serve the country and the people, but this Princess Kunyi was indifferent! Such a selfish and cold-blooded person ...

At this moment, Mingpei and Defei looked at each other with the same thought.

" Your cousin—— " Xie Jiayi's words made Xu Shixing's spine chill. He was the only one who knew what Xie Jiayi meant. Everyone else thought that Mingpei was already the adopted daughter of the Duke of Ying, so she could naturally call the Crown Prince her cousin. Even Defei and Mingpei thought so. Only Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi deeply.

" There's still some gurgling when I speak, and my teeth aren't properly fixed. "

Boom – Ming Pei immediately went from being righteous and awe-inspiring to being a boiled shrimp! Compared to her previous passionate look, it looked extremely ridiculous.

" She – how come she always talks about righteousness? It seems that all the righteousness in the world is in her heart, and she is the most righteous person in the world. I don't think she is the adopted daughter of the Duke of Yingguo, she should be the daughter of righteousness! Others are stingy and only care about themselves, but she thinks about the people and the world. It's a pity that His Majesty has ordered that she will never be promoted. With such a broad mind and this brain, she should be the mother of the world! "

Xie Jiayi's words made the Changchun Palace silent. Until Xie Jiayi finished speaking, she never even looked at Mingpei at the table.

Nanny Chen looked at her young master, she was proud. This was the true inheritance of the princess. She couldn't even look at those lowly hooves, let alone beat or scold them personally. Even looking at them was a compliment to them! Nanny Chen's face was tense when she listened to the story, but now looking at her young master, her eyes were a little moist.

Gao Sheng, who was standing by, suspected that Nanny Chen was abnormal. She didn't respond to Miss Mingpei's touching words. Princess Kunyi almost pointed at her nose and scolded her, but Nanny was moved ...

The people in this Princess Mansion are not normal ...

Zhang Jinyu thought that the princess had accidentally hit upon her thoughts, but she didn't know that Xie Jiayi had already known all her thoughts and was about to destroy all the helpers behind her. The princess refused to listen, but Zhang Jinyu still had to take a gamble for the sake of his brother's future. Only if Xie Jiayi stepped forward could this matter be achieved with half the effort.

She endured the princess's merciless words, swallowed the humiliation and said: " Princess, I know you don't like me, there are some things you shouldn't say- "

Then Xie Jiayi interrupted and said, " Cai Yue. "

Caiyue immediately stood up and pushed back Mingpei's words: " Miss Mingpei really knows that our princess doesn't like it, but she still insists on showing up in front of our princess. What is her intention? Since it is something that should not be said, please respect yourself and stop saying it! "

By the time Caiyue had finished, Xie Jiayi had already stood up. She had finished listening to the story. It was a good story, but it was meaningless to listen to it a second time. She had sat there for so long, and she thought Changchun Palace would come up with something new. " I am tired. Your Highness, I am leaving. Your Majesty, I am leaving. "

Ruyi had already brought in the princess's cloak and hand warmer, and saw that the people in the princess's mansion did not give the guests any chance to stay. The group of people moved more skillfully than the other, and in a blink of an eye they escorted the princess out of the palace.

After a while, they left Changchun Palace.

Everyone in Changchun Palace lowered their heads and stared at their toes, even breathing heavily. There were three masters sitting in the palace, but no one spoke.

Defei covered her chest and gasped heavily. Mingpei's face was still red from the blockage, but she was about to help the empress pat her.

Xu Shixing had already stood up, but he still stood there silently.

Defei was finally able to speak, and pointed at the door: " Look, Prince, she is really spoiled by His Majesty! She comes and goes as he pleases— " One day ... Defei thought, panting.

Xu Shixing suddenly thought that if Xie Jiayi was still here, she would probably roll her eyes and say, " If you hadn't invited me again and again, do you think I would be willing to come? " This would definitely be her reaction.

It seemed like she had changed a lot, yet it seemed like she had never changed.

Xie Jiayi returned to the princess's mansion. After washing and combing her hair, she let her long hair down and walked around the dormitory again and again in soft satin embroidered shoes. Caiyue and Caixing on the side felt a little dizzy.

Caiyue saw the princess biting her thumb harder and harder, until it turned red, and couldn't help but persuade her: " Princess, if there is anything, let's think about it slowly. If we can't think of it, we can ask someone to help us think together. "

This sentence reminded Xie Jiayi that she was no longer alone. If she couldn't think of a good solution, Lord Lu would definitely be able to.

Her troubled heart slowly calmed down.

Then he called Ruyi in and gave him instructions. It was time for Uncle Cheng from the north to meet General Ji De in person.

Xie Jiayi stared at the dark night outside the door: She just didn't believe that only Zhang Peiyu could handle the situation in the north!

She held onto the door frame with increasing force, and couldn't help asking herself, if, if in the end it was indeed Zhang Peiyu who was the only one who had the ability to defeat Bei Di, what would she do?

To destroy him, or to help him ...

When Ruyi came back, she saw the princess still standing by the door, looking towards the north. Her hands were so tight that her red nails turned white.

Ruyi stepped forward and advised: " Princess, there is always a way. You have prevented such a great natural disaster in the south. There must be a way in the north as well. "

Xie Jiayi slowly loosened his hand and whispered, " You are right, there is always a way. There is more than one Zhang Peiyu in the vast North. "

The next day, when Lu Chen'an was off duty, he walked to the palace gate with a few classmates and saw the carriage of the princess's mansion parked there quietly.

He stopped walking, and at that moment he couldn't explain his feelings. Later he found a word: stability . He felt that his life, destined to be a drifter, was anchored at that moment.

In fact, he didn't have anything he wanted to take back. But at this moment, he thought that he did have someone he needed to protect.

He was the one left behind. But in this world, there are always people related to him.

Classmates looked at Lu Chenan and smiled, and Lu Chenan smiled back.

After all, it was the princess's carriage, so other people were reserved even in their jokes, and the most explicit one was, " It's the last day before the New Year, and you can't wait to come and pick me up . "

They all bowed and said goodbye.

Lu Chenan bowed to the car from outside the curtain.

The green curtain flashed, revealing a face that was both happy and angry, with beautiful eyes that were clearly black and white flashing: " Are they far away ? Hurry up and get in the car! "

The late winter sunset shone on her long eyelashes, like the fluttering wings of a butterfly dyed with gold powder.

## Chapter 63

Lu Chenan got on the carriage , and Mingxin, who was also waiting at the palace gate to pick up his young master, followed him and got on the carriage behind him. In the carriage, Xie Jiayi told him in detail what she knew about the situation in the North, looked at Lu Chenan , and asked about the deepest confusion in her heart.

" If , I mean suppose , suppose next year the Northern Di invade the south ..." Xie Jiayi paused here, then spoke again: " I know that Zhang Dahu has the ability to defeat the Northern Di , but I blocked his chance to gather the Northern Di army this year ..." Xie Jiayi then looked at Lu Chenan, " Lord Lu, what do you think of me – will I make a huge mistake? " After saying this, she stared at Lu Chenan without blinking, waiting for an answer.

Her concerns were so real.

It seemed as if the Northern Di would really attack next year , and it seemed as if Zhang Dahu, whom she had never met in person, had the ability to defeat the Northern Di.

Her confidence seemed as if she was certain that there would be a rare heavy rain in the south in a century.

Lu Chenan lowered his eyes, his eyelashes trembling.

After a while , he raised his eyes and looked at Xie Jiayi calmly: " Princess , the Northern Di have always had the ambition to invade the south . They have frequently disturbed the border in recent years and have never stopped probing. But in my opinion, it won't be next year. " At this point, his eyes flashed , but his voice became calmer: " If we don't resist the natural disaster in the south this year , I'm afraid the Northern Di will already be preparing for war and will definitely invade next year at the latest . "

He looked at the sudden realization in Xie Jiayi's eyes, and his heart moved: In such a situation , how could she be so sure that the Northern Di would invade next year? She didn't judge it , she knew it . Something with such a small possibility , but she felt that it would definitely happen and was worried about it , just like the heavy rain in the south that lasted for three months.

Lu Chenan's hands moved unconsciously . Was this also a dream? Did she also dream about the Northland next year?

He took in all the changes in Xie Jiayi's expression and continued, " There will definitely be a war between Beidi and Dayin, but it seems that Beidi will still try to wait and see in the short term. Dayin is not the Dayin of twelve years ago. " When he said this, his voice became softer, but Xie Jiayi's body still trembled.

Everyone knows what happened in Sucheng twelve years ago, but few people know what happened to the princess twelve years ago.

Lu Chenan almost wanted to reach out and touch her still trembling shoulders. Twelve years ago, Sucheng was massacred overnight, and the entire city became a real hell on earth. Only one person survived in this hell, and that was Xie Jiayi, who was five years old at the time. How did she survive? Just thinking about this question makes people feel cold.

Xie Jiayi heard Lu Chenan's voice: " Princess, you have grown up. " Don't be afraid anymore. His voice was gentle yet powerful, making her realize that this was the capital, twelve years later. She nodded and said in a trembling voice: " I'm not afraid ... I'm not afraid at all ... I'm not afraid. " The smile on her face was very broad.

Lu Chenan's heart felt like it was cut by a knife. Xie Jiayi smiled and said that she was not afraid at all, but she didn't realize that she had said it three times unconsciously . The " three times " seemed to have special meaning to her.

Lu Chenan quickly continued, " So, my lady, the North has time. This time, Dayin has enough time to take over the North, and it doesn't have to use that Zhang Dahu. " He affirmed, " I don't believe that Dayin only has one Zhang Dahu. "

Although he was still in the carriage, he opened the drawer of the table on the side of the carriage, took out a pen and paper, spread out the paper, and said while grinding, " Tell me the names of the old people in the Xie family, and I will write them down for you. We can look at them slowly later. "

Xie Jiayi hurriedly recited the names of the old subordinates that Uncle Cheng had collected in the north, and saw that even in the carriage, Lu Chenan wrote steadily and quickly .

Xie Jiayi leaned over to take a closer look and couldn't help but praise.

" Your carriage and driver are good. " The journey on the streets of the capital was unusually smooth .

Xie Jiayi said proudly: " This is true. "

Seeing that she had recovered, Lu Chenan showed recognition on his face, like a little fox being praised, and couldn't help but laugh. He put down the brush, picked up the paper and blew it, then handed it to Xie Jiayi, " These old men who survived must be strong generals, and they are not necessarily inferior to Zhang Dahu. " These were all soldiers who were personally trained and selected by General Xie, the " Silver Spear God of War " .

Xie Jiayi nodded, feeling a little relieved, and took the paper to read it carefully.

Slowly, the smile on her face disappeared, her face became paler and paler, and the hand that was holding the paper almost tore the list.

Lu Chenan didn't know what was wrong with the list, so he reached out to take it, not wanting her to look at it again. In a hurry, he touched her hand, and Lu Chenan didn't care to avoid suspicion, so he just gently opened her tightly grasped hand holding the list and called her: " Princess. "

Xie Jiayi turned to Lu Chenan, clearly looking at him, but her eyes were not on him. She remembered!

In the previous life, when the Northern Land won a great victory, Dayin was in jubilation, and everyone was talking about the Northern Land General Zhang Dahu, who was the second " God of War " . The Xie family army gradually faded out of people's sight, and no one mentioned it later, just because all the old members of the Xie family died in the first great victory.

The list of casualties sent to her was so dense that she only glanced at it inadvertently before being called away. Ever since the chaos in the south, the death of the previous emperor, the unrest in southern Yunnan, and the unrest in the western barbarians, one after another, this great victory was such a happy thing, and she was happy too. No one would look closely at the list of casualties, and no one could see anything.

Looking at the list in my hand at this moment, the memory of that glimpse was lit up.

Every name on this list was on that list of dead!

It's not that the old members of the Xie family can't produce good generals, but those who could become good generals in the old members of the Xie family all died in the first battle! The remaining Xie family army can only recognize Zhang Peiyu as a general. If there is no handwriting by him, Xie Jiayi will never believe it! She will never know what happened in the battlefield of the North in her previous life, just like what happened to Xie Yingying in Dajue Temple in her previous life, she has no chance to know.

But in her previous life, she didn't even know that her father's old subordinates all died in the first battle after being gathered together ...

She didn't even know.

It was the seal and her handwriting that she sent that made the surviving old friends recognize Zhang Peiyu and obey all of his arrangements and dispatches.

Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi was shaking all over, and big tears rolled down like beads that had broken off the string, so hot that it burned her.

At this moment, Lu Chenan no longer cared about avoiding suspicion. The only thing he wanted to do was to hug her, comfort her, and tell her not to cry.

He did just that.

Xie Jiayi's tears wet his crimson official uniform.

Lu Chenan called out to the princess over and over again, but she seemed to be completely trapped in another world. He had no choice but to let go of the person in his arms, stretched out his hands to lift her face, and looked into her eyes: " Xie Jiayi, it's all over! " He spoke each word with emphasis, even with a hint of sternness.

Xie Jiayi's eyes finally regained focus, and her gaze slowly fell back on Lu Chenan's face.

Yes, it's all over.

This time, she could keep more people alive.

She looked at Lu Chenan and murmured, " I made a mistake and hurt someone. "

Lu Chenan looked at her quietly for a while, then smiled. " I've read a lot of history books. Those who make it into history books are all extraordinary figures, but none of them are free from making mistakes. Even great sages and great talents have fallen into the same pit twice. I don't know how many of them are there. "

He gently wiped away the tears on her face with his thumb, " Princess, you can avoid falling into the same pit twice, which is better than many people. "

These words were like a ray of light that split open the chaos that had been trapping her: Yes, she had made mistakes, but this time she could avoid those mistakes, and that was the meaning of rebirth.

" Lord Lu, you are indeed the smartest person in Dayin. "

Xie Jiayi tilted her head and looked at Lu Chenan very seriously.

Lu Chenan burst out laughing, " Sure enough " , that is to say, someone had said he was. No wonder, from the beginning, many of Xie Jiayi's reactions to him seemed strange to him. Now that he thought about it, that strange feeling was not his illusion.

Lu Chenan glanced at Xie Jiayi who was holding back her tears: She knows me, and even understands me.

He lowered his eyes and bit the tip of his tongue gently: She had seen me in her dream.

So, in that dream, to her, he should be just Lord Lu, and the smartest Lord Lu in Dayin.

Lu Chenan exhaled slowly. Fortunately, it was just a dream, and now, it is reality.

Xie Jiayi wiped her tears and sat there in a daze for a while. It turned out that she had made more than one, two or even three mistakes in her previous life. She looked at Lu Chenan again.

He was the smartest person in Dayin. She, not only was she not smart, but she was also –

Thinking of those comments about the queen: domineering, jealous, extravagant, and even meddling in government affairs ... and Zhang Jinyu's whole family was meddling in government affairs, the comments she received were – , all the good words against her were about Concubine Zhang.

The only exception is Lord Lu.

Lord Lu, as the smartest person and the most capable minister of Dayin, put the best words on her. Xie Jiayi covered it carefully, fearing that it would fall off if it was not firmly attached ... But

Lord Lu would re-attach her every time he saw her, and put those affirmations on the Queen's head again and again.

She wiped her tears, her nose red, but she couldn't help asking:

" Lord Lu, do you think I am— " Xie Jiayi felt a little embarrassed for a rare time. Even though she was thick-skinned, she felt that she was not worthy of those good things, but Lord Lu used them on her. Xie Jiayi gathered up her courage and said quickly: " I am Kunyi, ' Ice Soul, Snow Soul, Dignified, Gentle, and Virtuous ' ! Do you think, is this true, me? "

Oh my god, now that I say it out loud, I feel even more unworthy of her.

Lu Chenan smiled and said: " This string should be continued with ' A virtuous ruler has six palaces, worthy of the position of empress, and the mother of the country ' , which will make people suspect that you are aiming to be a legitimate concubine in the harem. " As soon as he said this, he was slightly stunned, and when he looked at Xie Jiayi's face, he was completely stunned.

Lu Chenan couldn't explain what he was feeling at that moment, so he suppressed all his emotions.

Xie Jiayi was totally unaware that she had revealed so much, and asked, " You wouldn't praise me like that? " She asked very embarrassedly, " I, I'm not like that, am I? " This sentence almost exhausted all her remaining dignity.

Lu Chenan looked at her and said slowly, " You still don't understand what I said. "

" It's not you, isn't it? "

" It's what you are like that's the best words. If you are black, then black is the soul of ice and snow. "

Xie Jiayi didn't expect that this was the answer. Whatever she was like, in Lord Lu's eyes, she was good.

" I thought everyone likes—— " Everyone likes Concubine Zhang, who is smart, good at talking, and good at giving advice. She is so disgusting that you can't tell why she is disgusting ... She wishes she could just wear a silver hairpin every day, and cry when she sees the frozen hands of children in the capital in winter ... The key is that she can only shed tears and never runny nose ...

Lu Chenan didn't say anything, just looked at her with a smile.

At this moment, Xie Jiayi suddenly understood what he hadn't said. She didn't even know what that sentence was, but she felt that his unspoken words made her feel infinitely safe .

She doesn't have to chase anything or become anything, and she can be safe and steady , being held down by someone and not falling.

## Chapter 64

The capital had already started preparing for the New Year , and now the court had sealed the seal, and officials had begun to take their New Year holidays. At the end of the year, everywhere was bustling and happy , especially this year . If such a big natural disaster had occurred, I don't know how many people would have died , but God had blessed them, and thanks to the princess, they got through it safely.

Everyone in Dayin believed that this was a good omen that God was blessing Dayin , and that the coming year would only be better. Therefore , the atmosphere of peace and joy became stronger. Especially the people in the south , they still cut new clothes this year , and everyone would say , " If it weren't for the princess , where would we get new clothes to wear. "

In the study room of the Yangxin Palace , Emperor Yongtai leaned against the pillow and stared at the closed window. He knew that the crabapple tree outside had lost all its leaves and its branches had dried up. Eunuch Xi, who was escorting the imperial physician outside , stared at the imperial physician and said, " Imperial Physician Wang, this is asking for your pulse . Don't make a mistake." Imperial Physician Wang hurriedly said he didn't dare. It was a cold day, but his back was sticky . That was because he was sweating. It was also because the study room was really hot , and because of your Majesty's health .

Eunuch Xi turned around and walked back to the study . When no one was around , his face inevitably showed a gloomy look. As soon as he reached the door of the study , he immediately put on a festive smile. It was New Year's Day, and he had to make His Majesty happy.

Emperor Yongtai had lost some weight, and his bony hands were flipping through the auspicious dates chosen by the Imperial Astronomical Observatory. Eunuch Xi felt sad, but his face was even more festive, and he asked, " Your Majesty, are you going to pick a date for the princess? "

Hearing Emperor Yongtai cough, he hurriedly brought him the tea.

Emperor Yongtai closed the book and said, " Life is not good. "

Eunuch Xi smiled, but he felt even more sad. It was not that the days were bad, but His Majesty was afraid that he would not be able to wait for those days. He bowed and smiled: " Your Majesty, please choose a good one for the princess. If Your Majesty chooses it personally, it will definitely bring great luck and good fortune. There is nothing better. "

Emperor Yongtai pressed the booklet, as if he had made up his mind: " It will be the fifteenth day of the first lunar month after the New Year, a day of universal celebration. I want the entire Dayin to celebrate Zhao Zhao's good day together. "

Eunuch Xi was shocked, " If you rush her like this, the princess will inevitably become suspicious. " Emperor Yongtai's health had worsened during these days, so he kept it a secret from everyone, especially the princess.

Emperor Yongtai laughed and shook his head, " I have plenty of ways to prevent her from getting suspicious. " He looked out the window unconsciously. The windows were all closed tightly in winter. Even though there were a row of palace lanterns hanging outside, nothing could be seen. However, Emperor Yongtai still looked out the window, as if he was lost in thought. After a long while, he finally said: " Lai Xi, I have to settle Zhao Zhao, otherwise – as you know, the princess is not a person with a good temper. We finally meet her, but I have to make her worried and angry. " Perhaps because the conversation was too long, Emperor Yongtai's voice became weak by the end. If it had not been for the quiet winter night, Eunuch Xi was afraid that he could not hear what His Majesty said at all.



Eunuch Xi followed along and told some old stories about Princess Pingyang. Emperor Yongtai listened attentively even though he had told her many times. These old events made this lonely palace seem warmer at this moment.

At night at the end of the year, the imperial court sealed the seal, but the people under the East Palace were still busy.

But he's not in the study tonight.

In the dungeon of the East Palace, all the people coming and going inside were dressed in black, and no matter how much blood was splashed on them, they looked neat and quiet. Each of them is like a silent ghost, to the point where whenever they appear, the people in the cell will tremble, and some even seek death directly.

But once you enter the East Palace Dungeon, life is not up to you, and death is not up to you either. The most satisfying thing about the people in black is not that life is worse than death for those who go in, but that no one can die early without His Highness's consent.

Among the silent black-clad men, only His Royal Highness the Crown Prince was still wearing a plain moon-white robe with a dark dragon pattern. He sat expressionlessly on the ebony chair at the front of the torture room, holding a teacup and blowing gently. No matter whether the person in front of him was crying, shouting, yelling or cursing, he just blew gently on the tea and sipped it slowly, as if the torture in front of him was not cramp-pulling and skin-flaying, but just two plates of white magnolias, and the elegant gentleman was holding the tea and slowly appreciating it.

Because His Highness was watching, the work done by this person today was extremely careful, and they couldn't ruin their reputation. Even the hardest bones would become soft under such meticulous hospitality.

When Gao Sheng followed the Crown Prince out of the dungeon, the heavy door closed, and all the bloody smells and wailing were blocked by the stone door.

His Highness seemed to have been unable to sleep at night. He got up and walked around the garden. His clothes were still clean and his face was calm. He was the Crown Prince Dayin, who was praised by outsiders for his kindness and concern for the people.

Gaosheng held the lantern and lowered his head.

He felt that he understood His Highness less and less. Recently, His Highness had been going to the dungeon more and more often. In the past, His Highness might have gone there once every half a year, and He Sheng would have been the one to watch over it. But in the past few days, His Highness had been there three times.

At night, His Highness could not tolerate any noise at all, and several servants had been beaten with sticks just for making noises as they walked by.

The tasks in the Eastern Palace are becoming increasingly difficult.

The night gradually faded and the sky turned white. When Gao Sheng went in to serve, he couldn't even tell whether His Highness had woken up long ago or had not slept yet. Now, he didn't dare to ask any more questions, and only served more carefully.

Just at this moment, news came from outside that the Ministry of Internal Affairs had received an urgent order from His Majesty, and even the New Year celebrations in the palace could be simpler, as everyone had one urgent thing to do.

Gao Sheng was handing the prince an inch-wide belt. The prince was used to changing his clothes by himself, so the servants only stood by to get clothes and hand him other things. Xu Shixing took the leather strap and asked as he put it on: " What is this matter that is more important than the New Year celebrations in the palace? "

Gao Sheng heard the reporter reply: " The princess is getting married. The decree was issued early this morning and the wedding date is set for the fifteenth day of the first lunar month after the New Year. " Gao Sheng's hand holding the jade pendant's belt hook trembled and he almost dropped it.

There was a moment of silence in the dormitory, even the sound of clothes rustling disappeared. Gao Sheng felt as if the air had been sucked out of him. His whole body was tense, and he dared not breathe.

It was unknown how long it had been, perhaps just a moment, the extreme tension had made Gao Sheng lose his sense of the passage of time. He heard the prince's voice, as cold as ever, " Oh, about this. "

As if this was a trivial matter, Gao Sheng slowly let out a sigh of relief. He thought that maybe he took this matter too seriously, and maybe His Highness had already stopped taking it seriously.

He relaxed his tense heart and handed the belt hook to His Highness. He heard the Crown Prince ask calmly, " Why did you suddenly set this date? " This is probably a question that everyone who heard the letter would ask at this time. For such a big event as the princess' wedding, it should take at least three to five months to prepare, even a year or half a year is normal.

The messenger replied, " I have inquired about it. It is said that the time calculated by the Imperial Observatory shows that the princess is born with good fortune. The day was chosen for the whole world to celebrate and bring good fortune to Dayin and its people. "

Gao Sheng was about to say a few words in response to the situation, but when he looked up, the smile on his face froze. He saw that His Highness's two hands were holding the belt hook, but he couldn't fasten the belt hook that he usually put on in a flash.

With a " ding " sound, the gilded belt hook fell onto the terrazzo floor.

The bedroom was once again filled with complete silence.

This time, Gaosheng broke out in a cold sweat on his back.

The other servants all hung their heads, motionless, and the one kneeling to answer also hung his head even lower. After a while, Gao Sheng heard the voice of the Crown Prince, which was still as calm as dead water, " Come and change my clothes. " Then he ordered He Sheng to send someone to watch the Ministry of Internal Affairs, and said in a businesslike manner: " At this time, the Fourth Prince must want to get involved, so keep a close eye on him. No matter whether it is a person or an object, don't let anyone from there sneak in during the chaos. "

Soon, official documents were delivered one after another, and it was the imperial court that sealed them. But such a huge dynasty would not be free of trouble just because of the New Year. Things would not be over before the New Year.

It was not until the twenty-ninth day of the lunar year that His Royal Highness finally finished all the things he had on hand. Xu Shixing sat in his study, with no more piles of memorials on his desk. He seemed to have no idea what to do with the free time.

He tried hard to think about what he should have done at this time of year in previous years.

At this time in previous years ... he had no free time at all. All his time outside of official duties was filled with the same person. Just two years ago, at this time, there was a small desk next to the big desk in the study, and Xie Jiayi sat there with her chin in her hand, saying that she was reading a storybook, but several times when he looked up, she was looking at him with her chin in her hand.

Xu Shixing asked: " Is the storybook not good to read? "

Xie Jiayi shook her head, " It looks good. "

As soon as she saw him put down the last memorial, she jumped up immediately. The study soon became lively, and she almost immediately made everyone run around. Soon, snacks and fruits were placed on the table, and the whole study was lively because of her.

Xu Shixing sat alone in front of an empty desk, from the time the sun set to the time the moon rose high in the sky.

He never called anyone, and no one came out.

At this time, a head popped up from the wall of the side yard of the Lu family in Fu'anfang again, with its entire face hidden in a big furry cloak, which made Lu Chenan laugh.

The visitor was in no hurry to come down, and said crisply: " I brought you some side dishes. "

" What? "

" Side dishes. " Drinking and eating side dishes, isn't that what many scholars do?

Lu Chenan's side yard was no longer simple, but it changed again because of the arrival of Princess Kunyi. The bright candlelight in the hall illuminated the overwhelming joy. Lu Chenan watched Xie Jiayi directing people to arrange a room full of red and green, and he just smiled at her.

Xie Jiayi had already asked him to sit down. Outside, Ruyi, Bubu, Caiyue, Caixing and the others had set up two tables with the servants from the side yard, and the quiet yard became more lively. The servants of the Lu Mansion, who usually didn't dare to talk much, were stunned today, and now they dared to talk and laugh at the table outside.

This unprecedented New Year's excitement suddenly hit Lu Chenan, making him feel embarrassed.

He couldn't explain why he felt so embarrassed, perhaps it was because everything was too similar – this yard had a mistress.

And he is the long-awaited male host.

Mr. Lu, who was always smart and calm, held the wine glass for a long time without being able to speak. The first words out of his mouth were nonsense: " You, you know that the wedding date is set, right? "

Xie Jiayi burst out laughing and shook her head: " I don't know, what day will it be? "

She thought Lord Lu was so funny. By now everyone in the capital might know about it, and it would be impossible to hide it from just her, the bride.

Lu Chenan didn't even realize that he had asked a stupid question. He was thinking that the second time someone ate at the same table with him was again her. And every day after the fifteenth day of the first lunar month, she would eat at the same table with him, every day.

Hearing Xie Jiayi's serious question, his ears felt slightly hot and his cheeks couldn't resist the heat. He felt that the charcoal fire in the room was too hot.

He didn't dare look at the person's smiling face in the candlelight, but he knew without looking that the person's bright eyes were staring at him.

Lu Chenan focused on putting Xie Jiayi's favorite snacks next to her.

Outside the house, the moon climbed to the top of the bare tree branches, casting silver light all over the ground.

There was a crisp female voice in the room:

" Hey, you're blushing? "

A deep male voice replied:

" You're mistaken. "

" Is this wine—— "

" That's the wine. "

It's not that she's blushing, it's that the wine is too strong and making her feel drunk.

## Chapter 65

the fifteenth day of the first lunar month in the thirteenth year of Yongtai , even thirty or forty years later, people in the capital would still talk about the Lantern Festival of that year. Many of the children who looked forward to the fifteenth day of the first lunar month that year had already become grandparents by then . In fact, they could not remember what the capital looked like that year . They only remembered the overwhelming bustle and all kinds of lanterns hanging all over the capital.

The entire capital city was as dazzling as falling stars, it did not seem like the human world. I only remember that the most honorable princess in the hearts of the people of Dayin married the smartest and most handsome champion of the imperial examination on this day. What a grand wedding it was, with red hangings all over the city and gongs and drums everywhere . The street where the princess's mansion was located had palace servants come to clear the road and hang curtains early. Children usually count the candies they eat , but on that day, there were people sent out in the streets and alleys. Thirty or forty years later , people who have become grandparents recall that day with a sweet and lively feeling.

The house next to the Princess's Mansion had already been cleaned and tidied up , with the words "Lu Mansion " and red satin hanging on it. Princess Kunyi was married off from the palace, and the emperor personally escorted her to the first gate of the inner palace . This was an unprecedented favor.

Here the princess will be covered with a red veil and get on the wedding sedan.

Nanny Chen supported the princess , followed by Ruyi Bubu and Caiyue Caixing, and beside them stood the relatives who loved her the most in the palace. Xie Jiayi was always happy , and

she had none of the nervousness, anxiety, and reluctance that a bride had. She didn't have any of that in her previous life, and she didn't have any in this life. In her previous life, she just moved from Haitang Palace to the East Palace, and in this life, she just moved from the palace to the princess's mansion. She could come anytime she wanted, and if she wanted to see the emperor uncle, as long as the palace gate was unlocked, she could come in and see him at any time.

But at this moment, when she walked to the palace gate, she suddenly stopped and turned to look at His Majesty. His Majesty had lost weight, and his cheeks were slightly sunken, but he looked very energetic. Emperor Yongtai also looked carefully at the princess in the red wedding dress. When he saw the princess suddenly turn her head, even the smile on her face disappeared, he joked: "What? It's only now that you feel reluctant to let her go?"

The eyes of the person in front of him were like black pearls, so bright and clear, just like her mother's. Emperor Yongtai looked carefully, only people with such clear minds as them could have such eyes, their love and hate were purer than others.

The pair of bright black eyes looked at him, and Emperor Yongtai heard the princess call: "Uncle."

Just this one cry made his heart ache and sour. Everyone said that his Zhao Zhao was overbearing and arrogant, and everyone said that his Zhao Zhao did whatever she wanted. Unfortunately, no one knew that his Zhao Zhao even called him Your Majesty in private, and at most only occasionally called him Uncle Emperor. She had never called him Uncle like other children, and she always kept a sense of propriety in her heart.

He wanted to answer her, opened his mouth, and after a while he finally said, "Uncle is here." After another pause, Emperor Yongtai said, "Uncle is here. Tell him what Zhaozhao wants." Xie Jiayi smiled. She didn't know why. Although she smiled, when she looked at Emperor Yongtai, she wanted to cry in her heart.

She said: "Uncle, when the crabapple blossoms bloom this year, I will put flowers in a vase for you."

Emperor Yongtai agreed with a smile.

Xie Jiayi added: "When the crabapple blossoms bloom next spring, I want to be the first person to pick crabapple flowers for my uncle and put them in a vase. And the year after next, and the year after that!" She was like a greedy child, wanting to reserve many springs in one go.

Emperor Yongtai just smiled at the princess, a smile of infinite indulgence, like a father who indulges his child and gives him whatever he wants. Eunuch Xi behind him felt a lump in his throat, and hurriedly lowered his head to draw a smile again, then looked up at the princess.

Emperor Yongtai said: "The time is almost up. Look, everyone behind is getting impatient. It's time for our little princess to get on the sedan." As soon as his majesty said this, Consort Xian and Consort De hurried forward to help persuade and urge, saying all kinds of warm and auspicious words. The people around also started to move, and Princess Kunyi got on the sedan.

The sedan chair was carried towards the palace gate.

Emperor Yongtai looked at the red colour going away and said with infinite regret: "A lively and active princess should be paired with an elegant and handsome scholar and be pampered in the

imperial capital, rather than being dried up by the wind and sand in the north. " This is what he said at that time.

The virtuous concubine at the back laughed and said: " Your Majesty is so happy and confused that he calls the county lady a princess. But our county lady is the same as our princess ..."

Immediately everyone at the back agreed. Everyone knew that it would be right to flatter County Lady Kunyi in front of Emperor Yongtai.

Emperor Yongtai listened with a smile and looked in the direction where the sedan chair was going away .

Only Eunuch Xi lowered his head and said nothing. He knew that His Majesty was right. His Majesty had said this to Princess Pingyang more than 20 years ago. That was the first time His Majesty and the princess quarreled. The princess chose General Xie at that time, and His Majesty disagreed. But who is Princess Pingyang? Once she makes up her mind, not to mention His Majesty now, even His Majesty at that time could not do anything about her. In the past 20 years, His Majesty woke up from a dream several times and would suddenly ask him: " Lai Xi, if I hadn't forced her back then ... would she not have married far away in the north ..."

What His Majesty really wanted to say was, if Princess Pingyang hadn't married far away in the north, would she not have died.

Among the sons of Emperor Yuanhe, Emperor Yongtai was the least valued one. To be frank, before Your Majesty was ten years old, Emperor Yuanhe had almost forgotten that he had such a son. Emperor Yongtai's mother had long been banished to the cold palace. She went crazy after being locked up for so long. She hated this son. She had tried so hard to get pregnant, but it not only did not bring her good luck, but also made her go to the cold palace. She suffered so much to give birth to the child, but she was not able to leave the cold palace because of it. Emperor Yongtai was born and raised in the cold palace. It was not until he was nine years old that Princess Pingyang, who was six or seven years old, showed her head from the broken wall of the cold palace.

At that time, he was standing in the shadow of the cold palace, with his head down, letting his mother whip him to death. In his ears were only the endless whipping and crazy scolding, and then a clear girl's voice came over:

" How dare you hit someone! "

The second sentence Princess Pingyang said to Emperor Yongtai was: " You are so beautiful, but you are stupid. If she hits you, you won't run away? "

The third sentence: " With me here, you don't have to be afraid of anything anymore. " At that time, Princess Pingyang always wanted to find a place that no one in the palace could reach. She thought it was the legendary Jianghu. She found the remote and forgotten cold palace and Emperor Yongtai.

More than 20 years later, the princess's daughter was still lively and active. This time she stayed in the capital and chose the most elegant and handsome scholar in Dayin.

Nanny Chen walked with the princess' sedan chair. She had been alone last night, wiping tears in joy, and paying respects to Empress Xiaoyi and Princess Pingyang. She had to tell her masters that the young master was going to get married.

At this moment, she smiled happily with red eyes, and said in her heart again and again: " Princess, from now on the little princess is no longer alone. " Slowly, she will not be afraid of thunderstorms in the future.

With a burst of crackling firecrackers, the sedan chair stopped and Xie Jiayi knew they had arrived.

Caiyue and Caixing helped her out of the sedan chair.

She saw a pair of black boots under the lowered veil, and above that was a red robe, but she could not see anything above that.

When she pulled the other end of the red silk, her beating heart slowly calmed down, and she walked forward step by step with her Lord Lu, walking on a completely different destiny.

On the other hand, the prince received the imperial edict and, as the elder brother, went to escort the princess to her wedding.

On that day, he wore a four-claw dragon robe with twelve chapter patterns, which was second only to the highest-level crown robe of the emperor. Even on such a happy day, the place where the prince was was quieter than other places. Xu Shixing's phoenix eyes calmly watched the ceremony in front of him. Until that loud voice of " the ceremony is over " , he didn't believe that she would really marry someone else.

Everyone believed it, except Xu Shixing, who always felt that Xie Jiayi and Lu Chenan's marriage would not succeed.

Even if the imperial decree came down, even if the wedding date was set, in the deepest night, it was the tightly clenched hands and the low and suppressed voice in the darkness, over and over again, " You don't know how good she is to me " , " She loves me, I always know " , " You don't know how good she and I were in the past " . In his clenched hands, he tightly grasped her teardrop-shaped mutton-fat jade earring.

When Xu Shixing heard the words " The ceremony is over " , all the sounds of joy and laughter in the hall became blurred.

He felt that his vision seemed to be blurred, and in the blur he saw Xie Jiayi in a bright red wedding dress, but he was not looking at her from behind. Instead, he was at her side, holding the other end of the red silk that symbolized a happy marriage. He was stunned, and at this moment, the red silk was pulled by the person at the other end, and he heard the girl's voice: " Brother Prince, hold it tightly, don't drop it, or I will be embarrassed. "

It was Xie Jiayi. He was stunned and also pulled the red silk hard. He heard a familiar laugh from under the veil, " Don't worry, I'll hold it tightly so I won't embarrass you. I want to be the most dignified and beautiful crown princess of Dayin! "

Everything was so real that Xu Shixing didn't dare to move. He opened his mouth and was about to call her name. With a snap, the illusion disappeared. He heard the fourth prince beside him saying with his annoying smile: " Third brother, I thought Zhao Zhao would be my sister-in-law. "

There has never been a moment like this when Xu Shixing wanted to kill someone . Obviously, he could call out her name right away.

But Xu Shixing just glanced at the Fourth Prince indifferently: " Why don't you go and take a look at your future in-laws' family. " After saying that, he turned around and left.

The fourth prince was just wondering what this meant when he saw his own disciples, sweating on their noses, squeeze over to whisper in his ear in the cold weather and tell him what happened. The fourth prince was stunned when he heard this. How could such a hidden line be completely exposed?

" Lord Zhao's son was kidnapped by bandits. When he was sent back, he looked like a dead person. His tongue was cut off, and he died in a short time. " The Zhao family was the in-laws chosen by the Fourth Prince for himself. Privately, the prince's party laughed at others for choosing wives, while the Fourth Prince was choosing a father-in-law. But it is undeniable that the Zhao family is very capable. The Zhao family is very smart. They let those who should be frivolous be frivolous, covering up the undercurrents underneath. How could such a cautious Zhao family be dug out and dealt with ruthlessly!

The disciples still shuddered when they thought of Young Master Zhao's appearance. Who could have imagined that Young Master Zhao, who relied on his family's lawlessness, would end up dying tragically like that.

" It's him! " The fourth prince gritted his teeth, but if it was really the prince ... he couldn't help but feel panic in his heart. The prince shouldn't be like this. Such a prince is too scary! It's like, you always thought you were facing a gentleman who did what he should and didn't do what he shouldn't, and you were happy to play " gentleman deceives others with his own tricks " , but when you took off your masks and fought each other, you found that the other party was not a kind and dignified gentleman, but showed his bloodthirsty fangs.

When the Princess's Mansion finally sent all the guests away, it was already late at night.

Lu Chenan went from the front yard to the inner bedroom, first went to the bathroom to take a shower and change into pajamas, and then went to his and Xie Jiayi's wedding room. When he reached the door, he paused, then stretched out his hand and pushed the door open, and saw the golden nanmu inlaid lake embroidered crabapple screen, the light of the wedding candles behind it shone through the shadows, and the faint scent of crabapple was faintly permeable at the tip of his nose.

The candlelight and the faint fragrance created infinite warmth, warming up his slightly cold body.

He walked around the screen and saw a girl lying across the red curtain, also wearing a red nightgown. The soft and fragrant red made her exposed face and neck look even whiter, and her thick black hair, which fell like a waterfall, even darker.

She was obviously waiting and fell asleep. Looking at her, Lu Chenan could also guess that she must have sent the servants away. She could sit upright and wait by herself at first, but then she slowly persuaded herself that it was the same if she was lying down, and she fell asleep while lying down.

Lu Chenan just looked at the person on the bed quietly. After he was completely warm, he slowly walked forward and sat down beside the bed.

He gently reached out his hand, placed it on her fair forehead, and slid along her eyebrows and nose to her lips.

The girl suddenly opened her eyes, looked at him for a long time, and called out, " Master Lu. " Lu Chenan replied: " Princess. "



Xie Jiayi blinked: " From tonight you can call me Zhao Zhao. "

Lu Chenan smiled: " The princess can also call the minister Yin. "

Xie Jiayi lay there without moving, just looking at him in the blankets, and smiled: " What should I do? I still want to call you – Lord Lu. "

She seemed to find it interesting and kept calling " Master Lu " and " Master Lu " over and over again...

Over and over again.

The shouting made Lu Chenan's nose sweat, and he called out in a deep and suppressed voice: " Zhao Zhao. "

## Chapter 66

Lu Chenan woke up like he did every day and opened his eyes. Half of the heavy curtain in front of the bed was torn down and hung down, while the other half was still hooked on the jade hook. Only the two layers of red gauze curtains inside were let down . Through the gauze curtains , one could see that the light night sky had turned to blue-white, as if the day was about to dawn.

The two thick red candles may have just burned out , and the faint fragrance of the burning red candles can still be smelled in the air.

The face of the person beside him was resting on his shoulders and neck. At this moment, he could feel her gentle breath on his neck and pulse. He stretched out his hand and completely encircled the person in front of him in his arms. Such a small person was sleeping soundly and well-behaved. Lu Chenan wanted to sigh, but also wanted to hold her in his arms and never let her go.

He gently rested his chin on her soft hair and sighed contentedly. He was reluctant to move , or even sleep , so he just held her in his arms quietly , feeling the time passing by in the dormitory.

The night before dawn was so quiet that Lu Chenan heard the sound of falling snow outside.

Although it is the beginning of spring , the weather is still cold . The last snow fell last night.

Even the blue of the night began to fade , and the sky was already turning pale. Lu Chenan moved slightly, wanting to get up first , but he saw that the person who was clearly asleep just now suddenly grabbed his hand and opened his eyes.

In the dim light of day , the two looked into each other's eyes.

The quilt slipped down during the movement, revealing Xie Jiayi's snow-white shoulders . Lu Chenan's face turned red and he dared not move anymore. His eyes fell on the curtain hanging between the bed, but his hands lifted the quilt and pulled it to Xie Jiayi's chin, wrapping her tightly.

Then he looked at her and said something irrelevant, " Don't be cold. "

No matter how cold it is outside, this room is warm and cozy, so it's really not cold.

Xie Jiayi's voice was hoarse as if she had just woken up: " Lord Lu, do you always get up at this time? "

The ordinary The light gauze curtains between the .was set against her hoarse voice "Lord Lu"  
.s face hot'an Qingjun'making Lu Chen ,bed made the memory of last night rush into his mind  
" :but his voice was hoarse at this time ,He had been awake for a while Zhao Zhao, it's snowing.  
"

Sure enough, the attention of the people in front of him was immediately attracted by the snow outside. The beauty faded, and the air was filled with Xie Jiayi's joy.

Only then did Lu Chenan slowly let out a breath.

When Xie Jiayi finished packing, Lu Chenan had been reading a book on the warm couch beside her for a while. As soon as Xie Jiayi finished packing, he put down the book and got up to go out with her.

The snow had stopped, and a thick layer of snow had already accumulated, although no one knew when it had started to fall at night. The servants in the mansion had already diligently swept the road, but Xie Jiayi chose to walk to the side where there was snow, and when she stepped on the snow, it made a crunching sound, so she held Lu Chenan's hand and laughed. Chen Ma and others who followed behind also smiled when they saw the princess so happy. The two of them got married, and there was no such rules as paying respects to uncles and aunts. The princess's mansion still sent people to the Lu mansion early to present generous gifts to the old lady and others. Everyone in the Lu mansion received gifts from the princess's mansion. Even the maids in the Lu mansion, from the chief housekeeper to the maids who kept watch at night, received generous rewards from the princess's mansion. They all smiled from ear to ear, and called each other " our princess " when they met .

Three days later, the two of them entered the palace, and Lu Chenan also had to start his duty again. During these three days, the two of them did not go anywhere, but wandered from the Princess's Mansion to the newly renovated Lu Mansion next door, and carefully reviewed everything from the garden and hall to the grass and trees, while discussing what needed to be changed, what could be added, and what flowers and trees could be planted.

Three days passed in a flash, and today the two of them entered the palace together.

In the study, Emperor Yongtai had already packed up and was waiting. Eunuch Xi said, " I'm afraid the princess doesn't care about that. She will come in as soon as the palace gate opens. " Emperor Yongtai smiled and nodded. Before he could say anything, he heard Xie Jiayi's joyful voice from outside: " Your Majesty, I'm here! "

Emperor Yongtai laughed even more when he heard this. She was the only one in the palace who laughed at him.

Xie Jiayi and Lu Chenan kowtowed to His Majesty respectfully before standing up. Xie Jiayi hurriedly moved forward to carefully observe His Majesty's complexion. She chattered in her mouth to make His Majesty happy.

Lu Chenan, who usually accompanied the emperor in the study, always stood respectfully with his head bowed, and he did the same today. Emperor Yongtai then stretched out his hand to beckon him to the front and asked him to stand next to the princess.

It was the first time that Emperor Yongtai saw Lu Chenan from such a close distance. When Lu Chenan listened carefully to what the princess said, Emperor Yongtai was startled and suddenly said, " Ziyin, I think you look very kind . "

The gaze from the emperor made Lu Chenan lower his head slightly. Before he could reply, Xie Jiayi couldn't help laughing: " Your Majesty, was Lord Lu the number one scholar or official you selected, or the county horse you chose for me? You only look at him now to be friendly? "

Emperor Yongtai laughed when he heard this, and he didn't even know why he said that.

Xie Jiayi didn't know what she was thinking of, and she burst into laughter again: " It would be interesting if today was really the first time that His Majesty and Lord Lu met. "

They both looked at her.

Xie Jiayi said, " In the storybook, if two people are familiar with each other, they are destined to be together. But the story inside is hard to explain. " She tilted her head and continued, " From this perspective, it turns out that Lord Lu's destiny is not me, but His Majesty. "

" Your Majesty should not say that Lord Lu has a kind face. You should say ..." Xie Jiayi lowered her voice and imitated the voice of Emperor Yongtai: " I have seen this young man before! "

" Today can be considered a reunion after a long separation. "

Emperor Yongtai laughed and said, " You little brat, you can say anything. What kind of storybook have you read? Ziyin should take better care of her in the future and let her read some books that can really help her improve herself. "

" What I said is true. Since Your Majesty feels that Lord Lu looks kind, you should not just treat him as my prince, but as your nephew whom you have met again after a long separation. " Xie Jiayi said.

Lu Chenan just smiled and lowered his head without saying anything.

In the morning, Xie Jiayi came over and made His Majesty laugh several times. Emperor Yongtai even ate more. Eunuch Xi was so happy that he kept shouting "Amitabha" and hoped that the princess would come every day.

Meanwhile, in the East Palace, Xu Shixing had just come out of the dungeon at dawn. Unlike the previous day, the prince wore a crimson robe. Gao Sheng, who was used to the dungeon, felt a little weak in the knees again. It was because His Highness had personally taken care of it again.

Three days ago, it was the first time Gao Sheng saw His Highness take action personally. For three consecutive days, His Highness went to the East Palace dungeon.

His Highness didn't seem to be facing a living person, nor did he seem to be a person who was doing it for the first time. His Highness's movements were smooth and familiar, but also slow and methodical. Only in one place did he make a mistake with the knife, and blood spurted out, splashing onto His Highness's crimson robe.

He just looked down and continued with his actions without any expression.

In the end, the man wanted to confess everything he remembered and he didn't dare to stop.

His Royal Highness the Crown Prince actually scared a specially trained Northern spy out of his wits.

His Highness washed his hands in the copper basin in the same slow and methodical manner, which made the Northern spy's eyelids twitch and his speech speed even faster, for fear that if he spoke too slowly he would be considered to be hiding something.

When Xu Shixing came out of the dungeon, he still looked as calm and dignified as before, but the blood on his robe had not yet dried. It was just that the blood was on the crimson robe and others could not see it.

He stared at the sky for a long time, which was about to brighten.

This night after night is too long.

Without blood, it would be impossible to survive for long.

" The prince is a modest gentleman, and he will be the most tolerant and benevolent emperor in the future! " " I don't have to do anything. I just need to stand beside the prince and be proud of you! "

Xu Shixing's eyes were sore, but he was still looking at the distant horizon.

He has never been a modest gentleman, and he can never be a lenient and benevolent emperor. Xu Shixing showed a mocking smile on his face, which was cold and painful.

When the sun rose, His Royal Highness changed back into his light-colored robes and resumed his endless official duties. He Sheng had been investigating the " Xiao " for a year , and finally got a response.

" Murder ? " The Emperor established a huge organization that no one knew about, just to kill one person.

Xu Shixing slowly turned the ring on his thumb:

Who could it be?

The snow on the fifteenth night of the first lunar month was very thick, but it melted very quickly. The weather was getting warmer after all.

Lu Chenan went to the Dali Temple. Xie Jiayi was alone, looking up at an exquisite eight-treasure palace lantern still hanging on the street. She heard a passerby behind her rubbing his hands and saying, " It will be fine once the snow melts. Once the snow melts, it will be spring. " She turned her head suddenly, and the person who had spoken had already walked away with his shoulder pole . Xie Jiayi saw that the elm tree behind her had actually sprouted green buds, which were only revealed after the snow melted.

The spring of the thirteenth year of Yongtai has finally arrived.

The author has something to say:

" I have seen this young man before! " " Today we are reunited after a long separation. " There is a little joke here, the best-written storybook "Dream of Red Mansions" is about the first meeting between Baoyu and Daiyu:

After Baoyu finished reading, he smiled and said, " I have seen this sister before. " " Although I have never seen her, I think she looks familiar, and I think we are old acquaintances. It is not a bad idea to treat today as a reunion after a long separation . "

I wanted to hide these little details in the book for everyone to see and enjoy. If you can see them, it will make you smile. If you can't see them, it won't have any impact. The plot itself has its own effect. But it seems to involve quoting the original sentence. If I don't mark it out, I'm afraid there will be problems, so I'll just mark it out to explain it.

The spring of the thirteenth year of Yongtai has finally arrived.

As the day of the death of Emperor Yongtai in his previous life drew closer , Xie Jiayi became more and more uneasy.

In the middle of the night, a spring thunder suddenly exploded in the sky. It had been a month and a half since the wedding day. The red curtains in the princess's bedroom had been replaced with emerald silk curtains . As the spring thunder fell , it was estimated that a strong wind had blown, blowing through the closed doors and windows and blowing the gauze curtains in front of the bed.

Xie Jiayi woke up from her dream , sat up, and heard bursts of spring thunder outside the window.

The moment she stood up, Lu Chenan woke up as well. He also stood up and pulled the person next to him into his arms.

Xie Jiayi said: " I'm afraid. "

Lu Chenan held her with one hand and gently patted her back with the other . He whispered over and over again in a familiar and gentle voice: " Zhao Zhao , I'm here. " Xie Jiayi's pounding heart slowly calmed down . She leaned in Lu Chenan's arms , holding tightly onto his soft, warm pajamas with both hands.

" My uncle the Emperor asked me to pick crabapple blossoms for him. " Xie Jiayi murmured , " the most beautiful cluster had high branches ... I stood on tiptoe but couldn't reach it ... At this time someone put a small stool under my feet ... I immediately stepped on it ... I was so anxious ... I clearly aimed at that cluster , but failed to cut it several times ... Later I cut off the cluster of crabapples that bloomed the best ..." She ran back holding the flowers.

But in the dream , she was always beside him , watching the girl who looked exactly like her, trembling with hands, stepping on a stool to reach and cut the bunch of crabapples. She was so anxious beside him , shouting over and over again, " Go back quickly , go back quickly! " But she couldn't make any sound . When the scissors cut the branches with a click , Xie Jiayi in the dream turned back to the window of the imperial study . She couldn't see anything, but she knew that the emperor had gone.

The girl picked up the branch and ran inside.

She was the only one who stood in front of the newly blossomed crabapple tree. She knew it was too late.

" It's too late ..." Xie Jiayi's tears soaked Lu Chen'an's pajamas . She murmured, " It's too late ... It's too late. "

Feeling the wet and hot tears, Lu Chenan paused while patting Xie Jiayi's back, hugged her tightly in his arms, and asked patiently and softly in a low voice: " Zhao Zhao, what is too late? Tell me? "

" Lord Lu, it's too late for the Begonia blossoms ..." After saying this, Xie Jiayi burst into tears.

When the thunder started, there was a movement outside the bedroom, but whether it was the maids and eunuchs who were on night watch, or Ruyi Caiyue who was not on duty tonight and got up at this time, they were all standing outside with their clothes straightened. They didn't

hear the princess and the princess call for help, so none of them lit the lights, nor did they dare to get close, and they just waited from a distance .

Caiyue hesitated for a while and asked Nanny Chen in a low voice: " It's thundering, should we light the lights? " The princess did not shout, but lit up all the lights in the yard first.

Nanny Chen waited for a while before whispering, " Wait a little longer. "

The spring thunder has stopped, and the drizzle of spring rain is falling.

On the big bed in the inner bedroom, Lu Chenan was still talking to Xie Jiayi in a low voice. She leaned in Lu Chenan's arms, tears streaming down her face, listening to his words and nodding. Although there was no light around her, she felt as if she was in the safest place, her tense body relaxed again. At this time, she heard that the thunder had stopped long ago . She rubbed the pajamas on Lu Chenan's chest, which were already cold. They were her tears.

" Is it raining? "

Lu Chenan nodded softly.

Xie Jiayi slowly raised her head from his arms, and Lu Chenan's warm lips fell on her upturned forehead. The two of them just hugged each other motionlessly.

Lu Chenan wrapped Xie Jiayi with the quilt in front of him, but Xie Jiayi pulled the quilt from behind and wrapped his entire back.

The two of them sat leaning against each other, quietly listening to each other's heartbeats and the rustling sound of rain outside.

" Lord Lu? "

" Um? "

" I want to go to the palace as soon as the sun rises. "

" good. "

When the carriage of the Princess's Mansion arrived at the palace gate, it was not open yet. The gatekeepers were so anxious that they turned around and around, wishing they could personally adjust the time to the time when the palace gate would open. This made Princess Kunyi wait outside the gate in the rain.

After keeping an eye on the time, the guards hurriedly opened the palace gates as soon as the time came. He was relieved when he welcomed the carriage of the princess's mansion in. The new young guard saw that the boss was so nervous that he couldn't even stand, let alone sit, and thought that the princess must have a bad temper and would have to punish her.

Unexpectedly, the people in the princess's mansion didn't say anything. Lord Lu, who was walking next to the princess's sedan chair with an umbrella, probably saw his nervousness and nodded at him. Even when the boss went up to the princess in person to apologize, the princess just said: " It's a good thing that you are responsible, there is nothing wrong. "

The father-in-law behind them even asked someone to leave two boxes of snacks for them, saying that they came a little early today and inevitably caused trouble for everyone.

The words were so soft and pleasant that the new guard felt warm inside. The people in the Princess's Mansion had been gone for a while, but he was still there, laughing. It was not until the leader raised his foot and kicked his calf that he came back to his senses. It was raining at the moment, and there was a team left at the door. Their group changed shifts and went to the duty room next door, sharing the snacks given by the Princess's Mansion and chatting.

The young guard couldn't help but lean over and ask the leader who had always been very nice to them in a low voice: " Leader Li, why do people outside say that the princess has a bad temper? " He said that the princess was the noble with the best temper he had ever seen. If it were someone else, after waiting for so long in the rain, instead of saying that they didn't come on time, they would take it out on them.

Li Tou'er hit him on the back of his head again, " Just talk, why are you sneaking around? " He lowered his voice even more: " How many people outside have seen our princess? Those who have seen her and still say that the princess has a bad temper- " He snorted, " You are not allowed to discuss the affairs of the noble! " The young guard took the warning to heart, but heard Li Tou's voice lowered even more and mumbled, " They are all bad people. "

Eunuch Xi had heard that the princess had arrived early, and had been waiting outside the palace gate for a long time. He looked at the emperor who had been coughing and couldn't sleep at night, and had been tossing and turning all night . Finally, he had to come to the couch by the window in the front study and lie down with the window open. He was about to tell the emperor the news that the princess had come in, when he heard Emperor Yongtai ask: " The crabapple flowers haven't bloomed yet? "

Eunuch Xi hurriedly said, " It will soon bloom. The buds have already formed. Once the spring rain is over, they will bloom immediately. "

Emperor Yongtai did not speak, but coughed again, and when he took off his handkerchief, there was blood on it again. He moved away and glanced at it calmly, and then he heard Eunuch Xi say that the princess had entered the palace and would be here soon.

Emperor Yongtai nodded, asked someone to move the brazier to him, and threw the bloody handkerchief into the brazier. Eunuch Xi, who was busy giving Emperor Yongtai cold medicine, was stunned when he saw it, " Your Majesty, I will go call Doctor Wang! "

Emperor Yongtai waved his hands and smiled with difficulty, " It's no use. I don't want to see his trembling old face anymore. "

Lu Chenan went to the Hanlin Academy to be on duty, and Xie Jiayi came to His Majesty's study.

When she came in, the brazier had been moved out. Eunuch Xi placed a foot warmer at the feet of Emperor Yongtai and put more quilts at his feet. Xie Jiayi saw the situation of His Majesty, and her anxiety grew, but she still had the same smile on her face. When she saw His Majesty open his eyes, she chatted with him. When His Majesty showed a little tiredness, she kept silent and pretended to concentrate on reading the storybook.

But I haven't turned a page for a long time.

Emperor Yongtai opened his eyes and looked at Xie Jiayi for a while, then said distressedly, " Zhao Zhao, don't be afraid. I'm fine. "

Xie Jiayi raised her face and smiled: " I'm not afraid! I'm just thinking of using the Yue kiln big-bellied narrow-necked vase to hold the crabapple blossoms this year, and the celadon beauty vase next year. The year after next, I have to find a more outstanding vase to overshadow this year's and next year's ..."

Emperor Yongtai listened to her soft and trivial words accompanied by the sound of light rain, and her words spoke of peace and stability year after year .

" It would be great if Zhao Zhao was my daughter. "

Xie Jiayi smiled and said, " The eldest princess wanted to come see His Majesty many times, but she was stopped at the palace gate and couldn't get in. Even so, she still went to the palace gate to kowtow every few days. "

" Her? If she doesn't stab anyone to death again, she's being filial. "

Xie Jiayi continued: " If it were me, I would have stabbed him to death as well. "

Emperor Yongtai shook his head, not knowing whether he disagreed with Xie Jiayi's words or he didn't believe that Xie Jiayi would do such a thing.

At that time, the prince consort had an affair with a maid. After the affair was exposed, the prince consort's family was also a long-established noble family, and they made the maid a concubine. The eldest princess didn't see it, so she thought the prince consort was dead. The eldest princess's wet nurse couldn't bear to see her master being treated like this, and she privately tortured the maid. The maid kept enduring it, and it took half a year for the prince consort to find out. The prince consort had a bad temper since he was a child in the capital, and he couldn't stand his beloved concubine being wronged like this. In addition, he was drunk, and it was night, so he rushed to the nanny, pulled her down and kicked her, regardless of the maid trying to stop him.

The elderly nanny was startled awake from her sleep. Unable to bear such humiliation, she hanged herself.

The eldest princess took the sword and stabbed the husband without saying a word. He didn't die at that time, so the servants stopped him and sent him back home. But the eldest princess stabbed the maid through with the sword. The maid's body was not so good, and she died at that time. It is said that when the county horse heard about it, he couldn't breathe, held his neck high and his face turned red, and called " Xiao Lian " with his neck straight , and then died. Xiaolian is the name of the maid.

How could the prince consort's family be willing to do this? Even the emperor's daughter must be subject to the law.

The eldest princess was sent to the Huguo Temple, where she practiced asceticism for two years, and then she began to openly keep a male lover. As the emperor's daughter, if she was shameless, there was really nothing others could do.

Speaking of his daughter, Emperor Yongtai glanced at Xie Jiayi and said, " You are the only one who still associates with her. How many unpleasant things are said about you in the capital ..."

" The eldest princess and I are about the same, and it's hard to say who is bringing down whose reputation ... Your Majesty, I guess this is called getting along. "

Emperor Yongtai smiled weakly, and just as he listened to Xie Jiayi's gossip and the sound of the rain, he slowly closed his eyes and fell asleep. This made Eunuch Xi very happy. His Majesty had found it increasingly difficult to fall asleep these days, and it was so rare for him to be able to sleep for a while.

Emperor Yongtai woke up from his sleep and felt better. He was able to stand at the door and ate more dinner that day. Xie Jiayi finally let go of her worries. His Majesty looked much better than he did in his previous life.



His Majesty went there on this afternoon in his previous life, and watched His Majesty spend the afternoon peacefully. The crabapple blossoms really did bloom on this day, just like in his previous life. This time, Xie Jiayi avoided the cluster from his previous life and picked another cluster that best matched the Yue Kiln vase, cut it, and sent it to His Majesty's study.

She thought that this spring would definitely pass, and she had to mobilize more people to find Fang Zhongzi! Your Majesty is only so old, even if you don't want to live a thousand years, asking for ten or twenty years is not greedy.

She walked out of the palace with brisk steps that day.

Unexpectedly, Emperor Yongtai's condition suddenly worsened that night.

Changchun Palace had been run for so many years, and had long known that His Majesty was in poor health. When she heard that His Majesty was summoning the Crown Prince and the cabinet ministers, Concubine De immediately knew that the time had come. At this time, Madam Liu and Ming Pei came to Concubine De's side, and when they helped Concubine De change her clothes, both of them had trembling hands.

Things are about to change in Dayin. From now on, their queen will have the final say in the harem!

## Chapter 68

Concubine De arrived at the Yangxin Palace first, but was stopped outside by the servants of the Yangxin Palace. She raised her eyebrows, no longer showing her usual humble and submissive look, and shouted: "Your Majesty, this is bad. I am about to go in to serve the sick, and you dare to stop me!"

The servants below all knew that maybe it wouldn't be long before this was the Empress Dowager, so they dared not really offend her. Defei and others immediately caught the change in the attitude of the servants in the Yangxin Palace. The rain had stopped, and the air after the rain was so fresh. For many years, Defei felt that she had never breathed so freely. And this was just the beginning.

Soon, Eunuch Xi was called out. His attitude remained the same as always. He bowed and said, "Your Majesty cannot enter without the order of His Majesty."

It was this usual attitude that was particularly irritating to Concubine De. She looked at Eunuch Xi with contempt and said, "I am extremely worried. Let me go in and see if His Majesty has given me instructions. I will obey your orders."

Eunuch Xi, who was used to seeing all kinds of people, could tell the change in Concubine De's tone and the toughness of her attitude.

He still said the same thing: "Without the order of His Majesty, Your Majesty cannot enter."

The servants of Changchun Palace were all behind Concubine De, and the servants of Yangxin Palace were standing on both sides of the palace door. Concubine De felt that Eunuch Xi had slapped her in the face in front of so many people.

"How dare you stop me!" She threw away her usual respectfulness and pointed at Eunuch Xi rudely.

Eunuch Xi still stood respectfully and repeated the same words without changing a word.

Concubine De gritted her teeth and said three good words in a row , " I thought the eunuch was a smart man. "

Eunuch Xi remained the same as before , lowering his brows and saying in a pleasing manner: " I am just an honest man who obeys the orders of my master. " Concubine De stared at Eunuch Xi, shook her sleeves fiercely, and took her people to a side hall to wait.

Even when she sat down, she was still panting. Ming Pei gently rubbed her aunt's shoulders and said, " There is a long way to go. Your Majesty, just wait and see him. "

" You are right. There is still a long way to go. Let's wait and see what happens to him. "

The two seemed to be talking about Eunuch Xi, but also seemed to be talking about someone else. After saying this, they looked at the flickering candlelight in the side hall, suppressed their own excited and complicated emotions, and waited.

Soon the East Palace and the cabinet ministers arrived. The cabinet ministers entered first, and faint crying sounds were heard. Then the prince went in alone.

Xu Shixing knelt on the footstool in front of Emperor Yongtai's dragon bed, looking at Emperor Yongtai who had taken off his dragon robe and heavy outer clothes and was only wearing apricot-yellow pajamas. It turned out that he had become so thin.

He knelt there in a daze. He had already seen His Majesty's pulse record and knew that the day was not far away , but he had not expected it to be so soon.

He looked at his father who had never liked him, but he thought of Xie Jiayi. He Sheng said that the princess was very happy to leave the palace today, and now he didn't know how she would react when she suddenly received a summons.

Xu Shixing's mind was in a mess. He once thought that if it weren't for Zhao Zhao, His Majesty might really depose him. Later, even if Zhao Zhao wasn't there, His Majesty couldn't depose him. All he had to do was to suppress the other ambitious princes, be cautious in his words and deeds at all times, and avoid the cold arrows that might fly at him at any time.

He had lived like this for as long as he had been the crown prince. No matter how young a crown prince was, the first thing he had to know was that from the day he was placed in that position, he could not easily trust anyone. This included his disciples, his brothers, and even His Majesty.

Emperor Yongtai had probably said a lot of words before and had exhausted all his strength. At this moment, he was lying there, gasping for breath but unable to speak.

For a moment, the only sound in the emperor's bedroom was the emperor's breathing. The prince kneeling in front of the bed and the eunuch Xi standing beside the bed were both silent, listening quietly to every faint command of a generation of emperor before his death.

Emperor Yongtai finally opened his eyes again, " ... you ... swear ..."

The prince was shocked and looked at Emperor Yongtai.

Emperor Yongtai half closed his eyes and said slowly and with difficulty : " ... never ... force ... Kunyi ... "

usually steady prince showed an expression of disbelief. Everyone thought that the handover between the old and new emperors must be about state affairs. Even Xu Shixing, who knew that His Majesty had nothing to say to him, never, did not expect that Emperor Yongtai would force him in the end.

The bedroom was so quiet that one could hear a pin drop. The only sound was Emperor Yongtai's increasingly heavy breathing. He suddenly opened his eyes, stared at the prince kneeling in front of the bed, and said with difficulty: " ... you ..."

Eunuch Xi hurriedly said, " Your Highness! "

Xu Shixing swore an oath in front of Emperor Yongtai's dragon bed as the emperor requested. As expected, His Majesty had nothing else to say to him. Even at this moment, the look he gave him was filled with unspeakable mockery.

When it was time for the prince to leave, Xu Shixing stood up and finally asked: " Why? " He wanted to ask his father why, why did he hate him so much, why did he look at him like that, why – forced him.

But he did not get any answer from Emperor Yongtai. Emperor Yongtai had already laid down, closed his eyes, and had no intention of giving him an answer.

At this moment, Emperor Yongtai completely understood his father , the late Emperor Yuanhe. He had chosen him, but he also hated him. He also personally chose Xu Shixing. It was said that Emperor Yuanhe first selected the grandson and then the crown prince. Emperor Yongtai thought it was ridiculous. How could the world know what was flowing in their blood. From the late emperor to him, and then to the crown prince, they were all the same person.

The late emperor had Empress Xiaoyi, what does he have?

His son, too, had nothing.

Emperor Yongtai didn't care what kind of emperor the prince would eventually become, or what kind of person he would become. He had already handed over the baton. He didn't let down the late emperor, he only let down himself.

His life had hope only after he stepped out of the cold palace.

But since the day he walked out of the cold palace, he had lost hope. He had shrunk his greedy desire to such a small size, but he still couldn't keep it and couldn't see it. He panted and wanted to ask Eunuch Xi, " Jun ..."

Eunuch Xi quickly replied: " The princess is almost here, Your Majesty, please wait a little longer, the princess is almost here! "

When Xie Jiayi received the summons from the palace, she had already gone to bed with Lu Chenan. Xie Jiayi had not been able to sleep well recently, and it was not until this afternoon that she completely relaxed. Fatigue came over her all of a sudden, and she went to bed early after returning home. This was the time when she slept the deepest.

Even when someone came in to answer her question and the lights outside were already lit, she was still asleep and had no idea.

Lu Chenan had already guessed what had happened. He did not dare to hesitate and immediately woke up Xie Jiayi.

Facing the princess who was suddenly awakened and still confused, he said to her calmly: " Zhao Zhao, don't panic, let's change clothes right now and go into the palace to see His Majesty. " Almost instantly, Xie Jiayi woke up, and the huge rock that she thought had been moved away suddenly fell down.

It made her feel as if her heart was being pressed down by a stone, making it hard for her to breathe.

Her voice seemed very calm, and she called Caiyue and Caixing to help her dress. She responded to Lu Chenan seriously: " Don't panic, don't panic, I'm not panicking at all. " After hearing this, Lu Chenan paused, looked at her deeply, turned around and went out to arrange to enter the palace.

As they got closer to the Yangxin Palace, Xie Jiayi suddenly stepped on her skirt and fell forward. Fortunately, Lu Chenan beside her quickly reached out and grabbed her. She seemed to be unaware of what was happening and continued to move forward with her skirt lifted.

Lu Chenan and other officials were waiting outside the hall, only the princess was led in.

In the side hall, Concubine De heard the princess enter and sneered. Concubine Xian, who was sitting next to her, hung her head and didn't know what she was thinking. The bright smile on her face was gone. The battle between her and Concubine De had been decided a few days ago. No one expected that when the prince really decided to take action, it was fast and ruthless, beyond everyone's expectations, and completely unlike the prince's style. Or, as some people said, I'm afraid this is the real prince.

The iron fist made everyone afraid to speak or even get angry. The entire Dayin was already in the hands of the prince.

At this time, everyone was just waiting for the final step to be justified. The sitting posture of Concubine De already had the flavor of the Queen Mother. Among all the women, she was the final winner. Concubine Xian had softened her tone in her words. In this deep night, Concubine De began to taste the taste of victory, but it was not complete enough.

Thinking of the man lying in the bedroom at this moment, her mood was complicated , but after all, she should be happy. Defei herself didn't know. After more than 20 years in the deep palace, she had too much hatred, but her hatred was directed at women. Thinking of him, she was more complicated . No woman can really hate a man like Emperor Yongtai, if you have ever seen him when he was young.

Concubine De was a patient and ambitious woman, but she was still a woman after all.

Eunuch Xi came out and called everyone waiting outside the side hall corridor in. Everyone knew that the final moment had come. They went in, knelt down in their respective positions, and waited for the final moment to arrive.

Many people secretly looked up at the princess kneeling in front of the bed, and were surprised to see that next to the princess in plain clothes, there was a big-bellied, long-necked white porcelain vase with a bunch of blooming red crabapple flowers in it.

The dying emperor, the girl in plain clothes, and the blooming crabapples constitute a strange beauty, carrying with it deep and indescribable shock and sorrow.

Lu Chenan, who was kneeling behind, saw Xie Jiayi holding the bony hand of Emperor Yongtai. The sadness in her was so heavy that she couldn't cry.

Lu Chenan slowly lowered his head.

Princes, nobles, and dukes are extremely rich, but everyone has a sadness so deep that they can't cry. Fate has given them the highest and most noble status, and then smiled and took away what they wanted most. There are so many people living in this imperial city, but how many of them have really lived up to their wishes?

Heaven and earth treat all things as straw dogs, and no one is an exception.

Xu Shixing knelt next to Xie Jiayi. This was the closest distance they had been in recent days.

But Xie Jiayi didn't even know who was kneeling next to her.

Emperor Yongtai finally raised his hand, as if he wanted to touch the princess's face.

Xie Jiayi slowly, slowly put her face into his left hand, which he raised with difficulty. Emperor Yongtai stammered his last words and a smile appeared on his face.

As Emperor Yongtai's hand fell to the side of the bed, two lines of tears rolled down Xie Jiayi's face.

She heard the last words of the emperor: " Are you a princess? "

She had heard the story. These were the first words of the young man in the cold palace and also the last words of Emperor Yongtai.

Eunuch Xi's shrill voice pierced through the night and echoed throughout Dayin:

" The Emperor has passed away! "

The imperial palace where Xie Jiayi grew up suddenly felt unfamiliar after hearing these words, whether it was the water-polished blue bricks, the numerous palaces, the yellow glazed tiles, or the vermilion walls.

From then on, this deep palace had nothing to do with her anymore.

Xie Jiayi staggered to her feet. At this moment, the whole Yangxin Palace was filled with wailing. At this moment, time had just reached Zizheng. Amid the endless crying, Xie Jiayi just didn't understand why Emperor Yongtai died on the same day in both his past and present lives. She didn't understand that she had saved so many people and changed the fate of so many people.

Why did the emperor uncle, whom she wanted to keep the most, die on the same day?

Amid the wailing, Xie Jiayi knelt there in a daze, tears streaming silently. She had lost another loved one, and from then on there was no one in this world who would love her unconditionally.

Father, mother, elder brother, and uncle, they would only ask: " Zhao Zhao, what do you want?

" " Zhao Zhao, what do you want now? "..... Apart from that, everyone else would ask you even if they didn't say anything, " What can you do ?" " What can you bring ?" " What is your value? ".....

No, she still has Lord Lu.

Lord Lu never asked her to be valuable. He would also ask: " Zhao Zhao, what do you want? "

Then he looked at her and said, " Okay. "

## Chapter 69

When the emperor passed away , funeral bells rang in temples and Taoist temples around the capital, and the sound lingered, echoing throughout the land of Dayin.

The people in the mansions of the capital hurriedly replaced the red lanterns they had hung for the New Year's Lantern Festival with white ones. The Dayin Palace quickly shed its colors and was filled with white. When the sun rose , the entire Dayin Palace was already a plain white , and from time to time there were cries of grief and wailing from the direction of the mourning hall.

The country cannot be without a king for a day , and the crown prince of Dayin has been decided long ago. Even those who had stood on the side of the Fourth Prince's party earlier

cried and begged the crown prince to ascend the throne as soon as possible to stabilize the people's and the military's morale.

His Royal Highness the Crown Prince ascended the throne and became the new emperor . From then on, Emperor Yongtai became the previous emperor, and the reign title would be changed to Jianzhao next year. In this life , Xie Jiayi still did not see the fourteenth year of Yongtai . Next year would be the first year of Jianzhao , just like in the previous life.

She stared blankly at the brazier that had been replaced in front of the mourning hall . Someone had just added new paper money , and the fire in the brazier suddenly rose up, casting a different light on the faces of the people kneeling around it.

The faces have indeed changed.

Although Concubine De has not yet held the Empress Dowager's coronation ceremony , she is now a true Empress Dowager. In the past few days , Shoukang Palace has begun to be cleaned up . I am afraid that it will not be long before Concubine De of Changchun Palace moves into Shoukang Palace, and from then on she will be the Empress Dowager of Shoukang Palace in name only.

The noble ladies who came to pay their respects had changed their attitude towards Concubine De , and always put her at the center of everything. The mourning hall was filled with " Your Majesty's behavior and virtue are really a role model for women of our generation ", " Your Majesty is sad, but you must take care of your health ", " Your Majesty ... Your Majesty ...".....

The new emperor has not yet appointed a queen, and now Concubine De is the undisputed first person in the harem. Who to appoint as the queen and how to appoint the queen are state affairs, as well as family affairs and harem affairs. This queen can be said to have walked out of Concubine De's hands, which is a rare situation. It is not a young emperor ascending the throne. Logically, there should be a crown princess, and the crown princess becomes the queen, and your majesty's mother becomes the queen mother. The queen's control over the power of the harem is even more powerful than that of the queen mother, at least it is a check and balance.

The current situation in Dayin's harem has directly pushed Defei to the undisputed number one position.

At this time, the noble ladies in mourning clothes could not help but look at Princess Kunyi who was kneeling on the side – the former number one female member of the Dayin royal family. She seemed to have no feelings about all this. Even when everyone was mourning together, she did not cry loudly, as if she was a little dazed. Yes, no one would support her in the future, and she would have to stay here forever. If she jumped like before, I'm afraid – the noble ladies exchanged glances and shook their heads.

The funeral lasted for seven days, and just after the seventh day, someone had already charged forward on behalf of the Empress Dowager to test Princess Kunyi's reaction.

A lady of the third rank seemed to have just opened her eyes. She wiped the corners of her eyes with a white satin handkerchief and asked doubtfully: " This ... Is the princess kneeling in the wrong place ...?"

Xie Jiayi knelt in the position where the most honorable women should kneel. Madam Liu, who was supporting Concubine De, curled her lips. It was finally said that someone had spoken out.

This made the Empress very unhappy. But Princess Kunyi had been brought up by His Majesty since she was a child. Not to mention the most honorable position for women, as long as she was there, the most honorable position next to Emperor Yongtai was always hers, and even the Crown Prince had to step back.

Over the past ten years, everyone has gotten used to it. So at an occasion like the emperor's funeral, when Princess Kunyi knelt there, no one thought it was wrong. Even the Ministry of Rites, who was in charge of this matter, said nothing.

Madam Liu bowed her head and smoothed out the wrinkles on her mourning clothes: "It's time to change the bad habits of more than ten years. It's wrong. You can't keep making mistakes. It's not decent, right?" The queen has been waiting for the first person to speak. Madam Liu looked at the imperial edict with her old eyes. This lady will have good fortune in the future. When the time comes, no matter what the reason is, praise this lady, and others will know what to do.

This third-rank lady was also taking a gamble to find out the attitudes of the empress dowager and the princess.

After these words were spoken, the mourning hall fell silent. Everyone covered their eyes with handkerchiefs and wiped their tears and mouth corners. In fact, they were all secretly observing the reactions of the empress dowager and the princess in the mourning hall.

The Queen Mother was less than 40 years old, well-maintained, and graceful. Although it was hard to keep vigil these days, the people below were very attentive and added ginseng and bird's nest to the soup prepared for her. So although she looked a little haggard at this time, she was still full of spirit and momentum. At this time, she seemed very sad, as if she didn't hear anything. She just wiped her tears with a handkerchief. She was so sad that she seemed to be weak, and she was supported by Liu Ma and Ming Pei beside her.

Where is the princess?

Everyone glanced over secretly and suddenly found that Princess Kunyi had changed out of her usual gorgeous and flamboyant clothes and was now wearing only white mourning clothes, kneeling with her head lowered, looking particularly frail. It suddenly reminded people of this illustrious princess who was given the title of Kunyi upon entering the capital, and now was given the title of Assistant State, whose reputation had long spread throughout Dayin, but she was still a girl of seventeen or eighteen.

Kneeling there at this moment, he felt indescribably lonely and frail.

The other ladies who wanted to follow suit to test the situation were unable to speak up at the most appropriate time. The late emperor's heroic spirit might not have gone far yet, and they were targeting such a young girl ... It seemed inappropriate ... They all said this to themselves in their hearts, unwilling to admit that even a girl who looked so delicate and slender at this moment could make them afraid.

This is Princess Kunyi.

They only dared to whisper, " This is against the rules ..." " Yes " , " It's only because the queen is kind, otherwise she wouldn't tolerate a junior like this ..." .....

They whispered quietly, trying to suppress their voices but still wanting to be heard, but afraid of being overheard ... The whispers continued in the mourning hall for a while. But the person involved still seemed to have no reaction, so the whispers stopped.

After all, they were brave enough to say the same thing. Who knows when the princess will explode? If she explodes on them, it will be a favor to the queen mother. But in such an occasion with all the civil and military officials present, the princess dares to embarrass them directly. If they are really humiliated in public, they will have no place to stand when they go back. Who doesn't have a bunch of black-eyed sisters-in-law waiting to fight for power, difficult sisters-in-law, offended women in the family, and servants who love to gossip ...

Therefore, to whisper " yes " in agreement is already considered to have gained wealth, while this is really like putting your hand into fire, not knowing what you can get out, but this fire is real fire.

So the third-rank imperial edict finished speaking. The Queen Mother was sad and naturally did not want to say anything at this time, so she could only ignore it. And the person involved, Princess Kunyi, seemed to not hear it at all, and did not even glance at him. Although some people whispered a few words, they soon stopped, and the words just fell to the ground, and no one picked up on them.

The mourning hall was quieter than before, even the sobbing sounds that were there earlier were gone. Some people wanted to cry a little, but after a tentative cry, they felt that they were the only ones left in the whole mourning hall, so they immediately stopped crying and followed everyone else in keeping silent and lowering their heads, just wiping their cheeks and eyes over and over again.

The Queen Mother couldn't speak, but she was really angry. These people were so useless, were they scared by Princess Kunyi? She held Mingpei's hand and exerted force. Mingpei looked at her aunt and understood. The Queen Mother was virtuous, but no matter how virtuous she was, she had endured for too long and could not wait any longer.

Mingpei looked at Xie Jiayi who was standing opposite her. She was wearing a plain white dress, with only a white jade begonia hairpin on her head and a jade pendant hanging in a silver brocade bag around her waist. She looked dazed and lifeless, but Mingpei still felt that even at this moment, the princess was still arrogant. Yes, she was Princess Kunyi, she would kneel wherever she wanted, and she would not think about others at all, and she would not care whether the Queen Mother looked good or not.

This is Princess Kunyi.

Ming Pei lowered her head. Such a willful and selfish person had such a good life. He didn't have to do anything, and he had power and wealth. However, her eyes flashed. She didn't have the ability, and she couldn't keep the power no matter how much she had. This domineering princess probably didn't realize at this time that the world had changed.

hesitated before speaking after being frustrated by Xie Jiayi many times . After all, Xie Jiayi was different from others. Other noble ladies hated each other so much that they could eat each other alive, but they could still smile. They were neither soft nor hard. They were good at hiding a needle in a cotton ball. Even if they stabbed each other and bled, they still smiled. But this



person was born in the wild land of the north and was a military general for generations. Even if a princess married him, he could not change his roughness.

Mingpei has become more withdrawn these days. She herself hasn't realized this withdrawal, but it has already shown in her appearance. However, this withdrawal is tempered with hatred day by day. Mingpei is no longer the Mingpei she used to be.

Ming Pei had to speak up, to test and also to win. If no one else came, she had to come.

Perhaps it was not only the Queen Mother who was waiting for this day, many people were waiting for this day, to see Princess Kunyi learn to bow her head.

Ming Pei stood aside, knelt down and kowtowed, each movement in the solemn mourning hall was more solemn. Even her upright back was more dignified than usual on such a day. Ming Pei spoke respectfully but firmly: " Princess, I think-- " Before she could finish the words " ancestral rules " , she heard a cold voice:

" Shut up. "

There is no doubt about it.

Unlike the usual crisp and delicate sound, it was a rustling hoarse sound, but with its usual domineering and decisiveness, and a hint of tired coldness.

This time, Xie Jiayi looked at Zhang Jinyu. Her eyes were red and swollen, but her gaze was as unique to Xie Jiayi as always: arrogant and disdainful. Her voice, tone, and eyes all revealed an unquestionable attitude.

She said shut up, so shut up.

This was the thought that came to almost everyone in the mourning hall at this moment. When she spoke and glanced over, everyone could not help but avoid the princess's sight.

This man was skinned when he was six or seven years old, and when he was sixteen or seventeen he was able to use the financial resources of a prefecture to build a project spanning half a dynasty. He was a descendant of the royal family who could sense the instructions from heaven and save the country and the people.

This is the only legitimate bloodline of Emperor Yuanhe and Empress Xiaoyi. People in Dayin would tremble when mentioning Emperor Yuanhe, and would bow their heads in respect when mentioning Empress Xiaoyi. They are the most noble bloodline in Dayin. One side is the royal family, but Empress Xiaoyi is of noble birth and is not inferior to the royal family. The only one left from these two bloodlines is the current Princess Kunyi.

She told everyone to shut up, and almost everyone lowered their heads and shut up without even thinking.

Including Zhang Jinyu, if it was before, maybe she would dare to speak out in accordance with the rules of heaven even if it meant offending her superiors, and she would be fearless if she took the righteousness. But at this moment, she backed down. She didn't finish what she wanted to say in the first place, her momentum had already fallen, and her chance to speak was gone.

The Queen Mother came to her senses and was very angry. With her as the Queen Mother kneeling here, how could Princess Kunyi have the right to command the whole place! But just now, she was confused and thought it was the past ... At this time, the Princess had already started the next round of burning paper and keeping vigil. It would be inappropriate to say

anything at this time. If it was spread out, it would be disrespectful. It would be really bad to listen. It would be better to keep the attitude of keeping vigil and not caring about other things. Zhang Jinyu returned to the Queen Mother and called out softly: " Queen Mother ..."

The Queen Mother glanced at her, and finally waited until she was helped to change clothes and rest in the back, and said to her: " Now, why are you afraid of her? As long as what you say is reasonable, she still dares to humiliate you? If she dares, I will catch her! " Then she slowly drank a sip of health tea, " Jinyu, you can let go in the future, I have your support. "

Zhang Jinyu, who was leaning against the empress dowager with his head down, finally smiled a little and called out in a low voice: " Empress Dowager ..." At this time, his tone had completely changed, and it was filled with intimacy and dependence.

The Queen Mother looked at the only blood left by her sister, a child who looked exactly like her and her sister. The hardships she and her sister had suffered, the ups and downs they had seen, the tortures they had endured, Jinyu would no longer have to endure. She looked at the young girl in front of her who looked 50% like herself, and thought about the princess kneeling outside who looked like Princess Pingyang. Slowly, Zhang Jinyu in front of her was not her niece, but the young and forbearing self she once was.

The Queen Mother raised her hand and stroked the well-behaved Zhang Jinyu, her eyes slowly becoming fierce.

Why? Why does Pingyang have everything? And her daughter also has everything!

Why should she and her sister be humble? Even if they are humble, they still have to live under the shadow of others. Their descendants still have to be humble!

The law of nature has never been fair, but this time, it's on their side.

The Queen Mother smiled coldly.

## Chapter 70

After 27 days of national mourning , the funeral bells that had been ringing in temples and Taoist temples throughout the capital finally stopped. A month later, street vendors selling meat and fish reappeared on the streets of the capital, and three months later , normal life had returned to the capital and beyond.

The new emperor's coronation ceremony had been held , and his mother was given a title , becoming the Empress Dowager Cijing, and living in Shoukang Palace. August 10th was the Empress Dowager's birthday , because the late emperor, although it was not a big celebration, it was the Empress Dowager's first birthday after all, and no singing and dancing were invited , but the ladies of the imperial family of Dayin were still invited. This was the official debut of the former Consort De as the Empress Dowager.

the entire Shoukang Palace paid special attention to the phoenix crown and clothes that the empress dowager would wear that day . In the past two months , the Ministry of Internal Affairs had been busy preparing the crown and clothes for the empress dowager that day , especially the phoenix crown that the empress dowager would wear that day , which was to have nine dragons and nine phoenixes, with 256 pearls on it , all of which had to be round and of the same size. In addition, one of the phoenixes had to stand upright , holding a large pearl in

its mouth , which was even more difficult to find . No matter how many pearls were presented to the empress dowager , she was not satisfied.

The head of the Ministry of Internal Affairs was so anxious that he was getting angry. He could still understand some of the things in the harem . In the past, the Ministry of Internal Affairs was the most important thing for the princess . Now , I am afraid that – the late emperor had ordered a lot of clothes and jewelry for the princess . The person in charge just delivered them a few days ago , and then he was punished by Shoukang Palace for a completely unrelated crime . This is a signal. Those confused people may not understand it. If they don't understand it, they will not live long, let alone live well.

Not to mention that there was a precedent in the palace at this time , that is, the first servant of the late emperor, Eunuch Xi. He was borrowed by the empress dowager to Shoukang Palace. Although he was still the same Eunuch Xi on the surface, everyone knew that Eunuch Xi had offended Shoukang Palace. Now he was in the way of the late emperor, so he couldn't do anything. But as the time passed after the late emperor passed away, Eunuch Xi's life would only become more and more difficult. Now, the elderly Eunuch Xi had to go to the Ministry of Internal Affairs in person like a little eunuch to get clothes for the servants of Shoukang Palace. Some people guessed that a great eunuch should have died after falling to this point. But Eunuch Xi did not die. After all, it is better to live a miserable life than to die a good death, especially for eunuchs like them who have no roots. Living one more day is a day.

As a result, all the work on clothes and jewelry for princesses and princesses was stopped, and the only thing they focused on was the phoenix corona and bridal robe for the empress dowager's birthday.

There were thousands of bamboos planted in the bamboo garden behind the Princess's residence. The lively Princess came here more often these days. She often lay in the study room in the middle of the bamboo garden, listening to the wind blowing and the bamboo forest rustling, which sounded like waves in her ears.

Lu Chen'an came back from his shift and turned through the garden gate. Through the green bamboos, he saw a man in white clothes lying listlessly on the long table by the window, his chin propped up, his eyes fixed on an unknown place, listening to the sound of the wind blowing through the bamboo forest over and over again.

As soon as you enter the bamboo garden, the hot heat outside disappears and you feel a cool coolness all over your body.

When Lu Chenan arrived at the study, everyone around him bowed quietly, but Xie Jiayi didn't notice anything until Lu Chenan gently placed his hand on the back of her fair neck and pinched it. She turned her head back, her eyes brightened:

" You're back. "

Lu Chenan then sat down next to her. One of them was wearing a green shirt, the other a white one. Against the backdrop of the garden full of green bamboos, the man was handsome and the girl was pretty. Even the servants who walked by the bamboo garden couldn't help but look back and take a few more glances.

Seeing Lord Lu coming back, Caiyue Ruyi and others felt relieved. The princess was only willing to say a few words when Lord Lu came back.

" Are you still sad? " This was the first time Lu Chenan asked Xie Jiayi after Emperor Yongtai passed away. Most of the time he just stayed with her quietly. Xie Jiayi shook her head, " I'm not sad, I just do n't understand. " She really couldn't understand. Although the late emperor was in poor health, he had always been like this. In his previous life, he was tortured by the natural disaster and finally died without a human form. But in this life, everything seemed fine, but it hadn't been ten or eight years, or three or five years. Why wasn't he even one day older? Why, it had to be the same day? Is life and death determined by heaven, and fate cannot be changed? But she has clearly changed the fate of so many people, and so many people who should have died have survived. Why couldn't the late emperor ...

She stared at Lu Chenan blankly. She couldn't express her confusion, but she just wanted an answer. She grabbed Lu Chenan's slender and strong hand, her black and white eyes were full of confusion, and she just stared at him blankly.

Lu Chenan simply took her into his arms and didn't look into her eyes.

She was hiding a secret that could not be told, and he could not bear to see her torment herself like this. Lu Chenan lowered his head and gently kissed Xie Jiayi's cold and soft hair, whispering: " Zhao Zhao, fate is determined, and it cannot be forced. "

" Heaven's will? " Xie Jiayi murmured and repeated his words.

Lu Chenan whispered in her ear: " The fate of an emperor is different from that of ordinary people. "

The words were like lightning, splitting the chaos. Xie Jiayi clenched the hand that was holding Lu Chenan's blue shirt tightly. Could it be because her uncle was an emperor, and the emperor's fate was so unchangeable ...

She was reborn not so much for the common people as for her uncle.

But in the end, she still couldn't keep him. Her uncle still left, just like her father, mother and brother. No matter how she cried, it was useless. She couldn't keep him, she just couldn't keep him. She cried and begged her brother, ,t leave me alone'don ,t leave'Don " " " Brother, Zhaozhao is afraid , " " Zhaozhao is afraid ... " , over and over again, but her brother still left. Can't keep it.

Xie Jiayi shed tears again. She could not keep her family with her again. Was it fate that she was left alone?

She hugged Lu Chenan tightly:

Lord Lu, it's hers, she must keep it!

Xie Jiayi's hug was almost like a vicious little tiger, her whole body tense, as if she was fighting against something. Her nails even dug into Lu Chenan's thin waist, which must have left a horrible mark.

Lu Chenan didn't move or speak. He just held her in his arms and caressed her long hair as usual.

Gently and gently, Xie Jiayi slowly relaxed her tense body and threw herself completely into his arms.

Like a boat, it has docked.

The sound of wind blowing through the bamboo forest was rustling in her ears, and seemed endless. She slowly closed her eyes and fell into a deep sleep leaning against the broad and warm chest of the man beside her.

The next day, when Xie Jiayi woke up, Lu Chenan was no longer there. She sat there in a daze, having slept from yesterday afternoon until now. Caiyue opened the tent, and the summer morning sun came in, causing Xie Jiayi to squint her eyes.

Caiyue and Caixing were both happy. It was rare that the princess could have a good sleep again. In the morning, they heard the noise and came in to serve. When they walked to the screen by the door, they saw Lord Lu, who was already dressed in court clothes, half-kneeling in front of the bed, looking at their princess, whose crimson court clothes were spread on the ground. He didn't know how long he had been looking at her. Probably because he heard someone, Lord Lu stood up. When he turned around and looked over, he had already concealed the expression in his eyes, leaving only his usual gentleness, gentle but full of distance. This was how the servants in the mansion understood their princess.

Everyone knew that Lord Lu had a good temper, never lost his temper, and never said harsh words. But as long as Lord Lu was present, the servants were quieter and more obedient than usual, and even Bu Bu, who was a jumpy person, did not dare to say or do anything out of line. Bu Bu himself was puzzled and scratched his head and said, " I don't know why, I just don't dare. " He expressed the thoughts of all the servants in the Princess's Mansion. Lord Lu often smiled at the servants, but they didn't dare to be presumptuous in front of him.

There were even servants who whispered in private that seeing Lord Lu was like seeing the former Crown Prince. The obedient people said it was nonsense, because Lord Lu and the former Crown Prince were obviously two completely different people. Apart from anything else, Lord Lu often smiled and occasionally nodded at them. As for the former Crown Prince, the servants simply couldn't remember whether they had ever seen him smile, and it seemed that he never saw people like them. If the Crown Prince saw you one day, you'd be finished ... But as she spoke, even this person couldn't help but mutter: They are obviously completely different people ... What she didn't say was, but the servants felt that they were indeed somewhat similar.

Caiyue and Caixing had just helped the princess finish cleaning up when they heard Bubu's voice outside: " Princess, someone from Shoukang Palace is here to deliver a message. "

There was obvious emotion in the voice, and one could tell from the voice that something bad must be going on in Shoukang Palace.

Caiyue and the other girl stopped smiling at once, and followed the princess, one on the left and one on the right, slightly lagging behind, to the main hall in front where guests were received. When they arrived at the main hall, a maid from Shoukang Palace came. She had a pale face and bowed to the princess. She smiled and said, " It's for the Queen Mother's birthday in August. The princess doesn't know that the Ministry of Internal Affairs is busy all over the place, and even now they haven't managed to do anything. Thanks to the Queen Mother's leniency, she indulged them. If it were me, they should be beaten with twenty sticks to see if they are still useless ..."

Now, this former maid who worked in Changchun Palace dares to directly criticize the right and wrong of the people in charge of the Ministry of Internal Affairs. When she talks about beating with a stick, she speaks of it as if she were talking about beating the servants in her own palace. Bu Bu, who was behind him, curled his lips after hearing this, thinking that it was really a poor man who suddenly became rich. He was afraid that others would not know that everyone in their Changchun Palace was shaking with fear.

Caiyue, Caixing and others also bowed their heads and stood respectfully.

Gradually, she could no longer speak. She saw the princess sitting at the top drinking tea and eating a piece of dessert. The little girl next to her was helping her rinse her mouth. She didn't know what the princess was thinking at the moment. She looked like she was in a trance.

The old woman felt her mouth dry as she spoke. After all, she was a maid from the Empress Dowager's palace. Although she was not a dowry of the Empress Dowager like Madam Liu, she was still a person of some importance. When she arrived at the Princess's mansion, she was not even allowed a stool or a cup of tea ...

The old woman quieted down, and Xie Jiayi glanced at her and said slowly: " We have finished talking, please let Madam go back. " As she spoke, she picked up the teacup, and a servant came forward to see the guest off.

The old woman was stunned ... No, she hadn't said anything yet ...

" Princess, I haven't conveyed the queen's words yet. " The old woman forced a smile, which was not very pretty.

" You haven't finished speaking yet? " Xie Jiayi put down the cup, " Didn't the Empress Dowager tell you to say that just now? "

Caixing laughed and said to the Shoukang Palace nanny, " What? Nanny took the initiative to nag our princess? " Caiyue also said, " The Empress Dowager is indeed very lenient. " This means that there are no rules in Shoukang Palace.

Now, when this nanny goes to any of the ladies below to pass on the imperial edict, she is flattered. Even if those people are ladies of the third, second, or even first rank, they all want her to say a few more words. But this Princess Kunyi ...

The nanny's face flushed, but she straightened her back even more. " My princess, the Queen Mother said that she knows that the princess has a caravan heading west, and that they brought back a batch of pearls a while ago that I heard are quite good. The Queen Mother's phoenix crown is still missing a few pearls of the same size, and it's always uncomfortable to have a small difference. I would like to ask the princess to take the batch of pearls to the Ministry of Internal Affairs to pick out some, so that the Ministry of Internal Affairs can save the trouble of searching back and forth. "

Xie Jiayi put down the cup and found it a little interesting.

Lady Defei, now the Empress Dowager, no one should offend her. Nanny Chen, who came hurriedly, was furious after hearing this, but she was afraid that the princess would get angry, so she rejected it. Now is the time for the Empress Dowager to establish her authority. When a decree of reprimand for unfilial piety comes down, the princess will have no choice but to accept it, and the hat of unfilial piety will be firmly pinned on her.

Nanny Chen was angry and worried.

Fortunately, she heard the princess' voice as soon as she entered the door:

" Want the beads? Caiyue should take people to find Ruyi and ask him to take them out and bring them back to the nanny. " Xie Jiayi's voice was mixed with a hint of interest, and the look in her eyes as she looked at the nanny was indescribably strange.

When the nanny was walking towards the palace holding a large box of pearls, she finally came to her senses. She was originally asked to show her authority, but the princess's final look and tone seemed to be sending away someone who had never seen good things.

She returned to the palace and only spoke selectively, ending with: " I am afraid that the princess will not be convinced. "

Madam Liu smiled: " No matter how unwilling she is, the princess will soon understand that all the good things in the world should be presented to the Queen Mother. It would be best if the princess could take the initiative. If the princess can't, we in Shoukang Palace don't bother with children. If there is anything missing, just give an order. The princess has so many trade routes, there is nothing she doesn't have. This is what the princess should be filial to. "

The Queen Mother just laughed. " She can be happy with it and treat this filial child happily. If she is unhappy with it— " The Queen Mother blew the tea leaves and said slowly, " She can hide outside the palace now, but will she not come in one day? Filial or not, she will have to kowtow to me when she sees me in the future. "

Ming Pei beside her also lowered her head and smiled.

A few days later, someone from Shoukang Palace went to the Princess's Mansion again. This time, they heard that the Princess had hired a group of good tailors from Suzhou.

" The Empress Dowager said that the good tailors among the people can be more flexible and give some ideas to the Internal Service Clothing Department. The tailors in the palace are rigid-minded and the things they make always make the Empress shake her head. The Empress is virtuous, and I am afraid that if I just mention it, there will be a big fuss, which would be a waste of time and money. Now that the princess has it, I will take it in. " As the nanny said this, she straightened her back and waited with her head down.

This time the princess couldn't help but laugh.

## Chapter 71

" Since the princess has it , I will take it in. "

As soon as these words fell, the flower hall of the Princess's Mansion fell silent. Even Caiyue, who was the most patient, had a tense face, not to mention Caixing and Bubu. Caixing's face flushed red . His Majesty had just arrived , and Shoukang Palace had begun to trample on the Princess's Mansion. Last time they wanted pearls , this time they wanted people, is there going to be a next time , and the next time, what else do they want!

Bu Bu thought to himself, I'm afraid they will come to ask for me one day. He has not forgotten the gnashing look of that old woman Liu Ma . It's true that the servants are like their masters. It 's easy to imagine what the Empress Dowager De is like now.

Only the princess couldn't help laughing , and the maid who was about to come to ask for help was startled by her laughter. Then she remembered that the Empress Dowager of Shoukang

Palace was behind her , and she calmed down again , reminding herself that the princess's mansion was just a grasshopper in autumn , and she could wait calmly.

" You need a tailor? " Xie Jiayi said in the same lazy tone as before , " Then pick a few easy-to-use ones and bring them back to this nanny. "

Someone immediately responded and took the nanny to get the Suzhou tailor.

The nanny looked at the stunning splendor of the Princess's Mansion and thought to herself: Last time, Nanny Wang said that it was difficult to deal with the problem. Now that she is the Princess , she is just like that! At most, she will not be nice to the people below , but she will offer whatever good things they want to Shoukang Palace . No matter how powerful she is , does she have the courage to say no? The late emperor is gone , and the palace has changed a lot.

I don't know when the princess will come to her senses. The queen mother not only wants things and people, but also wants the princess to take the initiative to offer the trade route in her hands. If she offers it earlier, she can get a good result. The later she offers it , then it will be hard to say anything.

The haughty nanny followed the people and walked forward, taking in the wealth of the princess's mansion without making a sound.

The servants in the Princess's Mansion looked at the Shoukang Palace Nanny who was holding her head high and pointing fingers from time to time, and they all glanced at each other and silently spat at each other in their hearts.

In the main hall here, as soon as Nanny Wang left, Cai Xing immediately called out, " Princess! " This keeps happening again and again, with no end in sight!

Xie Jiayi twisted the jade pendant on her waist and smiled: " I want to see what they can come up with next time. This is the second time. " As the old saying goes, things never happen more than three times.

But the people in Shoukang Palace either didn't know this ancient saying, or they really thought they were the gods, and didn't take these ancient reminders to heart at all.

So the next time will come very soon.

On this day, Madam Liu from Shoukang Palace came in person. Xie Jiayi looked at Madam Liu who was standing there stiffly. Her hair was combed so smoothly that it looked like a fly would be split apart if it landed on it. She came well prepared. It seemed that they themselves knew that what they wanted this time was not something they could get.

Nanny Chen handed the tea to the princess, looked up at Nanny Liu, and stood beside the princess instead of Caiyue.

Caiyue Caixing and Ruyi Bubu all stood aside.

Nanny Chen came here specially to observe the princess' temper, fearing that the princess would make things too bad and get caught by someone. But when she heard what Nanny Liu wanted to borrow, the experienced and steady Nanny Chen was about to explode!

The look she gave Madam Liu made her flinch. After she came to her senses, she straightened her back again, constantly reminding herself that no matter how powerful Madam Chen was, she was just a madam next to a princess. She was the number one madam in Shoukang Palace, but now – everything was different!



This time, Madam Liu asked to borrow it. What she borrowed was a pigeon egg-sized Dongzhu pearl that Emperor Yuanhe gave to Princess Pingyang. It was the best and largest natural Dongzhu pearl in the past few decades. When it was found, someone was specially sent to the capital to present it. Now, many years have passed, and Dongzhu of such quality has never been found again. There are many folk sayings about this pearl. Some say it keeps you warm in winter and cool in summer, some say it can beautify your skin and prolong your life, and some even say that grinding it into powder and eating it can make you immortal.

This oriental pearl is also one of the treasures in Princess Kunyi's dowry.

Madam Liu said sternly, " The Queen Mother's Phoenix Coronet could never find a bead that she liked. All 256 beads were found, but the one in the middle was really hard to find. Someone below mentioned that they could borrow this bead from the Princess. "

Borrow? Nanny Chen almost wanted to spit in her face. The Queen Mother can ask to borrow, but who dares to ask the Queen Mother to borrow? As long as you take out this bead, it's a gift! Her stern face became completely stern at this moment. Originally, she came here to control the princess. If the princess was angry, she could also say a few words to ease the atmosphere and make it not too stiff and ugly. At this moment, Nanny Chen didn't want to ease the atmosphere. Not to mention controlling her young master, she couldn't even control herself. This was simply stepping on the head of their Princess's Mansion! She even dared to ask for the dowry that Princess Pingyang left for the princess!

Ruyi, who had been standing silently at the side, raised her eyelids and glanced at Shou Ankang's people. In addition to Madam Liu, there were two eunuchs who followed, and each of them also stood there with a big hand.

Caixing was really about to spit fire! She really didn't understand, how good Defei was to their master in the past, and for a long time she couldn't understand why the master was alienated from Changchun Palace . What was there to not understand now? I'm afraid that the Empress Dowager was fake for so many years, otherwise it would be impossible for the late emperor to be gone for less than half a year, and she would manipulate people like this again and again. Everyone listened to the princess who had been so easy to talk to the previous two times, " There is too much dowry. We can't find it in a short time. If we find it, it will be too late for the birthday in August. You can borrow it from others. "

After saying this, he held his chin in his hand, looked at Aunt Liu and asked, " Anything else, Aunt? "

Aunt Liu was stunned. She didn't expect the princess to be so stubborn at this time. She just replied without saying anything nice. She didn't even look uneasy. She just went back to Shoukang Palace? Aunt Liu was a little bit unbelievable. She couldn't find any other explanation. Seeing that the princess was about to offer tea to the guests, she hurriedly said:

" Since the princess's things are hard to find, I will report the truth to the Empress Dowager when I go back. Who knows, the Empress Dowager may assign some useful servants to help the princess find them. I can't say for sure, but since the things are hard to find, I will borrow two people first. The princess doesn't need to look for them. The Empress Dowager heard that Caixing, who is beside the princess, has a good mouth and is eloquent, and she also heard that

the young eunuch beside the princess is smart and brave, so she wants to call him over to take a look! ” Madam Liu was talking about Caixing and Bubu.

The two young eunuchs behind Madam Liu looked at Bu Bu with malicious smiles. Everyone knew that Bu Bu had shown a knife to Madam Liu. This was called, it's not that I don't want to take revenge, it's just that the time has not come yet.

Look, the time has come.

" Since the person is here, I will take him away directly. " Madam Liu said as she looked at Caixing and Bubu, and saw that they both immediately leaned towards Princess Kunyi. She sneered in her heart, leaning anywhere was useless. The Queen Mother sent two servants to the palace to see, she didn't believe that the princess would tear her face with the Queen Mother for two servants.

Unexpectedly, Xie Jiayi became really impatient, and her tone became bad, almost with disgust: " Although Mammy Liu is a little old, it shouldn't have come to this! I said at the time that my people were not allowed to go anywhere. Mammy obviously has ears, so how come your ears don't work? And you still come to nag me! " The obvious impatience was spoken directly to her face.

Madam Liu's face turned red, and she said the same thing: " I dare not disobey the Empress Dowager's order! " She lowered her head, but her words were very firm.

Xie Jiayi raised her chin towards Ruyi, and saw Ruyi took out something.

When the people in Shoukang Palace saw it, they almost dropped their jaws in shock. It turned out to be a bright yellow imperial edict!

It was the imperial edict given by the late emperor.

" That day, I happened to be free after we talked about it, so I asked His Majesty – the late emperor to write an edict for me. " At this point, Xie Jiayi asked someone to announce the edict, and it was indeed the edict of the late emperor, which was exactly what the princess said, that people in the princess's mansion would not go anywhere.

On the way back to the palace with her people, Aunt Liu hadn't come to her senses yet. How could such a matter have the late emperor's imperial edict! This ... this ... who would have thought that for such a servant's matter, Princess Kunyi would go to the late emperor to ask for an imperial edict, and she really dared to ask for it, and the late emperor really wrote it ...

This isn't ... She wanted to say it was ridiculous, but since it involved the late emperor, she didn't even dare to think so.

A young eunuch nearby muttered in a low voice: " It feels like the princess asking for an imperial decree is as easy as drinking cold water ..." This is too easy. No matter how much the late emperor said about his love for the princess, or how many related stories he heard, his eyes would be refreshed again and again by how much favor Princess Kunyi once had.

" pop " sound in Shoukang Palace , and the Empress Dowager slammed the teacup onto the rosewood tabletop.

When the emperor came to pay his respects the next day, the Empress Dowager told the story with a smile, " I thought it would be better to avoid wasting money and manpower, so I simply used the pearl in the princess's hand to make it look good. I didn't ask for hers, but in the end, I

gave Madam Liu a big fuss. Madam Liu was so old, and this was the first time someone had said something to her face. She is so upset that she can't even get up now. "

Emperor Jian Zhao heard the Queen Mother's words, his dark eyes flashed and he said, " Since Nanny Liu is old, why don't you go to the Ministry of Internal Affairs and pick a few capable ones to take good care of her so that she won't have to run back and forth to do errands. "

The smile on the Queen Mother's face slowly disappeared. She wiped the corners of her mouth with a handkerchief and looked at Emperor Jian Zhao without saying a word. Was she talking about ordering people around?

" As for the beads, I have some suitable ones in my private storehouse. I will have someone send them to the Ministry of Internal Affairs later . " After saying this, he bowed and took his leave.

This time, the Queen Mother's face darkened. She asked Aunt Liu who came from the other side, " Look, what does the Emperor mean by this? "

Madam Liu also couldn't figure out what His Majesty meant. To be precise, she had never figured out what His Majesty meant. His Majesty had been taciturn since he was a child, always just watching with his eyes open. He would nod and agree to whatever Concubine De said, and rarely said anything else. He would do whatever he was asked to do, no matter how difficult it was, and she had never heard him say the word "difficult".

When Your Majesty was seven years old, Concubine De heard that the nine-year-old Second Prince had memorized so many books. Concubine De directly sent three times as many books to her seven-year-old son's room and asked him to memorize them all the next time Emperor Yuanhe summoned him, and he must surpass the Second Prince. At that time, everyone thought that it was impossible for such a young child, but when the time came, he actually memorized them. Later, it was heard that such a young child would prick himself with an awl and recite books without sleeping. His thigh was pricked too hard, and the weather was hot, so pus came out. He stayed with Emperor Yuanhe for most of the day. If he hadn't had a high fever that night when he came back, I'm afraid he wouldn't have known that his leg was so rotten. Even Aunt Liu was shocked at the time. How could a seven-year-old child be so cruel to her? It turned out that the sons and grandsons of the emperor and the phoenix were not ordinary people.

Hearing the Empress Dowager asking this, she could only say: " Your Majesty is probably very busy, and his mind is full of state affairs. I'm afraid he didn't think much about it after hearing it. People said that Your Majesty can only sleep for more than two hours a day now, and he is very busy with so many things to do. Your Majesty, Your Majesty is still filial. As soon as he heard about it, he took out his own things for Your Majesty to use. " As for other words, she was a servant and could not say a word.

The Queen Mother's long nails scraped against the wall of the cup, making a sharp " hissing " sound.

" Tell me, does the emperor have the princess in his heart ? " The empress dowager did not speak for a long time. As soon as she spoke, she stared at Madam Liu and asked this question.

## Chapter 72

" Tell me , does the emperor have the princess in his heart ? " Defei put down the cup and looked at Madam Liu.

Madam Liu pondered, " Your Majesty has seen over the years that His Majesty is just like that to the princess , and the princess is always the one chasing after His Majesty. They are both young people , and the princess turned her head to look at the other person, and the two of them separated. "

" So what do you think of Mingpei? " the Queen Mother asked again.

Madam Liu frowned and said, " In my opinion, your Majesty only cares about state affairs and doesn't bother with these little things. "

The Queen Mother stroked her long nails that she had carefully nurtured, and after a while she said: " This is better ... Nanny has also seen that the royal family Xu family has a romantic heart . The Emperor Taizu treated Empress Duanjing so well that even if the legitimate son died , the Emperor Taizu would pave the way for the legitimate grandson. " Surrounded by powerful enemies on all sides , he had to pass the throne to Emperor Yuanhe , but after seeing how the Emperor Taizu paved the way for Prince Minhuai , you can understand what it means to be sincere and painstaking. The empress married to Emperor Yuanhe was someone who had captured Emperor Yuanhe , and would also support the orthodoxy of the uncle passing the throne to the nephew. In this way , the Emperor Taizong left a will in the end , allowing the descendants of Emperor Yuanhe's legitimate daughter Princess Pingyang to have a hundred years of good relations with the descendants of Prince Minhuai. This was to blend the lineage of Emperor Yuanhe with the legitimate lineage. All kinds of painstaking efforts, so that even if Prince Minhuai wiped out the family , the backup plan left by Emperor Taizu made Emperor Yuanhe , who seemed to be sitting on the throne , anxious and almost broke up Dayin.

Could " a wise man like Taizu not have thought of the consequences of a change? Taizu certainly could , but he wanted the legitimate descendants of Empress Duanjing to inherit the world. It was the same when it came to Emperor Yuanhe . When he chose a crown prince, he had to choose the one who would be the best for Empress Xiaoyi's daughter. "

Emperor Yuanhe was such a cruel person. His only weakness was Empress Xiaoyi, and the only tenderness he had was given to their daughter Pingyang.

At this point, the Queen Mother paused stroking her nails, and Aunt Liu did not dare to say anything. The previous emperor was still the same. The royal Xu family has produced romantic and crazy people from generation to generation.

The late emperor's words almost touched the empress dowager's lungs. Madam Liu had no choice but to change the subject and whispered, " When the country was founded, a Taoist priest said that if the legitimate heir was not preserved, the eldest son would be executed in five generations. "

The Queen Mother sneered disdainfully: " How can you believe these words? "

The Queen Mother continued, " Fortunately, this generation did not have this problem with the Emperor. Although the Emperor has a bad temper , he finally understands reason and still listens to me. "

Madam Liu said quickly, " Your Majesty is so filial. Your Majesty is too strict with your Majesty. If I were to ask you, I'm afraid there wouldn't be many children as obedient as your Majesty in the whole of Dayin. "

The Queen Mother finally smiled: " Things are different now. I can't say too much and annoy him. "

" Your Majesty, what are you talking about? Your Majesty is only filial to you! "

" After my birthday, it's time to give Mingpei this child a name ..."

The servants in the Yangxin Palace had been replaced a long time ago, and the front hall was still the same as the previous emperor's time, especially the imperial study, which was almost untouched. However, it was different from the previous emperor's time. During the previous emperor's time, unless the princess came, ice was never used even in July. However, Your Majesty was in good health, so ice was placed in the Yangxin Palace early on. As soon as you walked to the corridor, you could feel the cool air coming from the inner hall.

A few servants who were on duty in the tea room stayed back to prepare tea and snacks for the newcomers from the East Palace. In just one night, the owner of the Yangxin Palace changed, and the servants who came here were more careful in their duties while holding the tea tray. I was still a little dazed when I walked into the study. Even the kang table on the long couch had not been changed. There was a book that the princess had read half a year ago on the table next to the couch. It was still there as it was, and no one had put it away.

But all the servants working in the Yangxin Palace knew that the princess would never come again.

His Majesty reviewed memorials every day and night, and when he was tired, he would ask a few guards to go to the training room to do some exercise for a while, just to stretch his muscles. Jixiang handed His Majesty's tea tray to Gaosheng, and quietly stood by the door. He saw His Majesty leaning casually on the couch, obviously just out of the training room, and had already bathed. His hair was not wiped dry, and the ends of his hair were still slightly dripping with water. He closed his eyes, and it was unclear whether he was resting or sleeping.

When Jixiang took the kettle handed over by Gao Sheng, he could not help but said: " Eunuch Gao, do you want to ask two palace maids to come in and dry His Majesty's hair? " Gao Sheng hurriedly shook his hands, and his already low voice became even lower: " His Majesty is now impatient to let others do this for him. Last time, Yulan saw that His Majesty fell asleep like this, but it was a little – His Majesty directly sent someone out to get the board. " From then on, the palace maids who stayed in the Hall of Mental Cultivation also knew His Majesty's rules: don't do anything without instructions.

What Gao Sheng didn't say was that the emperor grabbed Yulan's wrist and got angry when he opened his eyes. Twenty strokes of the cane, Yulan hadn't even gotten up to do her duty yet. He looked at the emperor's eyes and was really afraid that he would have Yulan beaten to death. Fortunately, the emperor closed his eyes and opened them again, suppressed his emotions, and directly ordered: " Twenty strokes of the cane. "

Gao Sheng had always been working with Xu Shixing. In the past two years, he slowly came to his senses and discovered a very shocking fact. This was also why, when he led people to clean up the imperial study in the Yangxin Palace, he hesitated and did not let anyone move too much, especially the notebook that the princess had left there. Later, he was worried, and the emperor came in and said nothing. His heart relaxed and tightened, and he became more careful when working from then on.

On the tenth day of the eighth month, the Queen Mother's birthday was held in Jianji Hall. Although there was no singing and dancing, it was prepared by the thirteen departments of the Ministry of Internal Affairs for almost two months. The ministers and their wives came and saw a high platform in front of the hall. Chrysanthemums were piled up like a treasure mountain. There were many precious varieties, some of which were obviously famous products that the palace greenhouse had bloomed for the Queen Mother's birthday. When the old lady of the Duke of Yingguo's mansion arrived with the Duke of Yingguo's wife and Mingpei, she was immediately surrounded by the crowd. It was difficult to meet someone now, so how could I not flatter him when I had the opportunity to meet him.

Princess Kunyi and Lu Chenan came together and saw the lively scene at the Duke of Yingguo's mansion. At least on the surface, it seemed like a raging fire. Mingpei lowered her head in shame. People around her praised the Duke of Yingguo's mansion for its ability to take care of people. " Look, she's just like the old lady's granddaughter ." The old lady of the Duke of Yingguo immediately smiled and said, " I love her as a biological child. This child is kind-hearted. As a grandmother, I have to make decisions for her and can't let anyone bully her . " This statement is thought-provoking.

Just now, someone mentioned Miss Mingpei's age, and someone else vaguely mentioned that " such a good person has long been favored by others . " They also vaguely heard that it was His Majesty's person. His Majesty's harem is now empty, and " His Majesty's person " is the one in front of him. This sentence cannot be bullied by others. I don't know if the old lady of the Duke of Ying's Mansion meant that the title given to entering the palace cannot be suppressed by others, or she said—

At this time, everyone had already seen Princess Kunyi coming over.

It seems that the relationship between the princess and Lord Lu is as good as what people say. It is said that Lord Lu rarely socializes with others after work, and always goes back home directly. Some people envy, some people disdain, " She is not the princess yet " , which means that the princess is jealous and strict. At this time, when seeing the two of them appearing together, although others are talking, their eyes can't help but drift to the two of them again and again, as if they want to find out something fishy from the two of them.

The maid next to her mentioned something, and the princess frowned, looking unhappy. On such a good day, only Princess Kunyi dared to frown and show an unhappy expression. Everyone else was beaming with joy, no matter how many troubles they had, they all looked happy to celebrate the Queen Mother's birthday.

Princess Kunyi is still Princess Kunyi.

Many young ladies had discussed this in private before, especially Xie Jiayi, who had completely stayed indoors since the funeral of the late emperor, which made many people

believe that the princess was no longer the same princess as before. A new emperor appoints new ministers, not to mention the completely changed structure of the royal harem.

Now it seems that there is still something different about the princess, but the princess's willful and casual nature does not seem to have been restrained at all. Everyone looked at the Duke of Ying's Mansion again. They all knew that the adopted daughter of the Duke of Ying's Mansion and the princess were not on good terms. These people all had eyes and ears. Who didn't know that the noble who punished the adopted maid of the East Palace in the book that was being talked about in the capital at that time was the princess. Not to mention the Dajue Temple before and the Zhuque Street in the capital later.

Moreover, the lucrative post of the Duke of Ying's son and grandson was taken away by the princess, and replaced by the prince of the Taifu family, who was promoted right after entering the court. His upward momentum was only slightly worse than that of the top scholar and county horse Lord Lu, and these two people left the others far behind .

How could the Duke of Ying not hate them? Then there was the disaster in the south, which was prevented by the princess's blessing, but it completely damaged the foundation of the Duke of Ying's family, and even lost the qualification of hereditary succession. Even if the princess was not to blame, the Duke of Ying would have to remember her. If it wasn't her dream, how could they fall so badly?

Thinking about it this way, if it weren't for Princess Kunyi's actions, it's hard to say what the court would be like at this time. Those old ministers are not like the women in the harem. They are thinking about the relationship between the princess and the adopted daughter and the old lady of the Duke of Ying's Mansion. They are thinking about the relationship between the princess and the queen mother, the momentum of the Duke of Ying's Mansion, and the pattern of the new dynasty. Suddenly I realized that if it weren't for the princess's series of operations, Dayin would be in turmoil at this time, and the new emperor would be taboo about foreign relatives, and the people who can and must be used are the people of the Duke of Ying's Mansion. Then the Duke of Guo's Mansion would not be in a state of turmoil at this time, but would really rise straight up. Once the momentum of foreign relatives is established, I am afraid that even His Majesty can only reconcile and cannot suppress it.

Thinking of this, many old officials also took a second look at Princess Kunyi. This is really – a random punch kills a master. If the Duke of England figured out this, he would really hate Princess Kunyi.

The women were only concerned with whispering to each other, " It seems that the princess and the prince really have a good relationship . " The princess smiled when the prince said something. " Whose husband and wife don't have a good relationship in front of others? " The woman who was speaking had her husband staying at the concubine's house every day at home, and only came to the main room to sit when they had important matters to discuss, and left after talking. When they were in front of others, he would help her get off the carriage and listen to her with a smile.

But even so, she still felt a little sour and took a handkerchief to wipe the corners of her mouth. The princess and the prince looked at each other with light in their eyes.

Xie Jiayi noticed that the famous chrysanthemum, the Snow Beauty, which was supposed to bloom in September, was displayed now. She looked closely and found that it was not just the

Snow Beauty, but many other chrysanthemums that should not bloom at this time were forced to bloom and displayed in the flower room. It was as if the girls who were forced to welcome guests in the Mingyue Tower in the capital were all moved out of the flower room on this day. Whatever happened, the palace was now owned by someone else. Let alone the chrysanthemums, the empress dowager had all the crabapple flowers in the palace cut down, just like in her previous life. She just covered her chest and said, " The Imperial Observatory calculated that these crabapple flowers are harmful to me, so I have to cut them down even if I don't want to . " At that time, Xie Jiayi was so angry that she laughed. If you are sick, don't go to the imperial physician but go to the Imperial Observatory. This is something a normal person would do.

Lu Chenan saw the person in front of him pouting slightly in displeasure among a bunch of happy faces, and couldn't help laughing: " Are you heartbroken over a few pots of chrysanthemums? If it weren't for the late emperor protecting you, you would have been forced to open them and put them up by now. "

At this point, Lu Chenan thought of Xie Jiayi showing him the Dongzhu coveted by the Queen Mother in the tent last night. He always felt that the Queen Mother's hostility towards the princess was not only because of the Duke's Mansion. If it was because of her natal family, although he had never seen the Queen Mother, a female doctor in the palace could become a concubine and raise a prince, and most importantly, keep him alive. She was definitely not simple. For such a person, there should be many ways to deal with the princess. But she actually started with that pearl, which shows that she has always remembered this pearl in her heart. So, is she remembering this pearl, or the person who owned this pearl back then? It seems that once the Queen Mother, who is so stable, touches the princess, a thorn can't help but stick out. What can make a woman in the deep palace have such a thorn that can't be hidden is not interest, but more likely emotion ...

He looked down at Xie Jiayi who smiled after hearing his words. This person, looking clever, was too easy to coax. He simply didn't dare to think about it. If the Queen Mother had been hiding such a thorn in her heart, as he had heard before, Changchun Palace and Haitang Palace were the closest, when one day the Queen Mother didn't need to hide it, what kind of situation would Xie Jiayi, who was completely unprepared, face?

Lu Chenan's eyes flickered, and when he thought of that possibility, he really wanted to hug her and protect her. She was so stupid, if she wasn't lucky, she would have been eaten by others without leaving any bones.

Xie Jiayi approached him, smiled and lowered her voice and said: " I know she is waiting for me to kowtow to her. " As she spoke, her smile disappeared and her face became serious. Their Empress Dowager really wanted to see her kneel like a madman.

Seeing her wide sleeves hanging beside his hands, Lu Chenan couldn't help but use his sleeves to cover them and squeezed her hands, " On such a good day, someone must be unhappy. "

It's not just ordinary unhappiness.



## Chapter 73

" On such a good day , someone must be unhappy. "

that the calluses on his knuckles are caused by years of holding pens. There are even calluses on the palms . After marriage, Xie Jiayi learned that Lu Chen'an practiced horse riding and archery . He smiled and said, " A gentleman should not neglect any of the six arts . "

Speaking of horseback archery, Xie Jiayi was good at it. After all, everyone in the Princess's Mansion knew that the Princess was quite skilled. She wanted to compete with others, but she didn't expect Lu Chenan to be very good at horseback archery . He was only slightly behind her by one horse head every time, and was highly praised by the Princess.

The two of them put their sleeves together . She held Lu Chen'an's thumb in her sleeve and looked up to ask him: " Is there someone in the government office who wants to make you unhappy? " The Duke of Ying's Mansion doesn't have much else , but it has a lot of dogs that it has won over . Xie Jiayi snorted. Zhang Jinyu is indeed from the Duke of Ying's Mansion. It's like she has this habit of forming cliques and seeking personal gain through small favors . When she was a palace maid, she won over the maids and eunuchs in Haitang Palace and the maids and eunuchs in the East Palace. Even after she became a concubine , she still won over the maids and eunuchs everywhere, wishing that she could win over all the maids and eunuchs in the palace. The Duke of Ying is the same . The emperor's uncle is annoying people who form cliques . He doesn't form cliques openly , but he shows favors everywhere in private.

Otherwise, the Duke of Ying's Mansion would have to get money everywhere , and showing favors costs money.

Lu Chenan chuckled and said, Those " who want to make me unhappy should be unhappy first. " He couldn't help but raise his other hand and restrainedly helped her tuck a few strands of hair behind her ears.

Xie Jiayi was delighted when she heard this, because she knew that Lord Lu was the smartest person in Dayin. She blinked and said, " Just do it. If someone dares to be shameless to you, he will forget about his face! " She even sounded murderous .

It's like a little tiger protecting itself, Lu Chenan thought.

He heard her say, " Your Majesty, you are sensible. "

Lu Chenan lowered his eyes and asked in his heart, what's wrong with His Majesty?

How could Xie Jiayi know that Lord Lu, the smartest man in Dayin, was so insightful? He could hear the hesitation and affirmation in her simple statement. He could hear her hesitation because she mentioned this person. She was sure because this person should be trustworthy as the emperor.

He moved his hands in his sleeves and said softly, " Don't worry. "

Xie Jiayi smiled: " I naturally trust Lord Lu. " If he can't even deal with those sycophants, how can he still be Lord Lu?

Lu Chenan just looked at her and chuckled.

Seeing his colleague, Lu Chenan withdrew his hand and went to greet him. From the corner of his eye, he saw that his wife kept looking at him, which made Lu Chenan's smile deepen when greeting others.

The officials in scarlet robes were all quite old, and many of them were pregnant, so the young Lu Chenan, who was already wearing scarlet robes, was particularly eye-catching. He was as tall as a spruce or poplar, and his profile was so beautiful that people couldn't take their eyes off him. Xie Jiayi thought as she watched, why is her county horse so outstanding? She herself felt that compared with the omnipotent Lord Lu, she, who was uneducated and unskilled, seemed to be a little inferior.

But, Lord Lu likes me. Just like my father likes my mother. Just thinking about this makes me happy.

" My Lady, the young and promising Prince Ma has solved many unsolved cases in the past year. "

Xie Jiayi was so fascinated that she turned around and saw that the person who came was the third lady of the Baoning Marquis's Mansion. Oh, now she should be called the wife of the prince of the Taining Marquis's Mansion. This third lady eventually married Qin Zhili.

" Excuse me, I just want to thank you, my lady princess, for your kindness. " Gu Xinlan always had the most standard and appropriate smile on her face. Almost every noble lady in the capital had the same smile, but there was sincerity in her eyes when she looked over.

" It's just a small favor. I can't help you at all. "

Gu Xinlan shook her head, " It's a great favor. The princess's little help has helped me a lot. " She came with only a personal maid, and she didn't understand what the two were saying, but she heard her young lady say more than once, " In the end, the one who really helped me was actually the princess, whom I didn't even know . " She knew that the young lady didn't want to get married, but the mistress asked her to get married, and the master and the old lady in the mansion asked her to get married. The other sisters and servants thought that the young lady was deliberately making trouble. Who wouldn't say that the young lady was lucky to be the wife of the prince of the Taining Marquis's mansion? She didn't know what the young lady said to her biological mother, Aunt Li, behind closed doors that day, but Aunt Li wiped her tears and asked the young lady to marry well.

Xie Jiayi seemed to have heard vaguely, " Taking a concubine? "

Gu Xinlan said meaningfully: " Of course our prince will not agree, but filial piety comes first, so I will naturally listen to my mother-in-law first. " Half a month after she got married, her mother-in-law gave her a warning by sending two beautiful girls to her room. After three months of no news from her side, her mother-in-law wanted to take a concubine for the prince.

Gu Xinlan curled her lips sarcastically. If she hadn't known about it beforehand and checked it out, she would have believed the prince's euphemistic and implicit expression of his love and trust for her. At first, she got drunk and didn't consummate the marriage. Later, she simply moved to the study to sleep because of her official duties. When she couldn't drag it out any longer, she was full of bitterness. If she hadn't known about his nonsense, Gu Xinlan would have really thought that her husband had a hidden illness. If that were the case, and her husband trusted her so much, she would have tried her best to cover it up for him. That would be a joke for the rest of her life. Just thinking about it, Gu Xinlan felt a chill.

" It's good to take a concubine. "

Gu Xinlan heard the princess say this, smiled and nodded, " Indeed, it's good to have a concubine. " For others, taking a concubine is a bad thing, but for her, taking a concubine is a good thing that can save her reputation. Now, after a year of marriage, she has not made any progress. A woman who can't give birth to a child is simply not worthy of being a woman. Now, not only she has no progress, but also the two concubines who are as useless as water chestnuts.

Oh, and those two girls who are more cunning than lotus roots are also not making any movement.

If I hadn't known, I would have asked the prince to return the two girls. God, if I hadn't known, I, as his wife, would have been so grateful for the prince's reaction at that time.

Gu Xinlan stood beside the princess, but her eyes fell on Mingpei in the crowd. She smiled and said, " Ms. Mingpei is indeed decent and generous. "

Xie Jiayi responded: " Yes, it is annoying. "

Gu Xinlan covered her mouth with a handkerchief and smiled, " I think so too. " Seeing Xie Jiayi was about to leave, she hurriedly said goodbye and dared not bother her any further. Finally, she said, " Princess, if you can use me, it will be my good fortune. "

Xie Jiayi then stopped and looked at her carefully. " I will. " After saying that, he walked forward. Gu Xinlan looked and saw that the princess had indeed gone to the front for a social event. She smiled and looked at Qin Zhili over there. He still had a decent smile on his face, but his eyes had turned cold. As expected, Qin Zhili was probably confused at this time. He listened to his colleagues talking, but his eyes couldn't help but look over here. People who didn't know would think that he couldn't let go of himself as the wife of the prince. Who knew that he couldn't let her say more words to the princess.

Gu Xinlan glanced at Mingpei again, and then said to her girl, " Let's go too. " Standing here and watching was enough to make people vomit out their overnight meals.

Xie Jiayi and Lu Chenan's desks were arranged at the front of the main hall. She only glanced at them and couldn't sit down at this moment. Before sitting down, she had to go to the back to talk with these ladies from outside the court to accompany the Queen Mother. The Queen Mother, who made a grand appearance, was still waiting for her, Princess Kunyi, to kowtow to her and pay her respects.

Just as she was about to lead someone over, she saw a young eunuch beside the empress dowager coming to invite them. Oh, was he afraid that she would get angry and run away, or was he impatient and worried that she would kowtow too slowly? Xie Jiayi curled her lips and followed the people to the back.

As soon as she arrived, the back hall, which was originally filled with voices, suddenly became much quieter.

The Queen Mother wore a phoenix crown and a dark blue phoenix robe, sitting at the head of the table. Even her smile was more reserved than usual, as if she was afraid that if she smiled too much, she would lose her status as the Queen Mother. Xie Jiayi felt that the Queen Mother's smile today was really reserved. So this is how the Queen Mother looked on her first day as the Queen Mother. In Xie Jiayi's memory, the Queen Mother was already very comfortable with her

job, not as overly reserved as she was today. She was trying to find the most appropriate attitude from Consort De to Queen Mother.

Seeing Xie Jiayi, the Queen Mother waved and called to the front. Others thought that this was the Queen Mother giving the princess some respect. In Xie Jiayi's opinion, she suspected that the Queen Mother was calling her forward, and when the ladies knelt down, she would kneel at her feet.

Xie Jiayi felt that she had discovered the truth. She was used to speculating about Shoukang Palace with the greatest malice. As expected, as soon as she arrived in front, Madam Liu opened her voice to announce that everyone was present and congratulated the Queen Mother on her birthday. This meant that they were going to kneel down and pay homage to the Queen Mother formally.

All the noble ladies in the room knelt down respectfully and in an orderly manner and kowtowed to the Queen Mother.

This made Princess Kunyi, who was still standing, particularly eye-catching and frightening. The princess was wearing a jade-colored robe with wide sleeves today, and she looked much plainer than usual. But at this moment, she stood in front of so many noble ladies, so naturally and so noble.

Princess Kunyi, she actually refused to kneel before the Queen Mother!

The hall suddenly became quiet, the sound of the dress rubbing against each other disappeared, and everyone looked at the princess in surprise. Even Zhang Jinyu, who knew how willful and bold Xie Jiayi was, was confused at this moment: let alone the princess, even the princess should kneel down and pay respect to the queen mother. No matter how unwilling Xie Jiayi was, she should understand that not kneeling to the queen mother in such an occasion was tantamount to rebellion, how dare she!

The empress dowager was already prepared for everyone to bow down, especially Princess Kunyi who was kneeling at her feet. But when she saw Xie Jiayi openly refusing to kneel to her, her blood boiled and she suddenly clenched her hands on the carved armrests of the phoenix chair: She actually dared, someone actually dared!

It has come to this day, and there are still people who dare to look down on me!

kill the monkey to scare the chickens today ! She took a deep breath and moved her hands.

Aunt Liu immediately shouted: " How dare the princess! How dare you openly offend your superiors in such a situation! "

Nanny Liu's shout seemed to have an echo in the silent hall. Some of the foreign officials who were greeting each other outside and waiting for the empress dowager to come out to pay their respects had already realized that something seemed to have happened in the inner hall, but seeing His Majesty sitting upright, the others were just puzzled and continued talking and waiting as usual.

However, someone has already looked at Lu Chenan who was standing in front of him. The one who can still make some noise at this time is Princess Kunyi! After all, other concubines enter the palace with great vigor, fearing that something will go wrong, but for Princess Kunyi, this palace is just like her own home. Not to mention entering the inner hall of Jianji Hall, that is, Huangji Hall and Qianqing Palace. The late emperor was only afraid that others would make the princess uncomfortable, so he never asked the princess to avoid others.

But ... it's different now. If the princess is still so comfortable, I'm afraid if your majesty doesn't say anything, the queen mother will have trouble getting through.

But no one expected that the late emperor actually left a posthumous edict in order to allow Princess Kunyi to continue to be at ease.

Only Xu Shixing knew that Princess Kunyi had a posthumous edict in her hand, but he didn't know what it was specifically. He just assured the late emperor that he would definitely abide by the imperial edict left by the late emperor to the princess.

The empress dowager in the inner hall, whose face had been reserved until then, could no longer control her expression and turned blue.

The golden phoenixes embroidered with gold thread by countless embroiderers in the Ministry of Internal Affairs who had been working tirelessly for the past two months seemed to be trembling slightly.

Will? What will?

Seeing that he had been tortured these days but did not seek death, she originally thought that the lowly servant Eunuch Xi was just trying to survive. But now, holding the Golden Dragon Imperial Edict in both hands, he bowed and came to the inner hall.

Half a year after the late emperor passed away, Eunuch Xi seemed to have become a different person. The high-spirited eunuch of the day, although he had changed into a brand new indigo robe for today, also looked older. But he was particularly excited at this moment. He was still staying alive, letting the Shoukang Palace toss around, just to wait for this day, to issue the late emperor's will, he wanted to see the faces of the people in Shoukang Palace after hearing it. Having completed the last mission of the late emperor, Eunuch Xi held the will in his hands and the poison in his arms. He had seen so much glory in his life, so he naturally didn't want to be humiliated in the end.

" The late emperor's last will! " Eunuch Xi's shrill voice rang out in front of the stunned crowd.

This time everyone knelt more properly, even the empress dowager who was sitting on the phoenix chair was helped down and knelt on the gold brick again.

## Chapter 74

" The late emperor's will! "

" Princess Kunyi , the direct descendant of my ancestor and the late Empress Xiaoyi, made great contributions to the country of Dayin when she was young. Later, the ancestors of Dayin appeared in her dreams and protected the people of Dayin from danger. She is the lucky star of Dayin. The emperor has conferred her the title of assistant to the state, and she is above the concubines in the harem . She does not kneel when she sees the empress dowager and the empress. The emperor has specially bestowed upon her the phoenix crown, the token of my presence in person, the golden medal of immunity from death , and a thousand-man guard team to protect the princess's mansion and our lucky star of Dayin . I decree this! "

At this time, the officials of the outer palace had also come to the inner palace under the leadership of His Majesty , kneeling to listen to the late emperor's will. There were so many

people kneeling inside and outside , but no sound was heard . Everyone was stunned by such a will , but no one was surprised. After being surprised, everyone immediately realized that this was the late emperor's favorite , this was Princess Kunyi.

After the death of Emperor Yongtai, he once again used his will to show the noble status of Princess Kunyi above the imperial harem , tracing her bloodline and emphasizing her great contributions. Above the harem, the ministers who were previously curious about why the late emperor placed Princess Kunyi above them and gave her the title of assistant to the state now understood that the late emperor had already paved the way for today.

Unfortunately , they still only know one side of the story. When the new emperor goes on his first autumn hunt, they will fully understand the full meaning of the title of "Assisting the State". It is not just to make the princess superior and noble above the imperial family in the harem.

After a moment of silence, there was a roar of cheers. When everyone stood up again, no one spoke for a while. Everyone was shocked by such favor. For a moment, they didn't know what to say. They even forgot what they were busy asking about before. Many people couldn't hide their envy or complicated expressions and looked at the county horse Lu Chenan standing beside them. Chen Lichuan, the son of the Taifu family, touched Lu Chenan and whispered: " No wonder you are so stable . Your family has both the imperial edict and the golden medal of immunity from death! " There is also a sign like "I am here in person" . The late emperor really dared to give the princess anything.

Lu Chenan smiled awkwardly. He couldn't even be modest because there were more things than that ... When Zhao Zhao showed him the things that His Majesty had left for her for the first time, even a calm person like Lu Chenan couldn't hide his shock and confusion . Various gold medals, royal vests and belts that could save lives ... There was nothing that the Princess's Mansion didn't have, except for things that others couldn't think of. There were even more handwritten letters and edicts left behind, which were carefully stored in boxes by his Princess. When she missed her uncle, she would open the boxes and read the various handwritten edicts left by the late Emperor.

At that time, Xie Jiayi smiled with tears in her eyes, " Isn't the Emperor Uncle treating me very well? " They treated her so well, but they only wanted her to live happily. Anyone could be unhappy, but Xie Jiayi must live happily forever!

He said yes, but in his heart he thought that anyone would treat him very well. Emperor Yongtai would, and if it was Prince Min Huai, he would too.

Everyone heard the princess's clear voice coming from the quiet inner hall: " Queen Dowager, are you surprised? I was so happy when I found out! "

Chen Lichuan whispered to Lu Chenan again: " It's your princess who is more annoying. " I'm afraid the Queen Mother is only surprised, not happy. Especially the late emperor chose the occasion of the Queen Mother's celebration to read the will, in public, especially in front of the Queen Mother, to support Princess Kunyi. The key is that the late emperor was also very cruel, emphasizing not only the merits but also the bloodline, which is almost equivalent to telling everyone in the harem that no matter whether it is the Queen Mother or the future Queen, they are not as noble as Princess Kunyi in bloodline.

Therefore, don't be arrogant in front of the princess, and be restrained.

Chen Lichuan sighed. His old man also had times when he was drunk and not careful. At that time, Chen Lichuan complained that it was fortunate that Emperor Yongtai was not like Emperor Yuanhe. Although Emperor Yuanhe was strong and wise, he was also cruel and even crazy. At that time, his father was also drunk. He shook his head and said, " It's the same . " He didn't understand how gentle and well-behaved Emperor Yongtai was. Thinking about many things that Emperor Yongtai had done, especially those related to the princess, he somewhat understood the word " it's the same . " It was unimaginable that this was done by Emperor Yongtai, who had always been law-abiding. He simply slapped the empress dowager without any scruples.

On days like this, the Queen Mother is reminded to stay awake and remember her identity. Chen Yuechuan looked at His Majesty, who was at the forefront of the ministers. Is the Prince yesterday and His Majesty today " the same " or really different, who was also known for his gentleness and rules?

In the inner hall, Zhang Jinyu looked in disbelief at the princess at the front of the crowd who had received the imperial edict, and then at the queen mother who was sitting on the phoenix chair again with a pale face and a sullen face. This was the day they were all looking forward to. On this day, the princess would understand what it means to change the world, and this willful princess would learn what it means to have people bow their heads under the roof ...

But there is actually another posthumous edict!

How come some people are so lucky! How come the things she worked so hard to get are always worthless in front of Xie Jiayi. Xie Jiayi is just like a spoiled child, always doing whatever she wants and saying whatever she wants. Does n't she ever have to learn what " bow your head " means , never have to learn what " compromise " means... Why does everyone have to work hard to get what they want, but only she can get everything so easily?

Zhang Jinyu felt that there had never been a moment when she felt that God was so unfair as she did at that moment. Her heart felt as if it was being roasted in a fire. She suppressed the pain and walked towards the banquet hall in the front hall with her grandmother, who also looked grim.

Like everyone else, she still had the imperial edict in her mind, which was about bestowing this and that. Any reward was something that even a family like the Duke's Mansion would be eager to get, but it all fell into the hands of a princess ...

The Queen Mother's mind was still buzzing with thoughts of those " grants "...

Then Xie Jiayi said, " By the way, madam, His Majesty has also bestowed the title of Eunuch Xi on me. " She smiled and said, " I also have a handwritten letter from His Majesty, would you like to read it? "

The people in Shoukang Palace almost wanted to vomit blood when they heard this. How many things did His Majesty write to the princess? In front of them were the servants of the princess's mansion. The princess could ask His Majesty to leave a handwritten imperial edict at will. There was also a handwritten edict here ...

Your Majesty has been so ill for a few days that he can't even review memorials. How can he have the energy to write these handwritten letters ...

Eunuch Xi, who was ready to quit and end his life, was stunned when he heard the words. He saw the princess, whom he had watched grow up, looking at him with a smile. The princess' voice was so distant and yet so clear: " Eunuch Xi, His Majesty said that you should follow me. If you have any disciples you want to take with you, and if you are willing to go out, follow me. " Eunuch Xi didn't expect that His Majesty would be so ill at the end, and with so many things to arrange, but he still thought of him and left him a way out!

Being able to get the order from His Majesty and follow the princess is what he has been dreaming of!

He controlled his trembling voice and bowed respectfully to express his gratitude. His hands, which were lying on the ground, were shaking and his heart and nose were filled with bitterness. He relied on the skills he had learned from his lifetime of service to control himself and not lose his composure.

Then he followed Ruyi out and heard Ruyi say, " Father, don't worry that your apprentice will be useless if you take him out. The princess's trade route has been opened. Whether it's going to the Western Regions, the South, or overseas, people are needed at this time. If you want to stay in the mansion to do errands, there are errands in the mansion. If you want to go out and see the world, there are errands outside. "

" I heard that the princess is still building a big ship, saying that she is going to go overseas, is that right? " Eunuch Xi's eyes lit up, as if he had suddenly become young again.

" Yes, sir, do you want to go abroad? The princess' ship needs someone from our princess's mansion to steer it. The late emperor also left a handwritten decree for the princess to go abroad. "

Hearing that there was an imperial decree for this matter, Eunuch Xi was not surprised at all. In the last six months, the late emperor thought of the princess, just like a father who was about to leave and thought of his helpless daughter. He would leave the princess with a handwritten letter, an imperial decree, or a token ...

Eunuch Xi's eyes lit up: " I want to go out and take a look. " He had stayed in the palace long enough, and he wanted to go out and take a look for the princess.

Everyone had already arrived at the banquet hall in front of the Jianji Hall and took their seats in order.

Although everything seemed to be back to normal, everyone was still fascinated by the will that had just been announced. They could not help but look at Princess Kunyi who was sitting in the upper seat with the county horse. However, the way they looked at her was different from before, especially the women of the families. They thought they would see the princess bow her head today, but the will of the late emperor, after all, sounded like a declaration to them: In this world, except for the emperor, no one is worthy enough to make Princess Kunyi bow her head.

As for the emperor, the previous emperor never wanted to let the princess bow her head, and was even afraid that the princess would not hold her head high enough. As for the current His Majesty, everyone was used to the prince's silence, so they did not find it strange that His Majesty was still silent most of the time today.



His Majesty was wearing an apricot-yellow dragon robe with gold-embroidered sun and moon patterns on the left and right shoulders, like the sun and moon on his shoulders and mountains and rivers on his back. Although he was still taciturn, his temperament was very different from when he was the crown prince, giving people a more oppressive feeling and making people dare not look directly at him. The solemn dragon robe and the crown on his head made him look at him with a sense of oppression.

The moment the late emperor passed away, everyone's eyes on Xu Shixing changed. From then on, the former crown prince was the one who completely controlled their life and death, honor and disgrace.

But even so, many noble ladies still couldn't help but secretly look up at their Majesty:

A pair of captivating phoenix eyes, with a cold gaze, can make people blush and lower their heads with a quick glance.

His Majesty, who is less than 20 years old, not only has the empress position vacant, but also the harem is empty. Who wouldn't have some thoughts in their mind when a noble lady comes into the house with him in such an occasion? Before seeing His Majesty in person, perhaps he was still somewhat hesitant, but now that he has seen His Majesty, who wouldn't want to try his luck with such a person and such overwhelming wealth.

Compared with His Majesty, all the other noble sons suddenly became insignificant mortals.

Who wouldn't want to be the favorite of the true dragon emperor?

The noble ladies who were thinking about something had no time to pay attention to Princess Kunyi. Their biggest competitor was Chen Yinsheng, the 18-year-old unmarried daughter of the Taifu family. She had said since she was 16 that unless she married the crown prince and became the crown princess, she would rather live with the green lamp than marry.

As expected, she has been waiting to be married until today.

Chen Yinsheng was sitting there staring at her sly-looking younger brother Chen Lichuan, and suddenly she found that many people were looking at her slyly. She immediately raised her eyebrows, and the meaning was very clear. With her around, who would dare to compete with her? Anyway, she had already made a new statement. Unless it was the position of queen, she, Chen Yinsheng, didn't care about anything else!

Among those who looked over was Xie Jiayi, who was drinking and looking at Chen Yinsheng as she made plans. Anyone can be the queen, except Zhang Jinyu! Although Zhang Jinyu had been hit hard by her, this person had already regarded ascending to the throne as her life's career, and there was nothing she couldn't do to ascend to the throne. If she couldn't give birth herself, she would also take someone else's child and find a bunch of people to give birth to children for her ... Although there was the pressure of the new emperor's words that "you can't be promoted", you can never underestimate the ambition and evil intentions of Zhang Jinyu and the queen mother, so it's better to let the person she likes take the position early.

Xie Jiayi thought, she didn't like Chen Yinsheng in her previous life, so she didn't have much contact with him. Now it seems that a person as infatuated as Chen Yinsheng, regardless of her status or temperament, is the most suitable candidate for the queen. If she can become the queen, she will have less trouble. Chen Yinsheng is not the kind of person who will look for trouble with a princess. Xie Jiayi has the impression that she later became discouraged and devoted herself to practicing Taoism, and never troubled anyone.

Lu Chenan couldn't help but hold up the cup to cover up and whispered: " Who are you looking at? Your eyes are fixed ..."

Looking in the direction of Xie Jiayi, he saw the peacock-like Chen Lichuan. Everyone had to admit that he had a good face. Moreover, Lu Chenan glanced at the person opposite him.

Although he seemed cynical on the surface, he was actually not simple at all.

Xie Jiayi moved closer to him and lowered her voice, " I'm looking at the daughter of the Taifu Mansion. " Then she added, " I can look, but you don't! " Although Chen Yinsheng's declarations are high-profile and bold, in fact, looking at her alone, she has a kind of dignified beauty with a fairy-like style. She is the kind of beauty that Dayin scholars love to paint. Xie Jiayi thought of the time when she saw Lu Chenan practicing calligraphy and writing "The Goddess of Luo River", which was both ethereal and graceful. Isn't this talking about a beauty like Chen Yinsheng?

Thinking of this, she couldn't help but glare at Lu Chenan and drank the wine in her glass in one gulp.

" You ..." He choked on the words "Don't drink it all" when Xie Jiayi looked at him. Then Lu Chenan saw that her glass was empty again. He sighed helplessly. He thought that she still had some sadness in her heart these days, so he drank two glasses at first and didn't care. Who would have thought that he couldn't keep his eyes on her and drank the third glass.

As people continued to come forward to pay tribute to the Empress Dowager and wish her a happy birthday, foreign ministers toasted His Majesty, and noble ladies came to the Empress Dowager to curry her favor, the atmosphere in the banquet hall became bustling and lively, even though there was no singing, dancing or music.

Xie Jiayi looked at Zhang Jinyu who was called by the Queen Mother. It was obvious that everyone was making fun of her and His Majesty under the guidance of the Queen Mother. The shy look she gave His Majesty gave Xie Jiayi goose bumps. She sneered in her heart. She was obviously a strong woman who was making connections and pursuing her career everywhere. Why was she pretending to be a shy little woman? How hypocritical! Concubine Zhang's hypocrisy really made her turn off every time she saw it.

She squinted her eyes and looked at Chen Yinsheng again. This was still the best. The prince must not be so blind as to get together with Zhang Jinyu again ... No, they must get together, but they will not be so blind as to let Zhang Jinyu become the queen, right? This is the " tolerable " ... It 's your majesty, not the prince ...

The alcohol was evaporating, making her feel lighter, lighter and more comfortable. It seemed that all the heavy things disappeared, and nothing could restrain her. Beidi ... father, mother and brother ... how could she give an account of her life ... be happy, yes, be happy, be happy all the time ... not being happy is wrong, so many people love her, how can she not be happy ... Xie Jiayi thought of Beidi at this time, and she no longer felt heavy, she turned her head and looked at Lu Chenan.

She has Lord Lu, a smart man like Lord Lu, who will definitely find a way.

She is stupid, but she is lucky to have picked the smartest person in Dayin!

Xie Jiayi's eyes were moist, with light inside, ripples caused by the wind, and infinite trust and dependence ...

Lu Chen felt relieved that it was really too much for her to look at him like that. He held the glass tightly, looked at her, then looked away silently. After a while, he chuckled: " Did you drink too much? " Xie Jiayi imagined herself to be a hero who drank from a big bowl. How could such a small cup make her drink too much? Isn't this looking down on her? In order to prove that she didn't drink too much, she wanted to drink another glass to show Lord Lu. Xie Jiayi stretched out her hand, but didn't touch the wine glass. She was a beat slow to react, so she lowered her head to look for it, but the table in front of her was empty: where was her wine?

Ruyi lowered her head. The princess was indeed drunk. She not only looked at the table, but also glanced under the table on her body.

Then he slowly looked at the person next to him, tilted his head and looked at him for a long time before saying, " Master Lu, where is my cup? "

The princess was slightly tipsy, her face was slightly pink, and she looked so naive that it made people's hearts melt.

Not only Lu Chenan, but others also noticed Xie Jiayi at this time.

## Chapter 75

" Master Lu , where is my cup? "

The emperor who was sitting at the top with a cup in hand had already noticed the movement from Xie Jiayi's side. He nodded to the uncle who came over to toast him, raised his head and drank the wine in the cup. He put down the cup , and the palace servant beside him immediately filled it up. Xu Shixing took the opportunity to look over there , and saw that the princess tilted her head and looked at Lu Chenan motionlessly , and said something to him , and Lu Chenan didn't look at her first, and after a long while, he glanced at her and replied to her.

It was not known whether it was because the most lively conversations had stopped, or because Xu Shixing was listening particularly carefully at this time , but he happened to hear clearly what Lu Chenan said in reply to her:

" Zhao Zhao, stop making trouble. "

Xu Shixing's temples jumped suddenly , his face expressionless , but his back teeth were clenched. Taking the opportunity to raise his glass to the person in front of him , he looked over there again , and then he was sure that Xie Jiayi was drunk.

Thinking of Xie Jiayi , who was not good at drinking, Xu Shixing could not bear it. Xie Jiayi often talked about eating meat and drinking wine, but in fact, she seldom drank. The only time Xu Shixing saw her drunk was after her coming-of-age ceremony at the age of fifteen. No one would know that such a bright and beautiful person , when she was slightly tipsy, her eyes seemed to be filled with a lake , which contained all her anxiety and loneliness.

He knew the look in her eyes , and he also knew what the man opposite would think when she looked at someone like that .

Xu Shixing's muscles tensed , he lowered his eyes and exhaled slowly , holding the wine glass in one hand and placing the other hand on his knees, forcing himself to sit still and listen carefully to the person next to him. The person who came was the Duke of England, and he was talking about the battlefield in the north that he was very concerned about. Xu Shixing listened very carefully. But he still couldn't help but pay attention to the movements of the two people over there.

As soon as the Duke of England left, Xu Shixing immediately picked up the wine glass and drank it all again.

His other hand took out the mutton-fat jade drop-shaped earring and gently rubbed it, his eyes drooping in a dark mood. He suddenly moved his hands slightly, and Jixiang hurriedly lowered his head and went out after listening to his master's instructions.

The banquet was over, and Ruyi, seeing the princess's condition, took her to Haitang Palace with Caiyue and others to rest. After the banquet, the county lord was called to the Dali Temple for errands, and they were just waiting for the county lord to get off duty and go back together. Xie Jiayi slept until the sun set in the west, and when she woke up, she felt refreshed. Her so-called drunkenness was just a slight intoxication from not being able to handle the alcohol, but this sleep cleared away the depression in her heart for the past few days. When she woke up, she saw the sunset by the window, gently spreading a faint red on the long couch and table. Xie Jiayi turned sideways to look at the sunset, and her whole body was happy.

Today's dream was very good. In the dream, she saw those who left. She also showed them Lord Lu. In the dream, everyone was there.

After a while, Xie Jiayi finally called Caiyue. Caiyue quietly brought someone in to help her wash and change clothes. It was not until Xie Jiayi had finished that she noticed something was wrong. Everyone was as quiet as quails, so quiet that it was scary. At this time, Caiyue wrapped the small whip around the princess' waist and whispered, " Princess, His Majesty is outside. " Xie Jiayi was stunned for a moment before realizing that it was Xu Shixing.

" What is he doing out there? "

Caiyue didn't know either. She paused and said, " Look at the memorial. "

" Read the memorials? " Read the memorials in Haitang Palace? Xie Jiayi was really stupid to believe that he really came to read the memorials. She guessed that he probably came because of what happened in the morning. After all, it was the Queen Mother's big day, but the Queen Mother was very unhappy. If the Queen Mother was unhappy, Xu Shixing would not be happy. She had experienced many such things.

When Xie Jiayi led the group out, she saw Xu Shixing sitting cross-legged on a couch in the outer hall, reviewing memorials carefully, with Gao Sheng serving beside him. Xu Shixing was tall, making Xie Jiayi feel that the couch, which was usually very spacious, seemed a little small. She walked over and bowed, then stood aside waiting for Xu Shixing to speak.

Xu Shixing stopped writing, looked up at her, and knew that she had slept very soundly this time . Her cheeks were still flushed from the nap, and she seemed quieter and gentler than usual.

She is in a better mood when she gets enough sleep.

After he finished reviewing the memorial, he took a sip of tea and said, " I haven't seen you these days. "

Xie Jiayi thought to herself, you are the emperor in the palace, I am the princess outside the palace, it is normal that we cannot see each other. I can't come to this Begonia Palace too often in the future. The palace has become someone else's territory. Although the Begonia Palace is still the same Begonia Palace, it feels different now.

She just hummed in response to Xu Shixing's question. Seeing that Xu Shixing didn't ask her directly, she hesitated for a moment and asked someone to ask when Lord Lu would be done.

Xu Shixing paused again with his pen, and said nothing. Xie Jiayi had already sat in the armchair on the right, also drinking tea slowly. If he didn't ask, she didn't need to rush in. Xie Jiayi wondered if the empress dowager had heart pain again, and if she was still lying there with a wet towel on her head. The empress dowager had heart pain all the time, and lay down all the time, but her health was better than anyone else's. In her previous life, she could still do so many things in such a cold day with snow and ice, but she, who looked strong, died like a torn bag with thousands of holes. Empress dowager, I hope the empress dowager will live a hundred years.

Who knew that Xu Shixing was not talking about the Jianji Palace this morning, nor did he ask about the will. He was talking about Xie Jiayi's caravan storing grain in the north.

Xie Jiayi's heart skipped a beat, wondering if Xu Shixing had seen something. She was slow to think, but she was smart, and her attitude improved immediately. Glancing at the memorial that Xu Shixing had put away, Xie Jiayi smiled and cursed in her heart, wondering which shameless person in the north had reported her, could it be someone from the Wang family? After all, in the north at this time, the power of the son of the Wang family was not small.

She not only hoarded grain, but also resold horses and reached out for ironware. However, she had the written permission from her uncle, the emperor, and she didn't want others to know unless she had no choice. After all, a princess, especially a princess from the north, would inevitably be suspicious of others if she did these things. If the royal family of the Duke of Ying knew about this, her actions in the north would be even more difficult.

Xie Jiayi looked at Xu Shixing quietly, wondering how much he knew.

The more guilty Xie Jiayi felt, the better her attitude became.

Xu Shixing knew this better than anyone else. He looked at Xie Jiayi coldly as she asked someone to add more tea for him and asked him with a smile if the tea was good. Xu Shixing wanted to hang this man up. He had already drunk a round of tea in front of her, and now she remembered to ask him if the tea was good.

However, he couldn't bear to leave Xie Jiayi, who was smiling so obediently.

She used to be like this to him.

Xie Jiayi had already stood beside Xu Shixing, and glanced at the memorial, guessing who submitted it and what it said. Was it Uncle Cheng who was not careful and let it slip? As for the grain storage, she used the grain business as an excuse to store a lot of grain, but she also followed Lord Lu's instructions, two open and one hidden, and the two open places were also made into one open and one hidden ... It shouldn't be discovered ... As for the secret of the iron business, Xie Jiayi believed in Uncle Cheng's prudence ... The most likely one was horses.

There were many private horse transactions in the north, but the quantity on her side was a bit large ... It's not that the quantity was a bit large, it was that the quantity was too large ...

Xie Jiayi moved her gaze from the memorial to Xu Shixing's face, trying to find some clues from his expression.

But he happened to meet Xu Shixing's gaze.

When their eyes met, Xie Jiayi trembled with guilt, but she still had to smile at people first.

Smiling before doing something bad was the first thing Princess Kunyi learned in her life. After all, she grew up surrounded by her parents and brothers who loved her, and she grew up in the deep palace with Emperor Yongtai who doted on her. Even Xu Shixing was not what outsiders saw. As long as she was willing to smile, Xu Shixing would never be able to do anything to her. Xu Shixing was softened by her smile. At first, he was filled with unspeakable anger, sneer, and inexplicable resentment, which mixed together and made him even have the urge to destroy this person. But she just smiled like this, and Xu Shixing felt that nothing mattered.

Everything is still the same as before.

That time she smashed his newly acquired jade pen washer, she smiled like this. That time she peeked at the notes he kept in the secret compartment, she smiled like this. That time she secretly led people out of the palace without his knowledge, she smiled like this. That time she climbed the wall of the cold palace and fell down, and saw his tears still hanging on his cheeks, she smiled like this ...

Xu Shixing thought he called her Zhaozhao, but in fact it was just a weak murmur from his lips, and no one could hear what he said.

The word "Zhao Zhao" was on the tip of his tongue, too weak to express, and became vague.

Xie Jiayi just wanted to take a look at the memorial that had not been closed yet. Before she could see what was written on the memorial, she felt her earlobe getting hot. She turned her head blankly and saw Xu Shixing, then she realized what had happened.

He touched her earlobe with his lips.

At that moment, the prince of yesterday, who had been speculated by countless people and the emperor of today, looked fragile in his lowered eyes.

Xie Jiayi came to her senses and immediately pushed him away. Anger exploded in her heart almost instantly, making her face red. Without saying a word, she whipped out the whip and slapped Xu Shixing's right arm twice!

In a rage, Xie Jiayi whipped fast and hard.

Xie Jiayi's skills were just so-so, but she was really good with a whip. Especially when she was full of anger, she was really good with the whip.

At this moment, this is what Xu Shixing thought of.

The servants in the room had already been sent out by the people around His Majesty, and the door was half-closed, so no one knew what happened between the two people in the room.

They didn't dare to watch or listen to His Majesty's affairs.

At this time, Caiyue and Caixing heard the noise in the house, their faces turned pale, the commander whipped! That was the sound of the whip tearing through the clothes and hitting the flesh!

But, he is the emperor!

If the emperor's body was damaged even a little, it would be a capital crime ...

Gao Shengjixiang's legs were weak, but none of the two people inside said anything. None of the four people guarding the door dared to go forward to check. They could only pray to the Buddha and their ancestors with pale faces in their hearts, hoping that nothing would go wrong. Otherwise, being beaten would be the least of their trouble. Now was the time for Shoukang Palace to establish its authority and do things. They had to make trouble even if nothing happened. They must not let anything go wrong here!

In the room, Xie Jiayi's eyes were burning with anger. The warm and soft touch on her earlobe made her feel sick. He dared to touch her, he dared! The first thing that rose in Xie Jiayi's heart at this moment was the humiliation of being offended!

She raised her chin and pointed the whip at Xu Shixing: " I am already a wife. If you dare to do that again, I will sacrifice my life for my innocence! "

When Xu Shixing heard her words, he looked at the girl in front of him in disbelief: " You threaten me ... You threaten me for someone else? " At that moment, there was a murky look in Xu Shixing's eyes that Xie Jiayi was very unfamiliar with. She had never seen such a look in his eyes before.

Xie Jiayi looked at the emperor who seemed a little strange to her at this moment, and said in a cold voice: " Third brother, am I no longer noble? " If she was still noble, why could someone treat her, a princess who was already the legal wife, in such a disrespectful and intimate manner.

Xie Jiayi's question made Xu Shixing's sudden fierceness disappear in an instant, and her grievance instantly defeated him. Who dares to say that she is not precious! He, he can't ... She is the most noble little princess from the north, Dayin ... He, especially he, can't let her feel wronged ...

She was so stupid, he had to protect her. It had always been like this.

Xu Shixing relaxed his tense body dejectedly, smiled self-deprecatingly, and then looked at Xie Jiayi: " Zhao Zhao, put down the whip, it was Third Brother who was wrong. "

Xie Jiayi put down the whip, " Your Majesty, call me Kunyi from now on. " Kunyi.

Xu Shixing supported his forehead and sneered. He lifted his eyelids and looked at her: " If I can't call you, who can call you? " Lu Chen'an, Lord Lu? It's really funny. With an incomprehensible smile on his lips, he asked Xie Jiayi: " Do you believe it or not-- "

Xie Jiayi replied to him almost immediately: " I don't believe it! I only believe what my third brother has always said, that you must be a wise ruler, ensure long-term peace and stability in Dayin, and break the absurd prophecy that Dayin will be executed after five generations! "

Xu Shixing looked at her for a long time.

Xie Jiayi, you only know that this is the oath I made to Emperor Shizu, but you don't know that only half of this is a promise to Emperor Shizu. The other half is clearly a promise to you.

Xie Jiayi, the little princess from the north, was good at whipping and proud of her skills. She dreamed of making her way in the martial arts world, but she just liked elegant gentlemen. Even when talking about her father, who was a military general, she would stare and emphasize carefully: " My father is a Confucian general. " At that time, Xu Shixing asked her, " Your father is a Confucian general, what am I? " In your heart, what am I.

Xie Jiayi answered confidently: " Of course you are a scholar and gentleman now, and you will be a wise ruler in the future. " The determination and pride in her eyes were so charming that Xu Shixing was not the only one who believed that anyone, even if they fell into a quagmire, would climb out and become a scholar and gentleman for such a beautiful girl and the determination and pride in her eyes, and then become a wise ruler. Who would be willing to let such light go?

Xu Shixing looked at her for a long time, then laughed softly.

In the end he was almost angry, " Xie Jiayi, don't be so-- " Just then, the two of them heard Gao Sheng and Cai Yue's report outside that Shoukang Palace had asked Madam Liu and Mingpei to come over.

Almost immediately, both of them stopped their confrontation.

Xu Shixing pulled the outer robe from the couch and put it on, " Someone is coming, don't cause any trouble. "

" Am I looking for trouble? " Xie Jiayi also sat dignifiedly on the armchair on the right, picked up the teacup, and got ready, but she couldn't help but refute the absurd black and white of the opposite side.

So when Madam Liu and Mingpei came over, they saw the main hall door was wide open, but the servants were all lined up at the door, and there was no one serving inside. When the two of them came in, the two people inside didn't look unusual.

His Majesty is holding a pen and reviewing memorials.

The princess was drinking tea from a cup.

## Chapter 76

His Majesty is holding a pen and reviewing memorials.

The princess was drinking tea from a cup.

It didn't look like anything was wrong , but Zhang Jinyu felt something was odd. Aunt Liu looked around the room and said with a smile, " The Queen Mother was worried about the princess, so she asked me and Miss Mingpei to come and see her. Is the princess feeling better? The princess hasn't had a big drink since she was a child , so she can't help it ..." Then she turned to Gaosheng and Caiyue, " Why aren't you servants here to serve the master when he's in there ? "

" It's so hot , why are all these people crowding around me? " Xu Shixing's voice, as always , was slightly cold. Even though he was facing the old nanny from the Empress Dowager's palace, his expression was gentle after control.

Madam Liu said hurriedly, " Your Majesty is right. Your Majesty is always worried that the servants won't serve you well , and Your Majesty is only focused on government affairs. This is unfair to Your Majesty. "

Xie Jiayi was scraping tea leaves and thinking , apart from your queen , who else in this palace could have wronged such a great emperor?

Gao Sheng had already seen His Majesty put on the outer robe that he had changed because of the hot weather . He was sharp-eyed and looked around until his eyes fell on His Majesty's



right arm , where the wetness was slowly showing. He glanced at the princess with a nervous look, and it was obvious that Xie Jiayi had also seen the blood seeping out of that place. She had no choice but to put it in the dark outer robe so that it would not be visible.

She swallowed her saliva , held the teacup , and forgot to move.

Xu Shixing glanced at Xie Jiayi before he continued to review the memorial. He felt that it was almost done , so he closed the memorial and left Haitang Palace with his men . Before he left , his injured right arm was facing Xie Jiayi , and a large amount of blood had already seeped out. Xie Jiayi suspected that if he was any later, her clothes and flesh would be stuck together. She saw His Majesty off somewhat awkwardly, and Xu Shixing, who had been looking unhappy all along, softened his expression slightly.

Arriving at the Yangxin Palace, Gao Sheng almost cried out as soon as he took off his outer robe. I didn't expect the princess' whip to be so powerful ...

The wound was not light to begin with, and because it was hot, it looked particularly scary.

Gao Sheng trembled and wanted to call the imperial physician.

Xu Shixing put a clean handkerchief on the wound and frowned, " What do you call an imperial doctor? Just take the golden sore medicine from the box and sprinkle it on it. " Gao Sheng immediately understood what His Majesty meant. No one should know this.

August in Dayin passed like this. The late emperor was in poor health, and many government affairs were in the hands of the new emperor who was still the prince at the time. Therefore, the new emperor was very busy for a while and smoothed out the government affairs. The Queen Mother was the only one in the harem, the emperor was filial, and the Queen Mother even held the entire harem in her hands. The Ministry of Internal Affairs almost became the Ministry of Internal Affairs dedicated to serving Shoukang Palace, and enthusiastically dealt with the various requests constantly made by Shoukang Palace. The Empress of Changchun Palace, who was once known for her frugality, now still claims to be frugal, but it has become a requirement for others. After several losses, the people below slowly discovered that the Queen Mother did not like simplicity and elegance, and she liked everything that was rich and luxurious. Who is the richest person in the dynasty? It's probably Princess Kunyi, who is the most luxurious in food, clothing and daily expenses. Shoukang Palace despises it, but it is on this road, so it is even more disgusted with the Princess's Mansion. However, no matter how disgusted it is, the Princess's Mansion is already an existence that cannot be easily moved. September is a time of clear skies and crisp weather, perfect for autumn hunting at the imperial palace outside the capital.

As usual, the new emperor was accompanied by a large number of people in the autumn hunt in his first year.

Lu Chenan almost immediately realized from Xie Jiayi's expression that something big must have happened during the Autumn Hunt. There was also a small Begonia Palace in this palace. Lu Chenan stood with his hands behind his back, looking at the begonias in full bloom in the courtyard and smiled: " Everyone in Beijing knows that Princess Kunyi likes begonias. "

Xie Jiayi also laughed: " In fact, it was my mother who liked crabapples first. Look at those crabapple trees in the palace, they were all planted by Emperor Taizu and uncle the emperor for my mother. " Later, she also liked it and liked it more and more.

" It turned out to be Princess Pingyang. "

Xie Jiayi raised her eyebrows: " Princess Pingyang? " She looked up and met Lu Chenan's beautiful eyes as he looked down at her, and continued: " Sir Lu, that's your mother-in-law! " Lu Chenan was stunned, raised his hand and touched his ear, but thought to himself that that was more than just his mother-in-law.

As they were talking, Caixing came to report that Miss Chen from the Taifu Mansion had arrived. Xie Jiayi immediately became more energetic, waved to Lu Chenan and was about to leave, saying that she wanted to have a heart-to-heart talk with Chen Yinsheng, and then took her people away. Lu Chenan looked at her anxious back and thought silently that it seemed that what would happen in Qiushou was related to the young lady of the Taifu Mansion.

Something big did happen during the autumn hunt.

When Xie Jiayi walked out of the hanging flower gate, she looked at the blue sky above the red walls and green tiles . In the previous life, during the autumn hunting banquet, there was an assassin, and the princess's maid stepped forward to protect the emperor and blocked the sword for His Majesty. The Queen Mother was moved and raised her status, and finally let the Duke's Mansion recognize her as an adopted daughter. The maid was loyal and unwilling to leave her old master. Although she was the adopted daughter of the Duke's Mansion, she still insisted on staying with Princess Kunyi. But after saving the emperor, Zhang Jinyu, who was different from other maids, became completely different.

Xie Jiayi looked at the mottled palace walls and the calm blue sky. This time, she wanted to give this opportunity to Chen Yinsheng, the daughter of the Grand Tutor.

In the open space in front of the mountain, palace servants walked by with horses and guards patrolled. Although there were people coming and going, the patrols were also very strict. When Xie Jiayi knew what would happen and looked at the scene, he couldn't figure out who was so powerful that he could suddenly launch an assassination, and even directly target the emperor. In the previous life, the investigation finally fell on the second prince. But this result makes people doubt, is the second prince so stupid that he openly assassinated at the autumn hunting banquet? .....

Only then did Chen Yinsheng know that the dignified Princess Kunyi was actually interested in matchmaking for people. Sometimes it was the young master of the Zhang family, sometimes the young master of the Sun family, some Confucian scholars from the academy, and even hermits in the mountains. She could only desperately reiterate that she had already fallen deeply in love with His Majesty and would not marry anyone else but him.

Chen Yinsheng looked solemn and said that if she married someone else, she would rather stay alone in a Taoist temple and finish her life.

Xie Jiayi believed that this was what she did in her previous life.

" You love His Majesty so much? Are you willing to die for His Majesty? "

Chen Yinsheng nodded immediately: " I will go through fire and water as long as I can be with your majesty. " At this point, Chen Yinsheng raised her sleeves to cover her face, and her voice choked with sobs: " Unfortunately, your majesty doesn't care about me at all. Perhaps, I can only enter the Taoist temple. "

Xie Jiayi saw her shoulders trembling, and she thought Chen Yinsheng was crying because of this ending. Xie Jiayi turned her face away and looked into the mountain, not wanting to see others in such a state of embarrassment.

Xie Jiayi thought very carefully, but she never thought: Generally speaking, people would say ancient Buddha with green lamps, why did Chen Yinsheng always say it was a Taoist temple? At this time, Xie Jiayi just looked at Gao Shan and nodded, thinking that the opportunity you wanted would come soon.

Tomorrow at the Autumn Hunting Banquet, she will bring Chen Yinsheng with her.

At first glance, Chen Yinsheng looked like Zhang Jinyu, who was elegant and graceful. Then, he looked like the goddess of Luo River. After getting to know her, Xie Jiayi looked at Chen Yinsheng, who had chased a rabbit into the mountains. She rolled up her sleeves and grinned at the trembling rabbit: " Little rabbit, don't be afraid. By this time tomorrow, you will be delicious braised rabbit legs and rabbit heads ... It won't hurt, my dear ..."

Xie Jiayi: .....

Even a ruthless princess like Xie Jiayi felt a little sorry for the frightened rabbit.

She thought that writers like Lord Lu should take more attention to Chen Yinsheng's current appearance, and perhaps he would not stare at the Goddess of Luo River in the future. Who knows, the Goddess of Luo River also likes to eat braised rabbit heads. If she hides and eats them, who knows?

In addition, Xie Jiayi witnessed Chen Yinsheng's lightness. She ran very fast!

Xie Jiayi was not convinced! The noble ladies in the capital could be more beautiful than her, but they could never be better than her in terms of skills. This was what she was most proud of. The stubborn princess would never admit defeat!

So Chen Yinsheng chased the rabbit and Xie Jiayi chased Chen Yinsheng. The maids who were left behind regretted that they had followed their two masters out today because they could not catch up with anyone.

Chen Yinsheng's personal maid panted and held onto a thick tree: " Your princess ran ... quite fast! "

Caiyue was also panting: " It's the same with you. Your lady is no worse than me! "

The two of them immediately chased towards the place where the movement came from.

Fortunately, this mountain had been cordoned off long ago, and there were heavy guards surrounding it, so the two masters would not encounter any danger no matter how they ran.

The forest was very large, and they really couldn't run out, but it was enough for Xie Jiayi to run until she was almost out of breath, and she was about to fall behind Chen Yinsheng in front of her. The harder Xie Jiayi ran, the faster she sped up. She didn't believe there was any noble lady in the capital that she couldn't catch up with! Xie Jiayi only felt the sound of wind in her ears, or maybe it was her panting. She couldn't see or hear anything except what was in front of her.

She wanted to win! What she ran through was not the grass or the road, but her heart that was determined to lead the way.

So she bumped into the tree with a bang. Xie Jiayi stopped suddenly, took a few steps back, covered her nose and cried.

It really hurts!

The tree she hit was silent for a while, then it spoke: " Why are you running? "

Xie Jiayi then looked up and met Xu Shixing's expressionless face. There were guards accompanying His Majesty beside him, one of whom she recognized, He Sheng, who was lowering his head at this moment, his shoulders shaking ... Don't think that because he was lowering his head, she didn't know he was trying to hold back his laughter, Princess Kunyi knew everything.

Xu Shixing looked at her with tears in her eyes, about to fall but unable to, as she squatted there and looked up at him.

Until Chen Yinsheng ran back happily with the rabbit in her arms, the man was still shouting, " Princess! We caught the princess! Your Majesty ! " He was stunned while holding the rabbit, but he did not forget to pay his respects.

His Majesty glanced at her, then looked back at Xie Jiayi: " Just to catch rabbits? "

Xie Jiayi said nothing and looked at Chen Yinsheng.

Chen Yinsheng quickly understood what he meant and replied, " Your Majesty, I think the little rabbit is cute and I want to take it back. "

Xie Jiayi nodded in agreement, adding in her heart that she wanted to put it in her stomach and take it back with her.

Xu Shixing said nothing more, and looked at Xie Jiayi, who stood with Chen Yinsheng even though her nose was sore. It was clear that she wanted to keep a sufficient distance, so Xu Shixing lowered his head, raised the corner of his mouth in self-mockery, and pointed to four people to escort them out.

He stood there, looking at the colorful red and green forest in front of him.

He could hear the rustling sound of the princess and her group walking on the fallen leaves.

Perhaps out of boredom, he actually tried to distinguish which of the footsteps was hers.

Seeing that His Majesty did not move, the others did not dare to move either.

Finally, His Majesty moved, but he no longer had any interest in hunting. He took the reins handed to him by the person next to him, mounted his horse and headed back to the palace.

The palace's bathroom was always stocked with hot water, so even though Gao Sheng hadn't expected His Majesty to take a bath right now, he didn't rush. He escorted His Majesty to the bathroom, but heard His Majesty's voice: " Everyone, go down. "

Xu Shixing closed his eyes, letting the hot water embrace him, and leaned his head against the wall of the pool. In front of him were Xie Jiayi's tearful eyes, the tears in them were about to fall. He has seen it.

He had suspected that it was a dream. There were bright red curtains all around him, and underneath him was a bright red quilt embroidered with dragons and phoenixes. Xie Jiayi looked at him with those eyes. This should have been a dream, but when he saw her eyes today, he realized that the scene was so real.

That's exactly how she would be.

In that illusion, he could even hear Xie Jiayi sobbing slightly, and that tear finally fell, rolling onto the big red pillow beside him. In his trance, he saw outside the light gauze red tent, burning red candles with dragons and phoenixes ...

He felt so clearly the satisfaction he felt holding her in his arms, a satisfaction he had never felt before.

Gao Sheng had never seen His Majesty bathe for such a long time.

When His Majesty finally came out, his face was even colder than when he went in.

Soon, it was the second day of the Autumn Hunting Banquet.

## Chapter 77

### Autumn Hunting Night Banquet

There were candles all around , and Xie Jiayi sat there nervously. She had someone lead Zhang Jinyu away. Chen Yinsheng was still thanking her next to her, thanking the princess for letting her sit so close to His Majesty . Xie Jiayi nodded absentmindedly.

by transferring Zhang Jinyu away . She had to let Chen Yinsheng do the rest , and she must not let the assassin really hurt the emperor. Xie Jiayi was fully focused on the surrounding movements , and even when Lu Chenan, who had finished his task, came back and looked at her, she did not react at all.

She finally confirmed Chen Yinsheng's intentions.

Chen Yinsheng put down the teacup, and almost patted his chest to confess himself, and did not forget to emphasize: " Princess, don't mention those young talents you mentioned ! I, Chen Yinsheng , only live for Your Majesty in this life. Without Your Majesty , I would rather join Taoism and spend the rest of my life! The firmness of this will can be witnessed by the sun and the moon ! "

That's good , Xie Jiayi felt relieved.

Although it is certainly difficult , if you pounce at this angle , you will only get stabbed in the left shoulder, and your life will not be in danger. But you will have everything you want in your life . Xie Jiayi thought , if it were her, she would definitely be willing to pounce.

But as the banquet was drawing to a close , the assassination attempt from the previous life had not yet occurred.

Xie Jiayi was suspicious that she could have made a mistake in remembering such an important thing. She always felt that the banquet had just started , so how come ... At this moment, Zhang Jinyu, who had been transferred away by her , had returned and walked towards the Queen Mother , which was the closest position to His Majesty.

Something flashed through Xie Jiayi's mind , but unfortunately she was not as smart as Lu Chenan and Xu Shixing, so she did not catch it in time.

She was extremely nervous about any changes around her and her whole body was tense.

At this moment, Xie Jiayi's intuition told her: Here it comes! She almost thought she saw the arrow coming through the air!

" There's an assassin! "

But the people around her disappeared in an instant. At that moment, Xie Jiayi had almost no time to think about it. All her attention was on Zhang Jinyu, and she saw her running towards His Majesty.

Absolutely not!

Fortunately, Xie Jiayi, a noble lady from the capital, is indeed good at martial arts! If Chen Yinsheng competes with her to rescue the carriage, Xie Jiayi may lose, but Zhang Jinyu, who has no martial arts skills, will definitely not be able to compete with her.

When Xie Jiayi regained consciousness, she had already fallen into the arms of His Majesty. My back felt cold. Was it her? As long as it wasn't Zhang Jinyu, it must be her! It didn't seem to hurt ... Then the next second, the pain seemed to wake up all at once, and Xie Jiayi trembled in pain, and even her lips suddenly turned white.

In the sudden panic, Xu Shixing only had time to catch Xie Jiayi who pounced on him. He thought he heard a " puff " sound.

He couldn't tell whether it was the sound of the arrow piercing her flesh or the sound of her blood gushing out.

At that moment, his heartbeat stopped, and the whole world was quiet, with only the sound of " puff " growing louder and louder. Xu Shixing was so panicked that his whole body was shaking. The situation was under control, and the assassin committed suicide by taking poison before being arrested. Xu Shixing could only see Xie Jiayi's face, which was suddenly bleeding. She could only say one word in her weak voice: " It hurts. "

Xie Jiayi realized belatedly that Chen Yinsheng did not disappear suddenly. She quickly crawled under the table the moment she heard " there is an assassin " and wanted to pull Xie Jiayi under the table as well, but unfortunately she failed to pull her.

The power that Xie Jiayi burst out at that moment was so astonishing that even Chen Yinsheng was stunned.

Xie Jiayi, who understood, only wanted to say three words:

Chen! Yin ! Sheng!

There are two more words:

You! Dad!

Then she passed out.

Lu Chenan almost stumbled to Xie Jiayi's side, looking at the princess lying in the emperor's arms, so pale, fragile and small. He reached out to take it, but the person suddenly moved away .

Xu Shixing ran to the inner hall holding the person in his arms, calling for the imperial physician, and repeatedly shouting Xie Jiayi's name, " Zhao Zhao, Zhao Zhao, how are you ..."

Lu Chenan was completely unable to get up and fell to the ground, looking forward. That was a place that outsiders were not allowed to enter without imperial decree.

" Zhao Zhao, how are you ..." Lu Chenan looked at the heavy door and pursed his lips tightly. Then he stood up again. Caiyue and Caixing were already in disarray. He called Bubuxian to go in and follow the princess, and asked someone to call Ruyi who stayed behind to deal with the news from outside.

Only then did I realize that there was nothing I could do except wait.

He can still ask for a visit. Yes, his wife was seriously injured inside, he can ask for a visit.

The imperial doctors came in one after another, and the palace maids carried copper basins of hot water and towels and shuttled back and forth in the inner hall. Xie Jiayi fell into the pain of darkness. It turned out that the feeling of an arrow inserted into the body was so painful.

Xie Jiayi has always wanted to know what it feels like to have an arrow inserted into the body. In fact, she has always wanted to know.

At that time, she heard people say that her brother had twenty-three arrows piercing his body when he died. Twenty-three arrows, Xie Jiayi couldn't imagine how a person could have twenty-three arrows piercing his body. Only then did she know firsthand how painful it felt to have arrows piercing the body.

Brother, you must be in a lot of pain.

When her brother died, he was only thirteen years old. He was the most outstanding young man in the North. He should have had ten more years of wantonness, ten more years of meritorious service on the battlefield, and ten more years of unyielding character. He should have left a strong mark in Dayin in the North. Everyone would remember his name. He would be the new god of war in the North. When she was five and he was thirteen, everything ended.

Xie Jiayi couldn't see her brother's face clearly before he left, so she just repeated her brother's request three times over and over again.

" Zhao Zhao, repeat the last three times. You must remember it. "

" Zhao Zhao, you have to remember this! " The person who was speaking gradually began to cry.

" Zhao Zhao, don't be afraid! " The boy finally couldn't hold back his tears. " You have to remember, remember ..."

Then the boy never looked back and left the dark place. It was thundering outside. Her brother was the most outstanding boy in the north. Whether it was martial arts or military tactics, everyone who saw him said that he would be better than his master. But life did not give him the opportunity to prove himself on the battlefield. The first time he put all his knowledge into practice was the last time. He led the enemy away and left his five-year-old sister behind.

Lead the enemy in the wrong direction and drive them far away.

When twenty-three arrows pierced his body, the boy still kept his eyes open. Because he didn't know until his death whether his five-year-old sister could survive in the dead city. She was so timid and spoiled since she was a child ... She was only five years old ...

He only knew that his little sister must be very scared.

The young man stood with his silver spear until his death, without closing his eyes.

When Lu Chenan followed Nanny Chen in, he saw His Majesty sitting in front of the bed, holding Xie Jiayi's hand. His eyes flickered, and he looked at Xie Jiayi, who was still unconscious.

" Zhao Zhao! "

Xie Jiayi moved, but she seemed to be trapped in a nightmare, murmuring over and over again. After hearing what Xie Jiayi said, Nanny Chen suddenly covered her mouth, and the stern Nanny Chen burst into tears.

Lu Chenan heard Xie Jiayi whispering over and over again:

" Tarkdun rebelled, Xu Zhishan and Zheng Chuang ... collaborated with the enemy , Zhao Kuang is suspicious and cannot be used for the time being ... the deployment of troops on the

central line of the north ... has been leaked ... the eastern line can be kept unchanged ... Chen Wei, Liu Xin, and Zheng should be transferred to the western line ..."

The inner hall was completely silent, with only the princess's low murmur, a full 133 words, three times over and over again.

A five-year-old child, she could not memorize anything before this, and could only act coquettishly and lazily. Her elder brother started learning at the age of three, but she was delayed until she was four. At least she entered the study room, but she took two days to memorize a seven-character quatrain, which made the usually kind teacher couldn't help but scowl. But when he saw the little princess's chubby face and black eyes, she smiled timidly and called the teacher. She timidly explained that she was just stupid, not unworkable, and the teacher calmed down immediately. Instead, he stood on her side and told the princess that the child was still young and there was no need to rush.

Whether it was General Xie, Princess Pingyang, or Xie Jiayi's brother, they all felt that their Zhaozhao was still young and there was no need to rush.

Then overnight, Tarkdun, who had surrendered to the Mongols in the tenth year of Dayin, rebelled, colluded with the Northern Di, and massacred Sucheng.

No one expected that this most important information would eventually fall into the hands of five-year-old Xie Jiayi.

finally searching and killing General Xie's son, they were relieved. They wanted to take advantage of the delay in the news from Dayin and work together from inside and outside to tear open a hole to the inland in one fell swoop. But they didn't expect that there was still a survivor, a five-year-old delicate girl who neither Simon nor Beidi took seriously. She survived with the fatal news.

Xu Shixing was an emperor, he could not be easily moved, he looked at Xie Jiayi lying on the bed, and murmured the news he brought twelve years ago over and over again. Twelve years have passed, and it turns out that she has not forgotten a single word ... Xu Shixing held her hand and trembled uncontrollably.

She is always like this. She is obviously domineering and arrogant, but she is always like this. She can break people's hearts and make others feel sorry for her again and again.

How can she always be like this ... making people so uncomfortable.

The moment Lu Chenan heard it clearly, he was struck by lightning and his face turned pale. He suddenly understood that the attack in the Northland twelve years ago was a surprise attack planned by Beidi and Simon for many years, hoping to tear open the Northland's defense line and march south.

Later, everyone guessed that there must be a senior member of the Xie family army who survived and brought out the news, otherwise they would not have pulled out all the nails at once. Beidi Simon pursued this person to death, and even caused a major investigation within Beidi Simon.

It turned out to be Xie Jiayi.

It turned out to be his little princess who was afraid of pain and was delicate.

Lu Chenan stood there with a pale face.



Nanny Chen beside her finally couldn't hold back her tears anymore and burst into tears. Her little princess, her princess ... her little master ...

Princess Kunyi was favored, but there were always people who said that she was arrogant, especially those unfavored descendants of the royal family. They always said it was unfair and asked why Princess Kunyi could do that. Nanny Chen burst into tears. Just because her little master was the most legitimate blood of the royal family, and just because her little master had paid the price for the safety of Dayin and the north when she was so young, her little master deserved to enjoy the honor bestowed upon her by this vast country.

That night, Princess Kunyi had a high fever, and the entire palace was in chaos.

By the time Xie Jiayi finally woke up, three days had passed and she had returned to the place where she and Lu Chenan lived.

She raised her hand and touched the face of Lord Lu, who was sleeping on the bed.

The person lying on the edge of the bed suddenly woke up: " Zhao Zhao? Zhao Zhao! " Lu Chenan held Xie Jiayi's hand, " Do you want some water? Wait. " He got up to pour some water, but because he got up too quickly, his eyes went dark. He quickly slowed down and then held the cup to feed Xie Jiayi water.

Xie Jiayi, who had just woken up, was well-behaved and quiet. She just looked at Lu Chenan with stars in her dark eyes.

" Master Lu, thank you for your hard work. "

Her gaze was like a hand, stroking away all the tiredness on Lu Chenan's body.

" Princess, you have worked hard to save me. " Lu Chenan said this before realizing what he had said. He paused while holding Xie Jiayi's hand and raised his eyes to see her expression.

Xie Jiayi's pale face flushed, and she said, " I want to see— "

Lu Chenan felt his heart suddenly shrink.

## Chapter 78

" I want to see— "

Lu Chen'an's heart shrank , and he instantly felt a kind of tension that made it difficult to breathe. She just woke up, who did she want to see? Lu Chen'an held his breath and stopped himself from thinking further.

Xie Jiayi almost squeezed out three words from between her teeth: " Chen – Yin – Sheng! "

Just three words made the weak princess sound murderous .

Lu Chenan was stunned for a moment , and then he smiled almost instantly. Such a carefree smile made Xie Jiayi stare straight at him . She asked hesitantly: " Master Lu, when I was sick , what else did you do ? "

Lu Chenan didn't understand.

" Why are you ... laughing so ... you look prettier than before. " Xie Jiayi couldn't think of any other way to describe it, so she just said it honestly. After she finished speaking, she didn't forget to nervously remind Lord Lu: " Don't laugh like that outside. "

Lu Chenan couldn't help but lower his head and smiled again, then looked up at her: " What's wrong? "

" There are many bad guys outside. " Be careful that someone might take advantage of you and take you back as their husband. At this time, Nanny Chen also came over. Seeing Ruyi and Caiyue waiting by the door with happy faces , she knew that the princess must be in good spirits. Nanny Chen was so happy that she chanted Buddha's name to the sky before she even reached the place .

Ruyi came to greet Nanny Chen , paused , and whispered: " Mammy , His Majesty's side ..." If it weren't for Nanny Chen, I'm afraid the princess would not have been brought back at all. , furrowed again . There had been some unpleasant things said outside in the past few days. One was about assassination and rescue , and the other was about the princess and His Majesty . After all, everyone saw His Majesty's reaction at the time, holding the princess and going straight into the emperor's bedroom. How could His Majesty, such a smart person , do such a stupid thing? There were so many places where the imperial physician could not come in to see her , how could he bring the princess into the emperor's bedroom.

Nanny Chen frowned and said slowly, " The most important thing for the princess right now is to take care of her health . Don't tell her about this. "

After a while, she said again: " I'll go tell His Majesty that the princess has woken up. " She went to tell him so that he could remind His Majesty to be careful about his words and deeds and not to visit when it's not the right time. There was no reason for the emperor to be so anxious to visit a woman from outside the family, especially since His Majesty and the princess had been engaged before, and they had to avoid suspicion everywhere. She wanted to make it clear to His Majesty that the young master was living such a good life now, and no one could ruin it.

Nanny Chen let out a slow breath, her eyes determined: No one can.

later when he went to feed the princess medicine, he heard what His Majesty said to the princess. I am afraid that this matter——

However, as soon as he and Nanny Chen arrived in front of the princess, they all had happy smiles on their faces.

When Chen Yinsheng came over, Xie Jiayi had already washed herself, pinched her nose and drank medicine, and had just woken up after sleeping for a while. The sun had already set outside, and Chen Yinsheng smiled shyly, but sat down happily.

Xie Jiayi looked at her with a half-smile: " I'm deeply in love with you, and I won't marry anyone but you? "

Chen Yinsheng cleared his throat and moved his body.

" I'll go through mountains of swords and cauldrons of oil, just to get to your Majesty? "

Chen Yinsheng: .....

" I will live this life only for Your Majesty! "

Chen Yinsheng couldn't sit still any longer, and said with a wry smile: " Princess, the situation was really dangerous ..."

Xie Jiayi, who had just woken up, almost fainted again: It's not dangerous, I'll find you! It's just an arrow, it's not a mountain of swords or a forest of arrows. You made a promise before, and you almost patted your chest, but when the time came, you shrank your neck, and I, the princess, was left! If I had known that your love was like this, I would have made other arrangements!

Xie Jiayi was so angry that her wound hurt.

Chen Yinsheng leaned forward to comfort her: " The princess is injured, don't get angry, getting angry is harmful to your health and will not help the wound heal ..."

Xie Jiayi really wanted to braise this woman and her rabbit together! Xie Jiayi was really puzzled. In her previous life, this person had clearly served His Majesty, but in the end, he became a monk and practiced Taoism .

She grasped something at once, and used the setting sun to look at Chen Yinsheng, the man with an immortal look in front of her: Practicing Taoism?

Xie Jiayi's mind was confused, and Chen Yinsheng's words filled her ears. She swore with great confidence and conviction:

" It's a pity that your majesty doesn't care about me at all. Perhaps I can only enter the Taoist temple. "

" Without Your Majesty, I would rather enter Taoism and live out the rest of my life! The sun and the moon can bear witness to my determination ! "

In her previous life, she entered a Taoist temple ...

Xie Jiayi realized that she understood something, and then looked at Chen Yinsheng, who was now very sagely. Xie Jiayi had several things to say, but as a noble lady, it was really inappropriate to say them. However, Xie Jiayi still gritted her teeth and said one of them:

" Chen Yinsheng, your grandfather's! "

Chen Yinsheng hurriedly stood up to comfort the princess who was obviously furious: "

Princess, don't be angry. If you get hurt, no one can replace you! My grandfather, I miss him too. He actually – also loves to cultivate Taoism. I learned his true teachings when I was a child! "

Xie Jiayi: .....

Xie Jiayi really didn't want to believe that Chen Yinsheng had been using the excuse that she wanted to be anything other than the Crown Princess or the Queen. She never wanted to get married from the beginning and only wanted to practice Taoism!

Seeing that the princess had accepted this fact, Chen Yinsheng's tense nerves relaxed. Finally, there was someone she could tell the truth to. Her eyes sparkled, and her words made Xie Jiayi want to dig her sparkling eyes out:

" All men in the world are mortals, and no one can stop me from my path to becoming an immortal! When I ascend to heaven one day, the princess will also have a chance to become an immortal. Or the princess can simply divorce Lord Lu and pursue the path to becoming an immortal with me! Princess, what do you think? "

" I think Nanny Chen will beat you to death if she hears this. " Xie Jiayi said faintly, " Your road to becoming an immortal may end in my Princess's Mansion ..."

Chen Yinsheng really looked back, fortunately, fortunately. Finally, someone could share her life's work, and she was unbridled for a while.

" So, you've always wanted to cultivate immortality? "

" I have made this ambition since the day I came of age. "

Xie Jiayi rolled her eyes. Since Chen Yinsheng reached the age of marriage, she had said that she would be the Crown Princess. " Aren't you afraid that His Majesty will really grant you a marriage? "

Chen Yinsheng shook her head: " Princess, you really underestimated your combat ability. "

She said very confidently: " When you were here, who could have surpassed you to become the Crown Princess? "

Xie Jiayi: .....

" Later, weren't you afraid? " Xie Jiayi said this after she decided not to be the Crown Princess. You know, Chen Yinsheng is really a very suitable candidate for the Crown Princess. Chen Yinsheng did not answer immediately. Instead, she looked at Xie Jiayi without saying anything. After a while, she said, " Princess, I am a cultivator. "

Xie Jiayi wanted to roll her eyes again, " Did you use magic to calculate that you can't become the Crown Princess? " Xie Jiayi sneered. If Chen Yinsheng dared to say that, she swore to Taishang Laojun that no matter how much it hurt, she would sit up and beat her!

Chen Yinsheng continued to look at her, and after a while he said, " Princess, what I mean is that I see people more clearly. "

Seeing that the princess didn't understand, Chen Yinsheng thought for a moment and continued to lower her voice mysteriously: " Our Majesty is born with a rebellious nature. " Back then, everyone said that the prince was gentle and respectful of rules, but Chen Yinsheng never thought so after meeting the prince. She had seen the look in his eyes when he looked at the princess, and she simply didn't understand how those people spread the rumor that the princess was chasing the prince, while the prince's reaction was always indifferent. They were indeed a group of ordinary people who could only see the surface.

She thought of the look in His Majesty's eyes that day. Everyone saw the ice on the surface, His Majesty's usual reserve and indifference. Only she saw how thin the ice was, and how hot the things surging underneath would be once they broke through the ice. Such a person would not let others take the position of the wife of the person he loved.

Precisely because he had no worries in his heart, Chen Yinsheng could see things clearly.

Xie Jiayi didn't speak for a while. At least at this moment, Chen Yinsheng couldn't understand this princess who always showed her emotions. The princess had a world that she couldn't understand. Chen Yinsheng didn't know how much Xie Jiayi knew about His Majesty and His Majesty's thoughts, but she was an outsider, so this was not something she should care about. Xie Jiayi only said: " Aren't you afraid that the late emperor will directly appoint you as the Crown Princess with an imperial decree? At that time, you will have to become the Crown Princess even if you don't want to. "

" Don't be afraid! I will only occupy the position of Crown Princess and Queen, and I won't have to fulfill the duties of Crown Princess and Queen. When the time comes, I will devote all my efforts to cultivating the Tao, and maybe I can ascend to heaven soon! "

Xie Jiayi was speechless when looking at Chen Yinsheng. It turned out that those who practiced Taoism were more thoughtful than mortals like them.

From then on, Chen Yinsheng and Princess Kunyi became closer and closer, leaving everyone else confused. Chen Yinsheng also said to Xie Jiayi in private, " These vulgar people all think that I am clinging to the imperial power, but they never thought that I am the princess's destiny. "

Xie Jiayi: .....

Have you forgotten that you secretly made an elixir the day before yesterday and just blew up the elixir furnace? You are not even a qualified Taoist priest, but you can already call yourself an immortal? The hierarchy in your immortal cultivation world is not strict enough ...

Lord Lu should really take a good look at Chen Yinsheng. He will know that even if she is really the Goddess of Luo River, there is no guarantee that she will like to talk nonsense behind people's backs.

Chen Yinsheng said mysteriously, " Princess, don't underestimate the fate of the immortals. You don't understand the affairs of us immortals ... Let me tell you something you know. Someone in our Taoist sect has really sent someone back into the cycle of life and death. Princess, when I attain enlightenment, if you have unfulfilled wishes on the road of reincarnation, I can help you. " Xie Jiayi nodded with a smile, and then without hesitation, she hit the immortal on the back of his head. He heard a cry of "ouch", followed by the princess's voice: " Immortal, are you still afraid of pain? "

Xie Jiayi's days of recuperation were peaceful. His Majesty did not personally visit Lord Lu's wife , Princess Kunyi, as some people had speculated. The rumors that had been circulating secretly seemed to gradually subside.

In a remote corner of the palace, a skinny eunuch was about to kneel down and kowtow in gratitude. Zhang Jinyu reached out and helped him up: " Don't thank me, your brother is not destined to die. "

Just a few days ago, Zhang Jinyu encountered this secretly crying eunuch. It turned out that his brother from the village was seriously ill, but he himself was just a lowly eunuch in the palace, so how could he afford so much money to hire a doctor and medicine for his brother. Thanks to Miss Mingpei who rewarded him with silver, his brother's life was saved.

" I will never forget Miss Ming Pei's kindness. If Miss Ming Pei can use me in any way, I will serve her through fire and water. "

At this moment, a group of people from afar were heading towards the princess' residence. The maid beside Zhang Jinyu said, " The princess's injuries have long been healed, but these good things are still flowing in. The princess must have consumed bird's nest, ginseng, cinnamon and ganoderma during her illness, which must have cost at least a thousand taels of silver. "

Little Ye Zi listened blankly: This is the noble man. If his brother hadn't met Miss Ming Pei, he wouldn't have had the two taels of silver to save his life.

Zhang Jinyu smiled and said, " The princess is so noble that we cannot compare to her. "

Little Leaf also laughed: " The girl is also a noble person. "

The maidservant beside Zhang Jinyu sighed: " How can our young lady compare with the nobles above? The princess said a word and our young lady kneeled down and hurt her knees.

It was so cold, but the princess made our young lady kneel by the pond. Later, when she didn't like our young lady, she made her kneel on the ice- "

" Cuizhu, stop talking. What if someone hears us—— "

It turned out that such a good young lady was being tortured by that Princess Kunyi. Cuizhu whispered again: " Young lady is too cautious. Isn't Lord Lu accompanying the princess to fly a kite in the open space in front of the hunting area? He can come out to watch others fly kites. The golden bird's nest brought by the Ministry of Internal Affairs is still being sent to the princess. No wonder the Queen Mother is angry. Who wouldn't be angry ..."

" It is a great honor to save the emperor. "

" I saw it clearly. If it wasn't the princess, it would have been the young lady who saved the emperor. The young lady risked her life to save others. Why did the princess get all the good things in the end! " Such a great achievement, who wouldn't be jealous. After all, it's not a big deal, and she can be fine after a rest. But the achievement is huge. These days, I'm afraid they want to give the princess even a palace. If it was their young lady's ...

Zhang Jinyu smiled and said, " The princess is naturally more sincere to His Majesty than we are. "

At this point, Cuizhu became even more dissatisfied, " The princess is already married, but she still treats His Majesty like this, this is really ... It's not that I'm presumptuous, how can anyone say nice things about me ..." At this point, Cuizhu's voice became even lower, and she looked around. Who knew what she feared would come true? She happened to see Caixing and Bubu stopped not far away , looking at them.

Cuizhu's face turned pale.

Zhang Jinyu didn't expect that in such a remote place, where he clearly saw Xie Jiayi in front of him, he would meet people from the Princess's Mansion, and these two were the two troublesome guys.

She quickly smiled and greeted the two, guessing that they couldn't hear anything at this distance. Who knew Bubu also had sharp ears, and told Caixing what Cuizhu said. Caixing, who had a bad temper, couldn't stand someone gossiping about the princess, and such unbearable speculation. They were almost angry to death when they heard these rumors earlier, and now they bumped into them!

She knew Mingpei was not a good person. Now that she has climbed up the social ladder and become the mistress, even a little maidservant who follows her has the guts to gossip about the princess! If she doesn't throw a tantrum, how could it be Caixing! Caixing stepped forward and slapped the maidservant who dared to gossip about the princess without saying a word. " Pa pa " two slaps! Then she saluted to Mingpei and said, " Miss Mingpei, it's time to call you Miss now. Please forgive me for being rude. It's just that your maidservant said that it's not my place to interfere with others, but she said that our master can't get by with me! "

Xiao Ye saw that the two servants of the princess were so overbearing. It was just the servants' gossip, but they actually beat up the maid of the fairy-like girl! In the face of such domineering princess servants, Miss Mingpei could only say good things just to protect Cuizhu. Even so, the princess's servants were still aggressive and made Miss Mingpei lose face.

She is the adopted daughter of the Duke of England and the young lady of the Duke's Mansion!

Caixing said, " This matter is not over yet. I will tell Madam when I go back. Humph! " Then she turned around and left with Bubu. Cuizhu, who was already trembling with fear and sweat soaking her clothes, was left behind. She cried and called " Miss " with a swollen face .

Ming Pei comforted her: " Don't worry, I will definitely protect you. "

Looking at the master and servant, Xiao Ye felt even more grateful for Miss Mingpei's kindness and even more resentful of the powerful who didn't treat others as human beings. Cuizhu cried and said, " The princess is so scary, I'm afraid she will find another reason to torture you next time! Miss, every time I meet the princess, I'm so scared, she always seems unwilling to let you go. "

Xiao Ye couldn't help but ask: " Why does the princess always target Miss Mingpei? "

Cuizhu looked around carefully this time before she whispered to Xiaoye, " Why? It's because my young lady is a good person and is well-liked by others ... She is an eyesore ..."

Xiao Ye Zi had also heard of such things. Some noble ladies just couldn't stand to see outstanding maids below them, and they tortured them every day. They didn't expect Miss Ming Pei to have such a hard time. For a while, no one spoke. After a long while, Xiao Ye Zi whispered: " It's hard for lowly people like us, but why is it so hard for Miss Ming Pei ? " Just because she is better than others.

Zhang Jinyu sighed, " This is how the world is. Some people are born with everything they want, but people like us can only rely on ourselves to find a way out. There is no justice to be sought.

" At this point, she smiled gently at Xiao Ye, " You also have to do your job well and move up, so that your situation will be better and you can truly protect the people you want to protect. "

Xiao Ye looked at this fairy-like gentle girl, nodded with tears in his eyes, and silently remembered her words. He also secretly made up his mind that one day, he would be useful to Miss Mingpei.

" What's your name? " Zhang Jinyu asked.

" My servant, Little Leaf. "

" Okay, I'll remember you. " Zhang Jinyu was very humble and said " I'll remember you " so seriously that Xiao Ye was so excited that her face turned red.

Looking at the grateful little leaf walking away, Cuizhu sighed: " Miss is really kind-hearted. "

Zhang Jinyu smiled faintly: " Saving a life is better than building a seven-story pagoda. " No one knows when a small person will become a key figure. The master and servant went to the Queen Mother's residence and received the Queen Mother's order to deliver the food box to His Majesty.

Zhang Jinyu brought the food box to see the emperor who was reviewing memorials, lowered his head and told him the empress dowager's instructions to take care of his health.

Xu Shixing did not raise his head, but frowned slightly. He wrote " Forward to the Ministry for discussion " with a red brush and said as usual: " How is your mother? I will go to pay my respects to her later today. "

Zhang Jinyu smiled and said, The Queen Mother " is fine, she is just worried about Your Majesty. " After a pause, she smiled and said, " I think the Princess is well now, and she can go out for a walk now. "

As expected, His Majesty paused, and his impatient frown finally relaxed. He then asked, "Is the princess coming out?"

"I'm watching people flying kites in the front hill."

Xu Shixing read a few more lines of the memorial before putting down his pen. He took the towel handed to him and wiped his hands, then said slowly, "This is quite a coincidence. I was originally planning to go out for a walk."

Now, there is nothing Zhang Jinyu doesn't understand.

But there are some things that Your Majesty should understand.

## Chapter 79

When Emperor Jianzhao and his entourage arrived at the front mountain, they saw Princess Kunyi. However, not only Princess Kunyi, but also Lord Junma Lu was there.

Nanny Chen said so much that Xu Shixing never saw Xie Jiayi even if he wanted to. The only thing he could do was to send people to deliver things and bring back some news about her.

When Xu Shixing came, although outsiders could not see anything as usual, the personal servants could still feel that His Majesty was happy. However, when he arrived at the place, His Majesty's face quickly darkened.

It was indeed lively in front. The servants of the Princess's Mansion flew several kites, some with beauties, some with fairy birds with long tails, and some with fish. A large felt blanket was spread under the old ginkgo tree. The Princess was probably tired, so she sat next to Lord Lu, occasionally tilting her head to say something to Lord Lu, who listened patiently with a helpless but indulgent smile.

Even so, it can be seen that Lord Lu did not agree after all.

The princess shook Lord Lu's hand, but Lord Lu just shook his head. He raised his hand and pinched the princess' nose, and the latter pouted, and then let it go, and leaned her head gently against Lord Lu again.

There was a thick layer of golden ginkgo leaves, and on top of that was a thick felt blanket. There are two people on the blanket, and anyone who sees them will say they are a perfect match.

The girl is delicate and dependent, and the man is gentle and doting.

One glance is enough to tell that this is a pair of lovers.

Xu Shixing didn't know how long he had been looking at it, or maybe it wasn't long at all. He just felt that the world was covered with a layer of haze. On his way back, he kept thinking the same terrible thought:

Are they like this in private?

What would they be like in a more private place? What would they do?

All of these things that Xu Shixing had been resisting subconsciously suddenly became clear.

He had already sat at the desk in the study, looking at the teardrop-shaped mutton-fat jade earring on the desk, his face as if covered with a layer of frost.

His eyes were a bottomless black.



He looked at the earring that he had taken from her earlobe that day, and said in a low and cold voice with hostility: " Zhao Zhao, you can't do this. " He was wrong, but it was enough, she couldn't do this.

Xu Shixing picked up the earring and gently placed it on his lips. He did not move for a long time, but the expression on his lips was cold:

Xie Jiayi, you can't do this.

Lu Chenan was stunned when he suddenly received the summons from His Majesty. Xie Jiayi was also stunned and asked Jixiang who came to summon him: " It's already this late, His Majesty is still busy? "

Jixiang laughed and said, " Your Highness, you don't know that even though we came to the palace for the autumn hunt, it's only an hour or half an hour during the day. Your Majesty has endless memorials to read. There are always dozens or even hundreds of things waiting for Your Majesty every day. How can you finish them all? Look, not only Lord Lu was called, but several other lords were also called, saying that they have urgent matters to discuss. "

Lu Chenan smiled at Xie Jiayi: " In that case, you can go back and have a good meal first, and don't wait for me. "

Xie Jiayi said, " But you haven't told me what happened in the end of the story? Did the scholar find the person he was looking for? Did the lady know that she had a fiancé who had been arranged to marry her since childhood? What if the lady married someone else? " Then he said, " First, tell me if the scholar really came from the underworld? Does he have any magical powers? "

Jixiang was stunned by the princess's question. He understood the scholar and the lady, but how come there is also the underworld ... The number one scholar is indeed the number one scholar.

Seeing the princess's anxious look, Lu Chenan smiled again: " I'll tell you slowly later. There's no point in being anxious. " As he spoke, he had already straightened his clothes and told Xie Jiayi to eat well, " Don't be picky about food. " After saying that, he smiled at her and followed Jixiang.

When Lu Chenan arrived at the conference room, he found that several ministers were there. His Majesty discussed the matters on the memorial with everyone. It was already dark, and a crescent moon hung in the sky. Lu Chenan and his companions had just walked out of the meeting room when they saw Jixiang, who was beside His Majesty, chasing after them. " Lord Lu, please stay. His Majesty wants to talk to you. "

In the darkness, only a few lanterns nearby emitted a faint light. Lu Chenan said goodbye to his colleagues and followed the auspicious lanterns back.

It was already late autumn, and the palace outside the capital was even colder. The mountains in the distance had been swallowed up by the vast darkness, but the empty and cold feeling in the air made it unmistakable that this was a sparsely populated palace outside the capital, not the bustling capital city.

For some reason, the lanterns on both sides of the palace were not lit tonight.

In the darkness, the only sound I could hear was the footsteps of boots on the ground, and occasionally the sound of newly fallen leaves, which was the only sound in the endless and silent darkness.

Lu Chenan came in, bowed again and greeted, then stood quietly aside.

Xu Shixing was still talking about the Yellow River channel, and asked Lu Chenan if there was a more economical way to modify the finalized blueprint. After all, people's livelihood was difficult, and taxes could not be increased easily. There were powerful enemies lurking in the north, and remnants in the south. It was unknown when a big war would break out, and the national treasury had to be prepared for this expense.

Lu Chenan once again carefully looked at the drawings that had been revised countless times, and discussed every detail of the project with the emperor again.

Emperor Jian Zhao nodded, and Gao Sheng finally rolled up the blueprint and put it away. For a moment, there was no one serving in the huge study. After finishing the official business, Emperor Jian Zhao asked how the princess was recovering, and Lu Chenan answered cautiously.

Then Emperor Jian Zhao laughed and said, " Zhao Zhao likes to bite the other person's lower lip when they kiss. Has he changed his habit? "

Lu Chenan suddenly raised his head and met the gaze of Emperor Jianzhao. The corners of his lips were raised, as if he was smiling, but there was no smile in his eyes. The two looked at each other, and Emperor Jianzhao looked at Lu Chenan and said slowly: " Lord Lu probably knows that she has a bad temper. I did something wrong and angered her. She said she would ignore me and she would not care. "

At this point he smiled again, " I can't do anything to her. I didn't expect that in this situation, she would jump up and block the arrows for me. " This time Emperor Jianzhao was really laughing, and the smile could be seen in his eyes.

Finally, he slowly asked: " Lord Lu, do you think she is still angry with me? "

Lu Chenan was walking on the way back until the person who came to pick him up at the intersection held up a lantern. He raised his hand and shielded his eyes. The sudden light in the darkness made his eyes dazzled.

" Sir, I have called you several times. " It was Mingxin who spoke, " The princess also asked me to carry your cloak, fearing that you would be cold. "

Lu Chenan was stunned for a moment, took the cloak, and slowly tied the belt. He asked: " What was the princess doing when you came? "

Mingxin replied, " I'm talking to Miss Chen. Miss Chen has been visiting the princess quite often recently. "

Lu Chenan nodded and heard Mingxin ask: " Sir, is the matter difficult? I see that you seem very tired. "

At this time, the wind blew again, but he didn't feel too cold because he had a cloak on. He said slowly: " It is indeed a bit tricky, but there will always be a way. "

Mingxin held a lantern in the dark, and the two walked out. The sedan stopped outside another gate. Even if it was just an emperor's palace, it was heavily guarded.

Ming Xin scratched his head: " I always feel ... I always feel that the young master is a little ... a little sad tonight . "

Lu Chenan looked back and saw that in the darkness, only the grandest main hall was lit up. That is where the imperial power lies, and its majesty is inviolable.

Lu Chenan said softly: " I just thought of the scholar in the story. He should have been the one who grew up with the young lady. "

When the two returned to their residence, Mingxin lived in the front yard with the guards of the Princess's Mansion, while Lu Chenan followed the palace servants who came to pick them up to the back yard, where someone had already brought the food again, and there was a small charcoal stove underneath, slowly simmering the food.

Lu Chenan saw Xie Jiayi wearing plain clothes, and she looked very plain, except for a jade hairpin on her head that held up her long hair. He asked the person who was about to help him change clothes to step back, and Xie Jiayi looked at him suspiciously.

Lu Chenan waved at her: " Zhao Zhao, come here. "

Xie Jiayi walked to his side, and Lu Chenan opened his arms and embraced her. He slowly lowered his head and kissed the corner of her lips, then her soft lips.

There is a chill, it is the cold autumn outside.

A warm, sweet fragrance in the room.

After a long time, he finally let her go, gently stroking her cheek with his hand, looking at her blushing face under the light. Lu Chenan sighed and said softly: " Zhao Zhao, don't bite people anymore, I don't like it. "

Xie Jiayi looked at him blankly, then nodded obediently.

Seeing this, Lu Chenan felt softened. She was actually so well-behaved.

How come she is always so nice?

All the best things in the world are in her eyes. All good things have her shadow. The intoxicating flowers in spring, the bright moon in summer nights, the wind blowing from the other side of the river in autumn, the warmth of the jade hand warmer in the heavy snow in winter, and you standing in front of me at this moment.

Xie Jiayi saw a moment of sadness in Lu Chenan's quiet eyes.

This was her omnipotent Lord Lu. Xie Jiayi realized almost immediately: " Is His Majesty trying to embarrass you? " She lowered her head and thought for a moment, then nodded, " Of course it is! I'll go and settle the score with him! "

Lu Chenan watched Xie Jiayi turn around and walk inside, almost burying himself in the box in the inner chamber. After a while, he pulled out the yellow vest and yellow belt bestowed by the late emperor, and also grabbed the imperial token. Finally, he thought about it and even took the golden medal of immunity from death. He turned around and said to himself with a solemn oath: " Master Lu, no one can bully you. Just wait, I will seek justice for you! "

All of Lu Chenan's inexplicable complex emotions disappeared in an instant. Those heavy things seemed like nothing at all and were moved away at once. He looked at Xie Jiayi who was busy turning things out and couldn't help laughing out loud.

Lord Lu's laughter was deep and pleasant, and it made people's ears itch.

Xie Jiayi held up the long yellow belt and said solemnly: " Lord Lu, I will not bite anyone again. You also have to promise me not to laugh like that outside. This princess will not like it if others see it. "

Lu Chenan stopped smiling and looked deeply at the girl in front of him.

How can someone be so nice?

And this good person is none other than his little princess.

While Lu Chenan went to take a shower and change clothes, Xie Jiayi put away her things one by one and stood in front of the window, looking at the crescent moon rising in the sky in the dark night outside. There was no expression on her jade-white face. Her hand was scratching the window frame, and her sight slowly turned to the north. From afar , she could see the shadow of the main hall of the palace, hidden in the darkness.

## Chapter 80

The next day , when Jixiang, who was beside His Majesty, came to summon Xie Jiayi to His Majesty's study, Xie Jiayi was not surprised at all. She asked someone to change her clothes, still choosing plain clothes , but wearing a more solemn princess's outer clothes , and asked Ruyi to bring the things.

This was the first time the two had met since the assassination.

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi carefully , and his face became more ruddy. It seemed that the people below had taken better care of her these days. He didn't sleep last night , but he was very energetic at the moment. He had made up his mind.

No one could stop him, not even her.

It has been more than half a year since the late emperor's funeral , a hundred and ninety-four days and nights, but he has only seen her three times. If this continues , how many times will he be able to see her until the day he dies ?

This is ridiculous.

He is an emperor.

The waiters had been sent away by Gao Sheng , and even Gao Sheng was left guarding the door. No one spoke in the room for a while , and the silence made Gao Sheng, who was guarding the door, feel uneasy.

Xie Jiayi was pinching the thing in her sleeve , she was still a little hesitant , she liked the prosperous capital city , she liked the crabapple cakes at the north gate of the capital city , she liked the princess's mansion with thousands of bamboos and crabapple trees.

She never thought she was brave enough to face the city that kept appearing in her nightmares.

When she held the scroll in her sleeve, all the things she liked and feared came to mind , and the last thing that came to mind was the look Lu Chenan gave her last night. For a moment , there was a desolation in Lord Lu's eyes that she had never seen before.

That's Lord Lu , the smartest person in Dayin.

Xu Shixing spoke first . He sat in the seat at the top that was reserved for the emperor , looked at Xie Jiayi, and said, " You should get a divorce. " It seemed as if he was saying something very natural and well-thought-out . Perhaps for Xu Shixing, it was indeed the case.

Xie Jiayi wondered if there was something wrong with her ears, or maybe it was Xu Shixing's brain? There must be something wrong with one of these two things.

After saying the first sentence, it seemed that the rest of the words were easier for Xu Shixing. He stood up from his seat and walked to Xie Jiayi who was looking up at him, and said with his hands behind his back, " Governor of Sichuan and Shaanxi, give it to Lu Chenan, what do you think? " A second-rank provincial governor, holding real power, is what many scholars have pursued throughout their lives.

Xu Shixing seemed to really think it was feasible. He paced two steps: " With his qualifications, it is indeed a bit difficult, but it is doable. There are a lot of things going on in southern Sichuan, so let him go there to gain experience first. It will only take two years, " he said immediately when he saw Xie Jiayi's eyes: " Maybe in a year, we can give him this position based on his political and military achievements. " Xu Shixing was also well aware of Lu Chenan's abilities. What he lacked was experience. These things would take him ten or eight years to get, but Xu Shixing could give them to him with just a wave of his hand, as long as he left here and left the capital. Xu Shixing had a rare smile on his face and felt that it couldn't be better.

Hearing the words " South Sichuan " , Xie Jiayi felt as if she was stabbed, " No! "

" No? " Xu Shixing's smile faded, and he looked at Xie Jiayi, " What's wrong? Sichuan and Shaanxi are not good, and there is also Jiangnan Road, or Guangdong and Guangxi, Yunnan and Guizhou, which one do you think is good? " At this point, his tone became more gentle, as if he was persuading a naive and stubborn child, " Zhao Zhao, you don't understand scholars, and you don't understand men. For a frontier official entrenched in a certain area, no one would say no. "

Xie Jiayi felt that the Xu Shixing standing in front of her was so strange. This was not – he – not like this. She shook her head. Something was wrong. Whether it was Xu Shixing who was the prince or Xu Shixing who became the emperor, it was not like this.

" Respect the classics and follow the ancestors " , Be lenient and kind to those below you " , " Respect the virtuous and tolerate the masses, praise the good and sympathize with the incompetent " , " Do not sacrifice the public interest for personal gain " , " Govern the country with morality and govern the people with wisdom "... These are the characters of the Crown Prince and His Majesty Xu Shixing, and countless people have praised them.

But the person in front of her seemed to have never internalized these things, the self-restraint that a wise and benevolent ruler should have. Xie Jiayi was really confused, and she was choking on what she was about to say. She didn't know this person.

But Xie Jiayi's shaking head made Xu Shixing, who hadn't had a good night's sleep for many days , feel his temples throbbing uncontrollably again. He raised his hand to press his forehead and looked at Xie Jiayi, still with a smile on his face and a gentle tone: " If you think there is anything wrong, we can discuss it again. " Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi, but you have to divorce.

" Nothing is good, and there is no such thing as ' we ' ! Your Majesty, do you know what you are saying? " Xie Jiayi unconsciously took a half step back towards the door.

Xie Jiayi's words and her unconscious movements made Xu Shixing's temples throb even more violently. He looked at Xie Jiayi and shook his head slowly. Only then did Xie Jiayi see that he was actually wearing a robe with a pattern on it and a crown with hanging wings.

This madman!

At this moment, Xie Jiayi was sure that Xu Shixing was a lunatic! He had confused her. How could she never know that Xu Shixing was still a lunatic! The imperial robe and the crown were the formal attire that showed the supreme power and destiny of the emperor. He summoned her privately and wore the imperial robe and the crown!

The hanging beads blocked Xu Shixing's gloomy expression. This is the emperor. He can see every detail of you and your every move, but when he is high above you, you can't even see his expression.

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi, whose face suddenly changed, and laughed softly: " Zhao Zhao, you are too nervous. " She was so nervous that her eyes were empty when she looked at him, so nervous that she only saw his determination at this moment. He really didn't like that he was here, but she had been here for such a long time, but she didn't really see him. Xu Shixing, he really didn't like it.

He approached, she retreated.

But he raised his hand and quickly took the scroll from Xie Jiayi's sleeve. It was another will!

Xu Shixing held the will in his hand, looked at Xie Jiayi and shook his head, " Will the things in here make me-- " He lowered his head and leaned close to her ear, and whispered the word " angry " . Otherwise, Xie Jiayi would not be so nervous.

As he unfolded the will, he said: " What did the late emperor leave you? Divorce or-- " Xu Shixing stopped talking abruptly. When he saw the contents of the will, his hands were so tight that veins bulged.

King of the North.

Lu Chenan and Princess Kunyi share the title of King of Jingbei and are in charge of northern affairs.

" King of Jingbei? " Xu Shixing laughed in anger. He really found it funny. It was said that the blood of Emperor Yuanhe produced lunatics. It turned out that his father was one of them. It was just that his father hid well. Originally, he could also hide very well. Through the falling beads, Xu Shixing looked deeply at Xie Jiayi. Originally, he could do it too.

But he didn't want to hide it anymore. Who could he hide it from? Xu Shixing's eyes gradually became gloomy.

" Zhao Zhao, do you want to leave? " he asked her in a soft voice.

Xie Jiayi swallowed his saliva, " Third brother, you saw ————"

Xu Shixing suddenly interrupted her: " Don't call me Third Brother! " This time, he couldn't give her what she wanted, nor did he want to give it to her. So, don't call him Third Brother.

" Your Majesty, I miss the North, I miss Sucheng . "

" made Xu Shixing even more irritated, and the beads in front of his face swayed. Hearing her mention Sucheng, Xu Shixing's heart shrank, but he said in a colder voice: " You don't want to. " Impossible, she can't go anywhere. She shouldn't go anywhere except by his side.

No one spoke in the study for a long time.

After a long while, Xie Jiayi raised her head and said, " Your Majesty, is it necessary to do this? "

Xu Shixing laughed and looked at her suddenly, his beads dangling, " What do I have to do? Zhaozhao, you haven't heard what I have to do. " At the end, he looked at her with tenderness and affection.

" Your Majesty, please give it back to me. " Xie Jiayi asked for her will.

Xu Shixing looked at her quietly for a while, then slowly placed the will on her open hand, bit by bit. Xu Shixing sighed, and said in an indulgent and gentle tone: " Zhao Zhao, you can't do it. "

A dead emperor cannot do anything to a living emperor who has made up his mind.

This time, he made up his mind.

Xie Jiayi took back the will and walked to the door before turning around and saying to him:

" I can. "

The setting sun shone into the house, and the bright sunset shone on the beautiful princess. And Xu Shixing, sitting on the dragon chair where the sunset did not reach, just leaned over and looked at her.

When Xie Jiayi walked out of the palace gate, she looked up and saw the setting sun, and Lu Chenan under the setting sun. He was quietly thinking and waiting. When Lu Chenan was waiting for someone, he was not as anxious as others. He was very quiet when waiting for someone, as if it didn't matter how long he waited.

Just take your time, he's not in a hurry at all.

No matter how long you wait, he never asks you where you have been or who you have met. He never asked.

The two walked side by side in the sunset, and Xie Jiayi asked in a joking tone: " Sir Lu, if you could exchange your wife for a high-ranking official, such as the Governor-General of Sichuan and Shaanxi, do you think anyone would be willing to do so? " After she finished speaking, she kicked a small stone at her feet, as if she was just asking casually.

Lu Chenan looked at the setting sun, " Maybe. "

Xie Jiayi turned to look at him. The stone under her feet felt a bit uncomfortable.

Lu Chenan also looked down at her: " But I don't want to. " He looked at Xie Jiayi, smiled, and lowered his voice, " Zhao Zhao, the frontier officials are really nothing to me, Your Majesty should take out something more valuable-- " He sighed, " Then I won't change it either. "

Lord Lu, who was always cautious and modest, had an air of superiority at this moment. Xie Jiayi felt that she didn't seem to have really known Xu Shixing, but her Lord Lu also had secrets that she didn't know.

However, Lord Lu with his secrets is still Lord Lu. The world in his eyes makes people want to live there. The time there seems to be gentle.

" I'm just afraid of delaying you. You're so good at solving cases, but you haven't even become the Chief Justice of the Dali Temple yet. "

Lu Chenan smiled. Seeing that no one was paying attention, he raised his hand and gently pinched Xie Jiayi's small, white earlobe. He leaned over and whispered something in her ear that Xie Jiayi didn't understand: " Zhao Zhao, I was born to be destined. Maybe it's best to do nothing. "

But she understood what Lord Lu said next.

Lu Chenan stood up and said softly to Xie Jiayi, facing the setting sun: " I don't have any place I really want to go, nor do I have any things I really want to do. Let's go where you want to go and do what you want to do. "

A certain burden in Xie Jiayi's heart was lifted. It was a pity that she could not be the Chief Justice of Dali Temple, Lord Lu. However, Lord Lu, who was omnipotent, could definitely do more in the North.

" Then Lord Lu, please go to the North with me. "

" good. "

The author has something to say:

Respect the virtuous and tolerate the masses, praise the good and sympathize with the incapable. — The Analects of Confucius

## Chapter 81

When Xu Shixing saw the old Prince Zhongshun coming to see him with the imperial edict , he managed to keep a straight face but was shocked and angry in his heart.

Prince Zhongshun was the only surviving brother of his grandfather, Emperor Yuanhe, and he survived precisely because he cared nothing but singing, dancing and feasting . Xu Shixing never thought that Xie Jiayi could actually invite this most important old prince among the current royal family members.

The issue of the will once again entered a stalemate.

Until the day before returning to Beijing , Xu Shixing met Xie Jiayi at the horse farm. At this time, the will was known to everyone, and all the pressure was coming to Xu Shixing. An emperor fears the most is to be called " unfilial ", and one of the affirmations he wants most is to be " like his father " , which requires respecting the will of the previous emperor.

But this time, the will has become known to everyone, but Emperor Jianzhao has not yet expressed his position , which has caused a lot of discussion. Everyone is waiting and watching, and even waiting and watching is a kind of pressure. Not to mention that in addition to the old Prince Zhongshun , there is also the emperor's teacher , the Lord Wang, the old minister of Dayin. These relatives and old ministers must confirm that the emperor must always respect the previous emperor and ancestors , so that an emperor will abide by the rules and act within the laws expected by the ancestors. The ancestral etiquette is almost the greatest restriction on the emperor. Once the emperor loses the restriction, it is a very terrible thing. They can't let this happen.

Everyone knelt to welcome the emperor's arrival , and Xie Jiayi also bowed.



When Xu Shixing raised his hand to ask her to excuse herself , he looked at her for a while before whispering in a close whisper: " Do you think this is okay? " He didn't want to , no matter who he was , it wouldn't work. Dayin had emperors who didn't follow the rules before , so what if there was one more . Since they couldn't be a lenient and Confucian monarch , these royal relatives, civil and military officials should get used to it early, because they will have an arbitrary and unruly emperor.

Xu Shixing saw Xie Jiayi smile slowly, with helplessness and ridicule.

Xie Jiayi could tell that the man in front of her must have not slept well for a long time. He looked so pale that he seemed like he would be seriously ill at any time. His bloodless paleness made him look even further away from the person she remembered , making him even more unfamiliar, and making him look even more arrogant and unpredictable like an emperor. He stood there, as if all the others were just plants and trees, and only he was the god who controlled the life and death of all living beings.

A 20-year-old emperor could have the entire world as his plaything. At this moment, Xu Shixing's dark eyes were filled with madness and determination.

Xie Jiayi looked at him, but what he was thinking about was the sentence in the notes: If the enemy is strong, just wait until he is at the end of his strength, then strike him and kill him with one blow.

It's time.

" Third brother. " Xie Jiayi called him, her voice was full of the dependence and intimacy of the past, which made Xu Shixing's heart twitch. His heart, which was in armor, almost took off its armor instantly and became weak in an instant. However, he couldn't do that. He pursed his lips and looked at her more indifferently. No matter what she said, he would not be moved. He believed that he would not be moved.

Xie Jiayi moved closer to Xu Shixing and looked up at him.

Everything is the same as before.

Even Xu Shixing's lips turned pale and were pursed into a cold line.

Xie Jiayi looked up at him and said word by word: " Third brother, when I was fifteen years old and came of age, I was raped in Changchun Palace. "

" Third brother, you didn't catch me at the best time. "

Sure enough, just this one sentence hit the mark.

What does a face that is paler than pale look like? It is probably the face of Emperor Jian Zhao in front of us. He is standing still, but it seems that his whole soul is shaking. He can control his shaking hands and stop his trembling lips, but he cannot control his heart that is shaking to the point of coldness.

Xie Jiayi was clearly right in front of him, but he felt she was so far away from him .

I see.

Is it really so?

He never understood why she turned around so decisively. It turned out that behind it was not only his deception, but also the deception of his mother.

When Xie Jiayi was fifteen, everything was glorious and her mother loved her like her own daughter.

When Xie Jiayi said this, Xu Shixing wanted to shake his head. How could it be possible? How could it be possible at that time? Everyone in the palace knew that the Queen of Changchun Palace loved the little princess of Haitang Palace the most, probably because she saw her own daughter who died young in the eyes of the little princess. Even His Majesty had never doubted this, and he had said in person that the little princess who died young did have a pair of eyes that looked very much like the princess. No wonder the Queen of Changchun Palace and Haitang Palace got along so well.

But deep down in his heart, Xu Shixing knew it was true almost immediately. He was afraid that it was true. After the two palaces fell out, he had to look back at how fragile and suspicious the love that had lasted for ten years was.

But, Hehuan? At that time, Zhaozhao wanted to make him the Crown Prince. Why ... would it be Hehuan ... Obviously, his mother had reminded him again and again to be good to the princess, and had told him to be good to the princess since he was so young ...

Xu Shixing turned around and thought about it carefully.

There must be a way between him and her, he just needs to think about it carefully.

There were too many voices in his head, and it hurt so much that he couldn't think. He wanted to be quiet, she ... He wanted to be quiet ...

Time and again, among the sky full of crabapple blossoms, the girl in red kept calling him: " Brother Crown Prince, catch me! "

Then the plain-dressed girl smiled slowly and said, " Third brother, you didn't catch me at the best time. " Emperor Jian Zhao was constantly caught in the interweaving of reality and illusion. He always felt that something more terrifying was about to strike. He even once clearly heard a " bang " , the sound of someone falling.

That familiar voice said, " Third brother, it hurts. " " Third brother, it's so painful. "

Emperor Jianzhao, who had been practicing martial arts since childhood and had always been in good health, was fine the day before, but fell ill the next moment, delaying his return to the palace. The winter of the 13th year of Yongtai passed with Emperor Jianzhao's sudden illness. At the same time, the county horse was made a king, sharing the title of king with the princess, and went to the north to be stationed in Sucheng.

At this moment, everyone suddenly realized that the meaning of the title " Assisting the State " given by the previous emperor was to guard a place and assist the capital. The previous emperor had the idea of enfeoffment and enthronement at that time. The princess' return to the north will be like a bird returning to the deep forest and a tiger returning to the deep mountains. Under the ground of the north, there are roots left by the beheaded Xie family. From now on, this princess, who seems to be prosperous but has no foundation, will completely grow roots and firmly occupy a place.

The group from the Princess's Mansion did not even wait until the next spring, but set out on their journey north this autumn.

On the day when the princess left Beijing, Emperor Jianzhao's condition had obviously improved, but he did not stand up to see her off. Many people privately said that this must be because Emperor Jianzhao was dissatisfied with the edict, and this was to express his dissatisfaction with the princess and the prince.

Most people nodded at this statement, it couldn't be more obvious.

But some people think that things are not that simple. They immediately think of the last time Princess Pingyang left Beijing, which was even more grand. At that time, Emperor Yongtai had already ascended the throne, and he also used illness as an excuse to not see the princess off. At that time, everyone thought that Emperor Yongtai did not like Princess Pingyang. Just like today, what Emperor Yuanhe left for the princess was no less than what Emperor Yongtai left for Princess Kunyi today. Which new emperor would like to see the Princess who was the guardian of the country back then, and the Princess who was the auxiliary of the country today. As a result, in the first half year after Princess Kunyi came to Beijing, not many people really took this orphan girl from the north seriously, so the noble ladies who came later bullied the six-year-old dumb princess. Then Emperor Yongtai seemed to wake up suddenly, and he punished the princess by skinning her and rewarded her at the same time, and even brought her to his side to raise her, which made everyone see the nobility of Princess Kunyi.

Those who thought of this old story listened to the whispered discussions of the people around them and just kept silent. There was nothing they could do. The Dayin Xu family, especially the descendants of Emperor Yuanhe, were really unpredictable. Even an emperor like Emperor Yongtai, who was sickly and gentle, often made them feel that being with the emperor was like being with a tiger, not to mention the new emperor who now had more control over the government. The new emperor's actions in the past two years have made those who thought they had understood the new emperor's temper begin to feel confused and increasingly frightened.

No one knew that on the highest tower of the imperial palace, Emperor Jianzhao, wearing a black cloak, was looking north out of the city. The wide hood of the cloak was lowered, casting the emperor's entire face into shadow.

The autumn wind was cold and blew across the city wall, making Gao Sheng Jixiang, who was standing nearby, shiver.

But the emperor standing on the high place seemed to be unaware of anything. He just looked into the distance, at the huge and winding convoy, and the last one disappeared out of his sight. Gao Sheng heard the emperor's whispers. He thought his majesty had some instructions, so he hurried forward and pricked up his ears to listen carefully. However, he only heard the emperor's almost broken voice, which dissipated in the wind:

" Before the Chinese New Year next year, can I still see you? "

The autumn wind ruthlessly took away the last fallen leaves on the branches, and winter came to the capital.

Winter arrived earlier in the north, and the Princess's Mansion's convoy continued to move northward, slowly entering the snow. In October, heavy snow had already fallen in the north. But the Princess's Mansion's convoy had enough charcoal and clothing, and it was just a matter of whether they could move faster or slower. Even the guards and palace servants who followed had thick new cotton clothes on, and they had enough charcoal to use when they rested at night. The princess is rich and wealthy, and everyone knows it. The servants in the princess's mansion never suffer any loss or hardship.

The snow had stopped a little at this moment. After sitting in the carriage for a long time, Lu Chenan got out and rode a horse. He saw the vast plains stretching for thousands of miles,

which made people feel as if their whole heart was opened up. Running in such a vast world, everyone in the team was laughing.

Lu Chenan rode around and stopped by the window of Xie Jiayi's carriage. As expected, he heard the voices of Xie Jiayi bargaining with Nanny Chen:

" I don't want to wait for sunny days, I want to ride today. "

Nanny Chen patiently coaxed and advised.

Xie Jiayi was anxious: " Why does Mammy only care about me and not Lord Lu? He is weaker than me. "

Hearing this, Lu Chenan was both angry and amused. He was not really weak at all.

Finally, the princess won and was about to run out of the carriage in joy, but was stopped by Nanny Chen and asked to change into a warmer cloak. Seeing that Xie Jiayi was about to get anxious again, Lu Chenan knocked on the window, leaned over to look at Xie Jiayi, and then said to Nanny Chen: " Don't worry, Nanny, I'll watch her. "

Obviously, Nanny Chen trusted Lord Lu much more than the princess, so she let the princess out.

Lu Chenan took Xie Jiayi to his horse, wrapped her in his cloak, lowered his head to rub her soft hair, and asked softly: " Are you ready? "

Xie Jiayi nodded, and Lu Chenan squeezed the horse's belly, urged the horse forward, and ran a long distance in a flash .

There was the sound of wind whistling beside her ears, and Xie Jiayi's face was buried in Lu Chenan's broad and warm arms. She slowly opened her eyes and tilted her head to look, and in front of her was an infinitely vast field.

And they gallop across this vast world.

She and Lord Lu.

This fate was obtained after going through life and death.

Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi unconsciously hugged Lu Chenan's waist and abdomen tightly.

Feeling the person in front of her body tighten, she immediately rode the horse faster.

It's snowing!

The snow fluttered down again.

Lu Chenan slowed down his horse and covered Xie Jiayi more tightly. But the person in his arms was restless and kept moving around to show her face. Lu Chenan was helpless: " Be good and don't move around. "

But Xie Jiayi still poked her head out from his cloak and his arms and looked at the rustling snow.

Lu Chenan thought she was greedy to see the falling snow, so he raised his hand to cover her head, fearing that the falling snow would make Xie Jiayi cold, but Xie Jiayi reached out and pulled his hand down. Lu Chenan heard Xie Jiayi pulling his arm, and her joyful voice:

" Master Lu, look! "

What are you looking at? The snow is falling all over the place. It's really beautiful!

But Xie Jiayi said:

" Lord Lu, we will grow old together! " After that, a silver bell-like laughter rang out in the snow.

Lu Chenan was stunned, and then his heart started pounding.

" Zhao Zhao, hold me tight! " As soon as he finished speaking, he felt Xie Jiayi holding him tight, and immediately rode forward again. The always cautious and steady Lord Lu even took on a carefree attitude, leading Xie Jiayi forward all the way.

With snow falling all over their heads, they are here, with white hair.

## Chapter 82

Lu Chenan and Xie Jiayi walked slowly through the snow. He carefully watched the princess wearing a snow-white cloak beside him , while pulling the reins with his other hand, leading a horse that was black all over except for its four snow-white hooves.

The two of them had already crossed the street market and were about to reach the Jingbei Palace . Lu Chenan couldn't help asking her, " Why did you come from the north of the city today without buying anything? " The north of the city had the most street food and dessert shops in Sucheng . In such a snowy and icy place, the hot and fragrant food made people who passed by unable to move their feet. They always had to buy something. Not to mention Xie Jiayi, every time she passed by, she would hold something in her hand and look at it.

Xie Jiayi smiled at him and said, " I want to save some food. "

Lu Chenan also smiled . It turned out that he was here to accompany her to the temple fair in the afternoon , which he had promised to do . This was the busiest temple fair in Sucheng at the end of the year. As soon as the two arrived in front of the palace , someone came to greet them.

Bu Bu and Cai Xing also followed with great interest . Tonight they were the only ones to go out with their master . The end of the year was the time to settle accounts. Ruyi and Cai Yue were already busy. Nanny Chen was leading people to prepare for the New Year. All the plain gauze lanterns originally hung in the palace had been replaced with a sea of big red lanterns , which were particularly conspicuous against the snow .

They had been in the north for a year, and it was the twelfth month of the first year of Jianzhao. Although it was noon , it was extremely cold outside , but the room was warm . The two had changed into casual clothes . One was looking through the military report sent by Ji De and Zhao Yi , and the other was looking through the account books sent by Qian Yingying from the capital.

Xie Jiayi first asked about Mr. Chen's food, clothing, and charcoal, and heard that everything was in place, so she looked at the account book with peace of mind. Mr. Chen came from Dayin in the south to the north. Lord Lu said that he had unpredictable talents, so even though Lord Chen was only a military strategist, everyone in the palace treated him with respect.

While flipping through the books, Xie Jiayi asked Ruyi who had just come over: " Have the New Year gifts for the mother and son arrived? "

Ruyi nodded: " There is a letter from the teahouse, the batch of New Year gifts sent to the capital has been delivered. Princess, don't worry, Miss Qian and her son live in our princess's mansion, who dares to bully them? "

Xie Jiayi snorted, " Those people in the capital are the best at flattering the powerful and bullying the weak. When it comes to this, they all stare with wide eyes. Even if the gifts they receive are a little thin, they can immediately figure out whether they have been marginalized or have no one to rely on. They will change their faces the next day. "

Ruyi smiled: " So we sent the things from the palace with great fanfare, for fear that the thief would get the wrong person with the wrong intention. " At this point, she talked about some trivial matters about the mother and son, and finally said: " Even the lady of the Qian family who later married Mr. Song also came to see Miss Qian several times. "

Nanny Chen laughed when she heard this: " It seems that Miss Su is really difficult to deal with. She has forced the wife of the main house to be busy building a relationship with her sister who she used to bully when she was a child. But the princess doesn't need to worry, Miss Qian is a very understanding person. "

Xie Jiayi nodded: " As long as no one gives her a cold shoulder, I have nothing else to worry about. " If Xie Jiayi were to be honest, she always felt that the little rabbit seemed to be more cunning than herself. It turned out that she just had no one to rely on, and she, the princess, was relying on her. She was smart, and no one could really take advantage of her little rabbit sister.

" With our princess's mansion and the prince's mansion standing behind us, I don't know who dares. " Nanny Chen followed up. Nanny's face was still stern, but she smiled more. Although her life was a little busier now, it was getting smoother. She looked at the two masters sitting opposite each other on the couch with satisfaction. Xie Jiayi reached out for the sugar biscuits, and Lu Chenan, who was flipping through the paper, did not look up. He raised his hand and pushed the plate in front of her, saying, " I won't save my stomach now. "

Xie Jiayi used a handkerchief to catch the fallen pastry and said, " Keep it. I'll ask nanny to steam the plum blossom cake tomorrow. " The new recipe was said to be extremely delicious. It was so rare that she was holding back.

Lu Chenan glanced at her with a smile and asked her: " Are the shortbreads delicious? "

At this time, everyone else in the room had gone downstairs, and Xie Jiayi took a small piece of crispy biscuit and handed it to him. However, he did not take it with his hands, but lowered his head and took it from Xie Jiayi's hand, and his warm and soft lips touched Xie Jiayi's fingertips covered with crispy candy.

sweet.

But Xie Jiayi suddenly said, " Come quickly, the rich man's master is about to do something bad! "

This sentence broke the atmosphere. Lu Chenan looked at her with amusement while searching for a handkerchief. Her little thought was just that she was afraid of not being able to go to the temple fair. Xie Jiayi handed her another handkerchief to him and pretended to be relieved and said, " The master of the rich family suddenly decided to let the little girl go. "

Lu Chenan burst out laughing: " Is this what you've read recently? " The style of this batch of novels is not good. A while ago, he was still a " big devil in the world " and " the lady's personal bodyguard " . How come he has suddenly been downgraded to the master of a rich man's family ...

Xie Jiayi hurried over to promote her experience of reading all kinds of storybooks over the years: " If it's well written, even the eldest master of a wealthy family can be appreciated. "

" What's that smell? " Lu Chenan asked, staring into the eyes of the person leaning against him.

Lu Chenan's eyes made Xie Jiayi feel something was wrong, and her throat felt a little dry: " It's ... the eldest master ..." The rest of the words disappeared in the blending of lips and teeth, and the eldest master lowered his head and kissed the little girl he had captured.

The vague voice did not forget to tell the little girl who wanted to struggle: Even if we go to the " you ,temple fair ca n't miss this nap at noon ... The master promises you ... you will get everything you want ..."

Lord Lu never failed to fulfill his promises. He said that everything she wanted was available, including the temple fair that Xie Jiayi wanted to visit. As for what else was available, that was not something we could know.

Dusk fell, but the streets and alleys were lit by torches. Even in places without torches and candles, as the moon came out, there was sparkling white snow everywhere, which made the world look bright and attractive.

The temple fair was indeed lively, with dragon and lion dances, jugglers , fire-breathing and fire-hoop jumping everywhere, and vendors on both sides selling all kinds of New Year goods, including farmers selling their own products and vendors bringing goods from all over the world to sell. After more than ten years, Sucheng has come back to life, especially the year when Lord Lu and the princess came, which brought all kinds of opportunities and infinite vitality to Sucheng.

Xie Jiayi looked up at the lonely moon in the sky. The winter night sky was cold and solemn, without even the stars. Only the moon was hanging there all by itself.

But she quickly made herself happy. The past was past and the future had not yet come. All she could grasp was the excitement in front of her and the person beside her.

There is a strong smell of mutton soup at the night market. Many people who pass by order a bowl of hot mutton soup without even having time to sit down, and then they walk around slowly after their bodies are steaming.

They are all the colors of human fireworks.

Xie Jiayi was so happy to see the magic tricks that she had never seen before that she couldn't help but stare at them. By the time Lu Chenan realized something was wrong, the two of them were already alone. Xie Jiayi was still watching the group of magicians and clapping and cheering.

Lu Chenan stood behind Xie Jiayi, holding her whole body in front of him.

The people they brought were all experienced guards, hiding in the crowd just to protect the princess. Such a group of people could be dispersed without making a sound, this must be planned and organized. Lu Chenan was tense, such a large-scale action might be related to Beidi.

He reached out and held Xie Jiayi's hand. She turned to look at him and said with a smile: " I've never seen anything like this. Do you think they came from the West? " These new things were not available in Dayin.

I don't know where Eunuch Xi, who led the fleet of ships, is now.

Lu Chenan nodded, but he squeezed Xie Jiayi with some force. Xie Jiayi knew something was wrong. She still smiled at Lu Chenan and saw his mouth shape: " Run! "

Almost immediately, the two of them ran into the darkness hand in hand.

The group of jugglers and the people watching the fun were stunned, their faces changed instantly, and they immediately dropped their things and started chasing after them. They didn't expect that the arrest that they had been planning since the princess came to the Northland was actually discovered. However, the people in black who tore off their juggler costumes while running sneered: They can't run away!

A sickly scholar, and a princess who was barely able to look delicate except for the whip. This was a trap that Beidi had planned for a year. All the hidden agents in Sucheng were mobilized, and even people from the surrounding cities gathered here, just to disperse the princess's guards. They had been observing in secret for a year, and tonight was the day to close the net. Everything went smoothly. Although the young prince saw through it before it was closed, their people had already laid a dragnet, and it should be quick to catch two such people.

However, things turned out to be beyond their expectations. They kept losing people. Looking at the bright moon, withered branches and white snow, the Beidi people in charge of the arrest grinned. No matter how much they ran, they could not escape this trap.

Sure enough, Lu Chenan and Xie Jiayi found that after they got rid of a group of people, new enemies would always appear.

Stopping behind a street corner wall, Xie Jiayi panted. She knew that someone else would appear soon. In the darkness, it was hard to tell how many people were hiding. Lu Chenan looked ahead with a serious expression. It was definitely the Beidi, and they were trying their best to capture them. What was waiting for them was a trap. What they had to do was to delay time and wait for the guards who realized something was wrong to bring in reinforcements. The two began to run in the dark again, but they both realized something very serious: the encirclement was shrinking.

Xie Jiayi's breathing was like an old bellows, whirring ...

The two of them were familiar with the North, but that was just a passing familiarity. But the other party had engraved every blade of grass, every tree, every wall, and every tile here in his mind, and they would not take a wrong step in the dark.

Lu Chenan pulled Xie Jiayi up and whispered, " Hold on for a while longer. "

Xie Jiayi nodded and continued to run forward with Lu Chenan. The darkness seemed endless. The moon came out for a while and was covered by clouds for a while. The streets flashed in the darkness and dimness.

Finally stopping again, Xie Jiayi found that they had reached a dead end and there was no way back.

She panted and looked up at Lu Chenan, who gently rubbed her red face and pulled her into his arms. Xie Jiayi had already thrown away her cloak. Once she stopped, her internal organs could breathe, but the coldness would penetrate her mercilessly. The night of December in the north could turn water directly into ice. Playful children would take out a bowl of water and watch it freeze in front of their eyes.



It was not until she was pulled into Lu Chenan's arms and his warmth enveloped Xie Jiayi again that she slowly regained her body.

" Lord Lu, it's Beidi, right? " Xie Jiayi's voice was very soft, and in this quiet and dangerous night, it rang in Lu Chenan's ears. He could hear her trembling voice as she tried to remain calm, and he could hear Xie Jiayi's fear.

The enemy could appear at any time, but they had already run out of ways to survive.

" Don't be afraid, I'm here. " Lu Chen'an's answer let Xie Jiayi know that it was the Beidi people. She immediately understood that this was a special arrest for her. I'm afraid it will take a long time and there will be no way out for her.

" I'm not afraid. " Xie Jiayi's voice was shaking uncontrollably, she was scared to death. I heard that the plum blossom cake made with that recipe is particularly delicious. If I had known, I would have asked someone to make it today. Sure enough, all the delicious food should not be saved until tomorrow. Because you don't know if you will have a tomorrow. Thinking of the Begonia cake that her brother promised to buy her tomorrow when she was five years old, Xie Jiayi's body curled up in Lu Chenan's arms trembled violently. The cold night has no end.

" They are coming soon. " Lu Chenan listened attentively and said suddenly. Xie Jiayi said in a trembling voice: " I didn't hear anything. " She listened carefully and heard only dead silence.

Lu Chenan rubbed her soft hair again: " I have good hearing. "

" Zhao Zhao, are you afraid? " In the current situation, Lu Chenan was not sure that he could get her out. It all depended on Beidi's preparations, and more importantly, on the time when their reinforcements would arrive.

" I'm scared. " When Xie Jiayi really said she was scared, her body stopped shaking, and her voice stopped trembling. She felt a rare calmness. Lu Chenan looked down at her. The moon was hidden behind the clouds again. It was pitch black. He couldn't see anything, but she was in his arms, and she calmed down little by little.

" Zhao Zhao? " Lu Chenan called her.

Xie Jiayi chuckled softly. In the darkness, at this moment of imminent danger, her chuckle was so touching. Xie Jiayi, as clear as a pool of water, was hard for Lu Chenan to understand at this moment. He could read her uncontrollable fear before, but he could not read her calmness and composure when she was sure she was in a desperate situation.

Then Lu Chenan heard her light and soft voice, " It's just a sacrifice for the country. " As she said that, she rubbed Lu Chenan's frozen hand with her cheek. Lord Lu's hand had been holding her like this to protect her from the ubiquitous cold, and she must have been frozen. She carefully stretched out her hand which had been properly tucked into the other's arms, and touched Lord Lu's hand. Xie Jiayi looked up at Lu Chen'an and said, " Lord Lu, I'm not afraid. It's nothing. My mother died like this. " When the Northern Di wanted to capture the princess, the war was about to come. They could not let the Northern Di capture them, and they could only die for their country.

At this moment, the moon broke through the dark clouds and silver light sprinkled down.

Lu Chenan saw Xie Jiayi's face looking up in the snow light, and saw her calmness after accepting the desperate situation.

So heart-shaking.

Lu Chenan thought that he would never be able to forget this face at this moment. He would never forget it in his lifetime. At this moment, Xie Jiayi was so beautiful that it even made people lose the ability to speak.

This is his little princess who is delicate and afraid of pain.

He heard her quiet voice continue to whisper: " Lord Lu, I will break out to the north in a while, and you run to the south. They want to catch me the most, they want to make sure everything is safe, so you still have a chance. " At this point she laughed: " I didn't expect Lord Lu to run so fast. " The sickly scholar who was supposed to be a weak scholar turned out to run faster than her, a princess who was used to climbing walls. If it weren't for Lord Lu holding her back, she would have been surrounded long ago. How many secrets does her Lord Lu hide?

" You—— " Lu Chenan's throat was dry and he could only squeeze out " you " .

Xie Jiayi stretched out her hand, blew on her lips, and then pulled out a small bead from her neck, which emitted a blue glow in the night. Lu Chenan's eyelids jumped, and he saw that Xie Jiayi had already opened the bead and poured the contents on her collar. She said: " When the time comes, I will lower my head, and it won't be bitter at all, and it will be fine. " As long as he lowered his head and gently bit the collar, he would die.

I hope that Lord Lu can escape by then. They have gone to so much trouble just to capture a living princess. This is Lord Lu's only chance to escape.

At this time, Lu Chenan, who had been calm all the time, was trembling. It turned out that the bead she had been wearing every day since entering the Northland was filled with poison.

" Lu Chen'an, don't go to southern Sichuan in the autumn of the third year of Jianzhao. " If you survive, then live well. In the autumn of the third year of Jianzhao, Lu Chen'an, the Minister of Dali Temple of Dayin, died in a sudden landslide on his way back from a business trip in southern Sichuan.

It turned out to be the autumn of the third year of Jianzhao.

But at this moment, Lu Chenan didn't care about anything else. Who knew if they could survive this night? He grabbed Xie Jiayi's jaw, not letting her move, staring at her intently, and said word by word:

" I'll take you out! "

" Remember, I won't die, and you won't die. "

As soon as he finished speaking, the enemy appeared and slowly surrounded them.

Lu Chenan still stared at Xie Jiayi: " Did you remember it? "

Until Xie Jiayi nodded.

Lu Chenan let go of her hand and pushed her into the alley, standing at the entrance of the alley. This was the place he chose, which would ensure that if he didn't die, no one would be able to pass him and touch Xie Jiayi.

Looking at the person coming over, Lu Chenan's entire body language changed, like a sword drawn from its sheath.

The sword in his hand, which many princes and sons of noble families had, suddenly came to life and turned into a sword that could kill people .

## Chapter 83

The bright red blood quickly dyed the falling snow on the ground red , some of it was from the Beidi people, and some from Lu Chenan. Lu Chenan's sudden appearance disrupted the Beidi people's plan. They thought that when the encirclement was completed , they would be able to take away Princess Dayin. But they didn't expect that after an incense stick of time had passed , no one could break through the man guarding the entrance.

The target they had been trying so hard to reach was right behind the man.

The leader of the black-cloaked men suddenly threw away his black cape , shook his bloody fist, and snatched a scimitar from another person beside him. The tall and strong man stared at the man who was standing upright at the narrow alley. The moonlight shone on him. He had a typical face of a Dayin scholar , a little too handsome. At this moment, blood was flowing down his cheek . He raised his hand to wipe it off , and his eyes also passed through the black-clothed men to meet the covetous eyes of the leader.

Lu Chenan stared at the leader who was ready to strike at any time , tilted his head and spat out a mouthful of blood as if nothing had happened , smiled at the person opposite with blood-stained eyes , and clenched the sword in his hand.

The moment he clenched his fist, the man in black who was still standing shuddered uncontrollably , even though he didn't move. This overly good-looking man and this ordinary-looking sword were both killers . If you get close, you'll lose your life.

Many of their companions had already fallen at the hands of this man and under this sword , never to get up again.

But everyone understood the situation at the moment: if they wanted to take the princess of Dayin away , they had to kill this man.

In the darkness, Xie Jiayi leaned against the wall tightly , and could see Lu Chenan clearly in the moonlight.

Suddenly someone moved , and another round of fighting began . It was impossible to tell whose blood it was, as it dyed the moonlight red.

Xie Jiayi saw Lord Lu clearly. She saw him so clearly. It was also at this moment that she finally saw her brother's face clearly. Since she was five years old, she remembered her father, her mother, their faces, and their small expressions. But her brother, she remembered what he said, the promises he made, and the sound of his voice when he left, but she could not remember his face.

On this murder night when the moon was dimly visible, she suddenly got rid of her last fear and saw clearly the face buried deep in her memory.

The thirteen-year-old brother glanced at her when he left, and smiled at her, but he himself didn't know how ugly that smile was. It turned out that the eldest brother was also afraid at that moment. At this time, the nineteen-year-old Xie Jiayi saw clearly the uncontrollable fear of the

thirteen-year-old brother. The handsome young man tried to leave a last smile to his younger sister who was looking at him with terrified eyes behind him. That smile was so complicated , was it comfort, reluctance, or worry? All were twisted into a not-so-good-looking forced smile by the uncontrollable fear. But the moment he turned around, all the fear retreated, all the trembling subsided, his back was extremely calm, and he walked towards his destiny like that. He must know that the five-year-old sister behind him was still staring at him with tears in her eyes, silently shouting at him not to leave.

Brother, don't go.

The greatest temptation is to die together in this dark tunnel.

But Zhao Zhao couldn't. They still had their own unfinished missions.

The eldest brother never looked back.

Xie Jiayi and his sister remembered their parents' teachings: Once you make a choice, don't look back even if you are afraid or regretful. Go forward, walk towards your choice, and then bear your fate.

Xie Jiayi's eyes slowly filled with tears, and Lord Lu's gradually sluggish figure blurred in her eyes. She knew that Lord Lu was injured by the scimitar of the Beidi man.

But the tears did not fall, and slowly dissipated.

Xie Jiayi thought, this is also good. She waited for the moment when Lord Lu fell to the ground, and they could go to hell together in this life.

It's nice to have someone to accompany me this time.

Suddenly, the Beidi black-clothed men were in chaos, and someone suddenly appeared to stop them. Xie Jiayi didn't know what was going on, so she clutched her clothes tightly and waited.

Lu Chenan spat out another mouthful of blood, supported his body with the sword, and raised his blood-blurred eyes. His eyes collided with the black-clothed man who suddenly appeared to stop the Beidi people, and Lu Chenan's face suddenly turned pale!

Obviously, the two were in the same group, but they had a disagreement at this time. The Beidi people were unwilling to miss such a good opportunity, but the man in black was determined to stop them and started fighting with the injured leader. The leader shouted in Beidi language, and the other stunned black-clothed people immediately started a new round of attack. Because of the help of the black-clothed man who suddenly intervened, Lu Chenan's pressure was much lighter, and he could still hold on.

The sound of horse hooves could be heard from afar , and soon the sounds and shouts were heard by everyone in this corner.

Reinforcements from the palace are here!

Xie Jiayi suddenly let go of her hand, and they were saved!

The men in black had no choice but to retreat, and their leader fiercely thrust his scimitar into the crevice of the rock, thus failing in his attempt!

Ruyi came with reinforcements. The moment he saw Ruyi, Lu Chenan, who was leaning on the sword, turned around to look at Xie Jiayi, then fell to the ground with a bang. Xie Jiayi, who was running over, caught him and fell to the ground with him.

This sudden arrest made the situation in the North suddenly tense. Everyone knew that this was a sign of a coming war, and the entire North entered a state of preparation for war.

Fortunately, the money, food, horses and weapons of the princess were prepared early, and this year, with the efforts of Xie Jiayi and Lu Chenan, the Xie family army was reassembled. With the strong financial support of the princess's mansion, Lu Chenan, together with Mr. Chen, Ji De Zhaoyi and Jiang Gan, built a cavalry of the Xie family army to compete with the Northern Di Simon.

Mr. Lu Chen'an also readjusted the way infantry deal with cavalry based on General Xie's work, and brought various new methods of restraining the Northern Di cavalry to the Xie family army. After a year of training, the Xie family army was ready.

The preparation for revenge is also their preparation to practice what they have always done – to protect the North.

It was already the 29th day of the lunar year, and Lu Chenan's injuries had almost healed. Xie Jiayi laughed and said that Lord Lu had really turned into a weak scholar recently.

Lu Chenan sat on the bed, looked at his princess, and said softly: " You haven't asked me where I learned this set of kung fu. "

Xie Jiayi blew on the medicine in her hand and frowned. This medicine really stinks. She handed the medicine bowl to Lu Chenan and said confidently: " Sir Lu is of course omnipotent. " Her trusting look made Lu Chenan feel that he could do anything.

Xie Jiayi watched with admiration as Lord Lu drank the medicine slowly without changing his expression, and could not help but ask: " Why are you still savoring it? " He should not have swallowed it in one gulp and then quickly took some preserved fruits to prolong his life ...

Unfortunately, Lord Lu never needed the preserved fruits she prepared, and she later ate them all while guarding Lord Lu.

" It's good to suffer a little. " With someone by your side, the suffering becomes something you cherish.

Xie Jiayi didn't understand. She brought water for Lu Chenan to rinse his mouth. Perhaps Lord Lu was really well. He was no longer drowsy after taking the medicine. Xie Jiayi didn't need to eat preserved fruit to wait for Lord Lu to wake up. But Lord Lu, who had recovered from his injury this time, would always look at her steadily. It seemed that now, he was looking at her with eyes that she didn't understand.

" Master Lu, what are you thinking about? "

Xie Jiayi lay on the side of his bed and looked up and asked.

Lu Chenan gently stroked her cheek with his pale and slender fingers, still looking at her so seriously, as if he wanted to see every detail of her into his heart. After a long time, he whispered: " I was thinking-- " After a pause, he withdrew his hand, lowered his eyes quietly, and his long eyelashes covered his eyes. " Zhao Zhao, if I did something wrong ... to you, did something wrong ... to you ..." Lu Chenan did not ask the question " Will you forgive me ? " Once some mistakes are made, you should not ask others to forgive them easily.

Xie Jiayi held his hand, her voice soft and crisp, " Lord Lu, you must have done something wrong because you had no choice. Let's not talk about forgiveness, I accept it. "

" Do you accept? " Lu Chenan looked at her, his lips trembling slightly.

Xie Jiayi placed his hand on her face and rubbed it: " I accept all the fates you bring to me. " If you have committed a sin, as husband and wife, I will share this sin with you. If this sin is serious, I will be uneasy and pay it back with you every day.

Lord Lu protected her, the useless queen, for so long in his previous life that she still remembered that after Lord Lu died, she had been to his courtyard in the capital.

It was really a small courtyard, with only an old man guarding the door. Even the tables and chairs were all alone, because Lord Lu had no visitors. Lord Lu was the smartest person in Dayin, doing the best job, and should have been the center of attention with a bright future. However, no one would invite Lord Lu to any banquet. Just because he stood beside his demon queen, he stood against all the scholars.

While others were enjoying music, singing and dancing, Lord Lu would be alone in this small courtyard reading a book or standing by the window.

This time, she chose Lord Lu. She accepted everything about Lord Lu.

This is the choice, to take what is good about you, and at the same time accept all your bad and unknown things, no matter whether it brings laughter or tears, pain or loneliness.

Xie Jiayi felt that she was not good at loving people. She even doubted whether she really loved Xu Shixing in her previous life. When he deviated from the rules she set, she immediately stopped loving him.

But following Lord Lu, she learned to love like Lord Lu.

Lord Lu accepted her whole self, whether she was pale or dark, gentle or domineering, brave or weak, he would hold her in his arms, every part of her, embrace her pride, and also embrace her embarrassment.

Lu Chenan clenched his other hand that was hanging by his side. He wanted to laugh, but also wanted to cry. In the end, he just hugged Xie Jiayi tightly again. This was his princess.

They hugged each other in the lingering bitter smell of medicine.

By the time Lu Chenan recovered from his illness, it was already the spring of the second year. Spring came a little late in the north, but it finally came, with green shoots sprouting everywhere on the walls and the ground.

But the entire Northland, especially Sucheng at this moment, was in a tense state of preparing for war. Everything was ready, and everyone was waiting for the moment of the decisive battle. In the past few days, Lu Chenan has been with Ji De and others every day, discussing and deducing various tactics again and again.

Ji De looked at Lu Chenan's leaving back, smiled and said to Zhao Yi and Jiang Gan: It turns " out that our princess doesn't just look at the appearance when she is looking for a consort. " " Look at the appearance " was their common thought when they first met Lu Chenan the year before last. Everyone said " Oh " in their hearts at the same time. As long as they saw Lu Chenan's demeanor, they would understand why he could be a consort.

Zhao Yi was a talented pioneer who didn't like to talk. He nodded and said, " Some people ..." He didn't say anything else. Some people are really the chosen ones of the country. They are good at studying, military strategy, and physical skills. When it comes to fighting, they think it is just talk on paper. However, as they talk, their minds have already internalized the battlefields they have experienced over and over again.

Only such a person is worthy of being the princess of the Xie family!

And there was also the sudden appearance of Mr. Chen, whose depth was unfathomable. In just a few days, they were all impressed by him.

Jiang Gan laughed and said in a loud voice: " Follow the Duke of the Marquis and kill Bei Di's father! " Compared to the King of Jingbei, everyone could see that Lord Lu preferred to be called the Duke of the Marquis.

Everyone guessed that the Prince Consort must have gone back to see the Princess.

At this time, Lu Chenan was in the backyard of a teahouse in the downtown area of Sucheng. He had been waiting for them for a long time and he had something to ask them.

At this moment the door opened, and an old voice called out excitedly:

" Your Highness. "

## Chapter 84

" Your Highness! " The old man was about to kneel down to Lu Chen'an in excitement , but Lu Chen'an held him up with his hand. Following the old man was his eldest grandson, who also helped Lu Chen'an hold the man up.

" Your Highness, our chance has come! " The old man's turbid eyes emitted a blazing light . This time, the timing, the location and the people were all right. It was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity.

Lu Chen'an's eyelashes trembled as he heard the old man continue: " We will cooperate with Beidi and go all the way south . Then the false emperor will have no choice but to move the capital across the river. We can then take back the capital, divide the river with the false emperor, and restore the orthodoxy of Dayin, Your Highness! "

" Cooperate with Beidi? " Lu Chenan asked this question almost between his teeth.

The old man's stooped body trembled , but he said firmly: " Those who achieve great things do not care about trivial matters! Only by stabilizing the country first can we resist foreign aggression in the future! Your Highness , our opportunities are getting fewer and fewer! " The new emperor has secured the throne , and Dayin is becoming more and more stable . The old man's eyes were fierce . The stability of Dayin was important , but restoring orthodoxy and implementing Taizu's will was more important. Only when chaos broke out would they have a chance.

The old man is an important member of the " Min " organization and a staunch supporter of Prince Min Huai.

" What does Beidi want? " Lu Chenan looked at the old man . What did Beidi want with such a deadly conspiracy ?

The old man paused and said slowly: " Yanyunnan County. "

Lu Chenan almost immediately said: " Ridiculous! " The two counties of Yunnan and Yunnan are the only barriers of Dayin . The northern county had been ceded to the northern barbarians by the foolish emperor in the previous dynasty . Now the only place that Dayin can defend is the southern county. Apart from that , Dayin is a vast plain.

" Without Yanyun , I, Dayin, can only rely on the flesh and blood of countless soldiers to fight against Beidi Simon ! My lord, how can you say such a foolish thing! "

The old man was silent for a while, " Your Highness, choose the lesser of two evils. I am doing this for the people of the world. " Taizu had already made it clear that the bloodline of Emperor Yuanhe could not inherit the throne, but at that time, the surrounding areas were not peaceful and Dayin was just beginning to be established, so the country could not have a young ruler to succeed. There was also a prophecy that if Dayin did not return to the orthodox tradition, he would be beheaded in five generations.

" If the emperor is ill, the country will perish. " The old man's eyes were still firm and fierce. " The Yuanhe Emperor has an illness in his bloodline. He is destined to produce a tyrant. When that happens, people will suffer and the fall of Dayin will not be far away . "

" So they colluded with Beidi? " When the word " colluded " came out, the muscles on the old man's face trembled, and Lu Chenan's voice was as cold as ice: " So, thirteen years ago, it was you? " Thirteen years ago, the world-famous god of war General Xie died and Sucheng was massacred. A very important reason was that the Simontata tribe defected to Dayin, but such a large-scale leak and such a careful raid must have an insider. Lu Chenan had many speculations, until the last time he fought with the Beidi people and saw the people of the Min organization appear, he realized that Min was actually among the insiders.

The old man remained silent and clenched his teeth.

Lu Chenan's hands couldn't help shaking, " So, when I was ten years old, you asked for the prince's seal, not to establish a base in the south, but-- "

" Come to the north. " The old man's voice became even older.

Lu Chenan suddenly closed his eyes. When he opened them, his eyes were red. " That's the God of War of our Dayin. That's the people of the city! Teacher, you taught me that the king is the least important and the people are the most important. You taught me that! "

The old man lowered his head, " Yes, I taught you. " There is no student smarter than your highness, and there will be no monarch more qualified than your highness. The blood of Prince Min Huai is the hope of Dayin, and this is the blessing from heaven to Dayin. From Prince Min Huai to the little prince, everyone has extraordinary intelligence and talent. This is a true genius. He wants to uphold the wishes of the great ancestor and push the little prince to the throne of the emperor. In addition, everything else is not important.

" Killing one city's people can save the world's people. I don't think it's wrong. " He raised his eyes and looked at Lu Chenan carefully. " Your Highness is so angry, probably because of Princess Kunyi. "

Lu Chenan said word by word: " Teacher, there is more than one Kunyi Princess in Sucheng, there are thousands of Kunyi Princesses in Sucheng. " They are children who have not had time to grow up, parents who come back from farming and working as usual, and brothers who have promised their younger sister ... They all think that with the God of War, everything is fine. They plan tomorrow carefully and live diligently today. But they don't know that the God of War can't resist backstabs, with various intentions – backstabs from all parties conspiring.



" Xie Zimo's ancestors followed Taizu to conquer the world. If he was really a loyal minister and a good general, he should not have recognized a thief like Emperor Yongtai who stole the country! " the old man said angrily.

Lu Chenan thought of what Xie Jiayi said, she said " My father said that he was not guarding the north for one person, he was guarding the north for the people of the Central Plains. " Now, the God of War is dead, and the Northern Di are coming again.

" This is treason. " Lu Chenan has suppressed all emotions.

" This is saving the country! Restoring the orthodoxy is saving the country! Dying in one city is for more people! The Yuanhe Emperor has a blood disease, and being the emperor is a great disease! " It's like a dynasty in the hands of an unstable madman. It can be saved in an emergency, but not for a long time. This is what Emperor Taizu said. Many people have forgotten, but he will not forget. The old man looked at his highness eagerly and almost madly.

" Teacher, the world has been settled, Dayin is at peace, this is destiny. I will never trade Dayin's people and land for that half of the country. " Beidi is ambitious, and they have met a powerful leader. Splitting Dayin is just the beginning of their ambition. It is almost conceivable that after occupying half of the country, the entire Dayin will fall into endless wars, both internal and external, until one person from Beidi and Dayin, north and south, wins completely. This is a battle that will involve many ethnic groups, but Dayin is the only battlefield and the only spoils of this battle.

Orthodoxy, prophecy, destiny? Thinking of this, he suddenly smiled softly, " Teacher, someone told me that as a member of the royal family, supported by the people, I should put the people of the world first, so as to live up to my dignity and bloodline inheritance. " Regardless of the last words left to him by his father or mother, they never let him embark on such an endless bloody road that required stepping on countless corpses.

After saying that, Lu Chenan turned and left the house. The old man behind him staggered forward, stretched out his dry old hand and called out repeatedly: " Your Highness! Your Highness! " But his Highness had already left.

" Your Highness, you must understand! You will understand! " The old man coughed desperately, his face trembling. He never sold out his country, he saved it, and all his passion was poured into this road of saving the country. He worked hard for the will of the great ancestor . The old man supported his grandson. His son had died on the road of returning to orthodoxy, and in the future his grandson would take over from him and keep going.

This is his mission and his way.

Lu Chenan walked out of the teahouse. It was a clear sky outside. The bright sunlight made Lu Chenan, who had just come out of the dark, squint his eyes. The big mistake had already been made. It was useless to say anything.

Next autumn? There is still time, Princess. Let me fight for you and Dayin to bring peace to the world.

From that day on, Lu Chenan became even busier, but no matter how busy he was, he had to go home every day. Even if it was late at night when he finished everything, he would ride back from the camp, drag his exhausted body to wash and change clothes, and then hug his princess to sleep. He got up before dawn the next day and rushed to the military camp.

When Lu Chenan came back that day, it was already past midnight and late at night. Xie Jiayi was still awake and waiting for him.

But I found that Lord Lu had entered the bathroom and had not come out.

Xie Jiayi got off the couch, walked in quietly, turned around the screen at the door, and saw Lord Lu leaning against the bathtub, already asleep. Xie Jiayi looked at him quietly for a while. He was indeed the top scholar in his previous life, and he was good-looking no matter how he looked.

She was afraid that the water would get cold. Lord Lu was already tired and couldn't stand the cold. So she walked over gently and touched the water. It was barely warm. Looking at Lord Lu's tired eyes, she really wanted him to sleep well like this. But the water on her fingertips gradually became cold, so she could only push Lu Chenan gently.

As soon as she moved, Lu Chenan suddenly opened his eyes and grabbed her wrist.

"Zhao Zhao?" Lord Lu's eyes were bright, but his expression was a bit confused. Xie Jiayi handed over the large bath towel with a smile, but saw Lu Chenan, who suddenly woke up, looking at her very seriously:

"Zhao Zhao." He called her name.

Xie Jiayi responded.

Lu Chenan called again: "Zhao Zhao."

Xie Jiayi's heart softened at this.

Lu Chenan stretched out his wet hands to hold Xie Jiayi's waist, pressed his face against her soft abdomen, and whispered, "Zhao Zhao."

Xie Jiayi smiled, "But now, you have to get up first."

Lu Chenan also smiled. "No, I want to first..." As Xie Jiayi exclaimed, he pulled the girl down. Now, he wanted to kiss his princess, his wife in this life, the person he wanted to protect but hurt.

When both of them changed into their pajamas and came out, they could hear the distant sound of the night watchman's drum outside. In the solemn and tidy city, the night watchman's drum sound also had a solemn and murderous atmosphere, distant and vast.

Xie Jiayi gently pushed open the window and looked at the dark night outside. There were two palace lanterns lit alone in the corridor, and behind them was the endless night of the north.

She felt a little cold, but the tall and warm body covering her from behind immediately dispelled the slight chill, bringing an indescribable sense of security and warmth. Lu Chenan also followed her example and leaned forward to look out the half-open window, then he touched her exposed neck which was slightly chilled with his chin: "What are you looking at?"

His voice was low and gentle, and at that moment, Xie Jiayi felt so happy and secure.

The end of the world is far away, and it is sometimes very cold outside, but this person is with her, and together they are heading towards the end of the world destined for everyone.

She turned around, grasped the arm of the man in front of her, and looked at Lord Lu who had accompanied her to the end of the world. Lu Chenan's Adam's apple rolled, wondering how his little princess could look at people so attentively, as if there were a bunch of small hooks hidden in her eyes, and wherever her eyes passed, that place would be restless. Lu Chenan also

looked at her, but still asked her: " What are you looking at? " There was a slight hoarseness in his voice.

Xie Jiayi's eyes fell on his Adam's apple, and she said slowly, " Look at you. " Then she raised her hand to press against his chest, and asked with her head tilted, " Master Lu, what are you thinking about? "

Lu Chenan looked at her as if he was looking at a little fox that had fallen into a trap. He chuckled and said slowly, " Think of a poem. " As he spoke, he slowly recited, " The sleeping maid presses down the fallen flowers, the mushroom pattern grows on the jade wrist, and the fragrant sweat soaks the red gauze. "

As he finished speaking, Lu Chenan pressed the person down on the couch. On the emerald green brocade quilt was pressed a white jade wrist, and the thick black hair fell on the green pillow. The man on the couch raised his hand and waved down the half-open window. The room was full of beauty and the nose was full of fragrance. His princess had a light sweat in this slightly cool spring night, soaking the red gauze of her pajamas. She called " Lord Lu " in a soft voice , again and again.

Before the spring grass in the north turned green, the great battle between Beidi Simon and Dayin had already begun.

The author has something to say:

The sleeping maiden presses down the fallen flowers, the mushroom pattern grows on the jade wrist, and the fragrant sweat soaks the red gauze. —Xiao Gang of the Northern and Southern Dynasties

## Chapter 85

The autumn moon was high in the sky , and the early autumn night in the north was already very cold. The camp of the Xie family army in Dayin was very quiet at this time. Except for the soldiers scouting in front and the night guards standing upright in various places in the camp, it seemed that everyone else had fallen asleep.

The night was very quiet , so quiet that one could hear the faint groans coming from the wounded soldier's tent. The military doctor who got up to inspect the situation changed the medicine for the groaning young soldier , listened to his gradually calming breathing , and said to the medicine boy holding the lantern: " The soldiers this time are considered lucky. "

Sufficient supplies were continuously delivered from the rear, not only weapons and food , but also medicines. If it were in the past, would they still need to change the medicine? As long as the soldier was not dead, there would be no use for the medicine.

The candle in the central military tent was still lit, and two rows of personal soldiers were on duty outside the tent, all with bright eyes.

In the tent , Lu Chenan put down the war chess and took a final look at the sand table with Mr. Chen . After confirming that there was no problem with the current plan , he stretched his neck, which had been bent for too long. Before leaving , Mr. Chen suddenly said , " If the prince wants to go , let's go. "

No one else in the tent understood Mr. Chen's sudden words . They just watched him walk out of the central army tent slowly with the help of his crutches, and sighed in a low voice: " If the storm passes tomorrow , spring will come when we are far away . "

The old voice is filled with sighs stained by the years.

They didn't understand, and just felt inexplicably sad. They didn't dare to ask more , and looked at their Lord. It didn't matter if they didn't understand , anyway, no matter what riddles Mr. Chen was talking about , their Lord would understand.

But this time , their Lord Marquis did not explain it to them as usual.

Lu Chenan took another look at the sand table , then looked up and asked Zhao Yi beside him, " Who will go to pick up the supplies this time? "

Zhao Yi replied: " General Ji. " General Ji and the Duke of the County Horse can take a break these days. They have been fighting for too long. After a series of battles with both sides winning and losing, Beidi and Dayin are now in a stalemate. Both sides are extremely tired and are on edge, waiting for the decisive battle in the near future. In order to let the Duke of the County Horse have a good rest, General Ji chose to go to receive supplies. It was his turn to watch the battlefield with Jiang Gan these days.

Zhao Yi and Jiang Gan have been ready to take action.

Lu Chenan rubbed his thumb, index and middle fingers, and said to Ji De, who was whispering to Jiang Gan, " General Ji, I'll go this time. "

Ji De was stunned. They all knew that the next battle would be against the best warrior of Beidi. They were led by the Jun Ma Ye, and the one facing the best warrior would be the Jun Ma Ye. There was no other way, none of them were as skilled as the Jun Ma Ye. When the time came, Beidi would definitely challenge him, in order to inspire the fighting spirit of the whole army with the courage of the " best warrior of Beidi " .

A while ago, the plan of Beidi to threaten Xie's army with Princess Dayin and sacrifice her was thwarted. The remaining pressure to boost Beidi's momentum and defeat Dayin's army fell on the first warrior of Beidi.

Beidi's number one warrior has never had an opponent , and Beidi will not miss such an opportunity to boost the morale of the army. And the Xie family army will definitely not refuse Beidi's challenge, and they have already agreed that the one who will go out on their side is the county horse master. The county horse master is under a lot of pressure, so the next few days should also be the days for the county horse master to rest well.

Before Ji De could say anything, Jiang Gan shouted, " Don't worry, General Ji is not going to make any trouble. Just let him make this trip, and he will come back with a big sword on the battlefield. "

Lu Chenan looked at the two of them and paused. Ji De immediately realized that Lord Lu wanted to use this opportunity to go home. So, this is what Mr. Chen meant. The place where the supplies were received was half a day's ride from Sucheng. I'm afraid Lord Lu was planning to squeeze out time to go home to see the princess without sleeping.

He immediately said, " In that case, thank you for your kindness, Lord County Horse. " Jiang Gan scratched his head and said to him, " You are much rougher than our Lord, why let the

Lord go for you-- " Before he could finish, Ji De had already pushed him out, saying, " It's so late, we should let Lord County Horse rest! "

Lu Chenan watched the three of them leave until Ji De whispered something to Jiang Gan outside the tent. He could also hear Jiang Gan's " oh oh " as if he had realized something, and his hehe laughter as he came to his senses. Lu Chenan's face flushed slightly, but he hadn't seen the princess for almost half a year.

In the next battle, Lu Chenan would fight for his life. If he didn't die, Beidi's No. 1 Warrior would never win.

The master who taught him martial arts was a famous martial arts master who had never lost. He once asked his master how a person could always win. The master told him without hesitation that he had to fight with all his might every time, and he would always win. Because the time you lose, you are already dead.

He cannot lose this battle against the Beidi's number one warrior.

Unless he dies.

Master also said that when you are not afraid of life and death, you can always observe the enemy calmly . In the fight between life and death, no one can always hide their weaknesses. Insight into the opponent's weakness, and then don't think about anything else except hitting that weakness. At that time, even if the opponent takes your life, you have already hit his weakness and taken his life.

Even if you die, you still don't lose.

Lu Chenan looked at the candlelight in the tent, thinking of the frosty Sucheng, and Xie Jiayi's tearful smile before he went to war. She stood on tiptoe and whispered in his ear: " Lord Lu, you can do anything. " Then she lowered her voice and told him, " Lord Lu, if you really can't win, just run away. "

Thinking of this, the man smiled under the slowly dimming candlelight.

Four days later, he rode on his horse and galloped towards Sucheng. The food and grass had been delivered, and he still had half a night to spare. Even if he rode at this speed, he could spend half a night with her.

The horse was galloping, and the cold wind from the north was cutting on his face like a knife, but Lu Chenan felt warm in his heart while riding the horse.

It was getting closer and closer until we saw the city gate of Sucheng. The moon was already at its zenith in the sky.

He would set out again when the moon disappeared, heading for the battlefield in the north.

The sight of the city gate made Lu Chen'an's heart pound. He took one last look at the moon and rode his horse into the city.

The night guards at the palace were all shocked to see the sudden appearance of the Duke of the Marquis, but they were well-trained and welcomed the Duke of the Marquis in without saying a word and closed the heavy door of the palace again.

It was Ruyi who was on duty in the backyard tonight. Even he, who was usually steady , was very surprised. He hurriedly helped Lu Chenan take off his armor and said, " Caiyue is on duty inside. I'll go in-- " Lu Chenan interrupted him hastily, " No need for now. Get me a bucket of water to wash first. " He was very dirty after traveling for several days.

Ruyi wanted to go to the bathroom to prepare hot water, but was stopped by Lu Chenan, " Just cold water, hurry up. "

His time was too short and he hadn't seen her yet.

When Caiyue came out, Lu Chenan went in with a damp and cool feeling. When they passed each other, Caiyue, who came out with her head down, couldn't help but shudder. It was not only the coolness around Lord Lu, but also the murderous aura Lord Lu had brought with him when he returned this time. This was the chilling murderous aura that came from being on the battlefield and killing countless people .

Lu Chenan stopped at the screen in front of the inner bedroom, letting himself recover in the warm room. With the candlelight on the other side of the screen and through the shadowy gauze curtain, he finally saw Xie Jiayi.

She is still asleep.

Just seeing it, his heart began to beat violently. His nerves, which had been tense all the time, suddenly relaxed. It seemed that until this moment, the murderous intent and bloodiness that lingered around him suddenly faded away .

The killing and blood on the battlefield will corrupt a person, making him gradually numb to blood and life. Gradually, he will become a different person. But standing here, Lu Chenan felt that his original self was back. He felt the warmth again, the preciousness of life again, and the worthiness of living again.

When he finally warmed himself up, he strode past the screen, entered the tent, and came to the bed.

The person sleeping on the bed suddenly opened his eyes as if sensing something.

But after a moment's pause, Xie Jiayi almost jumped up, " Master Lu! " Lu Chenan hurriedly held her down with the quilt, and then held her in his arms, full of fragrance and softness. At this moment, the smell of blood that had always lingered on the tip of his nose and all the tiredness disappeared.

Lu Chenan's heart, which had been torn by the blood on the battlefield, was slowly healed by Xie Jiayi, and he regained his elegance.

Xie Jiayi reached out her hand and reached directly into Lu Chen'an's loose robe, groping over with a slight tremor. Lu Chen'an took a breath and whispered, " Zhao Zhao, I'm not hurt. " Then he pulled her hand that was stroking his chest and kissed her slender fingertips, " Don't worry, Zhao Zhao, I'm not hurt. "

Xie Jiayi's other hand had already touched his back, where there was a long scar. Xie Jiayi cried, " You still lied to me. "

Lu Chenan had to change his words: " I didn't suffer any serious injuries. " How could a person who went to the battlefield be unscathed? But he really didn't have any serious injuries that would cause him to die. His eyes darkened, because the battle that would require him to fight desperately had not yet come.

But the person in my arms is so good that it makes me so weak for a moment that I don't want to fight for my life.

Want to survive at all costs.

Lu Chenan couldn't help but smile bitterly.

Then he thought, isn't it this autumn, so he should win this battle. In this battle, he will not retreat until he dies, this is what he owes to this land, and also what he owes to Zhao Zhao.

I did not kill Bo Ren, yet Bo Ren died because of me.

The girl's fingertips traced the hideous scar on her back. Under the dim light, just thinking of that scene made the man hugging the girl's scalp numb. Lu Chenan suddenly grabbed her hand.

This time he clasped both of Xie Jiayi's hands on top of her head, but his back still felt numb, as if her hands were still there.

Really——

" Zhao Zhao, don't touch me randomly. " Lu Chenan let out a long breath and said slowly.

The time was too short and he still had a lot to say to her.

But the girl under him looked at him with watery eyes, " Lord Lu, I just miss you. "

Lu Chenan's hand holding her suddenly lost its strength at this moment, and he lowered his head and stared into her eyes.

Forget it, the time is too short, let's talk about it when I get back.

The night is silent, the cold wind is breaking.

The room was filled with warm fragrance, the curtains moved, and the candle wax was drooping.

The night is almost over and the moon is about to disappear.

Lu Chenan put on his armor again and mounted his horse. Without looking at the princess behind him, he rode quickly towards the place where the night disappeared.

Zhao Zhao, wait for him.

He will win.

The author has something to say:

If the storm passes tomorrow, people will be far away, and spring will be there. ——Yu Ji of Yuan Dynasty

## Chapter 86

Leading by example , making decisions thousands of miles away. This year-long war made Beidi know Lu Chenan, and also made the people of Beidi know their Jun Ma Ye and Jingbei King again , who led them to charge again and again and won one victory after another.

There is also something that only a few people in the upper echelons of the Xie family army know – Mr. Chen , who is unparalleled in wisdom and strategy, unpredictable , and can make decisions thousands of miles away.

It was already the spring of the third year of Jianzhao's reign, and the war had been going on for a year.

who was wearing leather armor, jumped down from his horse and laughed: " They say that the Northern Di are brave, but they were chased by us and ran to their lair. " He took the water bag handed over by the person next to him and drank it happily. Zhao Yi next to him laughed and said: " Even the bravest warrior of the Northern Di was finally knocked off his horse by our county lord! " When this was mentioned , the people around him became lively.

This happened half a year ago , but soldiers still talk about it with great interest and excitement.

" I thought the County Horse Master was good at using a broadsword , but I didn't expect his □□ to be so powerful! " When the two armies faced each other , the shot of the County Horse Master and the first warrior of Beidi greatly inspired the morale of the Dayin army. In the first half of the year, there was a stalemate with Beidi , but after this battle, the Dayin army became more and more courageous. In this war , the Dayin Xie family army fought a prepared battle , with sufficient food and grass. Unlike Beidi's expectations, Dayin could afford the stalemate and the fight this time . In the end , it was Beidi who couldn't hold back first. In the second half of the year , with this shot to pick the first warrior , the Dayin Xie family army completely rose. And the later the war went, the more they fought for food and grass. In previous years, the food and grass that worried the generals of the northern land the most was dispatched by the Jingbei Palace and the court this year, becoming their most stable rear, and the supply never let the soldiers down. In this way, the more they fought, the braver they became.

Many soldiers who were resting on the ground beside their horses laughed and said, " We are not afraid of lack of food for our first battle. " Another soldier raised his shield and spear, but before he could say anything, the one who specialized in swordplay showed off the good iron of his sword, " It will draw blood if it touches you. "

Someone shouted: " With such a good sword, you have only practiced one move in the past two years. Aren't you ashamed? " This made everyone else laugh.

The big man also laughed: " We practiced this move, just to defeat those bastards ! " This was indeed true. For two years, their team had only practiced chopping the horse's legs with a shield. They held the heaviest shield and used the best knife, and they were accurate with every chop. The Northern Di cavalry only knew that Dayin's tripping spikes and carts could restrain the cavalry. When they saw Dayin's infantry directly facing their cavalry, the Northern Di people still despised this commander who relied on Princess Kunyi to get to the top. They were sure that he was just a good man with good skills but was just a paper talker when it came to arranging troops. They didn't expect that this fight would become their first painful defeat. When they reorganized their formation and went up again, they encountered the Xie family's army's crossbows. The modified crossbows were much easier to operate than before, with a longer range and stronger penetration.

The Northern Di general who picked up the crossbow cursed with his back teeth. This crossbow was made of fine iron, which had enhanced penetration and lethality . Is this a war? This is just a waste of money!

But Princess Kunyi is rich, and Lord Marquis is both brave and resourceful.

The Xie family army is still there, and the loyal ministers and generals are still there.

There is also Mr. Chen hiding behind the scenes.

In one year, Lu Chenan led the Xie family army not only to repel the Northern Di, but also to recapture Yanyun South County.

At this time, Lu Chenan was in the central army tent. Mingxin, who had grown taller, was wearing the clothes of a personal soldier. There was a scar from behind his ear to his jaw, but he looked more energetic. He and the mute slave were changing Lu Chenan's medicine. In the



battle half a year ago, Lu Chenan defeated the first warrior of Beidi, but he did it by holding the gun in his left hand and risking a knife when the enemy was tempted to attack his right side. Although the knife did not cut off his entire right arm, it severely injured the tendons and bones. From then on, Lord Lu could no longer lift a gun or wield a knife with his right hand. Now the entire Yanyun area is Dayin's barrier, firmly guarding Dayin's vast land. Unless the King of Beidi is able to unite all sixteen tribes of the grassland to counterattack, the rest is a small-scale battle. If the Beidi are driven deeper into the grassland, Ji De, Zhao Yi, Jiang Gan and others will be more than enough. Tomorrow, he can bring his men back to Zhusu City. Su city.

It turns out that just thinking about a city makes my heart beat faster.

Because the person he loved deeply lived in that city.

After Mingxin led everyone out, a very awkward voice suddenly sounded in the quiet tent: " Your Highness, be careful. " It was a mute slave. Perhaps he had not spoken for a long time, so every word he spoke was cautious and difficult, and he had a strange foreign accent.

Lu Chenan put on his outer robe and after a long while, he smiled and said, " What is coming will come sooner or later. "

The Min Organization has sent a message that an owl has appeared in the north.

" Because of the Medicine King. " The mute slave uttered four words. Before going to the battlefield, Lu Chenan invited the Medicine King Fang Zhongzi to the north to help the princess with her love. The Medicine King never came out of the mountain. Even the emperor had to personally invite him to the chain palace he set up. The Medicine King's chain palace was a life-and-death struggle. Even if he was the emperor, this elusive old man would point his finger and say, " Love or not, if you don't love, just leave. "

Emperor Yuanhe wanted to kill him, but he couldn't catch him. There was an old man with special skills hidden in the deep mountains and forests. If he didn't want to be found, no one could find him. Perhaps even Emperor Yuanhe couldn't really make up his mind to strangle such a miracle doctor who was said to be able to revive the dead .

But Lu Chenan was able to find him and invite him out. If Xiao knew this, he would guess Lu Chenan's identity. No one knew how long the Medicine King had lived. Those who had seen the Medicine King had different opinions. Some said he had white hair and a childlike face, while others said he had black hair and wrinkles all over his face. But what everyone was sure of was that the Medicine King had lived for a very long time. Those who knew more knew that the Medicine King only obeyed two people, one was Dayin Taizu and the other was Prince Minhuai. The mute slave moved his lips but said nothing. No matter how covert they were, sooner or later someone would know that the Medicine King had come out of the mountain. Now it seemed that Xiao's people had already known about it and had even found out about it.

The outcome of the war in the north has been decided. After this battle, the Xie family army was fully revived and regained its reputation. Lu Chenan became the true King of Jingbei.

At this time, the son-in-law recognized by the Xie family army , King Jingbei of Beidi, just smiled after hearing this and whispered: " It's fate. " He didn't want to think about anything else at this time, and just wanted to rush back to Sucheng.

On the way back to Sucheng, Lu Chenan received a secret order from His Majesty.

After reading it, Lu Chenan was silent for a long time.

He looked up and asked the messenger: " Has it started yet? "

The visitor said, " It has already begun. "

" Your Majesty, I obey your order. "

From the overall situation, it should be so, but it still makes people feel helpless . All of this disappeared the moment he saw the gate of Sucheng. He saw the woman in red in the honor guard in front of the gate. It was his princess!

At this time, people from both sides lined the streets to welcome the soldiers returning from the victorious battle. Lu Chenan, dressed in military uniform, rode forward on his horse. He could hear the cheers of the people and had red flower fruits thrown to him by enthusiastic people from time to time. However, his eyes were only on Xie Jiayi , his princess, who was getting closer and closer to him.

Suddenly, something came from the air. Lu Chenan, who had been paying attention to Xie Jiayi, dodged to the side and saw that it was a fruit ..... A soldier nearby was only busy waving happily and was hit by the fruit. He cried out in a loud voice: " I know everyone is happy. It's okay to throw handkerchiefs and flowers, but don't throw such a big fruit at people's faces! " He thought to himself that the people in the north are very strong, even the women are strong. Why are they learning to throw fruits from the noble ladies in the capital? Although they are all throwing fruits, how can they be the same ...

Hearing this, men, women, old and young in the north all laughed out loud. Even the girls who had brought fruits with them covered their mouths with their hands and laughed with red faces. Lu Chenan dodged the thrown objects by tilting his head to the side. His chest was swollen and his eyes were looking at Xie Jiayi in front of him greedily. He had been fighting for a year and only came back once, staying for half a night.

In order to squeeze out this half night, Lu Chenan did not close his eyes for a moment on the way back and forth. When he returned home, every movement of the moon let him know that the time to leave was approaching. That night, the golden waves were pale and the jade ropes were turning low, both urging people to go.

But now, he still had a lot of time, many days and nights, to face her, look at her, and hug her. Just thinking of this made Lu Chenan feel unprecedentedly satisfied .

Getting closer and closer, he went from seeing Xie Jiayi waving her hands to being able to see her dark, sparkling eyes.

Amid the noisy and jubilant crowd and among the excited soldiers returning, Lu Chenan suddenly thought that it would be great if he could live in Xie Jiayi's eyes.

At this moment, he suddenly understood why those literati and poets wanted to become the hairpins on someone else's temples and the beads on their shoes. It was because this other person was the one they loved.

Lu Chenan finally came in front of Xie Jiayi. There were so many local officials, servants of the princess's mansion, and the officials' relatives and servants around them. There were so many people. While Lu Chenan was greeting others, he looked at his princess from time to time:

When will they be alone?

The person was right next to him, but he couldn't touch him.

Suddenly, Lu Chenan felt his hanging hand being held by a familiar softness.

It was the princess beside him. The skin he had been waiting for touched each other's for a long time, and a tingling sensation rose up. He lowered his eyes and saw Xie Jiayi's wide sleeves completely covering the place where their arms were leaning against each other. Under the large sleeves of fiery red, Xie Jiayi held Lu Chenan's rough hand.

The delicate hands stroked the dryness on his hands and the thick calluses on his knuckles and palms.

Caressing Lu Chenan's trembling soft heart.

While chatting and socializing with everyone, Xie Jiayi turned around and whispered, " It's specially worn. "

" What? " Lu Chenan, who still felt his heart trembling, asked blankly.

" Big sleeves. " Xie Jiayi smiled, her eyes sparkling with stars, " Just to shake Lord Lu's hand sooner. " After saying that, she winked at him and turned to talk to a local official couple next to her, her face showing the dignity, grace and friendliness that a princess and a princess should have.

Only Lu Chenan was left, answering questions from another person beside him with his heart pounding.

The author has something to say:

The golden waves are faint, and the jade ropes are turning low. – Su Shi

## Chapter 87

Finally they returned to the mansion . The servants left, leaving only Lu Chenan and Xie Jiayi who had washed and changed clothes.

Almost the moment their eyes met, Lu Chenan had already hugged her tightly in his arms , and only then did his restless heart slowly calm down. Xie Jiayi was in his arms , and this fact was so good.

Long silence and hugs.

Until Xie Jiayi suddenly struggled and stretched out her hand to grab Lu Chenan's half-opened collar: " Tell me how badly you are hurt! " Lu Chenan lowered his head and held her hand, " It's ugly , Zhaozhao, don't look at it. " The wound had already scabbed over, and the raised red scar on the right shoulder looked scary. It had ruptured again a few days ago, and now it was even uglier.

Lu Chenan thought of the local dog kept in the front yard of the mansion . It was picked up by the mansion's people in the winter of the previous year. It lay by the chimney wall of the small kitchen in the mansion . It was so cold that it wanted to crawl into the fire pit directly . It was skinny and ugly. Xie Jiayi asked people to take good care of the dog . There was only one dog , so she should not see it. In her original words, it was " ugly to the point of hurting the eyes ". Lu Chenan didn't understand what was ugly to the point of hurting the eyes . Xie Jiayi tried to explain for a long time , and finally said " It's just ugly ... at all " After a long time, she said " It doesn't even look like a dog " .

When Lu Chenan carefully looked at the scar on his right shoulder for the first time in the military camp , he thought of the local dog in the palace and what Xie Jiayi said, " It's so ugly that it hurts the eyes . "

He raised his hand to hold down Xie Jiayi's right hand that was pulling at her collar , but Xie Jiayi raised her left hand and pulled the belt off his waist , grabbed his loose collar and laughed, " Beauty , be good and let me see , there are benefits for you! "

Lu Chenan: .....

He wondered what kind of storybook Xie Jiayi had read, a lawless robber? He felt a chill on his right shoulder, and the clothes on the right side had been torn off by Xie Jiayi. Following the chill came softness and warmth, which was Xie Jiayi's hand.

Very tenderly, she gently stroked the horrifying scar on his right shoulder. Scars should be insensitive, but Lu Chenan once again felt that hand on his heart, making him close his eyes.

Zhao Zhao's hand was so gentle that it made him want to cry.

At this moment, Lu Chenan felt that his entire life was cherished.

He thought about what he was thinking when the opponent's knife stabbed into his right shoulder. It seemed that he was thinking nothing, but when the opponent was knocked off his horse and he shouted: " Charge! " , the severe pain came over him. For a moment, his eyes went black. At that moment, he thought of Xie Jiayi. He couldn't die. He wanted to win. He wanted to go back to see her. He still had so many things to say to her. He also wanted to hold her tightly in his arms.

A hot tear fell on Lu Chenan's scar, burning his whole heart.

" It must be very painful. " It was Xie Jiayi's choked voice.

He pulled her into his arms again, " Zhao Zhao, it doesn't hurt. " At this moment he had already forgotten all the pain. His world seemed to have no haze, no pain, only her.

He lowered his head and whispered in her ear: " Princess, I will obey you, what good will it do ..."

The warm breath rushed over Xie Jiayi's small earlobe, and as if by magic, it immediately made her earlobe red. Xie Jiayi felt as if there was a dangerous beast lying beside her ear, and as long as she moved, it would swallow her whole.

She swallowed and stammered, " ... No ... no hurry ..."

The person beside her gently touched her earlobe, causing her to flinch. It was his soft lips that said, " Don't call me beauty anymore ..."

Xie Jiayi couldn't help but tremble all over, and said with all her might: " My beauty ... don't worry—— " Then she heard the voice that almost penetrated the depths of her soul mumble: " But I am anxious ..."

When Lu Chenan woke up, it was already dark outside and the room was quiet.

Xie Jiayi just hugged his left arm, resting her head on his left shoulder, and her warm breath gently touched his neck. She slept soundly and obediently. Lu Chenan lay quietly for a long time, in this brocade tent, everything outside was far away . He didn't think about anything, just felt Xie Jiayi's breath beside him.

After a long time, he gently pulled his arm out, pulled the thin blanket for her, sat up, and looked at her quietly for a while before getting out of bed. After tidying up his clothes, Lu Chenan came

to the mute slave and took out the black bottle from his sleeve: " Medicine, make more. " After a pause, " Don't let the princess know yet. "

The mute slave, who always obeyed orders, did not take immediate action after hearing his master's words for the first time.

She said in a low and hoarse voice: " Your Highness. " She didn't understand. Your Highness risked being exposed to find Fang Zhongzi and detoxify the princess, wasn't it for the sake of having children? Why did Your Highness still have to take contraceptive pills himself? She didn't understand.

Lu Chenan knew what the mute slave was going to ask. He looked at the lilacs blooming outside the window. It was already late spring. The autumn of the third year of Jianzhao was not far away . He did not say much to the mute slave, but just said, " Go make medicine. "

The mute slave gritted his teeth and was about to speak, but Lu Chenan had already turned around and left the mute slave's medicine room.

When passing by a crabapple tree in the courtyard, Lu Chenan stopped and looked at it for a long time. Suddenly, he missed Xie Jiayi very much. After being away for a while, he missed her very much. He raised his hand to pick a small white crabapple flower, turned around and walked towards the inner bedroom of the couple, with an urgency to see her.

When I arrived at the bed in the inner bedroom, Xie Jiayi was still sleeping soundly under the brocade quilt.

Lu Chenan suddenly felt relieved, and slowly dotted the small crabapple flower in her black hair. With the candlelight outside the curtain, he looked at the sleeping person and the crabapple in her hair.

I am afraid that the flower will fall asleep late at night, so I light high candles to illuminate its red beauty.

With a heavy rain, summer came to the north, and everywhere was full of bright red and green.

This is a very quiet valley, where a group of Mongolians who live by following the water and grass live. For hundreds of years, they have lived in seclusion here. This day is no different from the past in their eyes. They get up early and shout to each other to drive the cattle and sheep out. The women have already started to do housework, and the men are going to the back mountain to hunt after breakfast.

But when they lifted the tent, they saw soldiers surrounding them. They were Dayin's soldiers.

And they are members of the Tata tribe.

Lu Chenan watched from afar . Next to him was another young general, the main commander of this operation. Although the man's face had been roughened by years of wind and sand, one could still tell that he was not a native of the North.

Of course he wasn't. He was Zhang Peiyu, who used the alias Zhang Dahu. He was very angry at the moment. In a battle that was destined to go down in history, he only fought on the left wing, and was assisted by Wang Chuan on the left wing. He had long been eyeing the Xie family's army, but he could only watch the Xie family's princess and her horse directly recruit them. Moreover, after this battle, the prestige of the Xie family's army in the north was revived. Not to mention the overly handsome King Jingbei next to him, even the Xie family's old

subordinates Ji De, Zhao Yi, Jiang Gan and others, all used their military exploits to quickly climb to a position that he could not reach.

Now that the main battle was over, there was only some finishing work left. Seeing that there was no chance to make merit, Zhang Peiyu felt very anxious, fearing that if he missed this opportunity, there would be no more battles to fight. Without a battle, how could there be any chance!

So after receiving the secret order from His Majesty, he finally had a place to vent his resentment.

His Majesty's decree: To slaughter all the Tata tribes, Generals Wang Chuan and Zhang Peiyu are in charge, and King Jingbei Lu Chenan of the north will cooperate.

The men who came out of the tents were all strong and brave, but they had no power to resist the thousands of Dayin soldiers in armor and weapons. The men in more than a hundred tents were driven together by the armored soldiers. They took a last look at their women and children, lowered their heads and silently listened to the shouts of the Dayin soldiers. Those men who questioned and resisted had their heads chopped off the moment they opened their mouths. The smell of blood filled the entire wilderness.

More than a hundred Tata men were driven to a low-lying area, divided into groups of ten, and walked to the designated location to be beheaded one by one. In less than half an hour, all the Tata men were beheaded in silence .

History records this massacre as follows : " The brave men were called out and killed one by one. Without a sound, they all died with their heads tied to their chests . "

When Xie Jiayi rode over, he saw the women and children of the Tata tribe being dealt with on the other side. Lu Chenan immediately saw Xie Jiayi sitting on the horse, silently watching the slaughter below. Zhang Peiyu saw the Jingbei King, who had been very quiet, suddenly turn around and run back, followed by a group of people and horses surrounding a woman in red. Needless to say, that was the famous Princess Kunyi .

He looked coldly at the princess who had ruined all his and his sister's plans.

Lu Chenan pulled Xie Jiayi into his arms, " Don't look. "

However, Xie Jiayi raised her head from Lu Chenan's arms and said softly: " Let me see. " Let me see how all this happened and how it ends.

A Tata girl at the foot of the hill looked at the most distinguished woman at the scene with hatred, and she shouted at her: " We are innocent! " They have lived in seclusion here for generations, herding sheep, horses and hunting for a living, and they have never done anything. The only relationship they have with the Han people in Dayin is to exchange milk and cheese for their needlework and beads, and buy salt from them. They also took in the homeless Han people during the famine, and she was taught Chinese by these Han people. She thought the Han people were all good people, they were innocent!

The entire hillside was filled with the silence of the men and the screams of the girls.

Soon, the girl also fell in a pool of blood.

In less than an hour, the massacre was over. Zhang Peiyu saluted the two men and waved his hand to lead his men to search the next place where the Tata people lived.

Xie Jiayi and the people from the palace who followed her watched everything in silence. She broke away from Lu Chenan's hand and slowly walked to the side of the girl who fell to the ground. The girl was not big, only about eight or nine years old.

She thought of the Sucheng when she was five years old. The same massacre was going on, and the whole city was covered in blood. After a thunderstorm, the tunnel where she was squatting was soaked, and the blood flowed over her feet. Her entire feet were soaked in blood. At that time, she didn't understand how all this happened. She, her family, so many people in Sucheng, the grandmother selling crabapple cakes, the grandfather selling osmanthus candy, the woman who loved to curse but would give her steamed buns to hungry beggars, the little brother who stood on the street with drooling eyes staring at the freshly baked cakes ... They did nothing wrong, they just lived well day by day ... but in one night, they all died.

Xie Jiayi stretched out her hand and slowly closed the girl's eyes, which had been open all the time.

Even no one helped her brother close his eyes which remained open until his death.

" But in war, innocent people die. " Xie Jiayi seemed to be answering the girl's question, and also seemed to be answering herself who was squatting alone in the blood in the tunnel through the years.

Lu Chenan looked at Xie Jiayi's pale and almost transparent face, his heart almost bursting, he said with difficulty: " Zhao Zhao, Your Majesty is for- "

" I understand. " Xie Jiayi understood that the tribes of Simon were strong and good at fighting, and they were a threat to the long-term peace of Dayin. After this battle, the tribes of Simon had already surrendered and paid tribute again. Your Majesty was using the extermination of the tribes of Simon to intimidate the tribes that had already surrendered. If there were any more rebels, the Tata tribe today would be a lesson for them .

Xie Jiayi raised her head, looked at Lu Chenan, and said word by word: " Lord Lu, I understand. "

" We are all chess pieces. I just don't understand, Lord Lu, I just don't understand whose chess pieces we are? " Xie Jiayi looked up at him, her eyes filled with a thick fog that she couldn't get out of. Such heavy confusion and sadness filled her eyes that were always clear and bright.

Lu Chenan looked into her eyes, as if a pair of hands were grasping his heart, and he felt unbearable pain. " Zhao Zhao, the world is cruel. You just saw it too early. " Lucky people may not have to know such a fact in their entire lives. As long as people are alive, the struggle will never stop. And all struggles are accompanied by the sacrifice of innocent people.

The Sucheng of that year was not the end, and the Tata tribe of today is not the end either. His princess, she just saw it too early.

Xie Jiayi covered her stomach and murmured, " Lord Lu, I feel uncomfortable. "

At that moment, it was as if the big hand suddenly exerted force, and Lu Chenan felt that her heart was crushed. She should have felt sad, but she just held her stomach, as if it was not her heart that hurt, but her stomach. Because she was the princess of Dayin, and because the dead were the Tata tribesmen who had raised the butcher knife against Dayin, she could not be weak, could not be compassionate, and should not be heartbroken.

But they all knew that those who died that day were completely innocent people from Dayin, and those who died today were also completely innocent people from the Tata tribe.

All Lu Chenan could do was hug the curled up Xie Jiayi tightly, kissing her tear-soaked cheeks over and over again, telling her over and over again, " You are not alone, Zhao Zhao " , " Zhao Zhao, I am here " , over and over again.

He heard Xie Jiayi's hollow voice say to him: " Lord Lu, someone found me that year. " She was squatting there, repeating over and over again what her brother asked her to remember. Then she suddenly saw a steel knife. She looked up blankly, and her horrified eyes met with a grassland soldier who was searching for survivors. The soldier raised his knife, but his eyes fell on her soaked feet.

Finally he turned and left silently.

She recognized the soldier, a personal guard of Tarkton. Before the massacre , he was a quiet and smiling soldier to the little princess, and he even bought her candy cakes.

After hearing what Xie Jiayi said, Lu Chenan tightened his grip around her, and his grip on her twitched uncontrollably. He thought he understood her torment, but it turned out to be just a small part of it. His little princess, only 20 years old, had already endured so much.

At that moment, Lu Chenan, who never complained about the heavens, looked at the eternally silent sky and the endless fields, with only the cold sun setting silently at the end. For the first time, he felt that the way of heaven was really unfair.

She shouldn't have to endure this. She should ... she should always be laughing under the crabapple tree, with cake crumbs on the corners of her mouth, while her parents and brothers stood over there. She should grow up happily, waiting for the encounter with him in the capital. He could only hold her tightly, and hold her tighter. Accompanying her, they suffered from their weakness as human beings, and from their still young and innocent consciences.

" Zhao Zhao, I'm here. "

Zhao Zhao, I know you are feeling bad, but I am here for you.

The author has something to say:

I am afraid that the flowers will fall asleep late at night, so I light a tall candle to illuminate their red makeup. – Su Shi

He called out his warriors and beheaded them one by one. Without a sound, they died with their heads slammed. – "Xiaoting Miscellaneous Records : The Beginning and End of the War in the Western Regions"

## Chapter 88

A heavy rain brought summer to the north . The grass and trees that had been dry for a spring and winter absorbed the abundant rain and grew lush green leaves, presenting a vibrant and lush summer.

Even the heat was taken away by the heavy rain outside the window. It was afternoon , in the study room in the backyard of the palace , on the couch by the window , the woman was taking a nap with her head on the man's legs, with a thin green blanket draped over her body . The man was leaning against the half-open window, holding a book in one hand and looking down,



with the other hand gently placed on the woman's shoulder and neck. The sleeping girl tilted her head slightly and rested one cheek on his hand.

The heavy rain came in bursts and then ebbed, like a piece of music played between heaven and earth.

Xie Jiayi turned over in her sleep and leaned closer to Lu Chenan, then fell asleep again. Lu Chenan moved his eyes from the book to the sleeping girl's face, and a smile slowly appeared on the corner of his lips. He slightly leaned over, closed the window beside him a little more, and pulled the thin blanket on her body. I don't know if her habit of taking a nap by the window and insisting on opening the window wide will ever change.

it had wrinkles.

Lu Chenan really wanted to see the old Xie Jiayi, wanted to see her wrinkled face. At that time, was she still so impatient? I'm afraid she would still be the same in that she couldn't tolerate any sand in her eyes.

She loves to cry so much, even when she is old, she will probably still love to cry. At that time, he can still use his equally old hands to gently wipe away the tears on her face.

Thinking of the sunset, and his gray-haired self and Xie Jiayi, Lu Chenan became infatuated. When I came back to my senses, it was still raining outside, it was still the summer of the third year of Jianzhao. After summer comes autumn.

The hand that fell on Xie Jiayi's face was caressing her face lovingly. At this time, Lu Chenan heard some movement in the quiet corridor. He looked up through the half-open window and saw that the person coming was a mute slave.

Lu Chenan's heart sank.

If nothing was wrong, the mute slave would not come to him at this time.

He stood up and carried Xie Jiayi to the bed at the back of the study, put the blanket on her again, and put down the green gauze curtain. Then he turned and left the study. As soon as he came out, Caiyue and Caixing in the side room next to the door immediately went in quietly to guard.

Lu Chenan stood with his hands behind his back and looked at the rain for a while, then he looked at the note that the mute slave had just handed him: When the owl is near, see you in the teahouse.

He stretched his hand out into the rain, and soon the words on the note became blurred. Lu Chenan put on his deerskin boots and oil coat and left the palace.

The doors and windows of the inner room in the teahouse were tightly closed, and the sound of rain faded away. The old man looked at his young prince with his cloudy eyes, "Your Highness's choice, I understand. In this case, it is useless to stay in the North, and Kuang Xiao's people have come in." The old man emphasized: "Your Highness, we should leave."

Lu Chenan was shocked.

How could the old man not know Lu Chenan's thoughts? No matter how smart and wise the prince is, he is still young. But his young prince has grown up after this battle. Now everyone in Beidi Simon Dayin knows that the King of Jingbei in Beidi fought bloody battles and led the troops every time. He defeated Beidi's first warrior. After six months of struggling on the

battlefield, he started a glorious record of seven wins and seven losses, defeated Beidi, and recaptured Yanbei County lost by the previous dynasty.

The old man's eyes were burning, this was the man who should be the master of the Great Yin. His heart was burning, " Your Highness is reluctant to leave the princess, so we must take the princess with us. "

Upon hearing this, Lu Chenan trembled all over and stared at the old man.

How could they take the princess with them? Since Xiao had already come to the Northland, even if he had found the palace, Zhao Zhao was like a flag wherever he went. They couldn't take the princess with them ... unless –

" Your Highness, the princess will be very useful to our cause. " The old man said the rest.

" No. " Lu Chenan answered him.

" No? " The old man seemed unable to understand. Was his highness so unwise? A woman and a great cause, he said " no " , the old man felt that he might have heard wrongly.

" No. " Lu Chenan answered him again.

Even though he was facing the precious young prince, the old man glared at him this time, veins jumping on his loose skin: " Your Highness, which is more important, the princess or the will of Taizu? Which is more important, the princess or the people of the world? " Every word the old man said seemed to hurt Lu Chenan's bones, and every word was as sharp as a knife with blood.

Lu Chenan's eyes were calm, and he said calmly: " No. She is mine-- " He didn't even know what to say about her. She was so precious, and he had only one -- only what? The well-read Lu Chenan couldn't find a word this time, but she was his. Even he himself was not his, but she was his.

The throne? To seize it for the people of the world? Lu Chenan thought this statement was ridiculous. He began to feel it was ridiculous when he walked out of the house at the age of nine and saw the people of the world. Do the people of the world know? Do they know that they have stirred up chaos and bloody storms time and time again, causing people in one city after another to die or be displaced, all for them? Do the people of the world believe it? Whose people are they doing it for? Are the people living today not the people... Since he was nine years old, Lu Chenan came to the capital and saw those people carrying loads and farming every day, he began to be confused.

The old man had also been vaguely aware of Lu Chenan's hesitation over the years, or it could not be called hesitation at all, he had never been moved. He just did everything they wanted him to do. The young prince was such a smart and capable person, he was obviously extraordinary, why couldn't he give it a try! To do big things, there will always be deaths!

Lu Chenan looked at his teacher's angry eyes and said softly: " Teacher, my life was bought by many people. I am willing to do anything for those people. Everything I have is expendable. Except for her. She is not acceptable. "

He walked to the closed window, as if he could hear the sound of rain outside more clearly. " Teacher, we all know that the throne was firmly established during the reign of Emperor Yuanhe . We didn't have the time first, and then the opportunity. Now, after the reign of Emperor Yongtai and Emperor Jianzhao, Dayin is now at peace. " He smiled when he said this. He thought of the

southern waterway projects built by Xie Jiayi. He wondered if there were no waterway projects, if that natural disaster had become a disaster, would they have succeeded? In the world that Xie Jiayi had experienced, did they succeed?

Definitely not. From Xie Jiayi's reaction, he knew that there definitely wasn't. But it would definitely make the enthroned Emperor Jianzhao overwhelmed and unable to take care of himself. Emperor Jianzhao must have hired people. It was impossible for the emperor not to delegate power or divide power in such a Dayin. To some extent, Emperor Jianzhao's power was eroded, otherwise he would not be able to protect even his own queen. Zhaozhao, she must have died very young in that world. She came back here with such hardship, and he would never let anyone bully her again.

Lu Chenan gently leaned his forehead against the window, getting closer to the sound of the rain. He even guessed that the self in that world had really faced the choice of half of the country, but that self still did not exchange the safety of Dayin for that half of the country. Lu Chenan closed his eyes, as if his whole body was outside in the rain, which made him feel safe and comfortable, and he was worthy of his Zhaozhao.

"Teacher, you know that Emperor Jian Zhao is very strong." Xu Shixing is very strong, although he may be a repressed madman. But the rulers of the □□ will become madmen more or less after a long time.

Lu Chenan could not guess the future development of Dayin from Xie Jiayi's reaction and words, but he guessed that if Zhao Zhao had died in the palace, then Emperor Jianzhao must not be in the palace. Where did he go? Lu Chenan thought the biggest possibility was Beidi, so he chose to personally lead an expedition to Beidi. An emperor whose military power was lost was in a dangerous situation, but a victorious expedition was enough for a strong emperor to regain all his power.

When he comes back, everything will be different.

But——, thinking of this, Lu Chenan sneered, it's too late.

"Your Highness!" The old man raised his voice, feeling extremely sad. If they took a chance with one person, even if it didn't work, it would just mean some deaths. If they kept hiding, they still had a chance. There would always be a chance in the future. Princess Kunyi had copper mines and trade routes. Emperor Yongtai had given her almost everything he could. Your Highness should know that the princess was probably holding the economic lifeline of Dayin. If they held the princess, how much trouble they could stir up. In particular, Your Highness had already won the hearts of the army. If Your Highness was willing, he already had the loyalty of the Xie family army. Why not? Such a great opportunity, why not!

But Lu Chenan still only replied with one word: no.

His little prince had never said no to him, and his little prince could do anything they asked. But he said no to Beidi, for the sake of his country and the people; he said no to the princess again.

"Teacher, I often wonder what destiny is and what is orthodoxy." Lu Chenan looked at his teacher again and laughed softly, "You think I am orthodox, but Emperor Jianzhao also thinks he is the grandson appointed by Emperor Yuanhe and he received the seal from Emperor Yongtai in a legitimate way. He is the orthodox one."

" But how did Emperor Yongtai get the throne? " It was taken by Emperor Yuanhe who killed Prince Minhuai.

" Teacher, how did Taizu get the throne? " Taizu got it by starting an uprising and overthrowing the previous dynasty, and slaughtering the entire family of the previous emperor. Doesn't Taizu have the orthodox position?

The old man shuddered and fell into a chair. His way was the most correct way. Yes – his way could not be wrong. They were for justice and for the people of the world ...

Lu Chenan poured a cup of tea for the teacher and slowly put it into the teacher's hands. He thought, it's just a struggle, it's all for the sake of fighting, it's all like this. But they clearly knew in their hearts that Emperor Jianzhao would be a good emperor. Maybe he was not a lenient and easy-to-control emperor for the lower-ranking officials. After all, the civil officials were afraid of emperors like Emperor Yuanhe, who often acted outside the rules and were uncontrollable. But for Dayin and the people, at least Emperor Jianzhao would be a good emperor.

Lu Chenan didn't say it, but he knew that his teacher understood this fact.

So why bother to fight and let the Northern Di who are always watching and the Southern Shu who are destroyed but not destroyed watch covetously. They are all waiting for Dayin to fall into chaos. Only when Dayin falls into chaos, the surrounding foreign tribes will have an opportunity to take advantage of it. Dayin, with its fertile plains, rich mineral resources, and countless obedient and capable people, is always fat meat in the eyes of others.

The old man looked at Lu Chenan with tears in his eyes, " Your Highness! "

Such a person should be the emperor of a country.

But this is the destiny and fate.

## Chapter 89

The rain didn't stop until the evening . When Lu Chenan returned to the mansion, even though he was wearing an oil coat, the hem of his clothes and his boots and socks were already wet . He took off his coat and handed it to the waiter beside him , saying, " It's raining so hard that the road is flooded. "

Xie Jiayi handed him a cup of tea to moisten his throat, then tilted her head and smiled, " It's a good opportunity to see if Lord Lu's drainage design is useful. " The drainage system in Sucheng was rebuilt after they came to the north . In the past two years, many people in the north considered it a great joy to be selected to work for the palace, because they could eat well and get paid more.

Lu Chenan clenched his fist, coughed twice, and smiled: " It's time to take a closer look at whether our princess's money has been wasted. "

When Xie Jiayi heard him cough, she hurriedly asked someone to make ginger tea. Lu Chenan watched her carefully instruct the servants, and when the servants left, he stepped forward , lowered his head, and touched her forehead with his forehead: " But you drank a few sips of

wind on the way , and you look anxious. " Under the candlelight , Lu Chenan said this , but in his heart he thought how beautiful it was for her to be anxious for him .

" Who made you weak? " Xie Jiayi replied.

Lu Chenan looked at her and raised his eyebrows: " I'm weak? " He felt that Xie Jiayi should be able to clearly identify who was weak .

Xie Jiayi suddenly smiled. She remembered the first time they met . When facing the little thief , Lu Chenan dodged and let him pass . The first sentence he said to her was: " I am weak and cannot stop you. " She knew that Lu Chenan had a secret, but when she looked at Lu Chenan's extremely warm eyes under the candlelight , she was not afraid.

As she said , she accepted it.

This time, she should not regret her move . She chose him and should accept everything about him.

Lu Chenan felt that Xie Jiayi was such an outspoken person , but sometimes she looked at him with such tenderness. He raised his head and gently touched Xie Jiayi's bright red lips with his thumb, then let go, immediately stepped back and turned to the bathroom. He had been through a storm and hadn't even showered or changed his clothes yet.

When Lu Chenan came out again, he actually saw Xie Jiayi sitting on the couch by the window practicing calligraphy on his copybook! He was surprised and asked, " Why do you want to practice calligraphy? " Looking at the few words Xie Jiayi wrote, they looked pretty good.

Xie Jiayi took the handkerchief from his hand and wiped her hair while saying, " I feel that as the wife of the number one scholar, I cannot be too far behind my husband . " The number one scholar back then is still reading books and practicing calligraphy every day. How can she, who is uneducated, only read storybooks every day? By that time, Lord Lu will be standing on another hilltop, and she will still be at the foot of the hill watching people chasing each other and having a lover in her heart. How can storybooks be worthy of her number one scholar husband? Lu Chenan laughed when he heard this. No one had called him the top scholar for a long time, and Dayin already had a new top scholar.

He touched Xie Jiayi's black hair that fell behind her like a waterfall, his eyes full of smiles: " Come, write and I'll teach you. "

The sound of rain outside had long since died down and slowly stopped, leaving the night sky clear.

Xie Jiayi put down her pen and shook her hands, tilting her head to look, and exclaimed in surprise: " Master Lu, the stars are out! "

Lu Chenan then realized that the sky was already full of stars. The sky in the north was so clear, and every star was so bright. The stars seemed to fall into Xie Jiayi's eyes, and her eyes looking back were also so bright.

He hugged Xie Jiayi and looked at the bright night sky after the rain, the stars in the sky, listened to the chirping of summer insects, and heard the croaking of frogs in the distance .

Listening to Xie Jiayi saying that she would also read serious books in the future, Lord Lu could quote from the classics when talking to her in the future.

Lu Chenan leaned against Xie Jiayi's soft and cool smile and said: " When the time comes, the gambling books will be consumed by the tea fragrance-- " When he said this, his heart ached

and he stopped talking immediately. This was not a good word. Lu Chenan immediately changed the subject and talked about the magnificent scene of " stars falling like rain " recorded in history books .

The smell of tea disappeared after gambling on books, and at that time I thought it was normal. every " I thought it was normal at the time " lies a separation in life or death.

This is not a nice thing to say. Lu Chenan hugged Xie Jiayi, tightened his hands, and felt Xie Jiayi curled up in his arms. Then he continued to carefully point out to her the direction where " stars falling like rain " might appear , and described the scene in detail. The falling stars, which was once regarded as an ominous phenomenon by the previous dynasty, had become a simple wonder in Dayin, and even had the meaning of a good story for the emperor and empress. It has to start with Emperor Yuanhe. It was under the leadership of Emperor Yuanhe and assisted by Lord Wang that the Imperial Astronomical Observatory accurately calculated the day of " stars falling " for the first time , dispelling a very vicious rumor about Empress Xiaoyi at the time, proving that " stars falling " was not the emperor's mismanagement, nor was it a warning of " empress's immorality " as said at the time . Instead, the " stars falling " was counted as a wonder given by the emperor to the empress.

That great debate gave " Xingyun " a fair name. Everyone also once again witnessed the extraordinary talent of Mr. Wang, the young master of the capital. He could predict the future. Time flies. Two of the three main figures in that vigorous debate that went down in history are now dead, and the remaining one is now very old. Their glorious years have long since disappeared, but the stars that witnessed them remain.

In the darkness, there are summer insects and frogs, green leaves and red flowers, but frogs and insects will not keep singing, and flowers will not keep blooming. Time is like flowing water, and the green leaves in the mansion have been dyed yellow by the passing time.

Xie Jiayi suddenly woke up from her sleep and habitually looked for the people around her, but there was no one around her, and it was cold. There was no one there.

Just three days ago, the Beidi Wolf King united with the sixteen tribes of the grassland to launch a final counterattack, and Lu Chenan went to the front battlefield again.

This was the autumn of the third year of Jianzhao. Xie Jiayi shook her head desperately, saying, "Don't go!"

Don't go!

But Lu Chenan just smiled and scratched her nose, asking her how she could have forgotten the poem she had just read the day before.

Xie Jiayi shook her head. What kind of poetry? It was not good at all. She couldn't remember it anyway. Lu Chenan still looked at her very gently and patiently. He knew that Xie Jiayi had read very well this time. She remembered it.

Why don't men take Wu Gou and take over the fifty states in Guanshan?

If the battle with the Northern Di was a 100-mile journey, then Lu Chenan and the Xie family army had already successfully traveled 90 miles. " A journey of a hundred miles begins with a single step . " If you can't accomplish your goal in one battle, you'll probably fail.

At that time, Xie Jiayi still shook her head. Finally, she held Lu Chenan's hand and said, " Lord Lu, it doesn't have to be you. The deputy commander of the left army ... Zhang Dahu can be

used ..." Xie Jiayi held Lu Chenan's hand tightly and said tremblingly, " Let's hand over the Xie family army to him and let him fight this last battle. Now that General Ji and others can suppress him, and with Mr. Chen behind him, the Xie family army will not be harmed. "

The Xie family army would not suffer any loss and would even make greater contributions, but the princess handed over this tremendous achievement to Zhang Dahu and sent him to great heights.

Lu Chenan looked at Xie Jiayi for a long time before he finally spoke. His voice was inexplicably hoarse, and he whispered in her ear: " Zhao Zhao, the Xie family army is yours, and this great contribution to assisting the country is also yours. " After that, Lu Chenan put on his armor, mounted his horse, and headed forward.

Lu Chenan, who never looked back, turned his head this time. He reined in his horse and looked back at Xie Jiayi very seriously. The handsome young man smiled at Xie Jiayi on his tall, black horse with white hooves, then rode forward.

Princess, if fate requires him to die, he would rather die this way. Not to let down his parents and family, not to let down what he has learned throughout his life, and not to let down the trust placed in him by Zhao Zhao in this life.

" The immortal one is the one whose name will be passed down through the ages; who would have thought that you are dead? You are still alive! "

For her, he would drive the enemy back thousands of miles away, consolidate this tremendous achievement, and leave this name that will last forever!

Xie Jiayi saw her Lord Lu riding his horse overtaking one person after another, and finally reaching the front of the team.

She could no longer see Lord Lu, and could only see the flag with the word " Xie " written on it in the front , fluttering in the wind, but also getting farther and farther away from her . In the end, Xie Jiayi could not even see the flag clearly.

The messengers running between the front line and Sucheng have never stopped since Lu Chenan left, so Xie Jiayi can know the battle situation at the front at any time.

Although everything was moving in a better direction, Xie Jiayi was becoming more and more uneasy.

Now it is the Xie family army that is pursuing the Northern Di.

Everyone said that Beidi was finished. Beidi was completely finished this time.

The celebration in Sucheng has already begun. If Dayin recaptured Yanyun North County half a year ago and completely blocked the threat from Beidi, then after this battle, Dayin will not be troubled by the northern threat for at least twenty years.

Until this day, news suddenly came: Xie's army was trapped in Beidi Kuang City and fell into a trap!

" How come? "

It was already late autumn, but the visitor was still covered in sweat mixed with dirt. " It was obviously General Zhang who wanted to take the credit, but I don't know why it was Generals Jiang Gan and Zhao Yi who were trapped in Kuangcheng ..."

" Where is Lord Lu? " Xie Jiayi's nails pierced her palm and blood oozed out.

" Lord Lu went to rescue, but the main force led by General Ji was sent to attack the Beidi lair! Lord Lu doesn't have many people ..." Everyone's heart sank, and everyone immediately looked at the princess.

Xie Jiayi's lips trembled, " Where are General Zhang's soldiers? "

" General Zhang said he couldn't move without a military order. "

Xie Jiayi stood up suddenly, " He – ca n't – move . " This time, no matter what Lord Lu does, she wants Zhang Peiyu to die.

No one expected that Xie Jiayi actually had the emperor's order to mobilize troops in an emergency!

When they saw the order to mobilize troops, the people who came to report the news were stunned!

Their princess is indeed just as the legend says — she has everything!

" Go, take the token and ask the nearest soldiers to rescue Kuang City! " The messenger was very happy, knowing that there would be no problem now.

Everyone was anxiously waiting for the news. No one in the Princess's Mansion could really sit down that day. No one could sit still. This continued until the next day when the news was received again. Xie Jiayi listened to the messenger's words in disbelief.

Not only Xie Jiayi, but Ruyi Bubu Caiyue Caixing also found it incredible.

" Can't get through? "

The messenger also found it unbelievable, " All those who hold the token cannot leave the west gate of Yanyun County. Various accidents always happen. Waves of people have changed, but those who hold the token just can't pass through the west gate ..." Now the army in Yanyun County is in panic. This is simply outrageous!

Xie Jiayi's face turned pale instantly, and she immediately thought of her uncle the emperor.

Thinking of what Lu Chenan said, " Destiny is determined and cannot be forced . " But she had saved so many people and changed the lives of so many people. He said, " The fate of an emperor is different from that of ordinary people . " But he was not a royal blood emperor.

Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi was shocked.

She thought of what Lu Chenan said in her previous life, that he had been engaged to her cousin a long time ago and they fell in love at first sight.

cousin.

Her cousins are all royal family.

Xie Jiayi calmed down all of a sudden, her eyes firm, " Change clothes, prepare the horse! "

She wanted to go and deliver the token herself. She didn't believe in fate, and she didn't believe that no one could take the token and go out of the west gate!

Xie Jiayi led his men to Yanyun. All of them rode the best and fastest horses in the north. Each of them brought two more horses. Once a horse got tired, they would immediately change horses. They traveled day and night to Yanyun County. Xie Jiayi did not even stop to take a closer look at this city that blocked the foreign tribes in the north. He directly showed the sign to enter the city and headed for the west gate on the other side of the city.

That is Dayin's gateway to Beidi.



The west gate was getting closer and closer. Suddenly, the princess's horse slowed down, and everyone else showed terrified and strange expressions on their faces.

Only Xie Jiayi continued to ride forward. At this time, a lame Taoist appeared on the side of the road. He looked at Xie Jiayi with pity. His voice was not loud, but it was as loud as a bell. "

Princess, please go back. "

" There is no second sun in the sky. It cannot be changed or saved. "

" It's all in vain. "

" My Lady, this is destiny. "

Xie Jiayi sneered at him, talking nonsense, what destiny, what there is only one sun in the sky, if destiny stops her, she will go against it!

She continued to ride forward, and the city gate came into view.

But the princess' horse suddenly fell to the ground after stepping on something and could not move. This was the best horse in the north! All the followers stared at him in amazement. Ruyi stepped forward to help the princess. He saw that not only the horse, but also the corner of the princess' mouth was bleeding. Ruyi was horrified and cried out: " Princess! "

Xie Jiayi pushed Ruyi away, and she saw the city gate, right in front of her.

She clenched the token tightly and wanted to go out through the west gate!

She had only one thought: she wanted to go out through the west gate!

Ruyi looked at her princess and didn't dare to go forward, but his tears had already fallen. He felt that for the first time in his life, he was completely helpless. He saw the blood from the princess' mouth dye the white crabapple on her collar red.

However, there was nothing he could do, and he couldn't even go forward to stop her.

That is what his princess wants to do most.

The Taoist stepped forward and advised again: " Princess, why do you have to do this? You are the lucky star of Dayin, why do you have to destroy yourself! "

The pain made Xie Jiayi unable to hear Ruyi and the others' words clearly, but she could hear every word of the Taoist priest. Since she was a lucky star, she would use her luck to go to the west gate. She wanted to open her mouth to speak, and told the Taoist priest to stay wherever it was warm, but as soon as she opened her mouth, a mouthful of blood gushed out. Xie Jiayi raised her hand to wipe it off, and continued to drag her legs forward as if she was stepping on the tip of a knife.

Every step he took was like lifting himself from the tip of a knife that pierced through his flesh and blood, and then every step he took was like stepping into the tip of the knife again.

But Simon was just ahead.

Since she could be reborn against the will of heaven, why couldn't Lord Lu be reborn? It didn't make sense, Lord Lu couldn't be reborn! Wasn't her fate precious? Wasn't she from the royal family? She died early in her previous life, and she also changed her fate against the will of heaven!

As if he could clearly hear what Xie Jiayi was thinking, the old Taoist's voice once again reached Xie Jiayi's ears as she struggled forward:

" My princess is not reborn against the will of heaven, my princess is reborn with the blood of the emperor. "

But Xie Jiayi was in so much pain that she couldn't understand even if she heard it. All her energy was just enough for her to lift her legs and move forward.

Step after step.

Simon was getting closer and closer.

Ruyi has already burst into tears.

The old Taoist chanted his name and watched calmly. He knew that the moment she passed the west gate, she would be greeted with heart-wrenching pain.

The author has something to say:

The smell of tea disappeared after gambling on books, and I thought it was normal at that time.

– Nalan Xingde

Why don't men take Wu Gou and conquer fifty states across the mountains and rivers? – Xin Qiji

" What is immortal is the name that will last forever; who would have thought that you are dead? You are still alive! " – Xin Qiji

## Chapter 90

Simon is right in front of us.

any cries or shouts , including the Taoist's muttering. It was like being in a bottomless purgatory.

She could only see the front door , which was also blurred in the blood-red. But she stared at the front , moving forward step by step in that direction , and finally crawling .

The moment she climbed into the West Gate Tower, she felt as if her whole body was torn apart. She couldn't describe the pain , maybe she was torn into pieces by five horses, she didn't know.

She only knew that she had to go out through the west gate.

If God has the power, let her die. If not , she will – leave through the west gate!

Even though the heavens wanted her to lie down, she insisted on standing up. Even though the heavens didn't allow her to move forward , she insisted on going out the west gate! Xie Jiayi stood up shakily , almost as if with all her bones shattered , and her bloodshot eyes only looked at the west gate.

When Xie Jiayi took that step out of the west gate , all the pain suddenly disappeared out of thin air , just as it had appeared out of thin air.

The old Taoist behind the city gate suddenly looked up at the sky. It was a bright day , but he saw that the Emperor Star was moving.

" This is impossible ..." the old Taoist muttered , " This is absolutely impossible! "

He looked towards the Emperor Star again and saw a small star looming, with the potential to block out the sun , and the five directions gave way. The old Taoist who had been watching the struggles of the people in the world calmly suddenly became crazy , muttering: " The Holy Son of Heaven is about to appear again ... Senior Brother did it ... Senior Brother did it! "

, he predicted the fate of Dayin being beheaded after five generations . The other half of the prediction was: foreign races would rise up , heroes would fight each other , and this land would

fall into a long period of chaos, with all the people suffering. For so many years, my senior brother has been looking for even a glimmer of hope for change, but anyone with an emperor's fate cannot be touched or moved.

Until a person who is willing to give all the emperor's blood appears, he only asks to send one person back to this reincarnation.

As the stars that appeared in the clear sky faded away again, the crazy old Taoist gradually calmed down, and his eyes fell on the woman in blood-stained green clothes in front of the west gate.

Finally, the old Taoist's eyes fell on the woman's abdomen in front of him, unable to move away for a long time. " The Holy Son of Heaven has appeared in the world – Senior Brother did it ..."

To others, the mysterious old Taoist suddenly laughed inexplicably. It turns out that fate can really be changed. Senior brother is right, and he is wrong! But he looked at the princess in front of him with infinite compassion, but what she wanted most was still impossible after all .

He looked at the princess, as if he saw through the princess his equally stubborn senior brother. For this glimmer of hope, his gifted senior brother shattered his soul and bones and had long since died.

Ruyi stepped forward to support the princess the moment she stepped out of the city gate. Xie Jiayi spat out a mouthful of blood. But she didn't care about anything else and handed the blood-stained token in her hand to Ruyi, " You go! "

All the inexplicable strange things, all the barriers disappeared, and everything returned to normal.

Xie Jiayi watched Ruyi riding forward smoothly with the token in hand. She finally smiled. Before she fainted, she murmured, " Lord Lu, I only want to grow old with you in this life. " She did not let down her parents' teachings, did not let down her brother's sacrifice, and did not let down her royal family status. She never did. The rest, she just wanted to grow old with Lord Lu. " Betting on books can destroy the fragrance of tea . " If Lord Lu likes it, she thinks, she will like it too.

Lord Lu, you are omnipotent, so can you promise Zhaozhao to grow old together?

When Xie Jiayi woke up again, three days had passed. As soon as she woke up, she saw Ruyi, who was exhausted. Ruyi was smiling.

Before Xie Jiayi could say anything, her pale face smiled.

Lord Lu was saved as expected.

She heard Ruyi say: " The princess can rest assured now. "

" Ruyi, I want to go to Kuangcheng. " It was already late autumn, and she wanted to keep looking at Lord Lu until the end of this autumn. She immediately grabbed Ruyi's hand and said, " You can tell Lord Lu that no matter what happens, he can't go to southern Sichuan! "

Ruyi smiled: " Lord Lu laughed when he heard it. " How could Lord Lu go to southern Sichuan?

Xie Jiayi couldn't help laughing either.

Obviously everything was fine, but Xie Jiayi couldn't wait and wanted to go to Kuangcheng immediately. Ruyi had no choice but to obey. Whatever the princess said, he had to do, and Ruyi never asked why.

That afternoon, Xie Jiayi's convoy arrived in Kuangcheng.

It was even colder here, cold and desolate. No wonder the Northern Di wanted to go south whenever they had a little bit of energy. The prosperity of the Northern Land was originally far behind the capital of Dayin and Suzhou, Hangzhou and Nanjing in the south, but even the southernmost city of the Northern Di made the Northern Land of Dayin look like a prosperous city.

Ruyi helped the princess put on her cloak. As soon as she got off the car, she saw Lord Lu walking quickly out of the city gate.

Xie Jiayi waved.

Lord Lu was probably too happy and waved at her. Even the wounded people entering and leaving the city gate, the princess and the general couldn't help but join the crowd in making a noise. Just then, a wounded man seemed to be unable to hold on and fell down when passing by Lord Lu. Lu Chenan reached out to help him.

He felt something was wrong almost instantly, but his left hand had been grabbed by the man, and his right hand was no longer fast enough.

A sleeve arrow filled with poison shot into Lu Chenan's body.

Everything happened in a flash. Even when Lu Chenan fell, the people around him were still laughing happily, and they didn't realize what had happened.

The moment Lu Chenan realized that death was approaching, he looked at Xie Jiayi.

He missed his princess.

Before the smile on Xie Jiayi's face faded, she ran towards the fallen Lu Chenan in a daze.

The deadly poison that kills instantly upon contact with blood is the secret medicine of the Dayin royal family. He knew that he had encountered the "Xiao". After Emperor Yuanhe of Shizu killed the entire family of Prince Min Huai, he realized that a one-month-old child had escaped. To eradicate the roots, if you don't want to do it, then forget it. If you do it, you must do it thoroughly. This is the creed of Emperor Yuanhe. No one knows the existence of the "Xiao" organization. This organization only received one imperial order to kill the bloodline of Prince Min Huai and fight to the death.

Xie Jiayi fell beside Lu Chenan, staring blankly at large mouthfuls of blood gushing out of Lu Chenan's mouth.

Until this moment, she still didn't know what happened.

She was shaking like a sieve and couldn't utter a word.

And Lu Chenan couldn't even raise his hand to touch his little princess. He only had time to say a broken, "Zhao Zhao ... I'm sorry". He wanted to look at her one more time, but he couldn't see her anymore. He wanted to tell her how good it was to meet her in this life, he wanted to tell her that just liking her made him happy, but when he fell, he saw his princess's dazed but heartbroken face in his blurred vision. He didn't say anything else, still just the last three words: "I'm sorry".

I have thousands of words to say to you, but it's too late.

Xie Jiayi, Lu Chen is happy with you.

Xie Jiayi, I'm really sorry.

I am the descendant of Prince Min Huai, and I am your cousin. We should have been childhood sweethearts. You were the wife chosen by Taizu for me, even earlier than the arranged

marriage. Unfortunately, I can neither be your childhood sweetheart nor accompany you through this bumpy life and grow old together. Zhao Zhao, I'm sorry.

Heavy snowfall has turned the silent people's hair white. It turns out that the snow in Beidi comes so early.

She holds the economic lifeline of half of the dynasty and revitalizes the Xie family army in the north. She has done a lot of things and has a lot of things, but she seems to have nothing.

Xie Jiayi wanted to cry out loud, wanted to wail, but she just slowly, slowly leaned her face against Lu Chenan's face.

His face was still warm.

" Lord Lu, I feel uncomfortable. " But this time, no one hugged her and told her " I am here " . This time she was alone.

The vast northern plains were covered in white, so clean. But Xie Jiayi felt that she might not be able to get out of this heavy snow.

Dusk falls, another night comes, but will the sky still be bright?

Everyone knelt down, suppressed crying was heard everywhere, snow fell all over everyone's body and head, but no one moved.

Someone pulled the assassin's coat in anger, revealing a large " Chuan " character on his military uniform. Xie Jiayi's eyes were stung, and the gentle voice in her ears comforted her softly: " Fate is determined by heaven, and it cannot be forced . "

Destiny?!

From then on, Xie Jiayi no longer believed in God!

Lord Lu, as long as I live, I will not believe in God. If there really is a destiny, let God punish me!

Lord Lu's face was cold. No matter how hard she tried, the remaining warmth still left Lord Lu's body bit by bit.

Ruyi knelt behind the princess. He heard the princess's murmur. Their princess said:

" Lord Lu, I feel uncomfortable. "

Ruyi slowly knelt down, her forehead touching the cold ground.

Above and behind them was heavy snow from the north, falling steadily.

They held Lu Chenan's funeral in Sucheng. As soon as the funeral was over, Xie Jiayi fell into a deep sleep, or fainted, who knows. She just said that she was very tired and wanted to sleep.

Just refused to wake up again.

Nanny Chen and Caiyue and Caixing were so anxious that they kept crying. Until the doctor felt the princess's pulse, it had been two months.

It was a mute slave who woke up the princess.

No one knew what the mute slave said to the princess, but the princess woke up and started to eat well. No one knew what the princess was thinking when she sat on the couch by the window and looked out the window.

Is she thinking about the Duke? The Duke is dead.

Is she thinking about the baby in her belly? She also has a child with Lord Lu.

Every day, Nanny Chen makes clothes and prepares various things for the little prince in the princess's belly. She wants the princess to see it and remind her not to forget that there is still the little prince and that he is with her.

Her little master and her family.

When she turned her back, Nanny Chen's tears dripped onto the small clothes in her hands.

Then she wiped them and continued to make clothes for the young master carefully.

The mute slave outside the corridor stared blankly at the withered tree in the yard. She didn't know whether what she did was right or wrong. It was Prince Min Huai who saved her life. His Highness said that you should protect the Crown Princess, and you will be the Crown Princess's slave from now on. She remembered His Highness's words and guarded the Crown Princess. Until that day, the Crown Princess asked her to protect the little prince. She protected the little prince, and now the little prince is dead.

Her little prince didn't even know that he already had blood. Her prince wouldn't know because she trusted her.

It was she who changed His Highness's contraceptive medicine.

His Highness knows that he will die sooner or later, and he wants the princess to live well. Like every normal noblewoman, live a stable life, have children in the future, and when she grows old, all the pain will become a thing of the past. His Highness wants his princess to have many children and grandchildren. His Highness knows that the princess likes children, even though she always says that she hates the noise and annoyance of children when she sees them. His Highness knows better than anyone that the princess wants the obsession of her family, and wants her brother and parents to continue their family line forever.

However, as long as Xiao was gone, His Highness could not give birth to the princess. His Highness did not want another child to live a precarious life like His Highness, struggling for life all his life. However, she went against His Highness's wishes and dragged the princess into this vortex.

The mute slave stared blankly.

Prince Min Huai's bloodline should be passed down. His Royal Highness Prince Min Huai is a person like the sun, and this shouldn't be the case.

No one gave the mute slave any new instructions. From then on, her life was to protect her new little prince.

It's snowing again. There's so much snow in the north.

She saw the princess stretching out her hand from the window. The princess was confused because there was a corridor eaves outside the window, so how could she catch the snow?

The mute slave heard the princess's low and soft voice, and the princess said softly:

" Lord Lu, it's snowing again. "

Half a month after that day in Kuangcheng, the news of the death of Jingbei King Lu Chenan, who had become famous throughout Dayin and was known as the new god of war, reached the capital, and at the same time, the news of Zhang Dahu's death also reached the capital.

Princess Kunyi's wife and the Northern God of War Lu Chen'an died.

Zhang Dahu, general of the Beidi Left Army, died.

This time, the God of War died at the hands of a foreign spy, and Zhang Dahu died at the hands of the princess.

Princess Kunyi killed the deputy commander of an army. She really killed him without any hesitation. No one was prepared. Even Zhang Dahu probably didn't expect Princess Kunyi to dare to do this until the sword pierced his chest.

The peaceful capital was once again alarmed by news from the north, it was Princess Kunyi again!

When the two pieces of news from the north were received, it was the evening of the capital, and the entire Yangxin Palace was so quiet that you could hear a pin drop. Everyone was very careful, because the emperor's headache was so serious that he could not stand any noise, so the entire imperial city was like a coffin, with oppressive silence everywhere. Even the palace servants in other palaces far away from the Yangxin Palace were used to walking lightly and speaking in a low voice.

There were still endless memorials to review every day. Only after becoming an emperor did he realize that so many things were happening in Dayin every day.

Emperor Jianzhao just got angry in the court during the day. It was because he had read the memorial of the Minister of Rites for 10,000 words but had not seen anything serious. It was all about Yao, Shun and Taizu. His head was aching already, and he could no longer suppress his temper. He called the people in and had the guards beat them up. If he didn't flatter or talk nonsense, he couldn't talk about the serious matters. Every memorial was like this. How could he sleep or eat?

Therefore, at this time, all officials were learning how to make things clear in a few words and to remove those words of praise from the memorials they had not yet had time to submit. The smart ones understood the emperor's requirements better and had learned to write the main matters in the front and then go into details at the end.

Emperor Jianzhao in the Yangxin Palace had just finished reviewing a memorial when he heard someone outside come in to report:

The Queen Mother asked Miss Mingpei to bring the soup.

Xu Shixing threw the memorial on the table and looked forward.

Then Ming Pei came in carrying a lunch box.

Here it comes again – soup.

## Chapter 91

Xu Shi raised his eyes and looked forward:

Ming Pei came in wearing a plain cape and carrying a rosewood food box, bowing gracefully.

Xu Shixing rarely spoke to her in the past, but today he couldn't help but speak: "I clearly said that you don't have to deliver soup to Shoukang Palace." His tone was filled with uncontrollable irritation. After he finished speaking, he looked at Jixiang and asked him in a puzzled tone: "

Did I say that? "

Jixiang stammered in response.

Xu Shixing sneered. It was fine if his mother pretended not to hear it, but why did Zhang Jinyu pretend not to hear it? The life-saving grace was so effective. Should he drink the soup she sent until the day he died, or would he be ungrateful? Or did he know that she was his cousin?

Thinking of the word "cousin", Xu Shixing felt as if he was pricked by a needle, and his heart shrank in pain. Without giving him room to avoid it, Xie Jiayi's words that Zeng Qingling had said drilled into his mind:

" Brother Crown Prince, I only want to be your cousin , not your Crown Princess. "

" Hello, cousin. "

She knew then , she knew he had lied to her.

Xu Shixing suddenly lost the energy to pursue the matter . He was not even interested in talking . The overwhelming loneliness and fatigue swept over him , catching him off guard and making him powerless. He waved his hand , just wanting Zhang Jinyu to get out and leave quickly. But Zhang Jinyu not only did not leave , but also took off his cloak. The little maid who followed him came forward and collected the cloak that fell to the ground.

It was late autumn , and Zhang Jinyu was wearing a thin soft silk under her cloak , which fit the 22-year-old woman's vibrant and mature body like flowing water. She seemed very shy , but she suppressed her shyness , leaned forward and kowtowed , her voice trembling:

" Your Majesty, the Queen Mother asked me to serve Your Majesty tonight. "

When the woman leaned forward, her charming curves were revealed. She was beautiful, yet fragile, and shivered, making her even more pitiful and moving. The palace maids in the Yangxin Palace lowered their heads, not daring to look any further.

Xu Shixing looked at her indifferently. There was no emotion in his voice, just as calm and even as always: " I will give you one last chance. You can choose from all the talented people in the court. You can also leave this palace. "

Zhang Jinyu, who was lying on the ground, trembled, but still said stubbornly: " I want to serve your majesty. "

The people he wanted to keep tried every means to escape from here, while the people he wanted to send away clung to this rich and noble palace. This was absurd, as if there was no end to death.

Xu Shixing curled the corners of his lips, with a slight sneer, he reached out and took a copy from the memorial that the palace servant had brought over, and said lazily: " Then cousin, wait a minute, I am not feeling well. "

Zhang Jinyu looked up, her face flushed like a drunk, her eyes filled with tears, like water: " Your Majesty, do you think I am willing to be so self-deprecating? Your Majesty, don't you know what kind of person I am? The Queen Mother ... asked the nanny to give me food ... The Queen Mother is worried about Your Majesty ..." Zhang Jinyu's voice was as soft and tender as water, just like her body, with a hint of charm. The three words she whispered were " Beauty Drunk " , which refers to the medicine that beauties in the palace who were serving the emperor for the first time could take to help women gain favor after receiving the emperor's favor.

Many people outside the palace asked for this medicine. It cost thousands of gold to make a beautiful woman drunk, and it was said to be very effective.

Zhang Jinyu tried her best to remain dignified, but her eyes seemed to contain hooks, and her whole body seemed so smooth that she could fall out of her soft silk robe and let anyone pity her.

Jixiang and Gaosheng, who were serving beside them, held their breath and lowered their heads, waiting. But even at this point, the warmth of the hibiscus tent was not what they had imagined, and they were greeted by the emperor's blatant mocking voice:



" So, is it your mother who wants you to sleep with me, or is it me who wants you to sleep with me? "

After His Majesty said this, the palace servants dared not even breathe.

Emperor Jian Zhao said coldly, " I am not feeling well. " He curled his lips again, " If my mother insists on doing this, I will obey your orders even if I am not feeling well. "

When Zhang Jinyu was helped out, she was extremely ashamed and angry. Every word of " I'm not feeling well " from the emperor seemed like a severe humiliation to her face.

The emperor who induced physical discomfort, this is the evil concubine who caused the disaster! Neither the queen mother nor she could bear it.

Even at this point, the person was still withdrawn. The Empress Dowager in Shoukang Palace was about to break her nails. She had planned it well. Jin Yu's body could be adjusted slowly, but she would first be favored and occupy a high position. Even if she couldn't give birth in the end, it didn't matter. There were many bright and beautiful girls in the Wang family who could give birth. When the baby was born, it could be put under Jin Yu's name. The key was to determine Jin Yu's position.

After so many years of entanglement, His Majesty just said that the late emperor had said that " she would not be promoted . " The Empress Dowager felt that this was a slap in her face in front of the world, leaving her niece who looked so much like her without a name or status. She just didn't believe that she had really sent someone to the emperor's bed. With such great kindness, how could the emperor not give her a position! The emperor could mistreat anyone, but if he had any conscience, he couldn't mistreat the flesh and blood of the Zhang family! But even at the step of sending someone to the dragon bed, there had been no progress for so many years!

Zhang Jinyu cried in her aunt's arms. The empress dowager patted her gently and comforted her: " Don't blame you, blame your aunt for being anxious. " At this point she looked at Aunt Liu: " Do you think His Majesty will really not be able to-- " The rest of the words were difficult to say. Madam Liu didn't dare to nod her head at this. If she were her, she really should ask the imperial physician to take a good look. But in the past two years, His Majesty has become more and more majestic and unpredictable. Anyone who dares to say such a thing is like jumping into the frying pan. Thinking of the frying pan, Madam Liu couldn't help but shudder. It hadn't been a year since His Majesty ascended the throne, and someone in the Yangxin Palace was cooked directly for colluding with the harem. Since then, the servants in the Yangxin Palace have been like gourds with sawed mouths. They dare not say a word outside, and no matter how much money they are given, it doesn't work.

was only helped by Miss Ming Pei .

Just mentioning His Majesty, Aunt Liu felt cold in her heart. She really didn't know where the obedient Prince had gone. Sometimes Aunt Liu even thought that instead of looking for an imperial physician, it would be better to find a high monk or Taoist priest to come to the palace to exorcise evil spirits. His Majesty was such a good child when he was still in the East Palace. How come he has completely changed now? Maybe he was taken away by a ghost? According to the saying, the true dragon emperor can't ...

Before we could even finish our conversation, we heard urgent news from the north!

The empress dowager was surprised: " Didn't the victory report come the day before yesterday? What else could have happened? " Speaking of the victory report, the empress dowager felt upset. How come her brothers and nephews from her natal family didn't make any progress, but all the credit was taken by that Lu Chen'an and Xie's army, and all was piled on Princess Kunyi! At that time, the empress dowager had to force a laugh, and she had to laugh for a whole day. She laughed so hard that she came back that night with a belly full of anger, but she couldn't even throw a teacup! It was a national event, but the empress dowager of Shoukang Palace threw a teacup. What would it say if it got out? She was so depressed that she couldn't sleep for several nights, and no matter how many incompetent servants she punished, it was of no use. Soon, the news came, and the Queen Mother stood up and asked, " Lu Chen'an is dead? " This is really – , but before the Queen Mother showed her expression, she heard the visitor continue, " General Zhang, the deputy commander of the left army, is also dead. "

" What?! "

The voices of the Queen Mother and Zhang Jinyu sounded at the same time. How is that possible? The war is already over, how is it possible to die!

" I don't know the specific reason. "

The Queen Mother fell on the chair, Zhang Jinyu wailed and fainted, Shoukang Palace was in chaos. The messenger was in a dilemma for a while. He hadn't finished reporting the letter yet. General Wang, who went out of the Duke of Ying's Mansion, lost his military power and was directly taken away by the Jingbei Palace, which held the emperor's handwritten order to lead the party. This ... he still said he would not tell.

At this time, in the Yangxin Palace, Xu Shixing couldn't believe it . His Majesty, who was always calm, had walked around the palace several times. He stopped and looked at Jixiang and said, " Dead ... dead? ... Really dead? "

Jixiang responded quickly: " Both the memorials and the letters from the soldiers said it clearly. The prince was killed by spies. General Zhang-- " He hadn't finished talking about General Zhang when His Majesty nodded and murmured: " He died for his country. " Jixiang lowered his head, thinking that two people had died, but His Majesty only heard one ... General Zhang had stabbed the princess. If this got out, it would be a major event that shocked the court and the public.

Even if it doesn't get out now, the capital will get the news from the north tomorrow. The princess didn't stab him secretly, but stabbed him in public with the charges of " cowardice ", " cunning " and " harming comrades " , and drew her sword in front of the three armies.

His Majesty seemed not to have thought of this at all. His Majesty, who was always calm, seemed to be completely unable to calm down at this moment and walked in circles.

Xu Shixing arrived in front of the hall, stopped suddenly, exhaled deeply, and looked outside. He saw a bright moon in the clear night sky. Then he realized: the moon was almost full.

By the next day, the news from the North had spread to everyone.

The whole court was in uproar.

It was not only the fall of the new god of war who had just risen in their Dayin, but also the direct killing of the general by the princess.

" Handle severely? " The emperor on the throne looked at the person who made the suggestion, it was the censor Song Ziming. Without the support of the Qian family and suppressed by the princess, Song Ziming gave up the original road to becoming a prime minister and took a different path, starting as a censor. In terms of ability, this Song Ziming is indeed capable. If one way is blocked, he can open another new way. At this time, in order to move up, Song Ziming has no choice but to cling to the thigh of the Duke of Ying. As soon as Song Ziming finished speaking, the court officials all looked at Liu Shaoxian, who was also an imperial censor. It was because Song Ziming and Liu Shaoxian had a grudge in some previous life. If Song Ziming was like a mad dog, then Liu Shaoxian was like a wild dog, biting Song Ziming tightly. When Song Ziming arrested the princess, Liu Shaoxian would report her merits. The two had been at loggerheads for many years. At this time Liu Shaoxian did not move, but just snorted with disdain, because he had already noticed that the emperor had moved. As expected, the emperor's voice was unusually gentle, and it made the people below feel creepy.

" Tell me what a strict method is? "

" The princess acted recklessly without permission and wantonly killed our meritorious generals. This is truly an unprecedented and horrific atrocity. I think— "

But the emperor didn't want to listen anymore, " Who said the princess had no orders? Everyone in the north is watching. The princess is wearing a yellow belt bestowed by the late emperor, holding in her hand the ' As if I am here in person ' bestowed by the late emperor , and even the sword she used for beheading is the imperial sword bestowed by the late emperor, which can execute first and report later. " Xu Shixing looked at the ministers below who had their own thoughts, but thought to himself that after not seeing them for a few years, Zhao Zhao had become so steady in his actions.

He was almost stunned for a moment. He couldn't imagine what Xie Jiayi looked like like this.

" Attached to the letter is the evidence verified by General Ji De that Zhang Dahu lured Zhao Yi and Jiang Gan into Kuangcheng. Later, he watched the two generals trapped in Kuangcheng without orders. But just five days ago, he tried to lead troops to pursue the King of Beidi on the grounds that " generals are not subject to orders from the king " . If it weren't for Ji De's rescue, the left army he led would have fallen into the trap of Beidi. Do you think he should be executed for killing his comrades out of selfish jealousy? "

" Or do you want me to ignore the power bestowed by the late emperor and commit the greatest unfilial act? "

Emperor Jianzhao asked Song Ziming's face.

Song Ziming clenched his tablet tightly for a moment, unable to find a better excuse to refute. Liu Shaoxian arrived at the battlefield. He immediately stood up and reported that Song Ziming tried to confuse the public and slander Princess Fuguo, and his motives were impure. He just didn't know if there was someone behind it.

Everyone in the court gasped when they heard this. Liu Shaoxian was so bold! Everyone knew that Song Ziming was a dog of the Duke of Yingguo's mansion. This was directly targeting the Empress Dowager's mother's family!

Chen Lichuan, a young and promising official of the Taifu Mansion, touched his nose and cleared his throat, then exchanged a glance with the Left Vice Minister of the Ministry of War who was promoted by Xie Jiajun. Both of them, like the elderly Duke Yingguo, acted as if nothing had happened. They remained silent, holding the jade sceptre in their arms, and watched a new wave of defense and criticism unfold in the court under various pretexts. After the court session ended, Emperor Jianzhao changed out of his court robes when he heard that the empress dowager had brought people to the Yangxin Palace in person. At this time, they had already reached the main hall. Xu Shixing curled his fingers, waited for the palace maid to arrange his clothes, and then walked to the main hall.

Three years had made the former Concubine De even more elegant and noble. Few people could remember the plain and simple Concubine De. Now, the one sitting in the main hall was the mother of Emperor Dayin, the extremely noble Empress Dowager. Ming Pei, who was standing beside her, had cried so much that her eyes were swollen. Her eyes were drooping with hatred that made her want to chew human flesh. Xie Jiayi had destroyed everything she had!

Zhang Jinyu's face had changed so much that those who knew her were shocked. She had lost her once dignified and charming appearance, and her face even had a gloomy and mean look. In Zhang Jinyu's opinion, everything was just because of the ridiculous jealousy of the princess at the beginning. But because she was a princess with wealth and power, this jealousy could destroy all the hard work of her and her brother. How could she not hate! She was tormented by this hatred day and night! She always felt that everything shouldn't be like this. They worked so hard, but the princess just relied on her family background. She was obviously not as good as her in everything, but she could destroy her! She hated! She had never hated someone like this before!

"Your Majesty, you said that the princess was innocent and General Zhang was guilty?" Seeing Emperor Jianzhao, the Queen Mother immediately asked for an explanation. Everyone could see that the Queen Mother was really angry this time and she didn't even care about the rules that she always paid the most attention to.

"My dear mother, it was your son who said this. Even if ... , your son can only handle it impartially." Emperor Jianzhao remained respectful as always in front of the empress dowager. The Queen Mother was furious: "How dare you say that your heart is right?" Unexpectedly, upon hearing this, Emperor Jian Zhao smiled slightly and looked at the Queen Mother: "Mother, my heart is naturally biased."

Xu Shixing's gaze was calm, but it gave the empress dowager a bad feeling. She felt that the thing she could not tolerate the most was about to happen in front of her.

Sure enough, everyone in the palace heard their emperor say in a calm voice: "My son wants her to be my queen, so I will naturally favor her."

After these words were spoken, the whole hall fell silent.

## Chapter 92

"I want her to be my queen, so I will naturally favor her."

As soon as these words came out, the whole hall fell silent, as quiet as death , as if all the living people in the hall were instantly petrified. Soon , the tense atmosphere in the hall was like a substance , thick and oppressive, making it difficult to breathe.

The Queen Mother suddenly looked towards Emperor Jianzhao , her dignified and elegant face trembling slightly. She saw from her son's calm gaze that the thing that she could not accept for so many years finally happened.

Zhang Jinyu was so shocked that he forgot all the sorrow and hatred in his heart . He just stared with his eyes wide open and his mouth open.

Is my cousin crazy? Xie Jiayi, even though she is a princess , is already a broken body . How can she be a queen? This crazy world made her dizzy for a moment . She even wanted to laugh ... This is too ridiculous . Should n't a broken queen make the world laugh?

Nanny Liu hurriedly took out the servants who had followed from Shoukang Palace. As for the servants from Yangxin Palace , they couldn't get out ... Anyway, they were all just dumb people who could speak.

The Queen Mother stared at her son with sparkling eyes: " What did the Emperor say? Say it again to me! "

Xu Shixing seemed to be completely unaware of the oppressive atmosphere in the palace . On the contrary , he felt a kind of joy he had never felt before. He still said in a faint voice: " Mother, I want her . I want the princess to be my queen. " Every word he said was light and firm , so that everyone present could hear it clearly.

The Queen Mother was no longer shocked . Her son had never said " want " since he was a child. Never . From that age, other princes would want to skip school, want to play, and later want a pretty girl to be their concubine, but her son had never had that. Apart from the supreme throne, her son should not want anything.

" You don't want it. " The Queen Mother said flatly. Now that she has secured the throne, she can have whatever she wants. Why would she want such a tyrannical and unlearned princess? Just because she is a princess, just because she is noble? What good is there in being like her mother? She can't see that, except for her better bloodline, she can't see how Princess Kunyi is better than the daughter of their Wang family!

After the initial shock, the Queen Mother had calmed down again, and there was even a trace of disdain on her face. This is simply impossible. Not to mention that she would never be able to stand here, not even a single courtier would agree. She sat down again, picked up the tea cup next to her, took two sips slowly, and asked her son: " What do you want? It's impossible for the queen to bring a small sedan in from a side door? The queen must have agreed in advance , her status cannot be surpassed by that of a girl from the Wang family. "

The Queen Mother's tone was filled with contempt for the princess. No matter how noble she was, being married for the second time and being given the title of concubine was all because of her dignity. To put it bluntly, no matter how concubine you are, you are just serving as a concubine to the emperor, and you cannot be noble. She is the queen mother of a country, so there is no need to take her too seriously.

Zhang Jinyu slowly exhaled and let go of his tightly clenched hands.

Xu Shixing looked up at his mother for a long time before he said, " Your Majesty, you probably don't know that I have always wanted to marry the princess. It's not for the emperor's favor, I just want to marry her. " He smiled and said, " Always. "

Everyone was silently shocked, not only by the emperor's words, but also by his smile. The palace servants in the Yangxin Palace were already used to His Majesty not smiling.

Occasionally, a curl of the corners of his lips usually meant that someone was going to be unlucky. Even Jixiang, who had followed His Majesty for so many years, had forgotten that His Majesty would smile when he was still in the East Palace. In just a few years, they had forgotten that His Majesty was once a tolerant master. But these years of fear and trepidation had stretched time infinitely, and they had all forgotten the prince who once occasionally laughed in the East Palace.

The queen mother's expression was calm, still with a hint of a smile on her face, but her chest was heaving violently.

" I hope that mother doesn't know about it. " So he gave her the insemination. At this point, Emperor Jianzhao's tone became slightly cold, and then he became respectful again and said: " Mother, now you know about it, you should love me. " Don't target her anymore.

The Queen Mother stood up suddenly and said, " Your Majesty is exhausted from the busy official duties. Take a good rest and stop talking nonsense. " After saying this, she left with a stern face.

When they returned to Shoukang Palace, the Queen Mother flew into a rage. She had worked so hard to get to this point, but he actually dared to mess with her!

Madam Liu advised: " Your Majesty is confused, but I'm afraid it's useless for Your Majesty to think about it. " So many people in the court are not dead, and many people are eyeing the position of queen. Princess Kunyi? Just the fact that she is a second bride has been seized upon by others. Who knows who will be embarrassed when the time comes.

" He shouldn't think about it! " The Queen Mother slammed the table and sat down.

Zhang Jinyu on the side sobbed, " Aunt, I know that my family background is not as good as the princess', but I will not resign myself to this. I really don't know where I am inferior to her! " She spoke so sadly that even Aunt Liu felt heartbroken.

" Why am I inferior to her ?" This is the question that the Queen Mother has asked herself countless times, like a needle piercing her heart. In the past years, she was trapped in this sentence. As a woman, she really didn't know why she was inferior to her. Especially since the late emperor knew that it was impossible for that person to be, but he still gave all his warmth and expectations to that person. As long as that person was there, the late emperor could not see anyone else.

But why?

The Queen Mother sneered: " I want to see how her daughter will enter the palace this time! "

Times have changed, and the palace has long since changed. She is no longer the palace maid who could only silently restrain herself and accept everything that came ruthlessly. She is the biological mother of Emperor Dayin and the most noble Queen Mother.

Everyone in the palace had their own thoughts, and Shoukang Palace was preparing for a major enemy.

But Princess Kunyi would not even set foot in the imperial palace.

The Xiao is an omnipresent terrorist organization that only respects the imperial power. The mute slave had already told the princess that the child was safe in her belly, but once it came out, the Xiao would start a new round of endless struggle.

No one even knows who the Xiao are, how many people there are, and where they have infiltrated. "Min" has been investigating for so many years, but he only knows the tip of the iceberg. The Xiao is the determination of Emperor Yuanhe to eradicate the roots. It is a very terrifying organization. The only restriction is that they cannot get close to the palace and the temporary palace where the imperial power is located, so as not to hurt the dignity of the imperial power and cause irreparable damage.

The North has long been unsafe for the young master.

"Then let's go to the temporary palace." The temporary palace outside the capital is just right for guards to be stationed and defended. It can be defended like an iron barrel, and it also has the deterrent power of the emperor. In the north, there is the Jingbei Palace. With her people there, they are the foundation and backing for the mother and son.

Mr. Chen stroked his beard, and the truth he vaguely confirmed made his calm eyes boil with blood. Which strategist would not want to be a great strategist! Moreover, the prince and princess had always treated him as a great man, and he had no choice but to repay their kindness with his life. At this time, the world had been settled, and all the variables were in the capital, in the palace, and in those ambiguous relationships that outsiders could not see clearly.

"Go, Princess. We are here in the north." The most important thing now is to give birth to this legitimate child and raise him. Mr. Chen did not dare to offend. He only glanced at the princess's belly and looked away. But he knew in his heart that there was hope. It was the faith of their generation of scholars – the descendants of Prince Min Huai.

This made Master Chen, who was looking at the sky silently, burst into tears. He thought about the years of hardships and humiliation he had experienced in the past, and the ten years of hiding. He thought about his passionate classmates who died for the old things, and he asked himself again and again why he was still alive. And all of this was answered on this day.

With Princess Kunyi's return to the capital from the north, the capital became exceptionally peaceful, but everyone knew that this was the calm before the storm, and everyone was afraid that any external force could ignite a storm.

The princess has always been the center of the storm. After three years, she is back again.

The carriage rumbled into the palace outside the capital. Xie Jiayi changed to a sedan chair.

When passing a courtyard, she turned her head to look. The servants carrying the sedan chair slowed down. This was the courtyard where the princess and the county horse master lived during the autumn hunt. The plaque of Xiao Haitang Palace was still hanging, but things had changed a lot.

The vermilion walls and gate are so lonely.

Xie Jiayi suddenly thought of the night when Lord Lu came back in the night wind and dew, and he stretched out his arms to embrace her. Xie Jiayi pretended not to notice anything, but there was something in Lord Lu's smiling eyes that made her heart hurt and soften.

Three years later, when Xie Jiayi thought of Lord Lu's eyes again, she realized that it was Lord Lu's eyes that made her so heartbroken that day. Lord Lu's eyes, which were as calm as usual, hid a trace of unknown grievance. That was the only time Xie Jiayi saw Lord Lu's grievance. She had wronged the omnipotent Lord Lu. No wonder she felt so uncomfortable even though she couldn't explain why.

Everyone waited quietly. The north wind of early winter blew, and the last fallen leaves were reluctant to leave the dead branches. Ruyi looked at the princess, and she just said calmly: "Let's go. "

From the capital to the imperial palace, how many people lost sleep over the princess's return to the capital, and how many people were waiting for an opportunity to break the current eerie calm – as long as the princess made an extraordinary move, the storm would arise.

But none of them expected that the princess would never come out after entering the temporary palace. Not to mention the imperial palace, even the capital city, Princess Kunyi never set foot in it. The only place the princess had been to was Dajue Temple, but she went there secretly and returned secretly. No one had ever seen the princess.

Some people even suspected that the princess would go to Dajue Temple, but I'm afraid it was all speculation.

After all, the princess returned, but no one in the capital had ever seen her.

In a flash, six years have passed.

Six years, more than two thousand days and nights.

She mourned for him for three years and waited for him for three years.

Six years later, their child is five years old.

In the summer of the ninth year of Jian Zhao's reign, as evening approached, the cicadas' chirping became weaker and weaker, but occasionally one or two chirps remained. In the evening, the wind blew and the heat subsided a lot. The pavilion by the water in the palace was filled with a rare summer breeze, which brought the fragrance of blooming lotus and the fragrance of grass and trees, making people feel relaxed and happy.

The woman in green in the pavilion was leaning lazily against the railing, watching the koi in the pond swimming over from all directions to compete for the bait thrown in.

Ruyi put a cloak on the woman in green and said softly, " My princess, please be careful and don't seek coolness. "

Caiyue is married now, and is now considered an official's wife. She has two children, and is too busy to serve the princess, but she will come in from time to time to chat with the princess. On the contrary, Caixing is still with the princess, and refuses to marry, insisting that she can't find a good one. The princess just lets her do whatever she wants, and she will decide when she finds one.

Even if she never gets married, the maids in Prince Jingbei's Mansion and Princess Princess' Mansion will not live worse than anyone else, only better.

Ruyi looked at the princess who was wrapped in a cloak and watching the fishes fighting for food. He didn't know whether the years in the palace were too quiet or the years were too kind to the princess, he always felt that the princess was still the same as before. However, he looked at the princess who had been leaning on the railing and watching the fish for half a day.



The princess had changed after all. Six years ago, the princess would not have been able to watch the fishes quietly for so long.

A group of people in the distance were escorting a five-year-old child towards them. Ruyi smiled and said, " The young master is here to pay his respects to the master. "

The child walking in the front was the young master of the Jingbei Palace, who had already started to learn at the age of three. Following closely beside him was the mute slave who had been responsible for protecting the young master. She saw in the young master the same intelligence as the little prince back then, a true child of destiny.

What surprised her even more was that she saw Prince Min Huai in the face of the young prince. This made her both excited and panicked. It was because the prince looked so much like the crown princess that she was able to stay safe for so many years, but the young prince looked more and more like Prince Min Huai back then. With a face like this, I'm afraid it will be impossible to hide it in another two years.

Xie Jiayi looked at her son. He was a five-year-old boy with a fair complexion. How did he manage to look like a fifty-year-old scholar? This was the confusion Xie Jiayi often had when she looked at her son. He was a precocious child, or precocious, but as a mother, Xie Jiayi couldn't help but wonder if her son was too precocious.

Although the young master wanted to move forward quickly when he saw his mother, he also kept his teacher's instructions in mind and moved with proper manners. He walked solemnly with his short legs and finally arrived in front of his mother, and performed a proper salute to her in a serious manner.

Then he sat upright on the stone bench beside the stone table in the pavilion, where Ruyi had already placed a cushion.

Xie Jiayi waited for her son to say the same old " Mother, how are you? " , but the little boy, who was sitting upright, asked seriously:

" Is mother okay? "

He looked at his mother with his round eyes.

Xie Jiayi then breathed a sigh of relief. The formal greeting process was now complete, and all that remained was the free process.

" Come here. " Xie Jiayi called her little kid.

The serious little boy struggled for a while, but finally couldn't bear the longing for his mother's embrace. He stood up with a stern face and walked to his mother. Xie Jiayi pulled him to sit next to her.

Leaning against his mother's sweet and soft body, the little boy was extremely happy, but he just frowned and said solemnly: " I'm grown up now, mother, you can't always be like this in the future. "

Xie Jiayi said, " Then go over and continue to sit on your special little stone bench. "

The little boy moved his chubby body, frowned, and tried to speak seriously again: " Since mother wants her son to accompany her, I will sit with you for a while longer. " As he spoke, he moved closer to Xie Jiayi, and sure enough, his mother pulled him into her arms, and he leaned against her contentedly.

There are so many things that Xie Jiayi can't figure out about her son. For example, she can't figure out who her son inherited his temper from. Could it be that Lord Lu was like this when he was a child?

She stroked her son's soft hair from time to time and asked him about his homework today. Since last year, in addition to the original homework, he has also added exercises. The mute slave said that Lord Lu was like this when he was a child.

Since his father can do it, why can't his son do it?

But when she saw that her son's white and chubby hands were already covered with calluses, she couldn't help but ask, " Is it very hard? "

The little bun thought for a while and did not answer his mother's question directly. Instead, he said: " Grandpa Bu told me that the children of the bun sellers outside are still running around and playing every day when I am my age. Is that true, mother? "

Xie Jiayi nodded, " That's right, many five-year-old children still wear open-crotch pants. Do you want to try it? "

Little Baozi: .....

He hesitated for a while and asked his mother a soul-searching question: " Mom, if I were not the prince, but a child of a bun-selling family, would you still be willing to be my mother? "

He actually knew the answer long ago. He knew better than anyone how much his mother loved him. But the five-year-old Xu Chengji still liked to ask his mother these questions, giving her a chance to express her love for him.

Xie Jiayi would think carefully about every question from the little boy. After all, she could feel that her son, like his father, possessed a brain that was enough to crush her. If she didn't listen carefully and answer them, she would not be able to keep up.

After thinking about it, the people in the pavilion heard the princess say to the young master seriously:

" I'm afraid not. Mom can't stand the hardship of selling dumplings, and she doesn't think she can learn to make dumplings. "

Xu Chengji is waiting for a new round of confession: .....

" What would mother do? I could also be the son of a family that sells Begonia cakes ..."

Xie Jiayi thought about it again: " It seems that my mother can only be a princess. "

Xu Chengji's chubby face trembled and he decided to give his mother another chance: " What if I'm not as capable as daddy? " He stared at his mother with his round black eyes.

" That's normal. Your father is truly omnipotent. You can live forever under the shadow of his omnipotence. "

" Shadow ... shadow ..." Five-year-old Xu Chengji originally just wanted his mother to confess her love, but his mother's answer made him frown and start to think about whether he could catch up with his father.

But she heard her mother say: " There's nothing wrong with living under your father's shadow. It's so cool, you can just lie down there and live there for the rest of your life. This was once your mother's dream. " No matter her father, her mother or her incredible brother, each of them was much smarter than her, and she had always wanted to lie down there happily for the rest of her life since she was a child.

Everyone in the pavilion: ...

However, Xu Chengji hugged his mother's neck, put his little mouth close to her ear and whispered: " But mother, the mute slave said that if I don't work hard, I will die. " After saying that, he tilted his head to look at his mother.

Xie Jiayi's hands trembled, and she looked at her son, and said slowly: " That's right, he might die before he grows up while lying there, are you afraid? "

" Mom, will you stay with me? " he asked.

" Yes. " I didn't accompany your father, but I will accompany you.

The little boy finally received a confession from his mother today. Feeling satisfied, he whispered in his mother's ear again: " But I don't want to die. " He also didn't want his mother to die.

Xie Jiayi reached out and hugged her son, and whispered in his ear, " Then mother will take this gamble with you. "

Her gaze turned to the north, the direction of the imperial city.

## Chapter 93

The little master curled up in his mother's arms . Xie Jiayi hugged her son tightly, looked at the water, and said nothing more.

until Caixing brought some snacks that the young master left his mother's arms and resumed his adult self , sitting upright on his own stone bench. He pinched a piece of snack and ate it carefully, drank a sip of milk , and then asked: " What are you going to do later, mother? "

This time, Xie Jiayi didn't think about it and said directly: " Sleep for a while. "

The young master frowned: " Didn't mother take a nap at noon? " Didn't mother wake up from her nap and come here to sit and feed the fish? He turned his head to look at Ruyi, and Ruyi nodded.

" That's why mother said no. " Xie Jiayi felt that she had made herself clear. Seeing her son's disapproving face, she had to explain: " Either there is a poem or it advises people to sleep more in the summer. "

" What poem? " The young master searched for it among the poems he had memorized , but to no avail.

" The lotus leaves are endless and green, and it is best to sleep in the hot summer. "

Xu Chengji: .....

He felt that he could no longer indulge his mother to sleep like this , so he had to act like a teacher: " Mom, have you finished your homework today? Have you practiced your calligraphy? After you have your snack , recite to me the Zhuangzi you read recently. "

Although I often hear the young master speak in this tone , Cai Xing still wants to laugh every time I hear it.

The mute slave was watching the young master from the side , his quiet eyes full of pride.

No one expected that the trip to Dajue Temple, which takes place every year, would encounter danger this year. Every year, this trip is kept secret and the date is uncertain . This year, Xie Jiayi chose the date before the anniversary of Lord Lu's death.

When she and her son were returning from Dajue Temple in a simple carriage that any family in the capital might ride in , she suddenly heard Ruyi's cold voice outside: " Princess, the enemy is attacking. Don't be afraid , you and the young master , the mute slave and I are here with you! " Before the voice fell , there was the sound of swords clashing , and a group of men in black suddenly appeared on the quiet way back.

Every time they traveled, they brought enough guards with them, all of whom were experts , who disguised themselves to protect the princess and her son. But they didn't expect that something went wrong with the guards this time . Apparently, someone had put drugs in their food, which greatly reduced their combat effectiveness.

And the men in black are all masters.

Xie Jiayi immediately realized that there might be a traitor in the palace.

She hugged her son tightly in her arms, completely covering his small body with her own, and whispered: " Ji'er, don't be afraid. " Although there was a problem with this group of guards, the other party probably didn't know that the Ruyi signal had been sent out and they would have soldiers to rescue them.

The problem is to hold on until the troops come to rescue.

Xie Jiayi heard the noise outside gradually subsiding, and the swords were approaching her and her son's carriage. Then she heard Ruyi shouting: " Hold on a little longer, our people are coming! " This made the almost exhausted guards on the princess' side cheer up again.

The other party obviously saw it as well and launched more intense attacks.

The carriage was suddenly startled and was about to lose control. Xie Jiayi jumped out of the carriage holding her son and fell to the ground. At this moment, a sword flashed towards them. Without giving Xie Jiayi any time to think, she only had time to turn over and protect her son under her body, with her back facing the sword flash.

Hot blood spurted out.

It wasn't hers. Her son was clearly under her, but Xie Jiayi still frantically touched her son's little body, fearing that she would be careless and hurt him. At this time, the rescuers had arrived.

Those who could leave left, and those who couldn't leave immediately swallowed poison and committed suicide.

This is Xiao's usual style.

Even death is so swift and happens in an instant.

Xie Jiayi then saw that the blood was spurting out from the mute slave. The moment the princess turned around, she met the mute slave's eyes. She suddenly remembered why she felt that the mute slave looked familiar when she first saw him.

She had seen these eyes in her previous life.

She was the assassin in her previous life who swallowed charcoal, destroyed her throat, and then disfigured her entire face so that no one could recognize her.

After Lord Lu died, she assassinated the emperor and died under a hail of arrows.

At this time, the mute slave leaned on the ground with her sword, and blood kept pouring out, but she didn't care at all, and just looked at the son of the young prince persistently. This was the blood of Prince Min Huai. So smart, and looked so much like the prince!

, she slowly looked at the princess and said with difficulty: " ..... There is only ... the palace. "

Then she fell down. At the last moment, the mute slave breathed a sigh of relief. She should have died long ago, from the moment she changed the medicine for the little prince. If the little prince knew that the princess whom he had tried so hard to protect was dragged into the abyss of this life by a slave like him, he would definitely not want to see him again.

The mute slave looked at the azure blue sky, and someone appeared. That person was so handsome and spoke so sweetly. He said:

" If you want to live, follow me. "

She followed the handsome young man, who was her prince.

Your Highness, she has betrayed the young prince's trust, she deserves to die.

My dear little prince, I know you don't want another child to live your life, to never stop , to hide forever , to wander forever in order to survive.

The mute slave closed her eyes. This was the only time in her life that she had overstepped her bounds, the only time that she had failed to fulfill her duty as a slave. After six years of torment, she could finally die. It was a good death like this.

That day, the fire was raging. Under the firelight, Prince Min Huai's face was as handsome as a god. He asked me to escort the Crown Princess and the child away. The mute slave would always remember the smile the prince had on his face when he looked at the Crown Princess. He said, " Zhen'er, tell the child that Taizu has taught us that the descendants of the Xu family only have victory and defeat, not hatred. "

who was always steady and decisive, hesitated before turning around. He looked at the Crown Princess and whispered: " Zhen'er, you-- " The Crown Princess smiled and replied to His Highness: " I have no regrets and no complaints. " His Highness's dark eyes shone brightly at that moment, and then he turned his back to the Crown Princess and waved his hand for them to leave quickly.

Then it was the Crown Princess. She touched the child's face lovingly, leaving the last hope of life to the little prince. The Crown Princess said, " Everyone knows that I have a beautiful slave by my side, who is good at swordplay and has a foreign accent. In the future, when you are with the child, don't speak unless necessary, and don't use the sword anymore. " The slave, who was still young and beautiful at the time, knelt down holding the child and replied, " From now on, I will be a mute slave. "

Crown Princess couldn't help but look at the young prince again, and suddenly burst into tears, " Let him remember what his father said, it's just a matter of success or failure when they meet on a narrow road, there is no hatred, just live well. " The mute slave finally turned around and saw the usually delicate Crown Princess, wearing conspicuous clothes, holding the dagger that the Crown Prince gave her, which could cut through iron like mud, and walking in another direction. It was not until much later that she found out that the Crown Princess led the thieves away that day and uttered her last words, " You are all thieves who stole the country. Taizu is watching you in heaven! " At the same time, she was stabbed in the chest with a dagger and died.

The mute slave could finally see His Highness, the Crown Princess, and her little prince again. The sun was blinding, and everyone said that she was too beautiful for a slave, and was doomed to a tragic fate. She had spent the first ten years of her life as a slave in humiliation, until the day she was raped and nearly died, when she met His Highness.

No one will bully me anymore, life in the East Palace is so good. The mute slave smiled and closed his eyes.

Xie Jiayi hugged her son tightly. The young master's face was extremely pale, but his voice was very quiet. " Mother, is the mute slave dead? "

This was the second time Xie Jiayi heard her son say the word " death " . A five-year-old child had such a clear understanding of death. She didn't know what the people who had helped her had taught her son.

The son's identity destined him to be different from other children. Facing the mysterious man who was said to be Mr. Lu's swordsmanship master, Xie Jiayi only asked her son one question: " Do you still want to see him? " If her son didn't want to, she would take him away to the ends of the earth, even if it meant escaping before death. Xu Chengji thought for a while and said he did. He comforted his mother, " He is very powerful and has never been defeated by anyone. " The traitor in the palace is an old man who has been serving in the palace. He is diligent and capable. He was promoted to deputy general manager of the kitchen three years ago. He can participate in the purchase of the palace kitchen and is quite trusted by everyone in the kitchen. When the princess and the young prince moved into the palace, they re-checked the people in the palace. This person passed the check smoothly and his background was very clean. When they went back, this person had hanged himself, leaving only a blood letter " The princess bullied others by taking advantage of her power and should be executed . " There are not many eunuchs who can read, but this person was just a low-level eunuch but could read, which shows that he is indeed an ambitious person. He also needs to have a connection, but once he died, this line was broken.

The death of the eunuch named Xiao Ye made the people in the palace panic. It turned out that the place they thought was as safe as an iron barrel might be hiding a ghost inside. Even Nanny Chen, who rarely took care of things anymore, came over and searched her master thoroughly with shaking hands. If something really happened, how could she live? Even if she died, she would not be able to explain to Empress Xiaoyi and Princess Pingyang. " Investigate, I will take Ruyi to investigate! " Nanny Chen, who was almost sixty years old, gritted her teeth. She didn't believe that nothing could be found. Wherever there was a trace, there would be traces.

Ruyi Bubu Caixing on the side nodded.

Xie Jiayi, who had been sitting at the table without saying a word, spoke up: " We need to investigate thoroughly. " Then she looked at the four people in front of her and said slowly: " We should also prepare to enter the palace. "

From Nanny Chen to Ruyi Bubu Caixing, they were all solemn. The palace is no longer the same as it used to be. Once the princess and the prince enter, they will become the thorn in the eyes of Shoukang Palace.

Xie Jiayi brought the secret letter in her hand close to the candle flame and slowly lit it until it burned to embers.

On the note were eight words from Mr. Chen: Be polite before using force, and be polite instead of using force.

Outside the room on a summer evening, cicadas are chirping.

The palace had also received the news. The Empress Dowager of Shoukang Palace was so angry that she sneered: " Look, Madam, what royal rules are there? There is no shame in breaking them! The married princess said she wanted to return to the palace to live. She just said a word and the servants over there went into Haitang Palace to clean up. They totally don't take me seriously! "

Aunt Liu also shook her head, but what can be done? Haitang Palace was a place given to the princess by the late emperor. If there were no rules, there would be no rules long ago. Not to mention that the princess is a widow now, even in the past, she could live there whenever she wanted. Let's not talk about anything else. Now that His Majesty has been on the throne for nine years, what is the harem like now? No one can be on the stage, not even a proper concubine. In the first few years, there were still ministers who dared to say a few words, but His Majesty used an iron fist to tell the ministers that the emperor's family affairs cannot tolerate others' complaints .

Now that Emperor Jianzhao is almost thirty years old, this family affair has already become a national affair. The succession relationship and the stability of the country cannot be delayed any longer. The court has been silent for so many years under the high pressure of the emperor, and now someone is secretly trying to make a move. And Princess Kunyi's entry into the palace at this time will surely cause an uproar.

No one in Shoukang Palace spoke for a while. After a while, the Queen Mother suddenly brought up the past: " What happened to Concubine Sun back then? "

Perhaps too much ice was put in, and the Shoukang Palace was also very cold in the middle of summer. When Madam Liu heard about this person, she immediately shuddered. Concubine Sun was sent to the Yangxin Palace alive and well, and then she was carried out horizontally, dead. The short dagger from the emperor's boots was stuck in her chest.

Later, there was another beauty named Yang, who suffered the same fate.

At the same time, the emperor suffered from a severe headache, which was so severe that the imperial doctors were helpless. After these two incidents, the young palace maids calmed down. It turned out that seeing the tall and handsome emperor, anyone with a little bit of beauty would have some ideas. At the beginning, they used many means, whether it was meeting someone dancing in the imperial garden at the bridge when the handkerchief fell off, or staying up late in the winter night to recite poems and sing songs to the moon while swinging on the swing. When they turned around and found the emperor kneeling down, they were all terrified and overwhelmed by the unexpected encounter with the emperor, or they found other ways to attract the emperor's attention with their elegant demeanor. There was nothing they couldn't think of. Fortune and wealth are sought through risk, so who wouldn't want to take a chance? What if you are the one who catches the emperor's eye?

Later, two beauties died in such tragic ways, and everything stopped from then on. No one would drop their handkerchiefs anymore, no one would be unable to sleep at night due to

resentment, and no one would want to swing anymore. When Emperor Jianzhao passed by, they dared not even take a second look. No matter how attractive wealth and splendor were, or how much more handsome Emperor Jianzhao was than any other year's third place winner, it was useless. One had to be alive to succeed.

Then there was the incident on the day of the beginning of autumn when Emperor Jianzhao got drunk and went to the side hall to rest. Miss Jinyu happened to be taking a nap inside. Later, the people in the palace only knew that the result of this incident was death and that she had been promoted with Emperor Jianzhao. As for what happened in the side hall, they in Shoukang Palace had no idea. When asked about Miss Jinyu, she just cried and didn't say anything. How could the Empress make a decision for her?

Madam Liu thought that if it was anyone else, this would be the third beauty to be carried out sideways. But from her point of view, the blood of the Zhang family might not be able to suppress His Majesty's impatience with Miss Mingpei.

"I want to see what kind of trouble she can make." She also wanted to see what kind of medicine this son, who was clearly held tightly in her hand, was using. If he still had a little conscience, he should not and could not disobey her, the mother who worked so hard for him. The Queen Mother slowly turned the Buddhist beads, and there was a light in her eyes that even Madam Liu dared not look closely. The Xu royal family was full of romantics, and anyone could be a romantic, but not her son. He was not just her son, he was her two sons and a daughter. The Queen Mother showed an ambiguous smile at the corner of her mouth. Princess Kunyi thought she could win by holding a man's heart, but she was wrong. Her son's heart, in the process of watering the tree day by day, had grown together with the tree and had been entangled with the tree.

Only those without a heart can ascend to the highest position. As a mother, she did it for her family and for him. If she still had a heart in her life, she really couldn't survive a single day. In the secluded Shoukang Palace, the empress dowager, who was spinning her Buddhist beads, suddenly thought of the late emperor. The 19-year-old late emperor was the most dazzling prince in the palace, standing out from everyone else. All the whispers and shy smiles of the palace maids were for him. She was no exception. Who could be an exception for a person like that?

It was this person who suddenly turned to her one day and said, "You have beautiful eyes." At that moment, there was deep affection in his eyes.

The Queen Mother raised her hand to touch her eyes, but she dropped it almost instantly and broke the Buddhist beads in her hand.

She thought of the seven-year-old Princess Kunyi finally speaking. She had always been kind to this lonely princess who was as lonely as a little wolf, and it finally paid off. She began to get close to her. The first thing she said to her was: "My queen, your eyes are so beautiful, just like my mother." At that moment, her hand that was stroking the little princess's shoulder tightened. The little princess said it hurt, so she quickly coaxed her and asked someone to bring her some snacks. She looked at the little girl sitting there eating snacks, and thought to herself that you will have a day of pain in the future. At that moment, the queen mother knew that she really hated this child, and hated it very much.

The princess whom she hated so much was going to enter the palace again.



On the other side, in the Yangxin Palace, it was still as silent as usual, with only the sound of His Majesty flipping through memorials.

But Jixiang noticed that the sound had stopped for a long time. He looked up slightly and saw that the emperor had been looking at a memorial for a long time. The weather had been hot for a long time, and finally it rained this afternoon.

The sound of the rain made the always unnervingly quiet Hall of Mental Cultivation noisy. The palace servants walking in it also relaxed their tense nerves. Even if they moved a little loudly and made some noise in the rain, it would not disturb the emperor who had a headache, so the palace servants in the Hall of Mental Cultivation looked forward to thunderstorms.

A summer thunder rumbled past.

Emperor Jianzhao put down the memorial, looked outside the palace, and whispered: " It was thundering, and I don't know where it came from ..." The palace servants on both sides pricked up their ears to listen, fearing that they would miss any instructions from His Majesty, but they did not hear the rest of the conversation.

I don't know what Your Majesty wants to say " I don't know either " .

Only Jixiang, who had followed His Majesty since childhood, understood what His Majesty did not say: I wonder if the princess is still afraid of thunder. His Majesty has not seen the princess for nine years. Six years ago, His Majesty began to be keen on the annual autumn hunt, but during the autumn hunt, the princess never left the palace.

Because Jixiang was young, when His Majesty was still the crown prince, he did not avoid Gaosheng when he was with the princess. So he knew more about His Majesty and the princess than others. At least, he knew more than that fool Gaosheng. When Jixiang thought about Gaosheng holding his hand and asking Miss Mingpei if she was implicated before he died, he felt very sad. But, people like them should die when they are unfaithful.

He knew how good the emperor and the princess were in the past. When no one was watching, the look in his eyes when he looked at the princess shocked Jixiang who saw it for the first time. It turned out that they all thought that the princess was chasing the emperor, and that the emperor at that time was perfunctory to the princess for many reasons. Only Jixiang got a glimpse of the truth. He didn't understand why the emperor would be colder and even ruthless when talking about the princess to the then Concubine De. Later, he didn't understand why everything suddenly changed when the princess was sixteen years old.

Jixiang followed His Majesty to the palace gate and looked at the rain outside.

Jixiang thought that many things would change when the princess entered the palace.

## Chapter 94

The entire upper class circle in the capital and the imperial palace were once again on edge because of Princess Kunyi . The princess, who seemed to have disappeared in the capital for six years , went straight to the palace as soon as she appeared.

Some people feel uneasy, some are thrilled , and some watch silently.

Everyone's eyes were focused on Princess Kunyi's every move , while the other was focused on Emperor Jianzhao's reaction.

Who knew that it had been more than a month since Princess Kunyi entered the palace , and there had been no movement from either side. It was almost August, the chrysanthemum appreciation banquet held by the Empress Dowager of Shoukang Palace every year, and it seemed that the two had not met each other yet.

It seemed that nothing would happen , and that everyone was nervous for nothing. However, those who really understood became even more nervous. This abnormal indifference made them feel as if they were watching an ice surface that could collapse at any time. Emperor Jianzhao went to court as usual, was as diligent as ever , and was as gloomy and unpredictable as ever. And the princess of Haitang Palace seemed to have just changed her sleeping place. really was sleeping . The servants of Begonia Palace knew very well that the princess was getting more and more sleepy. Every morning , the princess would practice martial arts and calligraphy with the young master , and then after breakfast , the young master would continue to study with his master, while the princess would walk around twice, look at the Begonia trees , eat some snacks, and then it would be time for a nap. When she woke up , it was often dusk. The atmosphere in the Yangxin Palace became increasingly tense, and Jixiang couldn't help shrinking his neck , feeling that there was a string under the emperor's nonchalant face , and now the string was about to break. That afternoon, the emperor picked up the brush to practice calligraphy as usual , but suddenly dropped the brush , leaving a stain of ink on the terrazzo floor.

Jixiang stepped forward in a hurry , with only two words in his mind: " collapsed " " collapsed " , His Majesty can't hold on any longer.

Sure enough, he heard His Majesty's voice with a chill and frosty tone: " She's asleep again? " Jixiang's scalp tingled: " Your Majesty, the princess is taking a nap. " The Haitang Palace was now guarded by Ruyi Bubu Caixing and Nanny Chen, and not a single drop of water could enter. All the people who were employed were the children of the old families of the Princess's Mansion and the Jingbei Palace. But at least Ruyi gave him a face, and the two people they sent were assigned a job of sweeping the yard, so they stayed. They didn't know anything else, but everyone knew that the princess had the habit of sleeping for most of the day.

It was ridiculous that Shoukang Palace was still thinking about planting spies, but as soon as they stretched out their hands, they were chopped off by Haitang Palace. Two of them were caught and beaten with sticks while they were sneaking around. Shoukang Palace could not jump out to admit it, so it could only swallow its anger.

Jixiang could only admire them. The people in Haitang Palace were all trained in blood and rain, and they acted more cautiously and without leaks. If they didn't give face, no one would dare to get in. Not to mention Chen Mama Ruyi, even Bu Bu Caixing, now showed her capable and experienced in her laughter and trickery. If others didn't trick them, Jixiang would kneel down and call her grandpa.

Hearing that she had fallen asleep again, this day was wasted. Maybe Xie Jiayi could go straight to sleep. Emperor Jian Zhao was so angry when he thought of this. He didn't know how she had survived these years. He had trouble falling asleep almost every night, but she slept more than before. He gritted his teeth and wondered where she got so much sleep.

Xu Shixing exhaled, picked up the pen and dipped it in ink again, and wrote a murderous " wait ". The dripping ink dripped down along the huge " wait ". Jixiang was grinding the ink while thinking secretly, wondering what the Majesty was " waiting " for . He only knew waiting for " the rabbit by the tree stump ". He thought that at least the princess, the rabbit that the Majesty wanted, had entered the palace. Apart from other things, although the Majesty was still in a bad temper, his headache had improved in the past month.

In the evening of that day, he heard that the princess had gotten up and seemed to be in a good mood. As soon as he got the news, Jixiang ran in to report to His Majesty. He felt that His Majesty was " waiting " for such an opportunity. It was a clear autumn day, and the key was that the princess was in a good mood. It was the right time for old friends to meet. He could see that the princess would not come to help others, but he didn't know if their wise and powerful Majesty could see it.

Emperor Jianzhao was reviewing memorials. Upon hearing this, he sneered without even looking up and said, " Get up if you want. Do I have to go to great lengths to beg for an audience ?" However, when His Majesty was about to write the three words " I understand " , he suddenly changed his tone to, " very much to my liking . "

Jixiang lowered his head, not knowing what the emperor meant. In public, he was the majestic chief steward of the Yangxin Palace, but in front of the emperor, he was just a servant. He dared not say a word when he was not sure of the emperor's intention. In his heart, he could not help but wonder, Your Majesty, why are you still waiting? If you stay any longer, it will be the New Year ... But the emperor was still calm and continued to review the memorials.

A quarter of an hour later, His Majesty suddenly put down his pen, stood up and said, " Go ahead. "

was secretly lamenting " Today will be another day when His Majesty's temper becomes even worse " , was stunned for a moment when he heard this, then immediately came to his senses and shouted: " Prepare your king! " Perhaps he was too happy to suddenly come to his senses, and his voice was unprecedentedly loud. Not only did the palace servants in the Hall of Mental Cultivation couldn't help but look at the obviously beaming eunuch Jixiang, even Emperor Jianzhao raised his foot and kicked him in the calf: " Why are you shouting so loudly? " After that, he ignored him and went out first.

Jixiang was even happier after being kicked. My God, His Majesty greeted the servants today. He looked proudly at Qiuju and Xiahe who were serving tea in the Hall of Mental Cultivation and looked at him in surprise. Has any of them ever heard His Majesty say more than one word to the palace servants? His Majesty never speaks if he can avoid speaking, and never says two words if he can say one word. Not to mention asking His Majesty to say so many words at once, they all felt that His Majesty would be annoyed if they were a little long-winded in their replies. You have all opened your eyes today, right? Thinking back to the past – Jixiang thought back to the past when His Majesty was still the Crown Prince of the Eastern Palace, and he used to be very talkative. But, that time was more than ten years ago.

Time flies. Your Majesty and Princess, everything you said back then is now ten years ago. Jixiang ignored those ignorant people and followed Xin Gaosheng who took over his former position.

As soon as he entered the Begonia Palace, Jixiang felt that His Majesty paused, and then he started forward again. Looking at the garden in front of him, His Majesty stopped again and looked at it with his hands behind his back. Jixiang and others all stood with their heads bowed. No one expected the sudden arrival of the emperor. The people in the Begonia Palace outside the garden knelt down quickly at this time. There was silence outside the garden, which made the laughter of the palace people playing on the swings in the garden clearer.

Jixiang felt like he was going back in time, this scene was so familiar.

This scene had happened before, but at that time he was still the Jixiang who followed the eunuch Gaosheng. Now Gaosheng was following him, and it was a different person.

As soon as he entered the garden, Xu Shixing saw Xie Jiayi watching the palace maids swinging. He had thought about the circumstances under which he would meet Xie Jiayi thousands of times. He had thought about it thousands of times in the past nine years.

He thought he must be cold and arrogant. Nine years passed, and every day made his already cold heart even colder.

But at this moment, he was at a loss to find that his heart was beating uncontrollably. The nine years that had passed made his heart beat faster and his throat choked. His face was still expressionless as usual, but the palace servants noticed that his Majesty's tightly clenched jaw was trembling uncontrollably.

Later, he came to the Begonia Palace. The lonely Begonia Palace had only a few palace maids standing aside to clean up. Even the red of the Begonia flowers had faded. Everything that had lost its color came alive again at this moment.

A field of begonias in front of the pavilion is in full bloom, so bright that it hurts the eyes and makes people feel sad.

In the midst of the bright red begonias, the woman who had obviously become a mother still looked the same as before, with her green shirt replaced by a red one, which should have been plain, but he still saw only Mingmei, who was just propping up her chin with a smile, looking at him lazily. At this time, everyone knelt down, but she was still sitting, and looked over when she heard the announcement.

He met Xu Shixing's gaze.

Almost at the moment of their eyes meeting, Xu Shixing turned away and looked at the begonia under her skirt. Everyone saw the emperor looking away indifferently, expressionless, but no one knew that the heart in the emperor's chest was beating uncontrollably, causing his hand, which had been unconsciously turning the jade ring on his thumb, to stop, squeezing the jade to the point that it was about to break.

When he regained control of his body, he turned his eyes to look at her again, and saw her lazily stand up, bow to him, and then sit down again. As if he had no bones left, Xu Shixing looked at her, almost not knowing what he was thinking.

When he regained consciousness, he had already sat down across the round table.

Everything in the garden stopped, it was so quiet that you could hear the rustling of leaves in the wind, and some leaves drifting down from the trees. Everyone seemed to be aware of this strange silence, and stood with their heads bowed more carefully, except for the two people sitting in the pavilion who seemed to be unaware of it. The still young emperor sat there straight, looking into the garden, and the still young woman sat lazily, leaning against the stone table.

At this moment, no one knew what their respective masters were thinking.

Especially when we met again after nine years.

Nine years later, the 29-year-old Xu Shixing finally met the 27-year-old Xie Jiayi again.

After the blockage that made his throat tight faded, he was finally able to speak: " What are you busy with recently? " As soon as he opened his mouth, he felt a sense of déjà vu that was almost sad. It turned out that since the afternoon when Xie Jiayi woke up from her dream at the age of sixteen, every time they met, he, who was not good at speaking, tried hard to know what she was doing. Or maybe he didn't care what she was doing at all, he wanted to know what she was thinking.

But she no longer cared what he was doing or what he was thinking.

Autumn was here, and Xu Shixing saw a few more fallen leaves falling slowly in the wind.

Xie Jiayi tilted her head to look at him and replied, " I have to make money, practice calligraphy, practice martial arts, and manage a lot of people. " Finally, she concluded, " I'm very busy. "

Xu Shixing smiled almost immediately and glanced at her.

The long years that lay between them melted away in an instant.

She used to be obsessed with the river in the south and making money everywhere, and she told herself that she was " playing " . Now she wishes she could sleep for eight hours out of twelve hours a day, and she told herself that she was " busy " .

The servants of Haitang Palace did not feel anything, but the servants of Yangxin Palace, especially those who came to fill in the position later, all hung their heads and widened their eyes in shock. Did they just hear His Majesty laugh ? Emperor Jianzhao's chuckle made the servants of Yangxin Palace, who already knew that Princess Kunyi was invaluable and should not be underestimated, completely understand that this princess should not be underestimated! Xu Shixing added: " I am also very busy and can only sleep two hours a day. " Even for two hours, he might not be able to sleep well, he said quietly as he looked at the man who slept eight hours a day.

" Your Majesty has endless memorials to read. " Xie Jiayi knew this clearly. She once counted Xu Shixing's busiest day. There were nearly 400 matters waiting for his decision all over the country, 20 of which were urgent and life-threatening. But he was the emperor, and a praised and capable emperor. He deserved it.

" You know? " Xu Shixing asked in a low voice.

" Your Majesty's hard work is a blessing for all the people. " Although Xie Jiayi's words were polite, they were also true. Over the years, it has not been easy to be an official in Dayin, but the people of Dayin have indeed lived a better life.

" You-- " Xu Shixing was about to speak, but was choked by the person who suddenly appeared.

He saw a fair and tender little boy wearing a fitted green robe coming in from the hanging flower gate. The boy didn't seem surprised to see him, let alone afraid. He continued to walk forward, knelt down and saluted, saying in a clear voice: " Your Majesty. "

Xu Shixing raised his hand and called out, then he saw the little boy bow to Xie Jiayi and called out:

" Mother! "

He heard Xie Jiayi hum.

Xu Shixing had always known that she had a child with someone else. But when he saw it at this moment, he was still in a trance and didn't know what day it was, and didn't know what was going on. Why did someone suddenly call her mother?

It was obvious that they were just having a long temper tantrum.

She still looks like the girl she used to be.

Obviously, we agreed at that time.

A lifetime of two people,

In this life, I will never leave you.

## Chapter 95

Xu Shixing felt that he should be kinder to her child . He tried to smile at the child, but failed. He watched her gently reach out and touch the child's neck, and said , " Next time after practicing , don't rush out. " He knew that the child's neck must still be damp , and she was afraid that the child would catch a cold.

The mother and son didn't talk much, but whether it was the child's solemnity and respectfulness or Xie Jiayi's apparent nonchalance , they both revealed the intimacy that only exists between blood family members.

That night, Xu Shixing had a new hallucination. He saw himself holding a small child, who was thin and weak, and looked particularly pitiful . The child's eyes were tightly closed, and his eyelashes were very long , like a small fan , casting a shadow on the child's pale face. He could feel himself holding the child , and his whole body was shaking. He saw himself hanging his head on the child's thin shoulders . He couldn't see his face , but he knew clearly that his heart was full of unspeakable pain. But when he raised his head, his face was still cold , as if nothing had happened.

Xu Shixing suddenly woke up from his hallucination . Before his eyes was the flickering candlelight in the Yangxin Palace and a cool breeze blowing in from the half-open window. He was wearing a loose outer robe. Jixiang walked up to him and said, " Your Majesty just took a nap . It was windy outside , and I didn't dare to close all the windows for fear that Your Majesty would feel stuffy. " The windows should always be wide open when Your Majesty is present.

Xu Shixing asked quietly, " Do you know whose child that is? "

This ..... everyone knows that this is Lord Lu's child. But who dares to say this in front of His Majesty, especially Jixiang, who dares not. Fortunately, His Majesty does not need his answer at all.

Xu Shixing still had some memorials to review. As he looked at them, he felt extremely tired for the first time in many years.

Day after day, it was always like this, there were endless memorials to review, and endless things to do. Dayin was a vast land, from north to south, east to west, and there were constant things happening everywhere every day.

He stood up and walked to the window, and Jixiang immediately opened the entire window.

Xu Shixing looked up at the moon in the sky. The moon was hanging there as usual, not looking at anyone, nor at him.

He knew that the child was Lu Chenan's, and he finally knew who Lu Chenan was, who had given him a sense of extraordinary temperament when he first met him. After investigating Xiao for so many years, Xu Shixing finally knew that the person Xiao had been chasing after was Lu Chenan. Now, Xiao's target was locked on this child.

The dark eyes on Xu Shixing's pale face looked out the window, and outside the window was the imperial city in darkness. The moonlight could not dispel the darkness of the imperial city, but the moon could only shine on him.

He stretched out his equally pale, thin and slender hand, felt the wind blowing over it, and saw the moonlight falling on his hand.

For the sake of the child, she would return to him.

She will.

Xie Jiayi can forgive someone who has wronged her, but Xie Jiayi will never get close to someone who has wronged her again.

Unless – it's profitable.

Profitable. These four words made Xu Shixing smile self-deprecatingly on his pale face.

Thinking of the child, Xu Shixing's heart suddenly ached without any warning. This feeling was like the hallucination he had just had, the unimaginable pain that attacked his heart, unavoidable and inescapable. It was as if the fate he had always feared had finally come, and he could no longer imagine it. Xu Shixing's hand fell on the window frame and clenched the cold wood. Over the years, he had had various hallucinations in many places in the palace, and the self in the hallucinations was always accompanied by Xie Jiayi. It was as if they had never been apart. She was first his crown princess, and later his queen.

But their story in the hallucination gradually changed from the sweetness in the beginning. He didn't even know what happened. He could only feel the increasingly suppressed pain in the hallucination, accompanied by suffocating fatigue.

Later, the feeling in the hallucinations actually became worse and worse, but he still looked forward to those moments when he could enter hallucinations.

There he could see her, hold her, even kiss her, and much, much more.

But even such hallucinations did not come often. Sometimes they would not occur for half a year. But it was these hallucinations, along with these endless memorials, that supported his pale and boring life and kept him going day by day.

But now, she is here.

Xie Jiayi came to his side. The real and smiling Xie Jiayi came.

Xu Shixing gently rested his forehead against the window frame, feeling the real cool breeze at night and the real touch of wood. He smiled softly. This time it was not an illusion, she was really here.

The capital city in August is the place for chrysanthemum appreciation banquets. The Empress Dowager's chrysanthemum appreciation banquet has been held for seven years and has become an occasion that all the noble ladies in the capital yearn for. The venue is chosen to be Fanhua Garden. Being able to get an invitation to enter the garden and attend the chrysanthemum appreciation banquet on that day is a symbol of status. The families who

received the invitations, whether they were unmarried noble ladies or noble ladies with imperial titles, began to prepare clothes and jewelry early.

" If nothing else, our Zhuijin Pavilion's revenue has been much higher than that in July. " The woman who spoke was gentle and amiable. She was already a mother of two children, but she still had a shyness that belonged to a young girl. She was Qian Yingying, who later remarried. She married a general who had made meritorious contributions in the Xie family army and now served in the Ministry of War. Xie Jiayi nodded beside her. She also saw that there were many pearls in the goods that Eunuch Xi had sent back last time. Pearls as big as longan cost two thousand taels each, but a box was sold in August alone.

They stopped in front of the Changzhou crabapple tree that belonged to Xie Jiayi. The crabapple tree was taken care of by someone. It hadn't been seen for a few years and it was growing better and better. A person came out from the side. It was Chen Yinsheng, who was still unmarried in the Taifu family. Don't ask. If you ask, she just wanted to marry His Majesty and become the wife of Emperor Jian Zhao. Otherwise, she would rather practice Taoism. Chen Yinsheng, who looked like a fairy, smiled mysteriously and leaned close to Xie Jiayi's ear to speak.

As soon as the whispering sounded, Xie Jiayi felt that the fairy spirit was about to disappear.

" Some time ago, the Queen Mother wanted to chop down the tree. It was said that the Imperial Astronomical Observatory had calculated that this crabapple tree would shorten the Queen Mother's lifespan. The Queen Mother would only be safe if the ominous crabapple tree was chopped down. "

Qian Yingying's eyes widened when she heard this. She still couldn't get access to such undisclosed palace secrets. Xie Jiayi turned to look at Chen Yinsheng, whose dark eyes showed no obvious emotion. She said, " What a bummer! You've been practicing Taoism for a few years, haven't you? How come you have such profound ideas that are hard to understand? " Chen Yinsheng complained, but Qian Yingying couldn't help asking, " What happened next? "

" Later, " Chen Yinsheng raised his chin and pointed at the tree, " Everything is fine here. "

" Then ... doesn't it mean it's a hindrance ..." Qian Yingying asked in a low voice. Xie Jiayi glanced at her and saw that she had the courage to be curious about such a thing, which showed that she had married the right person.

Thinking back to the time when the other party came to her, the princess, to ask for marriage, Qian Yingying stammered for a long time and asked her, " Will marrying him be useful to the princess ?" " I just want to marry someone who is most useful to the princess . " At that moment, the two looked at each other, and Xie Jiayi replied to her: " Then marry him, he is the most useful to me. " Either don't marry, or marry the most useful one.

Chen Yinsheng glanced at Xie Jiayi, Your Majesty " , you killed that ignorant and nonsense official from the Imperial Observatory. Since he was just talking nonsense, he naturally wouldn't hinder our Empress Dowager. " Then he smiled at Xie Jiayi, " Our filial Majesty is very concerned about the Empress Dowager's affairs. He wanted to investigate the official's ancestors of the Imperial Observatory thoroughly. He was convicted of nonsense and wanted to investigate other people as well. Now, the envoy of the Imperial Observatory was afraid that the fire would burn him, so he stood up to defend the name of the crabapple tree despite the threat



of Shoukang Palace. Suddenly, this unlucky crabapple tree became the most auspicious tree in Dayin. Princess, don't you think it's interesting? "

Xie Jiayi rolled her eyes at her: " I think no one is more interesting than you. The more you practice Taoism, the more you become worldly-minded. Can you stop laughing at the end? It's like a restaurant guest who wants to watch the fun with a big belly. "

Chen Yinsheng immediately changed his smile to a sage-like one, and said with a wry smile: " We cultivators are not so good at doing things. "

Then he said seriously: " Only those who truly have immortal roots dare to enter the world in this way. " " The more you leave the world, the more you enter the world. "

Qian Yingying didn't understand, and she suspected that this was not something she should be able to understand. She heard the princess say directly: " I don't understand, speak human language. "

Chen Yinsheng explained with a smile: " Anyone who looks like an immortal is probably not going to be an immortal. The more guilty one is, the more they will want to pretend to be one. Princess, you should understand that the more selfish one is, the more righteous one will be. The more actions and the louder the voices, the more guilty one is. This is true for many people in the world. Princess, you already understand this. "

As the three of them walked to the other side, Xie Jiayi couldn't help but look back at her Changzhou Begonia.

He met the wife of Marquis Taining who was obviously waiting on the side. The old Marquis Taining had passed away, and now Qin Zhili had become the Marquis Taining, so his wife Gu Xinlan naturally became the new wife of Marquis Taining.

They both saw that the wife of Marquis Taining had something to say to the princess, so after exchanging pleasantries, Chen Yinsheng and the other person went in another direction.

Xie Jiayi and the wife of Marquis Taining talked as they walked. She looked at the place chosen by Gu Xinlan, a pavilion facing the water on three sides, with her personal maid guarding in front, and she knew that this person also had a secret to tell.

" Princess, my child is four years old. " Gu Xinlan said.

Xie Jiayi nodded. Gu Xinlan was amazing to have a child from Qin Zhili. As expected, she continued in a mocking tone: " The princess also knows that my marquis is loyal. "

Xie Jiayi: ..... That is not ordinary loyalty.

" I only succeeded once. "

Xie Jiayi wanted to laugh when she thought of Qin Zhili, who looked tall and strong with a righteous look on his face. But when she heard Gu Xinlan's next words, she stopped smiling.

Gu Xinlan said: " Unfortunately, I am unlucky . After all my efforts , I failed to get pregnant. " Her voice was very low and was blown away by the wind, but Xie Jiayi heard it clearly.

Xie Jiayi's gaze fell on Gu Xinlan's face. Gu Xinlan looked at the princess without dodging, as if she had no idea how fatal the words she said were.

Xie Jiayi also looked at her, and then slowly smiled. This person was more interesting than she thought.

Gu Xinlan, who seemed calm on the surface, had almost torn the handkerchief in her sleeves. When she saw the princess' smile, her heart suddenly relaxed and she could feel the cool

breeze coming from all directions again. The sky was clear and the autumn air was crisp. It was indeed a good day.

Xie Jiayi looked at the water, knowing that Gu Xinlan telling her such a deadly thing was equivalent to handing their lives and property to her. This surrender was very sincere. She not only offered her own loyalty, but also the loyalty of the future Taining Marquis.

Substantial and interesting.

She looked at the mandarin ducks paddling side by side on the water and thought that when a woman becomes ruthless, men have no chance at all.

At this time, Gu Xinlan could say what she wanted, which was the same sentence: " Princess, my child is four years old. "

He is only one year younger than her Chengji, but Chengji was given the title of Crown Prince when he was born. Gu Xinlan's child is four years old. It is clear that Marquis Taining has only this one child, and he is the legitimate wife's son, so there is no plan to ask for a title yet.

" He hates us mother and daughter. " Gu Xinlan said coldly. The existence of the child broke his promise to his sweetheart.

Xie Jiayi finally burst out laughing, " He has lost his virginity and is feeling miserable. " At this point she could not help herself and laughed out loud, this Qin Zhili was also interesting.

Emperor Jianzhao, who was standing on a high tower in the distance and always looking at the water, was stunned. He hadn't seen Xie Jiayi laugh like this for a long time. The days of youth when they were together every day came to mind all of a sudden. Every time Xie Jiayi saw a part in the storybook that she thought was particularly unreasonable, she would laugh like this, laughing until she needed someone to rub her stomach, laughing until her stomach hurt and she couldn't stop, saying, " How could there be such a person ? " , " Is there really such a person? " , " How could someone write such an outrageous thing ?" . Two or three days later, if she suddenly thought of it, she couldn't help laughing out loud.

Xu Shixing stared at her without blinking, as if the ten years of conflict and breakup between them had never happened. As soon as he went downstairs, the girl in blue would rush over, calling her "Prince Brother", asking him to rub her belly and telling her that anyone could think of anything ridiculous in the world.

Meanwhile, Xie Jiayi stopped laughing and said to Gu Xinlan, " Don't worry. "

Gu Xinlan knew that her son had secured the position of the crown prince, and that they had someone to rely on. Her restless heart finally settled down on this day. She looked in the direction of the banquet, and her sight seemed to be able to penetrate the mountains, rocks, flowers and trees and see Qin Zhili sitting in the banquet hall drinking alone. At this time, he must be anxiously looking forward to seeing that person's shadow.

Ten years have passed. Whenever he came home in a good mood, Gu Xinlan knew that he must have met that person. However, after just one look, the smile on Qin Zhili's face would last for several days, and he would stare at the moon and smile foolishly, which made Gu Xinlan lose her appetite.

As the two of them were walking towards the banquet, they met His Majesty who suddenly appeared.

Gu Xinlan hurriedly bowed her head, not daring to look at him any longer, and left carefully.

Only Xu Shixing and Xie Jiayi were left. Xu Shixing pursed his lips and saw that Xie Jiayi had no intention of talking to him, so he spoke himself: " What did you hear just now that made you laugh like that? "

When this was mentioned, Xie Jiayi's mind immediately popped up the image of the tall and strong Qin Zhili clutching his clothes tightly, fearing that he would be flirted with by his legitimate wife. She couldn't help but want to laugh, but she held it back, and her shoulders trembled.

Seeing this, Xu Shixing couldn't help but smile.

Then Xie Jiayi replied to him after holding back a smile for a while: " I heard a strange thing and realized that sometimes real life is much more outrageous than what is written in storybooks. "

In the face of the calculations and shamelessness of real people, the imagination of those scholars who wrote storybooks is far inferior .

Hearing her careful response, Xu Shixing's heart softened. He even felt the autumn breeze in the garden was warm and gentle, as if this was not the cold and harsh August, but the warm and cozy March.

" Zhao Zhao. " Xu Shixing called her name softly in a low voice.

" Zhao Zhao " countless times in the endless darkness and in ambiguous dreams. But for the first time in nine years, he called out in broad daylight, in front of this person.

He saw Xie Jiayi raise her eyes in surprise, as if she was surprised to hear someone call her Zhaozhao.

He wanted to say, Zhao Zhao, please forgive me.

He wanted to say, Zhao Zhao, let's make peace with each other.

He wanted to say, Zhao Zhao, please be nice to me again.

But he cleared his choked throat and could only say: " The banquet is about to start, let's go over there. " At least, he said it – let's.

## Chapter 96

Xie Jiayi sat down at her seat when she arrived at the banquet hall . Many of the other tables were occupied by couples attending the Empress Dowager's chrysanthemum-viewing banquet. Qian Yingying, who looked even smaller sitting next to her husband, smiled at her with her wine glass in hand, and her husband also saluted the princess of their Xie family army.

Qin Zhili was still the dead face he used to be, wearing the skin of a decent and abstinent marquis . Xie Jiayi took a sip of the wine in her glass , thinking that those in the storybooks were abstinent on the surface , and they would all be beasts in the future. But our Taining Marquis, if nothing unexpected happens , will be abstinent for his whole life, which should be the benchmark for the abstinence of the male protagonists in the storybooks. If she were to say, she would just castrate herself, and no longer have to worry about his wife and the dozen concubines his mother married for him in the mansion thinking about doing something bad to him every day. Thinking of this, she whispered to Chen Yinsheng, who was also sitting alone drinking on her right, " How many concubines does he have? "

Chen Yinsheng said without hesitation: " There are seventeen in total. Some are pure and innocent, some are proud and arrogant, some are delicate and charming, some are cute and

lovely ... There is nothing that the princess can't think of that the old lady of Marquis Taining can't find. " It's so enviable, all of them are so beautiful .

Xie Jiayi snorted softly: " He is willing to accept it. "

" What can we do if he doesn't agree? " He first said that he didn't want his wife to feel sad , but then his wife told the circle of noble ladies that she liked these talented sisters very much and wished there were more of them to make things more lively.

Xie Jiayi understood that in his previous life , Gu Xinlan, who had the same reputation of jealousy as her, fought against the old lady for him , against the world full of hostility because of his childlessness , and directed all the dirty water on himself, so that he could not only keep his chastity for the goddess in his heart , but also be praised for being a good man in the capital. In this life, Gu Xinlan understood it early , and he had no choice after she got out of his trap .

Now everyone looks at the tall Marquis Taining, who has a house full of beautiful wives but only one son . Who wouldn't secretly wonder if Marquis Taining is not doing well? Facing such secret concerns from the noble ladies , Gu Xinlan always emphasized with tears in her eyes: " No , it's our fault . The Marquis is fine. "

After she said this, everyone knew that it was the Marquis of Taining who was not good enough. It turned out that the wife of the Marquis of Taining was good at giving birth to such a child.

From then on, the reputation of the ladies of the Marquis of Taining's mansion for being good at giving birth spread, and the ladies of the Marquis of Taining's mansion were liked by the ladies who were going to be mothers-in-law.

Xie Jiayi took another sip slowly. In this life, Gu Xinlan kept her good reputation for herself and pushed Qin Zhili into the wind and frost. What a smart and interesting girl!

She looked forward and saw a couple walking over who were obviously incompatible. They were Song Ziming and his second wife , Qian Yingying's stepsister. It seemed that the girl who once loved her brother-in-law had finally changed under the beating of life. When the censor's wife arrived, she immediately surrounded Qian Yingying and greeted her warmly. Song Ziming's forehead was covered with blue veins, but Qian Lianlian didn't care. She was determined to lead the Qian family and follow Qian Yingying. They were determined to rely on Princess Kunyi behind her sister. Only when her family was good could she be good. If her husband was too good, it would only make Su Yan, that bitch, good. By then, I'm afraid her son would push her son down.

Qian Lianlian hesitated for a moment, but still timidly stepped forward to salute the princess. Unexpectedly, the princess smiled and asked her to stand up, and even praised her, which made Qian Lianlian flattered. She was still happy until she returned to the table.

Song Ziming gritted his teeth and said, " I told you not to associate with them anymore. "

Qian Lianlian nodded in agreement, but ignored him. In this kind of occasion, everyone would attend with their legal wife, but she brought a concubine with her. Song Ziming didn't even leave face for her and her son! When Qian Lianlian saw Song Ziming's face, she wanted to scratch him, but for her son, she had to endure it.

When Qian Lianlian saw Su Yan coming out from the upper position, her eyes were about to spit fire.

Su Yan and Zhang Jinyu came out from the front. When they appeared, everyone who was originally joking with each other fell silent. Even the ladies who were good at dancing in social circles were stunned this time. After all, the Queen Mother's Chrysanthemum Appreciation Banquet was a symbol of status, and they were all proud to get the invitation to participate. Now, how come even a concubine can come in? Is this still a symbol of status? The faces of the wives of the main house were not good for a while.

But this Zhang Jinyu, although she is said to be the adopted daughter of the Duke of Yingguo, in their opinion, she has been treated just as well as the Duke of Yingguo's biological daughters over the years. The old lady of the Duke of Guo loves her like nothing, and even compares her biological granddaughters to her. Not to mention, she is the most loved by the Queen Mother. Some people even say that His Majesty emptied the six palaces for her. It's just that the late emperor seemed to have said something that this girl could not be made a concubine, so she has been wasted until now. But who knows, the future prince or even the crown prince may come out of her belly. After all, except for her, who else can enter His Majesty's Yangxin Palace for so many years.

Xie Jiayi was spinning her wine glass out of boredom. She felt that the voices around her suddenly stopped. She looked up and met Zhang Jinyu's gaze, and the annoying Su Yan was beside her. Seeing two annoying people at once, both alive, Xie Jiayi rolled her eyes and continued to play with her wine glass, not bothering to look at them. Concubine Zhang in her previous life has not even become a concubine in this life, and she still has the nerve to look at her. Xie Jiayi snorted softly and continued to spin her wine glass, listening to Chen Yinsheng at the next table continue to talk about the Zhang family and the Li family in a low voice.

Everyone else fell silent, but these two remained the same.

Zhang Jinyu gritted her teeth at the sight, and Su Yan beside her was even more so. If it weren't for this Princess Kunyi, how could she still be a concubine now? The circle of noble ladies was nothing more than a group of women who were disliked by their husbands but had empty status. But just because she was a concubine, these people dared to look down on her. Su Yan set her eyes on the table of the young master of the Taifu family below the princess. Chen Lichuan, the top scholar of the year and the youngest cabinet minister today, also got married. It was a big deal at the time. He married Lin Pin'er, a cousin who had come to the Chen family to seek refuge after her family fell into poverty.

As soon as Su Yan, who was standing at the top, came over, Lin Pin'er noticed it. She didn't react at all, and continued to sit next to her husband as usual, but the corners of her mouth twitched. No one would be happy to be mentioned together with a concubine. Lin Pin'er was good at poetry and calligraphy, and she didn't know when people started to compare Su Yan with her. Although she had no one in her mother's family, she was a daughter who was pampered since childhood. Although she was born with a delicate figure, she was educated like a boy since she was a child. She would win even if she competed with Chen Lichuan in poetry and calligraphy. She was the most arrogant, especially after her parents died, she went to her maternal grandfather Chen's family and lived under someone else's roof, which made her even more sensitive. How could she stand being mentioned together with a concubine?

But Su Yan seemed to be able to compete with her. She wrote orchid poems at a poetry gathering, and the next day Su Yan's poems about orchids would be leaked. She copied

"Lanting Preface" at a gathering, and the next day Su Yan's "Lanting Preface" would be leaked ...

In the past few years, there has been no peace, and Lin Pin'er was so angry that she only showed Chen Lichuan the poems she wrote in the past two years and then burned them. Even so, there was still a saying that she and Su Yan were the two most talented women in the capital, which made her heart ache.

As expected, Zhang Jinyu opened her mouth and said to Lin Pin'er: " I have only heard of the talents of our two great talents in the capital, but today I can finally see them in person. Madam Lin, you must not act like a scholar who looks down on each other. We are both women, and both are talented women, so we should know and appreciate each other. Madam Su just told me that she admires Madam Lin very much. "

As soon as this sentence came out, Xie Jiayi, Chen Yinsheng and Lin Pin'er rolled their eyes at the same time. Chen Yinsheng had just whispered to the princess about the two special things in the capital, " Actually, it's just that Song Ziming is trying to compete with my brother. In the early years, my brother had completely stepped on Song Ziming. He couldn't go on the path of entering the cabinet and becoming a prime minister, and knowing that he had offended you, he turned around and became a censor, but he still competed with my brother everywhere. " After failing in the officialdom, he still wanted to fight for the position of the leader of the literati.

Chen Lichuan sneered when he heard this. He didn't care about any literary leader, but Song Ziming shouldn't have dragged his wife to promote his concubine. Now that he has embraced the stinky feet of the Duke of Yingguo and praised the Queen Mother, he thinks he can rise up ... Chen Lichuan rushed to the head and took a look. Unfortunately, their princess is back. One stick can beat them all down.

Zhang Jinyu at the top was still smiling gracefully. He took Su Yan's hand and said to Lin Pin'er, " Now I will make a decision for Madam Su and let her join Madam Lin's Orchid Poetry Society. " Then he looked at Lin Pin'er with a smile and said, " The Queen Mother just said that your poetry club is well run. She said that if Madam Su could go in for two days to see it, she would know that there are always people better than you. " The one who was joking was Su Yan, but everyone present was a shrewd person. Who could not hear that he was using the Queen Mother to support Su Yan and force Lin Pin'er to nod.

The scene became even quieter for a moment.

The sound of Qian Yingying carefully putting down her wine glass seemed to be clearly audible in such silence.

Lin Pin'er tried to control herself to show a proper smile, but her face was slightly red. The word " inappropriate " was on the tip of her tongue, but she couldn't say it. She had no one in her mother's family, and it was difficult to marry into the Taifu Mansion. Many sisters-in-law and old women were waiting to see her make a fool of herself. She couldn't cause trouble for the Taifu Mansion and offend the adopted daughter of the Duke's Mansion and the Queen Mother behind her.

She could only turn her face away from the slap handed to her by others, because she had no family to support her. At this moment, humiliation and the pain of her life came together. She stretched out her hand and held down her husband who wanted to speak for her. This was

originally a matter between women. Once her cousin spoke, even her cousin was dragged into it by someone like Su Yan, and would be ridiculed by those drunken young masters and scholars. Chen Yinsheng was anxious and lowered her voice and said, " Princess, my dear princess, everyone has made the decision for the surname Su, so why don't you make the decision for my brother's wife as well? "

The banquet was already quiet at this time, and Chen Yinsheng's suppressed voice was a little bit out of control, and this sentence fell into the ears of many people present. Lin Pin'er next to her looked at the blue-shirted princess at the top. She knew that this was the famous Princess Kunyi of Dayin. When she married, the princess was no longer in the capital. Today was the first time she met the princess in person.

She moved her lips, not knowing what she was expecting. She always felt that she had a connection with the princess. When she was still at her mother's house, it was the princess who helped them avoid the natural disaster. To those of them who came from the south, the princess was more than just a princess, she was also a savior and a support.

The scene became increasingly quiet.

The princess let go of the wine glass in her hand, sat up straight and said, " Okay, I will also make a decision for Madam Lin. " As she spoke, she knocked on the table, and Ruyi came forward to listen to her orders. Everyone heard Princess Kunyi say, " Come here, take this concubine out. "

Everyone: .....

Lin Pin'er turned around blankly and looked at Su Yan, whose face was flushed.

Then they heard their Princess Kunyi say: " It's a nice banquet at Fanhua Garden, how come even concubines are allowed in? Do you want to save the dignity of the ladies of the imperial court? Do you want to save the dignity of a princess? This princess hasn't been to the capital for many years. Now it's so chaotic that the wife of the principal wife has to sit with the concubines and drink together? What's the point of being a poet? If you want to write poetry, go and play with the girls in your own circle. Why are you pulling Madam Lin to your side? "

" That's the Orchid Poetry Society, not the Little Star Poetry Society. If you want to broaden your horizons, find a place to do it yourself! " The wife is the moon and the concubine is the star.

As she spoke, she knocked on the table impatiently: " There is also the so-called double special in the capital. This princess does not like it. Whoever mentions it in the future will have his tongue cut off. This princess announces today that there is only single special in the capital, not double special. "

Lin Pin'er's heartbeats were beating fast with excitement, and her little face was rosy as she looked at the princess:

This is Princess Kunyi!

This is their princess!

Lin Pin'er held her mouth with a handkerchief, with a pair of shining eyes on her pink face, staring at their princess in blue. She also wanted to sit next to the princess and talk to her. What should she say to her ? Lin Pin'er, who could speak like a poet, was already anxious about what she could say to please the princess .

Qian Lianlian also looked at the princess with shining eyes. She yelled in her heart and cursed Su Yan, this restless guy! She was obviously a concubine, but she was about to squeeze her, the legal wife, out of her place. Song Ziming looked down on them like the apple of his eye. Her son studied hard just to get a reward in front of his father, but Su Yan was uncomfortable. Song Ziming didn't even care about the child and chased after her to coax her. Even so, Su Yan still felt that she and her child were wronged. When she had to perform the concubine ceremony during festivals, she was humiliated as if she was dying! Su Yan could humiliate him for half a year by bringing her son to kowtow to him. During this half year, Song Ziming would not step into her room as the legal wife, and would not look at her son more, just because she did not stop Su Yan from kowtowing in front of her parents.

She would not stop him. As the legal wife, she wanted this head! In the future, her son would take over the Song Mansion, and she would be the old lord of the mansion!

Qian Lianlian's eyes showed excitement when she looked at the princess, but also contempt when she looked at Su Yan. Such a strong-willed and principled woman was not allowed to be someone's mistress or concubine. If she really wanted to die, who could stop her? She would have died long ago. Those who didn't die just didn't want to die. Her husband Song Ziming's face beside her was pale and blue, which made Qian Lianlian feel happy and painful. Her nails dug into her palms. If she hadn't chased after this brother-in-law back then, maybe she would have had a chance to find someone who could treat her wholeheartedly. If it had been back then ... it was too late to say anything, and now she could only fight! If her husband didn't help her and her son fight, she would cling to someone who could help them fight!

She will fight and struggle as long as she lives!

The princess gave the order, and before Zhang Jinyu could speak, the guards followed the two maids forward, and the two strong maids directly carried the delicate Su Yan out. There were people who wanted to stop them, whether it was Song Ziming or the maid Zhang Jinyu brought, they were directly pushed away by the strong maids. If they dared to move forward again, the guards would stop them, and no one could move.

Su Yan felt like she was having a nightmare again, the humiliation from more than ten years ago was replayed again! This time it was even worse, the people watching were all people in the circle she wanted to enter. She was confused and could only look at Song Ziming with tears in her eyes. However, Song Ziming, who had the final say in the Song Mansion and could protect them, was helpless in front of the princess.

Song Ziming looked at the princess with red eyes. He really wished that this domineering woman would die!

Xie Jiayi was shocked when she met Song Ziming's eyes. Her face turned red as if she was about to eat someone. She quickly called out, " Ruyi. " Why did Mr. Song's eyes look like a ghost? He hated her so much that she didn't even need to cultivate her spirit ...

Ruyi stepped forward and slapped Song Ziming in the face: " Who do you think you are? How dare you look at our princess like that! " It was really bad luck that the princess was scared and had a nightmare. The next day he would come to the Song Mansion and make them live in unrest.

This slap once again silenced everyone in the garden.



Everyone found the familiar feeling of the old days. The princess had been away from them for almost ten years, and when she returned she was still the same princess!

It's been a long time since I've seen someone dare to slap an official in public, let alone a censor! Some people think that this is really the return of the princess, and all those lost years have returned. This is the style of the princess's mansion. If you don't accept it, I will beat you! No matter how many people are in front of me, if you make me unhappy, I will beat you! But thinking about it carefully, it seems that the only people who really fought like this in the Princess Mansion were Song Ziming and the adopted daughter of the Duke of Ying. These two people really have a lot of tricks ... Everyone looked at them meaningfully and remained silent for a while.

Song Ziming was ferocious but he only dared to say to Ruyi: " How dare you hit an official appointed by the court ! I am the censor of Dayin! " Censors are special in a court. They have low ranks but great power. Even if they give the most unpleasant advice to the emperor, the emperors have never beaten or killed censors since ancient times. This is a tradition formed over thousands of years. Not accepting advice is a proof of a tyrant. This is also one of the reasons why Song Ziming, who offended the princess, chose the path of censor.

" I'm beating those who dare to disrespect our Princess Mansion and Jingbei Prince Mansion! I'm beating those who can't control their concubines and dare to bring them in to offend the Princess! Our Princess Mansion and Prince Mansion still respect the officials appointed by the court, but we are ashamed of this hypocritical villain who blatantly favors his concubines and kills his wife! Lord Song is a censor, but I haven't seen Lord Song criticize me for favoring my concubine and killing my wife and indulging my illegitimate son. Lord Song can stare at others, but if he dares to stare at us again, our two mansions will be unhappy. "

The last sentence was a warning. It was not only about Song Ziming's staring at Princess Kunyi, but also about Song Ziming's staring at them since the princess came back from the north. However, scholars were really bad at staring at people, so Ruyi had sent people away early. As a result, during the days when the princess returned to Beijing, Song Ziming began to find opportunities to criticize their Princess's Mansion. Even the vegetable buyers in their mansion were criticized by Lord Song for bullying the people. The person in charge of buying vegetables was wronged. He just said a few more words with his hands on his hips because he couldn't reach an agreement on the price with the vegetable seller. He didn't even dare to curse, because if Eunuch Ruyi knew about it, he would be beaten.

Song Ziming clamored to meet the Empress Dowager and the Emperor.

Xie Jiayi's head was hurt by the shouting, so she waved her hand and said, " Take him away. " Hurry up and go to the emperor, hurry up and complain to the empress dowager, she wanted to see what Song Ziming was capable of now. Humiliate him, she was going to humiliate him! Don't say he was really wrong, even if he was not wrong, she would humiliate him anyway! She remembered every word he said about her deceased son! Xie Jiayi sneered at Song Ziming who was being taken away, you'd better be able to jump out of it so that she can hit him harder. No one spoke at the banquet for a long time. Zhang Jinyu had already turned around and went to the back in anger. Xie Jiayi was still too lazy to look at it any more, and she went to complain.

She waited. Instead of waiting for them to secretly surround her and use tricks, it would be better to tear her face off directly and fight head-on to see who was really confused.

A young imperial censor on the table below also stood up quickly, wiped his mouth, and said to Princess Kunyi: " Princess, I will go and report Song Ziming, that bastard, for you! " It was Liu Shaoxian, who bowed and followed those people. Who could be more familiar with using moral etiquette to attack people than him.

If someone else said this, the officials present would think that this was a madman trying to curry favor with the Princess's Mansion, but Liu Shaoxian ... he was like a madman in the first place, especially when he met Song Ziming and the Duke of England's Mansion, he became even crazier.

Although the ladies present could not say much because Su Yan was favored by the Queen Mother, they all applauded the princess in their hearts. The wives of the principal wives have a natural opposition and hostility towards the concubines, especially the concubines who can make the husband favor the concubines and destroy his wife.

Slowly, the atmosphere became lively again and everyone started talking and drinking again, as if nothing had happened just now.

Chen Lichuan said to his wife distressedly: " Pin'er, you have been wronged, I-- " Who knew that his wife just waved her hand, " Don't say anything, I'm just getting ready. "

What are you preparing for? Chen Lichuan was stunned, and saw his wife holding a wine glass, looking at the princess with sparkling eyes, then turned to him and smiled: " Do you think this will work? I'm going to talk to the princess. " After she finished speaking, she looked at him expectantly, which made Chen Lichuan feel strange. His cousin had never been so nervous about him before.

" I am here with you, so I should toast to the princess. "

The two of them came in front of the princess. Lin Pin'er, who was always considered to be sharp-tongued, said shyly, " Princess. " After calling her princess, she didn't know what to say next. She heard that the princess didn't like to listen to people's nagging, and she was afraid that she would annoy the princess.

Xie Jiayi looked up at her, thinking that although they were both from poor families, people were different. Even if Lin Pin'er was in Su Yan's situation, she would live a different life. It was much more comforting to look at a girl like this. She raised her glass and drank, then put it down and said, " The nightmare of the surname Su has begun. I won't bother you with so many small thoughts in the future. "

Lin Pin'er shyly watched the princess nod her head, holding the cup that she had drunk first, and unexpectedly felt powerful, dependent and secure again in front of the princess .

Chen Lichuan hurriedly said to the princess: " I thank you for speaking up for me. "

Xie Jiayi then looked at Chen Lichuan, the dandy who had been a frequent brothel owner in his previous life. Perhaps that was just his mask, and now this was the real him, commanding the court and showing deep affection for his wife.

She said calmly: " You don't need to thank me. Just remember my kindness and be loyal to me in the future. "

Chen Lichuan was stunned, but it was Lin Pin'er who laughed first, and then he laughed and said, " I will die for the court and the princess. "

At this time, the emperor and the empress dowager's procession arrived.

## Chapter 97

The imperial carriage and the empress dowager's procession arrived , and everyone stood up and knelt to pay their respects. Only one person in the audience followed the late emperor's will and did not kneel before the emperor. Xie Jiayi just bowed to greet His Majesty and the empress dowager as usual.

The Queen Mother and Zhang Jinyu beside her both found it so annoying that they couldn't help but frown.

Emperor Jianzhao and the empress dowager sat at the top , and Zhang Jinyu was left at the side of the empress dowager . When she sat sideways , she glanced at Xie Jiayi's table and saw that Xie Jiayi was still whispering with the daughter of the Taifu Mansion next to her.

Xu Shixing looked in the direction of Xie Jiayi for a while before returning his gaze to the wine glass in front of him . In such occasions, everyone was used to the emperor's gloom and silence, but fortunately today there seemed to be only silence. Chen Yinsheng, who was below, whispered to Xie Jiayi: " Your Majesty is looking at you. "

After a moment, she continued: " His Majesty is looking at you again. "

Xie Jiayi didn't care whether His Majesty looked at her or not . It was good for His Majesty to look at her. His Majesty's willingness to look at her gave her the opportunity to be polite without using force. However , she looked at Chen Yinsheng suspiciously: This Chen Yinsheng , there is something wrong.

Then the Queen Mother suddenly asked, " What about Su Yan's child? That child's handwriting is really good . I like it . There are not many children with such talent. "

Xie Jiayi sneered , pretending to be serious, and asked , " Where is Su Yan's child ?" Su Yan was driven out by Xie Jiayi , and she didn't believe that the Queen Mother really didn't know. At her age , she was still involved in palace fighting, which was really boring.

Zhang Jinyu said awkwardly: " This ... I also like Miss Su's talent , but I didn't expect-- " She seemed to find it difficult to say the rest of the words , and just looked at Xie Jiayi.

Xie Jiayi put the wine glass on the table and If " , said you have something to say, open your mouth and say it . Look at what I am doing ! "

When everyone was holding their breath and listening to the Queen Mother's singing , the princess's " pop " really scared everyone . They really didn't expect that even when facing the Queen Mother, Princess Kunyi would be straightforward and not buy it at all.

They were stunned!

The princess is not domineering. Domineering means bullying people who are not as good as you. The princess is like this no matter how tough the opponent is. For a while, some people even began to think that although the princess does have a bad temper, this can be called " character " ?

Just ask who can do this, to treat everyone with the same attitude. But the princess can do it. The Queen Mother was startled by Xie Jiayi's movement of putting down the cup. She had been the Queen Mother for nearly ten years and was used to everyone bowing their heads and not daring to speak in front of her. She had never seen such a thing before! After being startled, her face quickly turned ugly and her voice became stern: " Why is Princess Kunyi going crazy in such a situation! "

Unexpectedly, Xie Jiayi said directly: " Your Majesty, please take care of your adopted niece. We children from the north are used to speaking our minds directly. I am annoyed by her timid and fussy look. If it weren't for Your Majesty, I would have smashed this wine glass in her face! " The Queen Mother did not expect that someone would dare to speak like that, and she said angrily: " You ... Mingpei said something but praised an official's family, and you are making things difficult for her like this! " The Queen Mother was already brewing a rage, and she was bound to use this matter to teach the princess a lesson, to let her know who she was speaking to today.

" Empress Dowager! " Xie Jiayi stood up suddenly, bowed and said, " Hurry up and have someone drag this Ming Pei who deceived you down and beat him with a stick. If it were in my hands, I would not hesitate to chop him off for deceiving others like this! "

When the princess said this, the queen mother and Ming Pei were so angry that they couldn't breathe, and the others didn't dare to breathe loudly. Many people thought that the queen mother wanted to beat the princess for Ming Pei, but the princess asked the queen mother to beat Ming Pei ... and even behead her ...

Then the princess continued, " What official family? Su Yan was clearly a concubine first and a mistress later. You insist on treating your adopted niece as your principal wife. Aren't you fooling the Queen Mother? "

The Queen Mother was just about to tell the princess to shut up when she heard the princess say: " And Su Yan is the daughter of a criminal. I didn't know that the daughter of a criminal was allowed to enter our royal gardens. Queen Mother, I have a lot of evidence about the daughter of a criminal. Do I need to present it in public? " The daughter of a criminal sounded important to Xie Jiayi with a deeper meaning.

The empress dowager, who was about to fly into a rage, choked up, and Zhang Jinyu's heart also suddenly rose.

They all knew that Zhang Jinyu was the daughter of a criminal convicted by Emperor Yuanhe. Even if the daughter of a criminal was redeemed, she could not get rid of her status as a slave, let alone enter the royal gardens. The Queen Mother narrowed her eyes and looked at Xie Jiayi. Did she have something on Jinyu? If she made a scene in public at this time, Jinyu's path would be completely blocked. The Queen Mother held her breath and changed her tone:

" In this case, Mingpei was negligent and should be punished. "

But she didn't want to let Xie Jiayi go, so she asked, " My princess, do you know what's going on with Lord Song's face? It seems to me that someone dared to hit an official appointed by the imperial court? "

Before Xie Jiayi could say anything, Emperor Jianzhao spoke up: " Lord Song has submitted a letter of apology, saying that he offended the princess, and his colleagues have also reported him. I have fined him one year's salary and demoted him by two ranks... "

Everyone: This ... Lord Song is already a low-ranking official, and he is still worth two levels down? If he weren't an imperial censor, he wouldn't be able to stay in the capital ...

The empress dowager suddenly looked at Emperor Jianzhao, who just looked back at her calmly and said with a smile: " Don't worry about the affairs of the previous dynasty, your son will handle it properly. Today is the chrysanthemum viewing banquet, and you should have a good rest. " After saying that, she raised her hand, and Jixiang immediately called in the singing girls and dancers from the Ministry of Rites and Music who were waiting outside. The tense atmosphere of confrontation in the scene was replaced by graceful singing and dancing and pleasant music.

Zhang Jinyu served tea and water to the furious dowager, and looked at Emperor Jianzhao with infinite grievance. But Emperor Jianzhao just held the wine glass and watched the singing and dancing in front of him, not knowing what he was thinking.

Chen Yinsheng whispered, " Look at how aggrieved Miss Mingpei is, as if His Majesty is a heartless man. I am the daughter of the Grand Tutor's Mansion, and she has already considered herself His Majesty's person before she even gets a chance to take the throne. " When Xie Jiayi heard this, the scar on her left shoulder started to itch. She looked at Chen Yinsheng unhappily. How dare this hypocritical and cowardly guy say such things in front of her ...

Chen Yinsheng also thought of the assassination incident in Qiushou that year . She smiled awkwardly when she was glanced at by the princess, and immediately said: " Princess, his majesty is protecting you. His majesty is doing this for you to save Song-- " When she said this, she found that the princess was looking at her strangely, and she licked her lips unconsciously, " Princess, why are you looking at me like that? " As if looking at a traitor.

Xie Jiayi also lowered her voice: " What benefits did His Majesty give you? " She finally understood what was wrong with Chen Yinsheng. She was obviously a cultivator, but these few words were all on the side of His Majesty, just like a matchmaker.

Seeing that the princess had no choice but to tell the truth, Chen Yinsheng could only smile awkwardly and said, " If this succeeds, His Majesty will grant me a Taoist temple ..." She touched her nose and said, " I mainly think that if the princess remarries, it would be a disgrace to marry anyone. I'd rather be the queen, what do you think? " She didn't utter the word " no " under Xie Jiayi's gaze.

She hesitantly said: " Besides, I think that although the princess's love is over, her marriage is not yet over ..." She spoke in a lower and lower voice. After all, her qi-reading technique was often inaccurate.

Then Xie Jiayi said calmly: " You are not mine anymore. "

Chen Yinsheng quickly confessed: " I am yours. " Now it was done, the princess and His Majesty were a family, no matter whose she belonged to, she was theirs.

" You make me sad, you are not mine anymore. " Xie Jiayi said slowly.

Chen Yinsheng was anxious: " Princess, I don't want the Taoist temple anymore. I can practice Taoism in the family temple. I am yours, Princess ..." When she was anxious, she didn't notice that her sister-in-law had changed seats with her brother and sat next to her. At this time, her arrogant sister-in-law said sincerely in a delicate voice: " Princess, I am yours! "

Chen Yinsheng exclaimed and looked at her sister-in-law, only to see the latter smiling at her embarrassedly, as if saying, " Whether you are the princess's person or not, I will be the princess's person . "

Chen Yinsheng: ..... We are all family, why are we so anxious to hurt each other ...

Chen Yinsheng's five senses were sharper than those of ordinary people. She immediately noticed that the emperor at the top looked at the princess again. It was a pity that she couldn't say more about this to the princess. It was a pity for the emperor's suppressed eyes. She wanted to analyze it with the princess. How many things were hidden in it ...

It is not known whether the Queen Mother and His Majesty were happy about this banquet, but all the other officials and officials came with great expectations and left with satisfaction. The presence of Princess Kunyi always brought changes and excitement to their monotonous lives, and also changed the pattern of the upper circles in the capital. Now no one dared to say anything about the two talented women. No one dared to be sarcastic to Lady Chen, an orphan whose parents had both passed away and whose family was in decline. Everyone could see that the princess was protecting her. Who dared to offend the person the princess wanted to protect?

Xu Shixing waited for a long time in the palace but Xie Jiayi didn't come. She had clearly given him a message saying she had something to say, and she nodded. Xu Shixing wanted to go over by himself, but he stood up and walked a few steps before sitting back down again. He exhaled and asked Jixiang to send someone to see what was going on.

Jixiang replied that the princess was about to come over, but she found that her jade pendant had fallen on the way and was looking for it everywhere.

" Jade pendant, what jade pendant? " For the sake of a jade pendant, she forgot what she promised him.

Jixiang shuddered, and his voice was weak when he answered: " It is said ... it is said ... the princess always wears the jade pendant ..." Jixiang felt that he was about to break out in a cold sweat, and gritted his teeth and replied: " It is a jade pendant given by the King of Jingbei. "

After he finished speaking, he did not dare to look up. His Majesty did not move for a long time, and Jixiang could only lower his head and wait.

The air in the entire Hall of Mental Cultivation seemed to have been sucked out.

Finally, he heard His Majesty sneer, " I want to see how rare the jade pendant is. "

Jixiang saw His Majesty's black boots passing in front of him, and he hurried to follow. When Emperor Jianzhao and his entourage arrived at the lotus pond, Xie Jiayi had already found her jade pendant and was carefully stroking it. It turned out that the knotted rope that was used to tie the jade pendant was old and finally worn off.

Even such a strong rope will break with the passage of time.

Ten years, what a long time. The rope that she had been reluctant to replace finally had to be replaced.

After losing and regaining it, Xie Jiayi smiled, but tears slowly welled up in her eyes.

Xu Shixing, who had been standing there for a long time, just watched her eyes slowly fill with tears from the ecstasy of finding the jade pendant. She had completely forgotten her promise to him to go to the Yangxin Palace. Xu Shixing felt angry and sad. How could she do this?

Why does she do this!

For a moment he simply hated her; she made him feel suffocated.

Xu Shixing stepped forward and looked at Xie Jiayi silently. She looked up at him, but the tears in her eyes were not for him. Her eyes looked at him but there was no him at all. Xu Shixing looked coldly at the Begonia jade pendant in her hand. At that moment, he was ignited by despair and anger. At that moment, he wanted to destroy everything.

If we can't be well, we might as well die!

He reached out and snatched the jade pendant from Xie Jiayi's hand. Xie Jiayi exclaimed, but she was no match for Xu Shixing.

The jade pendant fell into Xu Shixing's hands.

He raised his hand towards the lotus pond .

The sound of " thump " shocked everyone.

It wasn't the jade pendant that fell into the lotus pond, but Xie Jiayi who jumped into the lotus pond. She thought her jade pendant was thrown in by Xu Shixing, who was holding the jade pendant and shaking all over. She actually——

She even forgot to ask someone to fish it out.

Just for this thing!

Just for that piece of dead stuff!

Xu Shixing reached out and stuffed the jade pendant directly into Ruyi's hand, who was about to jump into the water. He gritted his teeth and said, " Keep it for your master. If I see it again, I will smash it! " After saying that, he turned around and jumped in, and pulled Xie Jiayi, who was still confused and trying to look for it below, into his arms, letting her struggle and say, " My jade-- " Xu Shixing ignored her and just held her struggling hand, took her directly to the shore, and asked the people on the shore to bring the princess up.

It was already late autumn, and Xie Jiayi was shivering with cold, still muttering: " Ruyi, my jade pendant fell, please help me find it. " Ruyi wrapped her cloak around the princess and said repeatedly: " It's here, the jade pendant is here, princess, His Majesty didn't throw it away. "

Only then did Xie Jiayi stop trembling, took the jade pendant from Ruyi's hand and held it tightly in her hand.

Because His Majesty had actually entered the cold water in such late autumn weather, the people in the Yangxin Palace were in a mess. Someone also took the cloak, but Xu Shixing just raised his hand to stop him. He reached out and wiped the water off his face, looking at Xie Jiayi who was always thinking about the jade pendant and didn't even look at him.

All the anger and sadness seemed to leave him at once, and he felt as if all his strength had been drained away. However, his hands shook uncontrollably, and he didn't even know if it was because of the cold or something else.

I just feel so uncomfortable.

He stood in front of her, looking down at her, water running down his extremely pale face, and asked her softly, " Didn't we agree on this? " We clearly agreed on this at that time. I promised you that we would be together for the rest of our lives. You promised me that you would stay by my side no matter what happened.

He wanted to wipe the water off his face, but found that his hands were shaking badly, so he just smiled, " Did you promise? Xie Jiayi, you promised me, what's wrong with you? " Ten years ago, you suddenly turned around and left me alone. He was wrong, and she shouldn't have left with someone else so resolutely.

Xie Jiayi, do you know how I have been living these past ten years?

Xie Jiayi was in great pain, " Yes, we clearly agreed on it at that time. " We agreed that he would not die this time because I was here. I was here, so how could he still die? She murmured: " We clearly agreed on it ... why did it change? "

It was agreed that they would all be fine this time ... Lord Lu should live a good life with her.

Xu Shixing numbly took the cloak from the side, and regardless of what the people around him said, he tied the cloak with shaking hands, and accidentally tied a knot. But he had no choice, he just relied on this cloak to cover his uncontrollable shaking body and hands. Xu Shixing stopped looking at Xie Jiayi and turned to the Yangxin Palace. His boots, which were soaked in water, made a funny creaking sound when stepping on the stone bricks of the palace.

Xu Shixing found it very ridiculous.

He is very funny.

Even when he arrived at the Yangxin Palace, he couldn't control his shaking even when people helped him change into clean clothes. Jixiang was so anxious that he almost cried. Looking at the emperor who was holding the hot soup but didn't drink a single sip, he cried, " Your Majesty, please let the imperial physician come in and take a look. " It was so cold, and if the emperor got soaked in cold water, if something happened to him, everyone in this palace would lose their heads.

Xu Shixing raised his head and said: " Why are you crying? Did you lose your mandarin duck and crabapple jade too? "

He held the hot soup with such force that his joints turned white, even paler than his already pale skin.

Jixiang knelt down in front of His Majesty and begged, " Your Majesty, please put it down first. " In order to sweat, the hot soup must be blown slowly while drinking, and it is very hot. If Your Majesty holds it tightly in his hands like this, what if he gets burned ...

But His Majesty seemed not to understand and murmured, " Let go of what? Let go of her? "

Jixiang had no choice but to cry and pry open His Majesty's hands. The inside of His Majesty's fingers and the palms were already burned a frightening red.

" Jixiang. " His Majesty suddenly called his name. The voice made Jixiang feel sad. He quickly responded: " I'm here. " His Majesty's eyes were clearly looking at him, but he didn't see him at all. He seemed to be looking at a place very far away .

" Do you remember? At that time, she said she loved me, and she also said that she didn't want anything in this life and just wanted to be my crown princess ... Do you remember? " But



why did she forget everything? He did something wrong, but he knew it, he would change, and he would never lie to her again. But why did she forget everything she said ...

She even forgot that he would be sad too.

He would also be unable to bear the sadness.

Emperor Jianzhao had a high fever and was a little confused at this time.

## Chapter 98

The imperial doctors of the Yangxin Palace had all left . Jixiang led people to guard the dragon bed. Seeing that the high fever of the emperor had indeed subsided, they wiped off the cold sweat and felt relieved. Xu Shixing rarely got sick , but this illness brought him into a series of dreams.

Before his death, Emperor Yuanhe clenched his hand: " We must make the Xu dynasty last forever! You swear to devote your whole life to the Xu dynasty! " In his dream , he saw the last Emperor Yuanhe's hideous smile which suddenly enlarged and became bigger: " Taizu is unfair, I don't accept it! " " I must let Taizu see that my descendants can also make the Dayin dynasty last forever! " " I don't accept it ... I don't accept it ... Taizu ... My son doesn't accept it ... " They all fought for you, so why can you only see your elder brother ?

There is darkness and sticky blood that cannot be escaped, and blood and conspiracy are everywhere.

Someone said to him: " You should remember that the entire Zhang family died for you! My mother's family and the entire clan paid the price for your position as crown prince ! "

" You must swear that when you become the emperor , you must repay the Duke's Mansion for its support along the way! Protect Jin Yu's life , give Jin Yu the dignity she deserves , and repay her for saving her life! " He was younger at that time . Was this his first oath? How old was he? Five or seven? He didn't understand why the entire Zhang family had to die for him . When he didn't understand anything , he once again took on an oath and blood debt. How old was he earlier? I can't remember , he was too small at that time , kneeling in the dark Buddhist temple , with only two lights like two eyes flashing in the darkness. Mother said, " How can you be inferior to the eldest prince? " " I have given so much for you , but you are not even as good as the eldest prince! You disappoint your mother so much! "

Then she pulled him up and pushed him to a small tree . The mother's low voice merged with the darkness of the temple: " Not only have you disappointed your mother , you have also let down your brother who died for you! " " Xing'er , you are not alone , you are two people, you can't lose! " " This tree will be yours to take care of from now on. Every time you water it, you must remember that your life is not your own, it was given to you by your brother, and you must ascend to the supreme throne for him! " " Brother has never seen the sun for you! You must remember him , remember him forever! "

Many people pointed at him with terrified eyes, " The twins are unknown " , " How can twins be emperors! " " He is the twin who killed his brother, deceived the world, and plotted to seize the throne! "

" How can you cry! You have disappointed your mother so much! " " Quick, wipe away the tears of this useless child! Don't let His Majesty know, His Majesty hates weak children! Quick, my God, why did I choose such a useless child! "

" You can't cry, you can't lose, you can't have desires! "

" Did you remember? Speak! " " No, you didn't remember. I need to help you remember ..." Boundless fear, endless blood debt, in the end, all ended because of a girl. She held a small whip, stood in front of him, and said with her chin raised: " Whatever the prince says is the truth. Do you think the prince is just like you who doesn't keep his word! " The second prince on the opposite side still sneered: " Let's go and let the emperor judge! " The fourth prince took sides and smiled: " You are right, the emperor will make the final decision on right and wrong! " Everyone in the palace knew that His Majesty disliked the prince. The girl snorted, " I told you to complain! " She rushed over, grabbed the other person twice, turned around and ran to the Yangxin Palace: " I'm going to tell His Majesty that you bullied me! " The two men who were still smug at first immediately panicked and stopped her: " Don't talk nonsense! " The girl pointed at the scratches on their hands: " If you didn't bully me, I would fight with you! We are both complaining ghosts, let's see who will complain first! "

Under the crabapple tree, the girl held his hand and blew air, stopping from time to time to ask: " Brother Crown Prince, does it hurt? " " The Second Prince loves to use dirty tricks, stay away from him next time ! Concubine De said that they are all bad people and want to hurt you! " The girl's eyes are dark, clear and bright.

" Brother Prince, are you crying because it hurts? If you can't cry, then I will cry for you. " As she spoke, hot tears fell on the back of his hand. Catch her, hold her tightly! She is the only color and cleanliness in his bloody and dark world. But suddenly it got dark, and he didn't know why he saw the girl kneeling in front of Shoukang Palace. The moment the girl lifted her skirt and knelt down, he felt his whole heart aching, and something broke with a " snap " . But Xu Shixing saw that his hands were bleeding from behind his back in his dream, and he crushed the jade ring in his hand, but his face was so cold, and he just looked at the girl kneeling in front of Shoukang Palace.

He dreamed of himself in armor, with the army in front, the emperor personally leading the army, and the royal flag fluttering. But she didn't come. He thought, it doesn't matter, when he comes back, he will never let her suffer such grievances again.

Xu Shixing saw a smile on his younger self's face, and he galloped to the capital! The king's army returned with a great victory, and all the prefectures and counties along the way went out to fight, but he avoided all the welcoming ceremonies and just wanted to return to the capital as soon as possible! But he received a letter from the capital on the way, and he seemed to be unable to understand the three black words. He lowered his head and read it over and over again, but still couldn't understand it. He seemed very confused, what on earth was it written in it?

Xu Shixing looked at his younger self, who was only in his early twenties. He smiled and walked forward, thinking that he might have been so overwhelmed by victory that he couldn't even understand the letter. Xu Shixing lowered his head and saw only three words on the letter: The queen died.

At that moment, something in my chest was suddenly torn apart.

Xu Shixing suddenly woke up from a dream that seemed to have no end. He sat up suddenly. In front of him was a dim light and apricot-yellow bed curtains. This was the emperor's inner chamber. Next to him, Jixiang, who was exhausted, was holding a whisk and bowed his head. He had just taken a nap. When the emperor moved, he woke up immediately. He saw the emperor sitting on the dragon bed in a daze, his hands tightly grasping the bright yellow mattress, almost tearing it, and beads of sweat on his forehead.

Jixiang hurried forward to help His Majesty wash and change clothes. His Majesty's pajamas were soaked with sweat.

" Your Majesty, the doctors are waiting. Shall I go and call them? "

His Majesty seemed not to hear him and only asked him: " Where is the Queen? "

Jixiang's heart skipped a beat. His Majesty is still confused ... Where did His Majesty get a queen? A few years ago, the court was in chaos because of this. He called out cautiously: " Your Majesty? "

The stunned Majesty suddenly came back to his senses: " Where is the princess? "

Jixiang replied immediately: " The princess is in good health. She had a fever, but it went away after she took the medicine. It is already the hour of the dog, so she must have fallen asleep. "

The tone of the reply was the same as always, but Jixiang's heart was in turmoil: it turned out that His Majesty not only wanted the princess, he really wanted her to be his queen.

" You ask someone – you go and see in person whether the princess is okay – or I go myself , " Xu Shixing said as he stood up and got out of bed, but suddenly his vision went dark and he fell back.

Jixiang said hurriedly: " I will go there myself, Your Majesty, don't worry. Your Majesty, take care of your health so that you can see the princess earlier. "

" I am worried— " His Majesty's voice seemed distant .

Jixiang had no choice but to change his words to persuade him: " Your Majesty is not well yet, and the princess is delicate. If she gets sick again, she will be afraid of taking medicine-- "

Sure enough, after saying this, His Majesty changed his mind and asked him to leave quickly.

Jixiang let out a long breath after he left the Yangxin Hall. His Majesty changed his mind three times in a short time. This had never happened to His Majesty Qiangang's arbitrary nature.

There was also the shocking " Queen " sentence . I'm afraid that the former harem will cause trouble again.

Who would have thought that at this hour, we could still see people holding lanterns heading towards Haitang Palace. The first person was none other than Grandma Liu. Ji Xiang was stunned for a moment, then walked forward with a smile: " It's so late, it's almost time to leave, why is grandma still out? "

When Grandma Liu saw that it was auspicious, she felt bad in her heart. She also smiled and said: " You monkey spirit, why are you out here? Your Majesty has woken up, and no one has gone to Shoukang Palace to report. "

" Your Majesty, you are afraid of disturbing the Queen Mother's sleep, so you specifically asked me to return tomorrow. "

The two of them were talking as they headed towards Haitang Palace. Since Jixiang had already confirmed the emperor's intention, he couldn't help but ask, "What is the Empress Dowager's will? Why did you trouble Madam Liu to come here in the middle of the night?" At this time, the group had already arrived outside the Begonia Palace. Madam Liu asked someone to knock on the door, and then turned to Jixiang and said, "The princess was so self-indulgent that she caused His Majesty to fall into the water. This is a sign of a demon concubine who is a disaster to the country. The Queen Mother is in charge of the harem and will definitely not tolerate such a disaster. But the eunuch also knows that Princess Kunyi is arrogant. Shoukang Palace has already issued two decrees to ask the princess to kneel down and confess her crimes, but the Begonia Palace actually refused to accept the decree. This old servant had to come here in person with the Queen Mother's decree." As she said this, Madam Liu looked at the Begonia Palace, the most wealthy and glorious palace in the world, with contempt, "No matter how great the princess is, she is not greater than our Shoukang Palace, and not greater than the laws and regulations of the country!"

Jixiang was already frightened after hearing only half of the words. "Bad luck for the country" and "a source of trouble", even "a seductress" and "a flatterer" were mentioned, and finally it was determined to be "national laws and family rules". The women in the palace all exist to serve His Majesty, but the ancestors have taught that no matter whether they are concubines or palace maids, they must not let the emperor indulge himself and hurt his body. Once they violate the rules, the master of the harem, whether it is the empress dowager or the queen, has the right to deal with them. The punishment can be light or severe, and death. He was not worried about the princess being punished. Everyone in Dayin knew that the dynasty was blessed. Two generations of war gods were her father and husband. The late emperor personally conferred the title of "Assisting the State" on the princess and personally granted her the title of "Kun Yi". No one could touch her. However, the Shoukang Palace had such a big commotion that the emperor announced the imperial decree three times overnight. The purpose was not to really punish the princess, but to make a big commotion. How could a woman who was "harming the country and flattering the emperor" be worthy of being the queen? Not to mention that the princess was married for the second time, and the road to becoming the queen was difficult.

Jixiang stepped forward to stop her, forcing a smile and saying, "Ma'am, please wait a minute. His Majesty has sent me here to pay my respects to the princess." In any case, the fact that the imperial edict had been announced three times could not be confirmed.

Matron Liu said with a fake smile: "Eunuch, you have to think carefully, are you trying to use His Majesty to pressure me?" She said this, but what she meant was to ask Jixiang whether he was using His Majesty to pressure the Queen Mother.

Jixiang was speechless. Your Majesty is a filial son, so naturally he cannot do that.

Seeing that the people from Shoukang Palace could not open the gate of Haitang Palace, Madam Liu was about to announce the imperial decree to the palace gate. At this time, a deep voice came: "It's late at night. Madam, you should go back and help the Queen Mother to sleep."

Everyone gathered in front of Haitang Palace was shocked when they heard this. No one expected that His Majesty, who was still unconscious with a high fever in the afternoon, would appear outside Haitang Palace at this time.

The body acted before the mind, and everyone fell to their knees.

In the dark night between autumn and winter, the stone floor was freezing cold, but the palace servants kneeling there felt even colder in their hearts. The more the emperor remained silent, the more frightened the Shoukang Palace servants became.

His Majesty's face was pale, even his lips were white, and he looked weak. His dark cloak was rustling in the night wind. He didn't look at the people kneeling on the ground, but just stared at the gate of Haitang Palace, his eyes dark and unpredictable.

His Majesty remained silent, and did not even order anyone to knock on the door. Just when everyone thought he would continue to kneel, His Majesty finally spoke: "Madam, go back and tell my mother that I have made up my mind."

Nanny Liu didn't dare to look up, but she didn't know what his majesty had decided on. She just felt panicked, knowing that it must be an idea that would anger the empress dowager.

Then Emperor Jianzhao said firmly word by word:

"I want to make Princess Kunyi my queen."

! His Majesty actually—— She knelt forward and said in a sad voice: "Your Majesty, please think twice, Your Majesty, please think twice! You must not do this, Your Majesty!"

Everyone else put their foreheads on the ground obediently. This was a confrontation between Shoukang Palace and His Majesty, and they dared not make any movement. Any sound at this time might be caught up in it and become affected.

His Majesty's voice was soft but extremely clear: "Think twice? Tell my mother, I have been thinking about it for half my life." He raised his voice and said, "Mammy is an elder who lives beside the Queen Mother. She is the one who watched me grow up. I respect you, but if you say any more, I will make sure you will never be able to speak again." The voice was not very smooth, but it sounded like thunder and lightning in the ears of everyone.

Nanny Liu collapsed to the ground all of a sudden, she was shaking with fear and couldn't get up.

Her mind suddenly became clear. This was not the silent little prince of the past. This was Emperor Jianzhao who had ruled Dayin for nearly ten years! When the emperor got angry, not to mention people like them, even the queen mother would not be able to suppress it like she did in the past.

"Why aren't you going? If you want to anger the empress dowager, I will punish you one by one." The emperor's voice was indifferent and cold. The people in Shoukang Palace knelt on the ground and kowtowed, supporting the still limp Madam Liu and returning to Shoukang Palace.

Only the palace maids from the Yangxin Palace were left standing with His Majesty in the cold wind.

"Your Majesty?" Jixiang had to speak. After all, His Majesty's dragon body had just improved, and there couldn't be any more mistakes.

Xu Shixing held the side of his cloak tightly and said:

" Knock on the door. "

## Chapter 99

The tightly closed door of Haitang Palace opened , and the other party seemed equally surprised to see His Majesty.

At this time, all the palace people were standing in the corridor courtyard, and there were only two masters in the room. The cold wind blew, but no one dared to move. They were all sensitively aware that what the two masters said tonight must be very important.

Jixiang quietly approached Ruyi who was looking up at Leng Yue , and licked his face and called: " Brother Ruyi. " Before Ruyi could respond , Bubu next to him was disgusted. Jixiang was also in his twenties , how could he still act like this and call him brother? He would be too embarrassed to do so after he turned twenty. Jixiang glanced at Bubu unhappily. What did he know? They would work together to serve the emperor and empress in the future . If they didn't communicate with each other now, it would be bad if there was friction in the future.

The windows were all closed , and the room was filled with a warm fragrance mixed with a faint smell of medicine.

As early as when Xie Jiayi knew that the emperor was coming , she was helped by Nanny Chen to sit on the couch by the window , leaning against the pillow. She was covered with a brocade quilt with a green background embroidered with white crabapples . She had no time to comb her hair, so Nanny tied it up loosely at one side . Although her face was paler than usual , she looked okay . At least her lips were a little white, like a faded peony , and the red color was a little lighter . She was not completely pale like Xu Shixing.

Her white fingers picked at the carvings on the window frame , again and again.

Xu Shixing sat at the sandalwood table in front of the couch , his hands unconsciously turning the celadon teacup on the table. After the initial relief of seeing her , the pain of seeing those three words in the dream came up and was suppressed by him bit by bit.

Dreams are just dreams after all, how could she die? Just like she had never been her own queen, she would not die.

At this moment, the candlelight was warm and fragrant, the wooden table, the long couch, and the carved window frames were all there, and she was there too.

Right next to him.

Just sitting with her like this, Xu Shixing felt that everything that trapped him was gone, including the blood in his nose, the darkness that he couldn't escape, and the endless headaches. At this moment, the night was silent, and he felt calm and peaceful again.

Dreams are empty, but they can make people sober. He clearly realized that he could not live alone in a world without her. If she was not there, why should he endure the darkness and blood that he could not get out of forever, and face endless reports forever, and all progress would be meaningless.

She had to watch him.

All the persistence and struggle are worth it.

Xu Shixing held down the teacup in his hand, looked at Xie Jiayi who was still looking at the window, and called her name. When he saw her turn her head and look at him, Xu Shixing's heart jumped involuntarily. He whispered under her gaze:

" Zhao Zhao, I'm thirty years old. " They once promised to spend their lives together, but in the blink of an eye, half of their lives had passed.

Xie Jiayi looked at the man in front of her, familiar yet strange, she nodded gently, " Yes, you are thirty years old. " And she was not sixteen years old. The sixteen years when she loved him wholeheartedly, the twenty years when she broke up with him, and the twenty-two years when she died, were all so far away . In between were the past and present lives, half of Dayin, and a person she would never forget.

She was only 28 years old, but she felt old. It was as if she had traveled through several lifetimes, but in the end, she still had to face this person.

She has a lot in this life, but what she wanted most has long been lost.

Fortunately, she still has Cheng Ji.

She heard Xu Shixing's voice, and he said:

" I want you. You can think about what you want from me. " Xu Shixing thought of the white bun-like child and chuckled with unknown bitterness, " I always have what you want here. "

Xie Jiayi looked at him blankly. Is it time to negotiate terms?

Her voice was still as soft as before, but the person who was speaking had changed his heart:

" I want the throne of queen, Your Majesty can only have me. " She couldn't stand the disgust of sharing a husband.

Xu Shixing smiled and nodded, " What else? "

Xie Jiayi also smiled softly. He also knew that the most important thing should be left for last.

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi's smile. It was still as bright as a crabapple flower , but he always suspected that it would wither if he was not careful. His heart tightened when he saw it, and he was waiting for her next words.

" Your Majesty should regard Chengji as your adopted son. If Your Majesty has no son, he will be your adopted son. "

Xu Shixing looked at her eyes that were staring at him without blinking, dark, clear and clean.

Time has brought so many things, but also taken away so much, how come her eyes are still so clean and beautiful? However, when she hurts people, she never shows mercy.

Xu Shixing nodded, " Okay. " Lu Chen'an was of royal blood, the son of Prince Min Huai. If it weren't for the massacre , the world would belong to them. The emperor adopted a son, so his son was of course the most qualified.

Xie Jiayi thought Xu Shixing would be angry, or at least think about it for a long time, but she didn't expect him to just nod and say yes. She could lie to him, but wasn't the biggest pain in her previous life being lied to?

She stared at Xu Shixing and said slowly: " Your Majesty, I will only have Chengji as my child. "

If you can keep your promise this time, her Chengji will surely become the emperor's heir.

After understanding what she meant, Xu Shixing's heart almost spasmed instantly. He clenched the cup tightly in his hand and smiled with difficulty: " We still have a lot of time, so don't say some things too early. Zhao Zhao, okay? "

Xie Jiayi wanted to adopt a son first, and then seek an heir. Peace in this world is hard-won, and she never wants to be a soldier.

Xu Shixing thought bitterly, half of his life has passed, and they still have half of their lives to live. He has always been good to her, and one day she will definitely want to have a child with him.

Their children – for some reason, just thinking of their children made his heart ache.

He slowly loosened his hand that was holding the celadon teacup, slowly stood up and walked to Xie Jiayi.

More than ten years later, I gently embraced this person in my arms again.

Almost at the moment when he gently held Xie Jiayi in his arms, he saw the crabapple blossoms. The girl in red in the crabapple tree, with a bright smile on her face, called out in a tender voice: " Brother Prince, I'm about to jump down, you have to catch me! " Then she fell into his arms like a gust of wind, laughing so happily.

She smiled and looked up and asked, " Brother Crown Prince, will you always hold me in your arms? "

He nodded, he always caught her.

" Then I want to go to a higher place, you have to catch me. "

The candlelight flickered, just like the trembling body of the person in his arms. Xu Shixing held her tightly. The room was full of silence, but in his heart he kept shouting Zhao Zhao, you clearly said that no matter what happened, you would not let go of my hand, why are you angry and never want to look back.

Although he was holding her in his arms, Xu Shixing felt an indelible sadness in his heart.

She was clearly in his arms, but he felt like she was somewhere else. He could only tighten his arms again, touch her soft black hair, warm cheeks and neck, to make sure she was real, not an illusion, and that she was truly held in his arms.

When the bright moon hangs in the middle of the sky, Your Majesty returns in the imperial chariot.

Following the auspiciousness of the Emperor's chariot, look back at the magnificent Begonia Palace under the moonlight. That is where the phoenix lives, and just looking at it fills people with awe.

Xu Shixing, sitting on the imperial chariot, leaned his head and pondered. It seemed that everything was going smoothly, but only he knew that the overly strong emotional fluctuations had exhausted his last bit of strength. However, his eyes were still shining, and he had many thoughts in his mind. He raised his hand and called Jixiang: " Call the Ministry of Internal Affairs early tomorrow morning. I want to rebuild the Zhaoyang Palace. "

He looked at the bright moon in the sky. Zhao Zhao would be his queen. He wanted Zhaoyang Palace to be the most magnificent and supreme place.

More crabapple trees need to be transplanted there, and a kiln needs to be built to make porcelain specifically for her that is worthy of her. The ones in Curry now are too ordinary ...

There are many things to do, and thinking about each one of them makes the tired emperor feel happy.



Happy, yes happy. Xu Shixing hadn't felt this way for a long time. Life became worth looking forward to again, and he was eagerly looking forward to tomorrow.

Zhao Zhao is the most soft-hearted person. Forever and ever, she will always return to him completely.

Under the moonlight, everything is hazy and beautiful. Early winter is just about to begin, but Xu Shixing can already see the flourishing spring behind it.

Xu Shixing thought that he would have a harder time falling asleep that night, but he fell into a deep sleep as soon as his head touched the pillow. He had never slept so well in more than ten years. He was still stunned when he woke up the next day and saw the morning light coming in through the window.

He had forgotten what it felt like to have a good night's sleep.

"Is the princess awake?" He laughed after asking. How could she be awake?

Sure enough, Jixiang smiled and replied, "I have someone waiting for me, and the princess is still asleep at this time." Because of His Majesty's chuckle, all the palace people in the Yangxin Palace felt that the day had brightened and their tasks would be easier to do.

Xiao Tang followed Jixiang to find out what was going on and why His Majesty suddenly felt better.

Jixiang tapped his shoulder with his whisk: "Just wait, your majesty will be in a better mood in the future." They, the palace servants in the Hall of Mental Cultivation, have finally made it ...

Realizing that it was disrespectful to think like this, he tapped Xiao Tang again: "Just do your job well, you will know soon, why are you asking around?" Just because your majesty smiled, this kid is not afraid of death!

As expected, everyone knew it soon, because His Majesty's actions quickly caused an uproar in the palace and the court.

Let's not talk about the furious Shoukang Palace, who directly claimed to be sick and refused to see His Majesty who came to pay his respects.

Even the previous dynasty was in an uproar. How come we just heard that the princess was suspected of flattering her master and openly defying the Shoukang Palace, but in the blink of an eye, the Ministry of Internal Affairs received an order to renovate the Zhaoyang Palace? This means they are going to establish a queen!

Whose daughter is worthy of being the queen?

Why did Your Majesty renovate the Zhaoyang Palace at this time instead of earlier or later?

Thinking about the affection between His Majesty and the princess in the past, is it not clear what the Holy Heart means? But – now is different from the past. The princess is not only married for the second time, but also has a son. How can she be the queen?

In the court, Emperor Jianzhao sat on the dragon throne, listening to the officials' probing, but he raised his lips and said loudly: "The position of empress has been vacant for a long time, I want to establish a queen."

Sure enough, their guess came true.

The old Duke of England lowered his eyes. It was a good story that the Duke of England had two sons in the court. At this time, the Duke of England's son stepped out and said, Your Majesty, establishing a queen is a blessing for Dayin and a great event for the court." This was

to remind the ministers below that establishing a queen was not only a private matter for His Majesty, but also a state matter.

Sure enough, someone immediately nominated the adopted daughter of the Duke of England, who was beautiful and intelligent and qualified to be the queen.

Marquis Taining clenched his tablet tightly and stepped out to support Duke Ying's adopted daughter as the queen.

There were also ministers who supported the daughter of the Grand Tutor's family, and some even mentioned a new wave of noble ladies who had grown up in the capital, all of whom were both talented and virtuous.

Names were proposed one by one, but the emperor remained silent. In the end, no new names could be found. The emperor, who had been listening with a blank expression on his dragon throne, moved at this time and asked with a smile: " Anything else? "

Emperor Jianzhao smiled, and those who wanted to speak stopped talking. In the past, when His Majesty raised the corners of his mouth, something bad would happen. But this time, His Majesty smiled, and this one could kill someone if he was not careful.

At this time, everyone was sure that the emperor's heart was with the princess, but the person who first proposed it might have a bad reputation and be suspected of fawning on the powerful. No one expected that the first person to come forward and propose the princess was the son of the Grand Tutor's mansion, the Minister of the Ministry of Revenue, the leader of the literati and the youngest cabinet minister, Chen Lichuan. This ... Let alone the fact that he would find it difficult to gain a foothold in the literati after he mentioned it, even from a personal point of view, everyone knows the determination of the eldest daughter of the Grand Tutor's mansion to become the queen ... No one expected that the first person to propose the princess would be him.

Before anyone could object, His Majesty on the dragon throne spoke first: " My dear minister, you are my right-hand man, a capable minister of Dayin, and you are also better at judging people. "

All the ministers: ..... Your Majesty has been on the throne for nearly ten years, and has never praised his ministers so enthusiastically. Now it is all Minister Chen's turn. With the first person to take the blame, others also dare to speak up and flatter the princess.

The emperor's mind was so clear, and Emperor Jianzhao was not an easy emperor to talk to. More and more ministers were pointed at and scolded by the censors for being flattering. There was a lot of back and forth in the court, and the two sides were clearly divided.

Xu Shixing watched with interest. He did not expect that even with the intentional suppression, the British Public Party also grew stronger, and quite a few people were dragged aboard.

However, in their eyes, it was getting on the boat, but in Xu Shixing's eyes, it was being dragged into the water.

Among them, Song Ziming was the one who charged forward with the most fierce words. He had no choice but to charge forward now. The Duke of England used him as a biting dog. If he couldn't bite anyone, he would be useless. How could this Taining Marquis stand so firmly in his team? He should be a smart man with a sense of propriety. Xu Shixing looked at the ministers below who were all righteous and stern, but actually had their own thoughts. They figured it out

one by one, and finally got stuck on Qin Zhili's side. He couldn't understand how such a smart man could be dragged into the water by the Duke of England's mansion, and how he got into the water so deeply.

Just when the Duke of England concluded that even if His Majesty wanted to suppress their Duke's Mansion, with so many officials taking sides, even His Majesty, who holds great power, cannot but consider the consequences of acting on his own.

But he underestimated His Majesty's determination to go his own way.

Since so many officials have gone to the wrong place or boarded the wrong boat, it is indeed difficult to deal with, but there is not no solution, such as the solution Xu Shixing decided to take – take them all down. Now that Dayin is stable, the country is peaceful and the people are safe, there is no foreign enemy to disturb, and the border is safe, can he slowly persuade these people who have gone in the wrong direction with reason?

Everyone thought that the matter of establishing a queen would inevitably be a long stalemate, and no one expected that everything would end so quickly. Not only was His Majesty's decision made with a quick knife, but what surprised everyone at this time was not the side that Minister Chen of the Imperial Tutor's Mansion stood on, but that the royal family stood on the side of the princess.

The royal family supports Princess Kunyi as the queen!

This was beyond everyone's expectations. The Queen Mother was so shocked that she couldn't speak for a long time after hearing the news! She always claimed to be sick and didn't move because she knew that both the former dynasty and the royal family would be difficult to pass. Madam Liu also looked solemn, "No one would have thought that the old prince would personally lobby the royal family."

"Old prince?" The Queen Mother's tone changed. "Isn't he so old that he hasn't left the house in the past two years? It is said that he doesn't even have much interest in listening to singing and dancing?" He came out to work hard for the establishment of the queen and to support the princess. Is he possessed by evil spirits? Was he suppressed by the princess's magic?

"Everyone said so!" Aunt Liu's voice couldn't help but become shrill. This was really surprising.

Old Prince's Mansion

The old prince and the princess were both looking at the young master who was squatting in the yard and watching ants for a long time.

"Your Majesty also knows, right?"

Xie Jiayi nodded.

The old prince suddenly laughed, and told Xie Jiayi with a smile: "There are three types of people in the Xu royal family."

Looking at the princess's inquiring eyes.

His old voice slowly said: "Love-seeker, madman."

Xie Jiayi asked: "What about the third one?"

The old prince glanced at her and said slowly: " A crazy love-sick man. " Xie Jiayi was stunned when she heard that, and after a while she said: " Your Majesty is not. " Xu Shixing has the country in his heart, and the country is the most important thing.

The old prince neither agreed nor refuted, but just looked back at the young prince who was still squatting quietly watching the ants in the yard, and murmured: " They really look alike. " They really look alike Prince Min Huai.

Your Majesty has taken down the previous dynasty, and all the clan members support him.

Even the people are supportive. All kinds of auspicious signs are described with great detail, as if they would not agree unless the princess is made the heir.

The heartache in Shoukang Palace could not stop the upcoming ceremony of crowning the queen.

## Chapter 100

The ceremony of the queen's enthronement was argued over by both sides . For a second marriage, many aspects of the ceremony had to be reduced accordingly, but Your Majesty insisted on raising the standards and making it the most grand ceremony of queen's enthronement since the founding of the Dayin Dynasty.

The Minister of Rites felt that the charcoal fire in the study room of the Yangxin Palace was really too strong , and he was sweating on his back. He had many classics to prove that this was not the case , but when he raised his eyes and met the gaze of His Majesty, he immediately understood that he had only two choices: either do as His Majesty said, or give up the position of Minister of Rites, and the next person would do as His Majesty said.

In this case, the choice suddenly became easy. He couldn't give up this position and satisfy those who were eyeing his position as the Minister. Those people were looking forward to him citing scriptures to refute His Majesty. At first, he thought that these people supported him in challenging the imperial power . Now he was sweating and thinking carefully , he was like, bah , they were supporting him? They were waiting for him to be removed so that they could take the position! The Minister of Rites, who was considered pedantic, realized it at this moment, but he didn't! They didn't think that if this official was really as pedantic as he looked , he could reach the position of the Minister of Six Ministries!

The Minister of Rites even thought of a reason for His Majesty . The princess was of noble blood and had made contributions to the country . She was the " Lucky Star of the Great Yin " mentioned by the late emperor , so she deserved such a high standard. The Minister of Rites quickly convinced himself with various reasons and followed His Majesty's wishes . This was also to share His Majesty 's worries. This was not flattery, but loyalty to the emperor. At this point, he wore his official hat firmly and his conscience was at peace.

Is he protecting the princess? Of course not, he is protecting their Dayin Fuxing!

In the winter of the ninth year of Jian Zhao's reign, His Majesty established a queen. The vacant queen position in Dayin welcomed its mistress, and the structure of the harem changed dramatically again.

The sky was clear and bright on the day of the empress's enthronement, and the morning glow was particularly brilliant, attracting many people to watch. Everyone once again remembered the dream in which the princess saved half of Dayin, and they all said that the princess was indeed Dayin's lucky star, and would be the master of the harem and the mother of the country. The astronomical phenomenon of that day was later talked about enthusiastically by many storytellers in teahouses. One person even swore that he saw the shadow of a phoenix in the sun. More and more people said this, and it was even recorded in history.

In a courtyard surrounded by green bamboos in the Taifu Mansion, Chen Lichuan looked at his sickly, weak, arrogant wife with a look of surprise, and said incredulously: " Did you spread the story of 'Seeing the Phoenix in the Sun ? ' " Lin Pin'er rolled her eyes at him, " How can it be that I said it? They all said so. "

" You were the first to say that? "

Then her wife turned around and went into the inner room. " Who knows? Anyway, I saw it at the time. "

Chen Lichuan: ... I really didn't expect that his wife is actually a die-hard princess party. He sat at the round table and sighed, wondering: " It's fine if people in the capital say so, but why is it spreading like wildfire in Fengtai Camp? "

Lin Pin'er didn't expect that her husband, who was known as " wise and almost evil ", could be so stupid. " Madam Zhao's husband often goes to Fengtai Camp. "

Chen Lichuan suddenly understood that Madam Zhao was Song Ziming's ex-wife, the daughter of the Qian family, one of the four richest families in Jiangnan. Later, she married the Left Vice Minister of the Ministry of War and the Commander-in-Chief of the Fengtai Camp. He had to remind his wife not to go too far, as there were many spies in Shoukang Palace and the Duke of Ying'er's Mansion. Lin Pin'er waved her hand while holding the book, " Don't worry, I just said that. The things that happened later were all caused by the wife of the Marquis of Taining. " At this point, her eyes lit up and she said, " I originally thought that the wife of the Marquis of Taining was a vulgar person with many tricks in her heart, but I didn't expect that she was really authentic in her actions. "

Chen Lichuan could only refute his wife in his heart: How could she be authentic ... She was just helping the princess, and you thought she was authentic ... He suddenly remembered what happened before: " Those auspicious signs before, weren't they created by you? "

Then his wife said with regret: " That's really not the case. It was first spread by the Huguo Temple. " She just followed suit and spread it.

Chen Lichuan understood. The Huguo Temple – that was not built by his wife, but by the eldest princess. No wonder it was such a big deal.

While everyone was paying attention to the grand event of Dayin Fuxing entering the imperial palace, the new queen Xie Jiayi brought everyone to the front of Zhaoyang Palace.

On the day of the empress's enthronement, the newly rebuilt Zhaoyang Palace was full of carved railings and painted buildings, and it seemed like a palace on earth under the blue sky and sunlight. The new queen, surrounded by people, led her son and stood in front of Zhaoyang Palace. Behind her followed Caixing, standing in Ruyi Bubu. Caiyue, who was wearing the clothes of a royal lady, supported Chen Ma and quietly looked at the luxurious Zhaoyang Palace.

For a moment, everyone was shocked.

Xie Jiayi was wearing the golden phoenix dress and the nine-phoenix crown, which was inlaid with the pigeon-egg-sized oriental pearl that Shoukang Palace had once asked for. She slowly looked towards Zhaoyang Palace. In this life, she came to this place again.

However, she looked down at her son who was wearing the prince's uniform and following her with a serious face. This time, everything would be different.

Under the clear sky, Xie Jiayi led her son into Zhaoyang Palace.

Ruyi was promoted to the chief steward of Zhaoyang Palace, and Caixing became the chief of the palace maids. Under the envious gazes of other palace servants, the two stepped aside to let Nanny Chen Caiyue enter first, and then followed behind them, entering Zhaoyang Palace with their masters.

At this time, the atmosphere in Shoukang Palace was so solemn that the palace servants were trembling with fear. Zhang Jinyu supported the empress dowager and stood in front of the palace gate.

The Queen Mother said coldly: " After all, she was allowed to enter Zhaoyang Palace. "

He patted Zhang Jinyu's hand again: " Jinyu, be patient. You still have a long time to live in the palace. "

Zhang Jinyu bowed her head and nodded, but her expression was uncontrollably ferocious.

Patience? Wasn't she patient enough? But what about now? Even a second-married girl could become the queen, but she had endured so much for so many years, and now she still had nothing. She touched her abdomen unconsciously. For so many years, she had seen all the great doctors of Dayin and taken all kinds of bitter medicines, but she didn't know how her body was now. Those imperial doctors were hesitant and never gave a definite answer. But Xie Jiayi could have a child, so why couldn't she?

Her patience was almost exhausted.

It had been half a month since the empress was enthroned, and the time had entered the twelfth lunar month, and the Chinese New Year was getting closer and closer. Even Shoukang Palace, who had been claiming to be ill, could not remain ill any longer. Being ill during the Chinese New Year was too unlucky. At this point, when Emperor Jianzhao came to pay his respects again, he was allowed to enter and see the empress dowager, but the empress dowager kept a stern face and did not speak. The palace people all knew that this was a sign of dissatisfaction with His Majesty.

I don't know whether His Majesty really didn't notice it or for something else. His Majesty greeted the Queen Mother as usual. Even though the Queen Mother was unhappy, it didn't seem to affect His Majesty's increasingly better mood these days.

As soon as he left Changchun Palace, His Majesty hesitated.

Jixiang said quickly, " Your Majesty, the memorials have been sent to the Empress, and Your Majesty is just in time to go over and see the Empress before reviewing them. " The palace servants saw His Majesty lightly kick Jixiang, " Who told you to act on your own? " But he didn't say anything else. In the past, if someone really dared to " act on his own " , they would be skinned and steamed, or at least beaten with a stick. Xiao Tangzi and others had to admit that

when it came to guessing the emperor's intentions, no one could surpass Eunuch Jixiang. No wonder he was the number one eunuch in the Yangxin Palace.

The palace maids followed His Majesty to Zhaoyang Palace.

The charcoal fire in Zhaoyang Palace was burning brightly, and occasionally it made a crackling sound, which made people feel warm and comfortable. Even in such a cold weather, the greenhouse would still send fresh flowers and fruits to Zhaoyang Palace every day. In addition to the red plum blossoms that were suitable for the season, there were also crabapples specially sent from the greenhouse, making Zhaoyang Palace even brighter and more beautiful. Xie Jiayi was roasting taro with Xu Chengji, and Xu Shixing smelled the aroma of roasted food before he even entered.

The moment he entered Zhaoyang Palace, all his fatigue disappeared. He was stunned for a moment when he smelled the burnt aroma. His limbs, which had been cold outside, instantly became warm. His tense mind relaxed. He just stood there. Before he saw anyone, he couldn't control the smile on his face. Xu Shixing could only stand there for a while before going in. It would be bad for her to see him so excited. It would make him look like——. At this time, he heard the voice of the boy in the room:

"Mother, you can't keep dialing like this."

"You don't understand. I have to watch them, otherwise we won't know if they get burnt."

The boy was silent for a moment, then accused: "But you keep dialing."

The woman's voice was confident: "How can we watch them if we don't dial them?"

Hearing Xu Shixing laughing, he cleared his throat to cover up, and then went in, and saw the mother and son staring at each other in front of a charcoal basin. After they both stood up and bowed, Xie Jiayi couldn't help but pull the taro out of the charcoal basin to see how it was roasted. Xu Chengji obviously wanted to stop her, but when Emperor Jianzhao was around, he was a little more reserved, sitting upright, just pursing his lips, looking at the taro that was constantly being pulled out by his mother.

While Xie Jiayi was poking the charcoal fire to find her taro, she glanced at the two people, one big and one small, who were facing each other awkwardly. Xu Chengji already knew that sooner or later, he would call the person in front of him "Father Emperor".

Xu Chengji was silent for a long time, then asked her: "What about your father?"

Xie Jiayi touched his head: "Father is father, and the emperor is father." Even though it was such an impolite thing, Xu Shixing still agreed.

Xu Shixing knew that Xie Jiayi wanted him to be better to the child, and he felt that it didn't look good to let a child sit on the round stool next to him. He paused, then stiffly reached out and picked up the child and put him on his lap.

When Xie Jiayi looked up and saw this scene, she almost dropped the fire poker in her hand. It was nothing else, but that the two of them were too stiff, like two people carved out of stone. Yet, they both smiled stiffly at her, probably wanting to realize their own imagined harmonious coexistence.

This smile ..... is similar in purpose ...

It was like the girl in the storybook who was raped and could only force a smile in front of the bully. It was also like the girls in the building who had no choice but to force a smile to ask for rewards.

Xie Jiayi was silent. Between cooperating with them or telling the truth, she chose the latter. " Can you guys do it? If not , just stay away from me. Hugging like this ... makes people feel weird ... weird. "

" Strange, what's strange about it? I feel great. " Xu Shixing defended himself. He felt really tired. The child was so small and light, but he felt sore all over after just holding him for a while.

" Ji'er, what do you think? " he asked the child on his lap.  
the word " Ji'er " . She picked the taro slowly, and buried them in the charcoal fire again one by one without even checking whether they were burnt or not. She heard her son's unnatural answer:

" very good. "

Xie Jiayi stared at the charcoal fire for a long time before she looked up and smiled at the two of them: " Don't sit there anymore. Come and help me roast the taro. I can't take care of so many by myself. "

As soon as he finished speaking, Xu Shixing quickly put Xu Chengji on the ground, and Xu Chengji also quickly moved his numb little body.

The two of them quickly distanced themselves from each other and squatted beside Xie Jiayi, one on the left and one on the right.

The three of them roasted taro around the brazier. Xu Shixing leaned over to Xie Jiayi and whispered, " What's wrong? " Although Xie Jiayi was smiling, he felt that she was a little sad.

Xie Jiayi fiddled with the charcoal fire again, then looked up and said to the people around her, " Call him Chengji, I like to call him Chengji. " " Jier " was gone, Chengji was Chengji.

Xu Shixing nodded and said that as long as she was happy, she could call him whatever she wanted.

With Xie Jiayi around, Xu Shixing and Xu Chengji had to act naturally and spontaneously, because if one of them hadn't reached that point yet and wanted to interact unnaturally, Xie Jiayi would roll her eyes and say, " Can you stop smiling like that? You're pretending to be dead . " " What are you two doing? You're obviously not familiar with each other right now, can you stop pretending to be familiar ?" " There's a lot of time left, why rush ?"...

Jixiang, who was guarding the palace gate, found that His Majesty was talking more. " I really praised the child because I thought he was cute, I didn't say it forcibly . " " You keep turning them, when will they be cooked ?" " I'm not being nosy, Chengji also said not to keep turning them ."... " I told you it's hot, why are you in such a hurry ?" " Do n't peel them, I'll do it ."...

Xu Shixing really didn't know how to do something as simple as peeling taro. How did Xie Jiayi manage to peel a good taro and make it so scarred and missing? If he had never done it before, then he had never done it before either. Look how well he peeled it. People are stupid and can't do anything.

At this time, he tilted his head to see the taro peeled by five-year-old Xu Chengji. Wasn't it better than his own ? He quickly stuffed his taro into Xie Jiayi's hand. Seeing that the child was about to give the taro to his mother, as an adult and an emperor, Xu Shixing pretended not to notice it



without blushing or panting. He took Xie Jiayi's bumpy taro and ate it with peace of mind. He also smiled at the child and encouraged him: " You peeled it well. Eat more and grow up. " Xu Chengji blinked, looked at the taro in His Majesty's hand, and put his own to his mother's mouth. When Xie Jiayi took a bite, he asked in a baby voice, " Mom, is it delicious? "

" fragrant. "

" How fragrant? "

" The best fragrance in the world. "

Xu Chengji felt that today's " mother loves me so much that she expresses her love to me every day " was enough, and he happily began to eat his delicious taro in small bites. Xu Shixing took a look at this child, not only can he peel taro, but he is also ... After all, he is an adult with a sense of dignity, so he can only say one more thing to Xie Jiayi: " Eat it quickly, it will not taste good if it gets cold. " It will not be fragrant.

The whole room was filled with the fragrance of taro, and Jixiang smiled as he held his whisk. Everything was going well in Zhaoyang Palace, but Zhang Jinyu in Shoukang Palace became more and more depressed. She felt more and more that there was no place for her in the palace. She was unwilling to accept this. She was unwilling to accept this.

She looked up at her aunt who was sitting at the top, " Aunt, I want to be made a royal concubine. "

The Queen Mother paused as she twisted her Buddhist beads and looked at her: " Have you made up your mind? "

" I've thought about it. "

Due to the previous emperor's words, the empress dowager had never made any progress in her efforts to secure the position of consort for Zhang Jinyu. However, they knew that once Zhang Jinyu asked for it, it would be granted.

The Queen Mother narrowed her eyes and said, " Go ahead. Now that you already have a Queen, your Majesty's harem cannot be left empty any longer. "

The sky was gloomy and there was a snow.

## Chapter 101

The snow that had fallen all night had stopped , but the sky was still overcast and I didn't know when the snow would fall again.

In the room with floor-length flower canopies carved with crabapple flowers on one side of the main hall of Zhaoyang Palace, Empress Xie Jiayi put down the book in her hand upon hearing the words and met the eyes of Nanny Chen who was sitting on an embroidered cushion and checking the clothes of the young master.

Cai Xing beside him continued, " This is the news from Shoukang Palace. "

" She said she wanted to be made a noble concubine? " Xie Jiayi repeated slowly . Even in this situation , did Zhang Jinyu still have the confidence to make a comeback? She really suspected that His Majesty either had a fatal handle in Zhang Jinyu's hand , or owed Zhang Jinyu a life, and this would involve more than one life.

" That's not all. The two cousins from the Duke of England's residence and three other young ladies have been summoned by the Queen Mother these past two days. "

" My cousins are all gathered together. " Xie Jiayi said half sarcastically , even mocking herself. She pondered for a moment and said slowly: " It is really inappropriate for me to take Chengji as the queen and stop His Majesty from appointing concubines. " It will affect her son's reputation . Even if he can get what he wants in the future , he will probably have a reputation that is even worse than in his previous life.

" Empress? " Cai Xing called out . If she didn't stop him , it would be even more difficult in the future.

Nanny Chen placed the young master's clothes neatly on the tray beside the couch , raised her eyes and said, You ca " n't stop him. " The master has grown up , and he has more important people and things in his mind . " You can't stop him. "

Xie Jiayi chuckled , " Since the Queen Mother thinks so, all of them will be given titles , but Zhang Jinyu alone cannot be given a title. " Title her as a noble concubine , Noble Concubine Zhang , dream on.

" It's just that His Majesty—— "

" Your Majesty must have some difficulties. " Xie Jiayi said coldly , but who knows how many difficulties the emperor has. If he can confer the title of Emperor Zhang Jinyu today, she might get married tomorrow. She would not be surprised if she has a child one day. If so, why should she stay in the palace with her son? It is better to go back to the north to try her luck.

Nanny Chen looked at the Queen: " I don't know what her body is like—— "

Xie Jiayi snorted disdainfully: " Who knows. " But this man is full of tricks, and he must be killed. If she really gave birth to a child, could she still give it back to Zhang Jinyu? With a biological son, it would be even harder to count on the adopted son, and it would be difficult for her son, Xie Jiayi, to gain a foothold.

" The young master's affairs are too difficult. " Nanny Chen looked at the gloomy sky outside and sighed.

" No matter how difficult it is, I will do it. " If this path really doesn't work, she will take another one. In this palace, only one prince can live forever, and that is the crown prince. If he can't enter the East Palace, it's for her, the queen's face, how many years can her Chengji live in the palace. Xie Jiayi also looked at the gloomy sky outside, clenched the book in her hand, and checked all these years, but the " owl " was always like ice floating on the water. A corner could be seen sporadically, but no one knew how huge the iceberg under the water was. the descendants of Prince Min Huai until their death , but they will not kill the crown prince of Dayin, nor will they kill the future new king of Dayin.

" My master, I am just afraid of something going against my will ... " After all, this goes against human nature and destiny. Nanny Chen feels embarrassed for her master.

Xie Jiayi smiled: " Rebellious? Once we do it, it will be right. " What is against the trend, what is right, and what is destiny all need to be defined by humans.

Nanny Chen looked at the young master lovingly, and sighed again when she bowed her head. She hadn't seen His Majesty for these years, and His Majesty had changed a lot. She couldn't

see His Majesty clearly anymore, and who knew what His Majesty was thinking. The path her master had taken was ultimately difficult to take. His Majesty had been begging for it for these years, and he had agreed to it, but would he still have the same idea in a few years? Not to mention the emperor, which man didn't want his own bloodline ...

Your Majesty is now in the prime of life, he can still have a child even if he is five or ten years late. Once a man changes his mind, his heart is very hard.

But the nanny knew that the path the master least wanted to take was the path that would end in war.

Xie Jiayi had already considered what Nanny was thinking about thousands of times. But sometimes it was just so hard to survive.

She asked Caixing to bring a maid to change her clothes, as Xie Jiayi was going to see His Majesty.

In the Yangxin Palace, Emperor Jianzhao looked at Zhang Jinyu kneeling on the ground with an unclear expression, " You have been thinking about it for so many years, and you still want to make her a concubine? "

Zhang Jinyu kowtowed and said, " I don't care about my status, I just hope to be with your majesty. But I was once a slave and suffered all kinds of pain——"

Jixiang heard Mingpei's words before she could finish, but was interrupted by Emperor Jianzhao, who was at the top of the table: " As a slave, you have suffered all kinds of abuse . This is – suffering from whom , how could I not know? " His Majesty's voice was light and gentle, but Jixiang knew that his Majesty was angry.

Jixiang couldn't understand Mingpei. In his opinion, His Majesty had no interest in Miss Mingpei. But whether it was delivering soup to the Yangxin Palace or the thing Gaosheng helped Mingpei do, if it was someone else, they would have died a hundred times, but she was still alive and well and could even walk into the Yangxin Palace. It was really strange!

" Your Majesty, Your Majesty does not care about the affection we have had since childhood, and does not care about the sacrifices made by the entire Zhang family. Your Majesty should not forget what you promised me. "

The day has finally come when the truth is revealed.

The study fell into silence and Emperor Jianzhao did not speak.

Whether it was Mingpei who was kneeling inside, or Jixiang who was guarding the door, they all had their heads down. No one could see the emperor's expression at the moment, let alone know what the emperor was thinking at the moment.

They were only six or seven years old at the time, and that was the year before the Zhang family was confiscated. Zhang Jinyu brought her half-year-old brother to follow Xu Shixing. It was said that although this brother was born out of wedlock, he got along very well with Zhang Jinyu, and she loved him like her own brother. Although Xu Shixing was young, there were no naive children in the palace. He had lost interest in those children's games a long time ago. But Zhang Jinyu's half-brother was still naive, chasing after his brother the prince, calling him the prince, and begging him to get rid of the servants so that they could climb trees and play in the mud together. Zhang Jinyu was standing next to him, covering her mouth with a handkerchief and laughing.

Xu Shixing was annoyed, so he took them to get rid of the servants, leaving only a maid who followed Zhang Jinyu closely, and just hoped that they would shut up and go play. But something happened, and Xu Shixing and the annoying but silly and cute boy fell into the water together. At the critical moment, Zhang Jinyu said to the maid who followed them: " Save the prince first! "

It was obvious that the little boy with the chubby rosy face was closer to the girl, but the girl still saved Xu Shixing first.

In the end, Xu Shixing survived, but the chattering little fat face died.

The six or seven-year-old Xu Shixing already understood what had happened. He looked at Zhang Jinyu who was crying and said to her: " I owe you money. You can always ask me for it in the future. "

Now, Zhang Jinyu came to ask him for it.

Xu Shixing no longer looked at the person kneeling below, and said calmly: " You go out first. "

When Zhang Jinyu walked out of the Palace of Tranquil Longevity with her maid, she happened to meet Empress Dayin Xie Jiayi, who also came with her palace maids in front of the palace. She bowed her head and saluted, but when she looked up, she smiled at Xie Jiayi.

This smile——

Xie Jiayi looked at Zhang Jinyu, who was becoming more and more gloomy under the gloomy sky, and with this gloomy smile. She looked up and looked around the palace with high walls. This was about to drive her crazy again.

" Don't laugh like that in the future, it's scary and it makes me lose my appetite. " Xie Jiayi said calmly. She was not using excuses to attack people, she was telling the truth. Although Zhang Jinyu was not a good person ten years ago, at least she was innocent when she laughed. Why, has the knife of time cut her into this?

Cai Xing, who was standing next to her, didn't know what the Queen was thinking. She would definitely tell the Queen: It was mainly you who cut her. She looked at Ming Pei's smile and felt it was eerie, as if she was about to transform.

" If your Majesty can't even tolerate my smile, I'm afraid you'll never have a good appetite in the future. " Zhang Jinyu replied gloomily.

Xie Jiayi felt that even though she was not close to him, she was blown away by Zhang Jinyu's confidence. She was so sure that she could be made a concubine, and even a noble concubine. Xie Jiayi smiled.

Xie Jiayi's smile made the confident Zhang Jinyu's hair stand on end. Her smile was too ostentatious and wanton. She was obviously a widow from the north with a child. She should be grateful and manage her life well after becoming the queen, but her smile could give people the feeling that she was aggressive and would do whatever she wanted.

" You, the limit of being a concubine in this life. " His Majesty's difficulties could not be ignored, but if she let Zhang Jinyu continue to sit on the throne of the imperial concubine, what would be the point of her being the queen? It would be better for her to take her son out of the palace and make a living.

At least outside the palace and in the north, no matter how long I can live, I will be happy.

Xie Jiayi took one last glance at Zhang Jinyu, sneered, and led his men to the study in the Palace of Tranquil Longevity.

As soon as she entered the study, Xie Jiayi said straight to the point: " Your Majesty, I don't agree. "

Jixiang hurriedly took the palace servants with him and went downstairs, gently closed the study door, and he and Caixing guarded the door together.

Xu Shixing paused. Seeing her raised face and firm expression, he wanted to say something, but finally he sighed lightly, walked forward, stretched out his hand and pulled her to sit on the couch: " Why are you in such a hurry? You must be cold after sitting in the sedan chair all the way. " Then he stuffed the tea into her hand.

Xie Jiayi did not hold back. She drank two sips of tea, feeling a little better in her stomach, and continued, " Hasn't the Empress Dowager already collected many girls in the palace? She has given them titles. But I don't like this person. Not to mention the title of Imperial Concubine, even the title of Concubine is not acceptable. " Giving her the title of concubine would mean that she, as the Queen, was giving His Majesty enough face. If that person dared to move again, she would have to suppress him with the late Emperor 's clear instruction that she would not be " .promoted " And giving her the title of concubine would show her magnanimity as the Queen. I'm afraid that the Empress Dowager and Zhang Jinyu would not want it. If she accepted it, the face of the daughter of the Wang family would also be lost.

Xu Shixing stared at her: " Are you willing to let these people enter the harem? "

" What can I do if I don't want to? I've had enough of being the queen who gets scolded every day. "

Xie Jiayi said this calmly, but there was a grievance in her eyes, which softened Xu Shixing's heart. He gently squeezed her hand and said, " You are the queen of our Dayin, who dares to scold you! "

Who else dares to do that? Xie Jiayi thought to herself that scolding her had become a trend. If loyal officials and upright officials did not scold the queen, it meant that they were afraid of the imperial power and did not dare to speak out. If they scolded the queen, they would no longer be upright officials.

But she had business to attend to, so she looked directly at Xu Shixing and said, " Entering the palace, OK. But nothing else, no! "

Xu Shixing looked at her with amusement: " If there is nothing else that won't work, you should explain it clearly. "

" You don't understand? " Xie Jiayi was in no mood to deal with anyone at the moment, so she asked the question in a murderous and aggressive tone.

Xu Shixing immediately said: " I understand. "

Jixiang, who was guarding the door with full concentration, said: ... It's been a long time since I saw His Majesty give in, and so quickly ... He glanced at Caixing next to him. She was calm and not nervous at all.

Xu Shixing pulled the person into his arms and whispered, " Zhao Zhao, I've always remembered what I promised you. Why don't you believe me? "

Xu Shixing felt the person in his arms tremble, and said slowly: " I believed it. " I believed it wholeheartedly.

He thought Xie Jiayi was still saying this because she had concealed Mingpei's identity and the Queen Mother had given her a love potion ... Xu Shixing thought, it's not Zhaozhao's fault. In the palace, besides the late emperor, she had been in the East Palace and Changchun Palace, but the people she trusted the most had lied to her. He tightened his embrace and said in a deep voice: " Zhaozhao, I will do everything I promised you. "

When Xie Jiayi came of age, she said that she would only marry someone who could promise her " a lifetime of companionship " . At that time, the 15-year-old Xie Jiayi smiled so proudly, saying that if the prince couldn't do that, she wouldn't want him no matter how much she liked him.

After hearing what Xu Shixing said, Xie Jiayi remained silent for a long time.

Xu Shixing did not wait for Xie Jiayi's response. She did not say whether she believed it or not. But Xu Shixing thought, he promised her, he would do it. Can't lose, can't cry, can't have desires. But he still had desires later. In his arms was the only thing he wanted in this dark life, his only wish.

He hugged her tightly and asked again: " Zhao Zhao, don't you believe me? "

But Xie Jiayi replied: " Zhang Jinyu cannot be a concubine. Did His Majesty agree to my request? "

## Chapter 102

What Xu Shixing wanted to say was: Xie Jiayi , you have to believe me.

But the only thing Xie Jiayi cared about was that Zhang Jinyu must not be made a concubine. After hearing what Xie Jiayi said, it was Xu Shixing who remained silent. She was clearly in his arms , but he still didn't know where her heart was. He didn't even know whether she no longer believed in him or didn't care whether he was still trustworthy.

Xie Jiayi struggled slightly and came out of Xu Shixing's arms , and sat down opposite the bed. Xu Shixing's arms were empty, but he could see her opposite him when he looked up. His queen leaned against the bed with a serious face, and said with regret: " Your Majesty, I know you must have your reasons , and you must have promised her something. "

Xu Shixing was thinking, when did you know that ? Why did you turn around and leave without even looking back even though you knew I had my difficulties ?

Xie Jiayi leaned forward and said, " But Your Majesty , you have to know how to bargain! "

Xu Shixing was still in a daze , but was dragged out by the word " bargaining " . Looking at Xie Jiayi's serious expression and the serious look that told him to " learn how to bargain " , he felt sad and painful in his heart , but he couldn't help wanting to laugh.

" How can you always talk nonsense? "

" How can I say this is nonsense! " Xie Jiayi was unwilling , " No matter what your majesty promised your fake cousin, but she was not allowed to be promoted by the late emperor , and she was so bold as to want to be a noble concubine! Your majesty naturally cannot be a villain

who is unfaithful and ungrateful , but can your majesty be an unfilial son who disregards the late emperor's order? Why can't you bargain ? Why should you give her whatever she wants! " She wants a noble concubine , at most give her a concubine , and fulfill the " favor of not abandoning " of your majesty and cousin , that's it. If you want something else, dream on. At this point, Xie Jiayi frowned: " If she wants another child tomorrow, does Your Majesty have to do it again ? If it doesn't work once, does he have to accompany her all night long? Then Your Majesty will ..." Before he could finish the word " what " , Xu Shixing stopped him and said:

" Shut up now. You are already the queen, but you are not going to change your habit of talking nonsense! " Hearing what she said, Xu Shixing really wanted to block her mouth and stop her from talking nonsense . She didn't know who he was with, so Xu Shixing said angrily: " You—— ! "

" What about me! " Xie Jiayi sneered, " Your Majesty, do you think your cousin can't do it? The more decent she looks on the surface, the more despicable the things she does! "

" Zhao Zhao, don't say such things again in the future! " Especially not outside the Yangxin Palace. If the queen of this country starts scolding people, it will really let people know that she, the queen, does not need to be scolded! By the time the impeachment memorials are so numerous, I'm afraid this kang table won't even have enough space. But Xie Jiayi was already angry. As the queen, she had to be on guard against someone climbing into the emperor's bed every day. Thinking of this, Xie Jiayi was extremely annoyed. In the previous dynasty, there was an emperor who was almost sixty years old and still had a son. How could he still have a son at sixty? She glanced at Xu Shixing, who was only thirty years old. It was too bad. Wouldn't she have to be like a night watch girl? This position would last almost thirty years !

In the future, there will be many girls like Zhang Jinyu who are so cunning and will rush to her. As long as one of them successfully gives birth to an heir, her Chengji will be in trouble! It's really hard to guard against! Thinking about the future, Xie Jiayi felt a sense of grievance and looked at the man in front of her. The fire in her heart was surging:

" I'm saying this about her! She looks like a human but behaves like a dog, so despicable! A dog, a dog! She's just a dog! " She just couldn't say it, because who knows when " dog " will accidentally become " a couple of dogs " .

Xu Shixing pushed the table away and locked Xie Jiayi in his arms. He lowered his head and stared at her black eyes that were burning with anger. Xie Jiayi bit her lip and looked at him, unwilling to be outdone. Xu Shixing's eyes were so dark that it was difficult to understand. Is Xu Shixing furious? He was so angry that his eyes were shining. Xie Jiayi was a little scared, but the more scared she was, the more she couldn't admit defeat. She asked tentatively: " Dog? " She had to be the last person to speak in a quarrel, and only by being mighty and unyielding would it count.

Xu Shixing, who wanted to kiss those unforgiving red lips, suddenly buried his head in Xie Jiayi's neck. Xu Shixing's shoulders trembled and he couldn't help but let out a low laugh. Xie Jiayi wondered if this person had gone mad ...

Xu Shixing hugged her and didn't raise his head for a long time. Finally, he raised his head and sat up straight. He held Xie Jiayi's shoulders with both hands and said seriously: " The queen is right. I should bargain. After all, the late emperor said so before. I can't be unfilial for the sake of personal justice. "

He saw Xie Jiayi exhale, and Xu Shixing couldn't help but soften his voice: " Are you relieved now? "

Xie Jiayi sighed in return and raised her eyes to stare at him.

It had been a long time since she had looked at him so seriously. Xu Shixing's heart was beating in his chest, and his eyes were fixed on Xie Jiayi. Just when he thought he should do something, he heard this bastard say in an especially serious tone: " Your Majesty, this harem will be surrounded by wolves from now on. You must be careful. It is important to keep your innocence. "

Xu Shixing: .....

He took a long breath, thinking that maybe he shouldn't let Xie Jiayi speak when he wanted to do something.

But before Xie Jiayi finished her words, Xu Shixing heard her queen hesitate for a moment: " There is something I don't know if I should say-- "

Something that could make Xie Jiayi hesitate must be something that should not be mentioned. Xu Shixing immediately became alert. He looked at her and said, " Maybe, it should not be mentioned. "

" You're right, this matter is indeed hard to say. " Xie Jiayi seemed to be even more troubled.

Although Xu Shixing was wondering what the matter was, he knew Xie Jiayi too well, so he just didn't ask. But he must not ask, he raised his hand to take the memorial beside him, leaned against the table and pretended to read it seriously.

Xie Jiayi paused for a moment and then stammered, " But I still feel I have to say it. "

Xu Shixing: He knew it. He raised his eyes from the memorial and looked at her.

" That's what I think, " Xie Jiayi chose her words carefully.

When Xu Shixing saw her like this, he knew in his heart that it was definitely not a good thing.

" The girls will come to my palace to sit in the afternoon. " Xie Jiayi said while looking at Xu Shixing's reaction. Xu Shixing did not give her any response, but wanted to listen to what she was going to do, which actually made this lawless queen hesitate and become serious.

" This is what I think, " Xie Jiayi repeated this sentence unconsciously, and avoided Xu Shixing's gaze. This made Xu Shixing feel even more uneasy. He gently stroked the new mutton-fat jade ring on his thumb, and just stared at her.

" That's right. " Xie Jiayi glanced at Xu Shixing's expression, trying to figure out what she was going to say.

" I want to tell them, " Xie Jiayi seemed to be interested in the lines on the letter all of a sudden, and she looked at it carefully, and continued, " Your Majesty is not in good health and doesn't like to come to the harem. Well, maybe he just doesn't ... I hope they can understand. " Those who should retreat should retreat as soon as possible. Otherwise, if this loophole is opened, the Empress Dowager of Shoukang Palace will be like the old lady of Taining Marquis,



and she will be given a harem full of beautiful girls who will bother her every day. She still has to keep an eye on each of them. Can she keep an eye on them? If she hinted like this, she felt that these noble ladies would not work so hard like they are now, and they would not insist on entering the palace to be widows. It would be better for them to find a young talent outside to marry as their legal wife.

After Xie Jiayi finished speaking so softly and tactfully, the entire imperial study fell into silence so deep that one could hear a pin drop.

Xie Jiayi studied the wood texture of the kang table carefully. Is this sandalwood ?

" Zhao Zhao. " Xu Shixing's gentle voice made Xie Jiayi shudder. She felt that it was worse than she expected. A hero should bow his head when it is time to do so. This was another of Xie Jiayi's countless mottos. She immediately smiled sweetly: " Your Majesty, do you think it's not a good idea to say this? I don't think it's a good idea either. I just want to share your worries. When the time comes, there will be a lot of people around, and your Majesty will be annoyed, and I will be annoyed too— " It was mainly because she was annoyed and she was afraid that she couldn't keep an eye on it.

With Xu Shixing's raised mouth and his cold gaze, Xie Jiayi couldn't continue. She simply said, " I just said this. Isn't this asking your majesty what you mean? Come up with an idea. I'm not Zhuge Kongming who always has a good idea. It takes countless bad ideas to come up with a good one. Your majesty, don't you agree? "

Seeing that the other party's expression did not change, Xie Jiayi pursed her lips and said, " Your Majesty, does your promise to me still count? " Don't really make him angry. What he promised before will not count. Then she will have to consider packing up and taking her son back to the north.

After so many years, there were some things that Xu Shixing could not understand anymore, such as her sudden silence when she looked at a certain place. For example, he could not understand her sudden trance and sad smile when she heard certain words.

But he still saw some things clearly at a glance. For example, she, as a queen, was so uneasy, as if she had to be prepared to protect herself at any time. Xu Shixing knew that it was the Queen Mother's love that hurt her and frightened her, and it was his previous deception that hurt her. However, his promise to her had always been the same, so why was she still so uneasy. Looking at Xie Jiayi like this, Xu Shixing felt hatred and pity. He really wanted to hold her and her inner soul in his arms, hold her in his heart, and let her see everything clearly.

The way she pursed her lips and her hands fiddling with the carvings under the table made his heart ache.

He looked at her and said slowly: " Let me put it this way. I think the Queen's idea is very good. "

She suddenly raised her eyes and met his. Xie Jiayi's appearance made Xu Shixing's sour heart feel better. He smiled and asked her softly: " Are you happier now? "

Xie Jiayi nodded blankly. This would save her a lot of trouble. She put her words there, and chose to come in to seek wealth and honor. If the young ladies dared to take the Yangxin Palace, don't blame her as the queen for taking drastic measures.

" Then, can you come into my arms? " Xu Shixing thought sadly. Zhao Zhao had never taken the initiative once.

Looking at Xie Jiayi who was slowly approaching him, he said to himself, at least this time she took the initiative to approach him.

## Chapter 103

In Zhaoyang Palace , Xie Jiayi, wearing the gorgeous palace dress of the empress, sat at the head of the table, lazily looking at the six or seven little girls below , most of them were sixteen or seventeen years old , the youngest one had just come of age , and each of them was as tender as a scallion.

Unfortunately, she dislikes shallots the most.

Xie Jiayi was very satisfied watching their faces gradually turn pale. Nanny Chen had her way. She said what she should say and warned what she should warn. The key was that these girls with their heads full of romantic thoughts understood what she said. Her nanny was really amazing. Xie Jiayi sat lazily , letting the girls below turn pale in the silent Zhaoyang Palace. She was still proud of her capable nanny.

Miss Mingpei in Shoukang Palace had not left her room for two days , and the palace maids in Shoukang Palace had been on tenterhooks for two days , all knowing that Shoukang Palace and Zhaoyang Palace had met head-on for the first time , and they had been defeated. The imperial edict had been issued , but three of the seven people carefully selected by the Queen Mother were unwilling to enter the palace , and the pressure from one side and the other side was about to hang themselves, which made the Queen Mother so angry that she asked what the Queen had said , and everyone kept their mouths shut like clams.

Even the girls from the Duke of England's mansion didn't dare to tell anyone. The Queen's nanny said that the Queen told them the truth in advance out of pity for them. It was a matter of face for His Majesty . If anyone heard any rumor , no matter who said it , no one present would be able to escape.

the Queen's methods . They all grew up listening to the story of Princess Kunyi. The Princess was afraid of skinning and killing people . The Princess had skinned noble ladies and servants, and killed officials and generals in the court. They had no doubts. If the news got out, they would not have a good ending.

The next day, His Majesty came to pay his respects again. Emperor Jianzhao, who was about to leave after paying his respects in the courtyard as usual, was called in by Nanny Liu herself. They were clearly mother and son, but they were both silent. Shoukang Palace was completely silent.

The silence was broken by the empress dowager who suddenly smashed a teacup, " Emperor, is this what you want to show me? This is your explanation to the entire Zhang family! " Anger replaced the terrible silence and ignited Shoukang Palace.

" The late emperor gave me an order, and I dare not disobey him. "

" You—— ! " The Queen Mother pointed at Emperor Jianzhao and said angrily, " You said the same thing about your maternal grandfather's title, and you still say it now! "

Xu Shixing just lowered his eyes and listened to the lecture without saying another word.

Seeing that this was not working, the Queen Mother changed her tone and softened her tone: " Emperor, we can't be so heartless. Back then, Mingpei's brother died for you, and later, the entire Zhang family died for you. Mingpei has been delayed for you for all these years, and in the end, you give her such an explanation? Okay, think about it yourself, can we do this? Can we be worthy of others? "

Xu Shixing suddenly thought of the two times Xie Jiayi whipped him in Haitang Palace, and her angry words, " Am I not noble? "

He uttered this sentence slowly.

The Queen Mother was puzzled.

Xu Shixing looked at his mother and said again: " Mother, am I not noble? I am the Crown Prince, they chose me and stood on my side. They should have no regrets even though they are dying, they deserved their death! " At this moment Xu Shixing was a cold-blooded emperor. It was only natural for a minister to die for his monarch.

" As for the life-saving grace, I told Ming Pei many years ago that she could choose any good man from Dayin, and I made the decision for her. It was my mother and she herself who didn't want to do it. Why do I have to repay this life-saving grace with my own body? Otherwise, I would be heartless and unworthy of being a human being? I didn't know that I, the son of a dragon and the grandson of a phoenix, the emperor of heaven, could be so humble as to be like this. "

These words actually left the Queen Mother speechless for a moment. She could only avoid answering and said sadly: " You have disappointed me so much. For you, I have done this, and we have done this for you-- "

" Mother, you cannot cry, you cannot lose, and you cannot have desires. I have been trying my best to do what you asked me to do. If this still does not satisfy you, it is not that I do not want to, but that I cannot. "

The Queen Mother was so angry that her hands were shaking and her face was blue: " You have grown too independent and don't take your mother seriously! You are fighting for a rag that someone else has worn-- " The Queen Mother was so angry and resentful that she started to talk without thinking.

" Mother! Be careful with your words! " Xu Shixing interrupted her, his facial muscles twitching.

The Queen Mother sneered, " Your Majesty may not say it, but who in the world does not know it? Xing'er, you have forgotten all your mother's teachings for the sake of a treacherous man who abandoned you all those years ago. " The Queen Mother seemed to feel extremely sad when she said this, and showed an expression of infinite sorrow.

Unexpectedly, Emperor Jian Zhao remained indifferent. He looked at the Queen Mother and suddenly smiled with great difficulty: " Mother, when Zhao Zhao was 15 years old, you gave her the virgin honey. "

The Queen Mother was shocked when she heard this. No one knew about this except her and Mingpei, not even Aunt Liu. She made the cakes and prepared the medicine herself, and Mingpei personally brought the food over and watched the people eat it all. There was no way a third person would know about this!

How could the emperor know?

Noticing her son's cold eyes, the Queen Mother said angrily, " You believe such slander! The Queen has disliked you all these years, but you still believed her! " She looked at the Emperor with a grief-stricken expression, " Let alone, how much you loved the princess, everyone in the palace knows it, and you saw it too. How could you do that? Moreover, if you really had sex with her, how could she have children? If you really want to harm her, will you leave her any room for mercy? "

" The King of Medicine Fang Zhongzi. " Xu Shixing looked at the Queen Mother and replied.

It was only when Lu Chen'an asked Fang Zhongzi, the King of Medicine, to come to the North that he realized that there was something wrong with Lu Chen'an's identity. In this world, the only one who could ask Fang Zhongzi to come to the North with just a token was Prince Min Huai. Prince Min Huai died, but his son survived, which explained what the " Xiao " that had troubled him for so many years was doing.

The Queen Mother was suddenly exposed to this matter and was not prepared at all. Now she heard that the Emperor already knew so much, which showed that he had checked it out. Her lips trembled for a moment, but she still said: " But, why did the Queen Mother need to harm a little girl at that time? This is a false accusation, this is a deliberate accusation! "

Xu Shixing murmured: " Yes, mother, why do you have to harm a little girl like her? " She was his future crown princess. Over the years, he had tried his best to do everything, he just wanted such a person, why couldn't mother tolerate her?

slowly regained her composure. There was no evidence for the incident more than a decade ago, and even if there was, it would have been lost in time. She snorted coldly, " Now that the Emperor is old, he no longer needs my mother, and naturally he doesn't trust her. Those who are innocent are innocent. I don't admit to anything I didn't do. "

As she spoke, her voice softened: " Your Majesty, you have seen the Queen's ruthlessness over the years. Apart from other things, you have been very affectionate to her. Does she really care about you? " She said in a pitying voice: " Don't say that your mother didn't do it. Even if your mother did it, how would she know? Isn't this slander? Who tricked her into changing her heart and throwing dirty water on your mother's head just to deceive you, a simple-minded child. You have been let down and suffered, but you still pity her. Think about it calmly, didn't all the benefits fall on her? She changed her heart and didn't marry, and then she came back to cry and feel wronged, and she still became the Queen? Son, think about this! "

The Queen Mother's tone was so sincere and her words were so heartfelt that even Madam Liu believed her.

Xu Shixing simply said: " I know her, she is not that kind of person. "

" Then the Queen Mother is the kind of person who harms others for no reason! "

" I didn't say that. " Of course there was a reason for that.

The Queen Mother said with great sorrow: " Son, it's all because of your strict management since you were young that you only know government affairs and don't know the thoughts of women. The more innocent they look, the more likely they are to lie. Apart from other things, the Xie family army in the north is still controlled by the Jingbei Palace and the Queen. If she really cares about you, would she hold on to the military power? Just for this reason, she should be killed! "

" I'm afraid she's still thinking about him even though he's been dead for six years! Otherwise, she would have done such a thing for her son! "

Obviously, this sentence touched Xu Shixing's soft spot. Although he remained calm, his face turned a little pale. It was because he knew that Zhao Zhao didn't believe him. When this fact was said by others, it was like a poisonous snake biting his heart. Not only did she not believe him, she had never even thought about giving birth to his offspring, but she was only concerned about protecting her and that man's son and moving forward.

" This is what I mean. The Xie family army is loyal to the north, which means they are loyal to the court and to me. " Xu Shixing said calmly.

" Your Majesty, your mother has been worrying about you for nothing. Your Majesty is just thinking about how important the military power in the North is, so how can she be so indulgent? Your maternal grandfather has people in the North, and you should use your own family members to balance the two sides. This is the way to be a king. "

Xu Shixing lowered his head and curled the corners of his mouth calmly. This is what the Queen Mother really cares about.

" The Queen Mother, take good care of yourself. I have something else to do in the morning, so I'll take my leave now! "

" You – you are on guard against the Duke of Yingguo's Mansion, but not the Queen! Relatives by marriage are not only my maiden family! " The Queen Mother suddenly slammed the cup on the table.

However, Xu Shixing bowed and left as usual, as if he had not noticed the empress dowager's anger at all.

The Queen Mother stroked her chest and pointed at the emperor's back as he left. This time she was so angry that she couldn't speak! The title of the Duke of Ying was damaged, and the family's foundation in the Huai River region was destroyed. Now the foundation in the north is also unstable . On the surface, the father and son are both important officials in the court, but in reality, their foundation is like duckweed. On the other hand, the Queen holds the military power in the north and at least half of Dayin's economic lifeline. With money and an army, the Emperor actually indulged her to this extent. He must have been bewitched by a vixen.

" Mammy, if it was another person who stayed behind, why would I be so troubled today? " The Queen Mother said with difficulty, covering her chest.

" Empress Dowager! " Although she knew that no one would dare to approach at this time, Nanny Liu still couldn't help but look outside, fearing that there might be eavesdroppers on the other side of the wall.

The Queen touched her chest and said, " It was just a matter of one thought. "

It's ridiculous that her son is such a romantic. Not to mention others, even she, the mother, was wrong about him in the early years.

After leaving Shoukang Palace, Emperor Jianzhao looked at the leaden sky and asked softly, "What is the queen doing?"

Jixiang hurried back and asked, "Your Majesty, do you want to go and take a look?"

Emperor Jianzhao was silent for a while, then said: "Go and tell them that I'm busy today and won't be over." Then he got on the chariot and went to the Yangxin Palace.

"I'm afraid she's still thinking about him even though he's been dead for six years!

Otherwise, she would have done such a thing for her son!"

The Queen Mother's words were like a needle that pierced his heart and made him bleed.

## Chapter 104

No one knew what happened, but the people in the palace suddenly felt that the relationship between Shoukang Palace and Zhaoyang Palace had become more tense. The people under the two palaces had already had several minor and minor frictions, and this was just the beginning.

In the eunuchs' quarters of Shoukang Palace, one of the eunuchs with a hooked nose was lying on a recliner, with a young eunuch calling him "godfather" and massaging his legs. He was stroking a piece of warm jade in his hand, pondering the inner secrets. He suddenly grasped the jade and made up his mind. If everything went well, the position of the chief eunuch of Shoukang Palace would be his. The sudden call of power and wealth made him feel uneasy for a while. As long as he made up his mind, he might be able to rise to the top. With excitement in his heart, he raised his foot and kicked the young eunuch who wanted to massage his legs. Seeing him fall to the ground, he knelt down and apologized when he got up. The eunuch with a hooked nose laughed.

This person is none other than the eunuch De Lu, who was originally working in the Ministry of Internal Affairs. He was transferred to Shoukang Palace these days. Because he is good at speaking and is valued by the empress dowager, he is also a powerful eunuch. However, the man he offended in the past has now climbed to the position of the chief eunuch of Zhaoyang Palace. De Lu has already figured it out. Apart from joining Shoukang Palace, he has no other way out. He and Ruyi had already made enemies in the past. At that time, Ruyi was just a little eunuch who came with an orphan girl from the north. He was bullied, but who could have thought of today.

Everyone waited in silence, waiting for a spark to ignite the friction between the two palaces and bring it to the surface. On that day, the Queen Mother of Shoukang Palace and the Queen of Zhaoyang Palace would face off directly, and they would also thoroughly understand who the real master of the harem was from now on.

Everyone had expected this day to come, but it came too quickly and was beyond everyone's expectations. The palace people thought that with the current situation of "the king not meeting the king", they would at least be able to spend the New Year safely. No one expected that the

small friction would directly escalate into a conflict between the two palaces' chief stewards and the head maids. There was no room for maneuver.

The sky was still overcast that day, the north wind was blowing, and everyone coming and going in the palace was in a hurry.

" There's going to be a heavy snow today. " Everyone said this, but the heavy snow didn't come today.

" It's better to just go to the next round quickly. It's really unbearable to be so cold. " The young eunuch, stamping his feet and rubbing his hands, could hardly hold the broom in his arms. The eunuch sweeping the floor beside him laughed and said, " If I gave you a butler, you wouldn't be cold at all now. "

This is about the newly replaced eunuch chief steward of Shoukang Palace. It is said that he is very capable and is quite liked by the Queen Mother. It is said that he is not only capable, but also knows acupuncture points and is good at massage. He cured the Queen Mother's headache and now she really can't live without him for a day. Before the young eunuch replied to him, he hugged the broom in his arms tightly, his eyes wide open, " The stewards are here! Two –" The whole voice was lowered at the end. These were really two stewards meeting on a narrow road.

The two little eunuchs were no longer afraid of the cold. They held the brooms and started sweeping diligently, while their ears were listening to the noise over there.

The two eunuchs were Ruyi, the chief eunuch of Zhaoyang Palace, and Delu, the newly appointed chief eunuch of Shoukang Palace. Delu smiled grimly, " What a coincidence today. The Ministry of Internal Affairs just said that the best jades in this batch were picked by Ruyi. Let's take a look at what the good ones are, so that we won't be confused when the time comes and make the Empress Dowager angry. "

As he said this, he reached out to lift the box held by the young eunuch following behind Ruyi. Ruyi only snorted coldly, and lightly raised her hand to block Delu's outstretched hand, protecting the box tightly. But since Delu was clearly looking for trouble, he would not retreat. He let out an " ouch " and the box in his other hand slipped out of his hand. Before he could even utter the word " The Empress Dowager's favorite-- " the purple clay teapot, Ruyi stretched out his hand as fast as lightning and actually grabbed the box steadily .

De Lu seemed to have returned to the past. At first, he thought it was just a little eunuch who was good-looking but destined to be abused. He didn't expect that the princess from the north would jump on him and fight for such a little eunuch. After the fight, she suddenly became the favored Princess Kunyi. This little eunuch who always displeased him became a popular person in the palace. Everyone wanted to approach him to please him, but he had to hide behind with his tail between his legs.

Now he is the chief steward of Zhaoyang Palace. Some people are really lucky.

But no matter how good your life is, if you run into a tough situation, you will be finished! Ruyi will be finished today!

De Lu saw Ruyi took the box and finished his sentence: " That is the Empress Dowager's favorite – the purple clay teapot! " He stared at Ruyi with eyes like a venomous snake, " The

Empress Dowager got this purple clay teapot from the late emperor. Today, she asked me to take care of it, but how come Ruyi, the chief steward, touched it! "

The moment Ruyi received the box, he knew something was going to happen. The things in the box had been broken long ago, and today's incident was definitely his fault.

Bu Bu, who had just delivered something to the young master and was chasing after them, saw the situation from afar and quickened his pace. When he heard De Lu's words, he knew that he was going to blame Brother Ruyi. He was so angry that his face turned blue. Yesterday, he told Cai Xing that the new chief steward of Shoukang Palace might not be a good person. Today he jumped out to prove that he was indeed not a good person.

" You broke something and you blame it on us! You think we are easy to bully! " Bu Bu rushed over and shouted at De Lu. The young eunuch who had already received his signal slipped back and disappeared around a corner.

De Lu's face was completely gloomy. " Today, the chief steward Ruyi broke something that was given to him by the emperor. He should follow me to Shoukang Palace. The Empress Dowager will make the final decision on right and wrong. We can't just say we are innocent for breaking something that was given to us by the emperor! "

Ruyi then stuffed the box into the arms of a young eunuch next to De Lu. He wanted to give it to De Lu, so De Lu naturally dared not take it and let it fall to the ground. But the young eunuch dared not refuse to take it. If it fell to the ground here, it would be hard for Ruyi, the chief steward, to be safe. The Empress was behind him to support him, and he would definitely die. He took it and trembled in his arms, lowering his head and not daring to look around. He knew that today's matter was over, and he would definitely not be able to escape from the chief steward De Lu, but he really didn't want to die. Half dead, it's better than dead.

Ruyi then looked at De Lu: " Eunuch has just received the order from the chief steward, and he probably doesn't know that the servants of our Zhaoyang Palace will not go anywhere without the Queen's order. "

De Lu naturally heard this, but he really didn't expect that Ruyi could be so calm and say " I'm not going anywhere " in front of the Empress Dowager of Shoukang Palace, facing such a serious crime of " damaging the imperial gift " ! In this palace, if the master above tells you to die on your knees, you can't die sideways! Ruyi actually dared to contradict the Empress Dowager of Shoukang Palace!

" How dare you! " He gave a look, and a young eunuch ran out from the side and said, " I have already reported this to the Queen Mother. I heard that she is very sad. This is her beloved thing that has been with her for more than ten years! Let the steward bring everyone over. The Queen Mother wants to ask for clarification in person. "

De Lu smiled sinisterly at Ruyi: " Master General Manager, let's go. You can't be the general manager and you won't even listen to the Empress Dowager, right? " If Ruyi still dares to be stubborn, it would be a good opportunity to punish him for multiple crimes and just beat him to death today. It would be easier.

Ruyi was a stubborn person who was not afraid of being burned. He did not say that he would not go this time. He just said: " We have sent someone to report to the Queen Mother. Don't



worry, we have the master's consent and will follow you immediately. Whether it is a punishment or life or death, we dare not argue a word and dare not be disrespectful to the Queen Mother. " The two sides were in such a stalemate in the cold wind. De Lu didn't believe that the Queen would fight with the Queen Mother for a servant at this time. You know, if the word "filial piety" was put on her, she might not be able to hold on to her position as Queen. That's why he advised the Queen Mother to take action in Zhaoyang Palace as soon as possible. If they waited until there was a dragon heir, things would be difficult to deal with.

De Lu sneered at Ruyi. When Princess Kunyi saved him, she was young and ready to risk her life. Now the situation is that the Queen wants to protect Ruyi, but she should think twice. The Queen doesn't understand, but Nanny Chen beside the Queen will understand. But if Ruyi is beaten, they in Shoukang Palace will naturally not kill him at this time, because killing him would be inferior. After all, the Queen is a junior, and their Queen Mother is just asking Zhaoyang Palace to show a submissive attitude through a servant. If Zhaoyang Palace doesn't give such an attitude, then no one will have a good year.

Would a queen who married a second time and had a burden with her, offend the mother of the present emperor, the Empress Dowager of Shoukang Palace, to death for a slave? De Lu looked at Ruyi with cruel pity. He still had a straight back, which was really annoying. His godfather insisted that he had integrity and should not be underestimated in the future. It was really ridiculous. What kind of integrity is needed for a slave? Today, he will let his godfather in the netherworld see that this palace cannot tolerate slaves. De Lu looked at Ruyi's waist and legs, and the things that had been suppressed in his body for a long time woke up.

I don't know if a person with a hunched back and lame legs can still show his character. Just thinking about it makes me look forward to it.

At this time, someone from Zhaoyang Palace came. Seeing that it was just a junior eunuch, De Lu and his companion, Cang Ya, smiled at the people from Zhaoyang Palace. I knew that the Empress must be sensible. Looking at the two eunuchs Ruyi and Bubu from Zhaoyang Palace opposite, they were calm and composed, as if the Empress would come over to disobey the order for them. It was so funny. Look, the Empress didn't even dare to send a senior maid.

De Lu smoothed his clothes, looked up and said to Ruyi: " General Manager Ruyi, shall we go? " At this time, the three words " General Manager " already carried a sarcastic tone.

The young eunuch who came over first saluted to the chief steward of his own palace, and then said with a smile: " The queen said that the gift from the emperor is indeed not a small matter, and it must be explained clearly. "

De Lu smiled, and his smile showed the confidence that he had even weighed the weight of Zhaoyang Palace.

Looking at the chief steward Ruyi who was still trying not to change his expression, Delu found it even more funny. If integrity meant not shedding tears until one sees the coffin, or pretending to die, then Ruyi really deserves it.

Unexpectedly, the young eunuch waved his hand after he finished speaking: " Everyone is here! "

This cry left everyone in Shoukang Palace confused, and soon something even more confusing happened.

Then a group of guards came from the red wall on the other side of the corridor and headed this way. The young eunuch, still smiling, raised his hand and pointed at the palace servants in Shoukang Palace opposite: " It's them, take them all back to our Zhaoyang Palace! "

It was like a loud thunderclap in the middle of winter.

De Lu was dumbfounded, " This ... you guys ..."

The young eunuch looked very easy to talk to, and his voice was soft and polite: " General Manager, I have said before that the gift from the emperor is not a small matter and must be explained clearly. "

However, we have to go to their Zhaoyang Palace to make it clear! The little eunuch turned his face and sneered. If they can bully their chief steward today, their Zhaoyang Palace will be trampled slowly tomorrow. They really think their queen is a soft persimmon! The queen mother has lived in the deep palace for a long time and knows too little about the situation outside.

The guards only followed orders and did not give the people in Shoukang Palace a chance to speak. Those who were obedient and followed us just walked away. Those who were disobedient and should have lifted their legs but insisted on opening their mouths, we simply blocked their mouths and carried them over.

Seeing that everyone was being led to Zhaoyang Palace, the guards in charge spat, "They are bullying their queen!" The southern and northern counties of Yanyang are now guarded by the Xie family army. An old woman in the deep palace dares to step on their master without enjoying the wealth and glory or asking around!

Ruyi smiled and bowed to him. The head guard also bowed and took his men to their posts.

Bu Bu became talkative again at this time and asked the eunuch who came to deliver the letter: " What does the Queen mean? " They originally thought that the Queen would protect them and everything would be fine, so why did she bring all the people over?

Ruyi was also puzzled and looked at the little eunuch.

The young eunuch scratched his head, " The queen got angry when she heard about it. "

Ruyi understood with just one sentence that the queen rarely gets angry because of unrelated people. In the eyes of the queen, no matter how high Delu jumps, he is just a dog released by Shoukang Palace. As long as the dog doesn't really hurt anyone, the queen will only look for the dog's owner. But this time, the queen was actually angry because of a dog. The queen wanted to close the door and beat the dog.

Ruyi looked at the gloomy sky and thought that the snow would soon fall.

## Chapter 105

The group entered Zhaoyang Palace , and the people in Shoukang Palace followed the chief eunuch Delu tremblingly. It was not until then that Delu seemed to understand what had happened. He did not expect that the queen would actually dare to do that?

The Empress was sitting at the head of the main hall of Zhaoyang Palace . They were not even allowed to enter the palace , but were kept in the courtyard outside the palace like cattle and sheep. The weather was gloomy , and at this distance, De Lu could not even see the Empress sitting on the chair at the head of the palace.

Even at this point , De Lu didn't believe that the Queen would dare to do anything else. He was the chief eunuch of Shoukang Palace, a person that the Queen Mother could not do without every day, and the face of Shoukang Palace! As long as the Queen asked , he would take the initiative and put the blame on Ruyi . The two were in a stalemate , and even the Queen could not do anything to him!

Xie Jiayi, who was inside the hall , looked outside and saw De Lu's face clearly.

The Queen is going to ask a question! The people in Shoukang Palace immediately gathered their spirits to respond , but when they heard it , they realized something was wrong. The Queen was not asking a question , she was giving a command! The Queen's voice was gentle but majestic:

" De Lu, as the chief steward of Shoukang Palace , did not think about how to relieve the Queen Mother's worries , but instead, out of jealousy and hatred, he tried to sow discord between the two palaces . This has now been verified! "

De Lu and the people in Shoukang Palace were all stunned: How ... how did it become true ... it hasn't even been verified yet ...

Then the Queen's voice was heard in the hall: " The Queen Mother's headache is inseparable from the craftsmanship of Eunuch Delu , " she laughed , " You must take good care of Eunuch Delu's hands . I will not forgive anyone who hurts his hands. " Having said that , she stood up and slowly walked out of the hall, glanced at Ruyi and Bubu who were standing not far away , and then her eyes fell on Delu, who was already trembling.

Such a person is indeed not even worthy of carrying Ruyi's shoes. If Ruyi was not afraid of bringing trouble to her, the fallen queen in her previous life, even if there were ten or eight De Lu, they would not be able to touch Ruyi. But it was this villain who looked fierce but was actually weak and crippled Ruyi's waist and legs, and started the first attack on Zhaoyang Palace.

It's true – people should always hold power in their hands, because the day you lose it, you will have to tolerate those things that are worse than pigs and dogs jumping up and running wild against you.

Although power cannot bring happiness, it can crush bugs and keep people away from them. The Empress said slowly, " I cannot take the blame for destroying the gift from the Emperor. I will leave it to the Empress Dowager to punish. "

De Lu's pale face softened when he heard this. The queen didn't dare to go too far. Then he heard the queen's voice, which was neither light nor heavy, but it was like a rolling thunder that could strike a person to pieces:

" Ruyi, watch the people below work hard for me. Don't punish Delu too severely for his crime of slandering Zhaoyang Palace and sowing discord between the two palaces. Just cripple his waist and legs. " Having said this, she looked at Ruyi: " I want his right leg to be so crippled that his waist can never be straightened again! " Ruyi always felt that there was compassion in the empress's eyes that he did not understand, for him.

It made him confused, but also warmed his heart. The Queen would always protect them. If not, it would mean that the Queen could not protect them. When that day came, it would be the time for them to die for the Queen.

He took the order, and De Lu had already collapsed on the ground. The other few palace servants from Shoukang Palace who followed him were all specially picked out as the most ruthless and skilled in torturing people, but now they were like lambs to be slaughtered, and could only tremble.

Only then did they remember the inestimable person in front of them — not only was she the queen appointed by His Majesty with great ceremony, but she was also the domineering Princess Kunyi of Dayin! She could flay people with a single word, kill a military commander with a single sword, and take off the heads of several officials during a single trip southward.

The late emperor is gone, but she is still the Princess of Dayin Fuguo who controls the Xie family army and is the mistress of the Dayin kingdom.

Her father is the God of War in the North and a descendant of the Xie family who fought with Taizu to establish the empire. Her mother is the only legitimate princess of Dayin.

But they were blinded by wealth and followed De Lu, hoping to slap the Queen in the face, take advantage of the situation, and rise to prominence. But as soon as they stretched out their hands, their legs were broken!

At this time, a palace maid came to report and approached Ruyi to tell him what had happened. Over there, the people in Shoukang Palace had been dragged away, watching their chief steward being executed, while here Ruyi came to the Queen and told her about the matter. Xie Jiayi sneered, " The Queen Mother is too anxious. If she doesn't make a big deal out of this and put me on the spot, she won't be able to spend the New Year in peace! "

" Your Majesty, since you know the intentions of Shoukang Palace, please hold back. Since Caixing is in the hands of Madam Liu, let me and Madam Chen go and get her back. " Your Majesty openly confronted the Queen Mother. No matter what, the fault was on your side. After all, Delu's matter could be investigated clearly, but Caixing was said to be disrespectful to the Queen Mother and was caught by Madam Liu. There was no way Caixing could justify such an empty claim against Madam Liu. After all, Madam Liu was not Delu, so it didn't matter if they could get rid of her. He and Madam Chen would definitely be able to get the person out. If he had already been beaten, then they could only beat him.

Unexpectedly, the Queen looked at him and said, " Ruyi, don't endure, it's useless. When the day comes when you need to endure, there's no need to endure, because it won't work either. " The winner is the king and the loser is the bandit. If that day comes, it will be her defeat. At that time, all she needs to consider is how to die, not how to endure.

The Queen Mother led people directly to the Imperial Garden where the accident happened. In the Imperial Garden, Madam Liu had already had Cai Xing's face beaten until it bled. She had never expected that the Empress would personally bring people over. She hurriedly led people to pay respects to the Empress and said directly: " Your Majesty, please have mercy. Even if I am a maid in Zhaoyang Palace, I should not have discussed the Empress Dowager behind her back and said bad things. I was overheard by this old servant. "

Caixing couldn't even speak clearly, but she still struggled: " ..... Madam, I didn't ... That Cui'e stopped me from passing, so I said to her, ' A good dog doesn't block the road ' ..." The little girl next to Caixing was kneeling there and was also beaten to a pulp. She was struggling and just kept shouting " Madam , please make the decision " , " No " , " Unfair " . However, the little girl,

who was only fifteen years old, was envied by others because she could follow Aunt Caixing to do the work that day. Until now, she realized how dangerous the palace was, and that they were as lowly as ants, and they could be beaten to death with a false accusation.

The queen raised her hand, and the palace maids from Zhaoyang Palace quickly stepped forward and pushed away the palace maid from Shoukang Palace who was holding down their arms, and helped Caixing and the other person to the side of the people from Zhaoyang Palace. After all, Aunt Liu was an old woman who had served the Empress Dowager for many years in the palace. She was very calm in this situation. She smiled and said, "My Lady, I must take this slut who speaks so arrogantly with me—"

With two "bangs", Madam Liu fell backwards. If the frightened people behind her had not forgotten to hide, Madam Liu would have probably fallen to the ground.

She never thought that at her age, she would still be slapped in the face! Not to mention others, even those noble ladies who were about to be promoted to concubines would only politely call her "Madam" with a smile. Although she couldn't beat or scold them, a stern face and a few words of scolding would be enough to make those young concubines pale and bow their heads to admit their mistakes!

She was beaten!

Not only was her face burning with pain, but her entire body was shattered!

Cai Xing's nose was sore, and she tried hard not to let her tears fall. Their princess had never slapped anyone directly, which was always considered by the princess to be a disgraceful thing that was beneath her status. How could a master fight with someone directly? Such things should be served by the servants on behalf of the master. But this nanny was not something that any servant in their Zhaoyang Palace could touch.

For their sake, the princess actually wanted to beat such a filthy old slave herself! Although Caixing's face was twitching with pain at this time, she still felt sorry for her master, it was all for them, but they were just slaves ... If Nanny Chen knew, how could it make ... Caixing moved and uncomfortable, and her bloody face became even more swollen. The little girl next to her didn't think so much, she just felt that her eyes, which were originally unable to open due to pain, suddenly opened! Sure enough, the sisters were right, if you want to be a slave, you must be a slave of Haitang Palace and Zhaoyang Palace! I won't be bullied, and even if I am bullied, I won't be bullied in vain!

While the palace servants were busy taking out handkerchiefs to clean the hands of the queen, Xie Jiayi tightened her cloak which was slightly loosened due to excessive force, and said slowly: "Mammy, this is the respect I give you, which no one else has ever had." As the queen, there were very few people who could let her do it herself. Xie Jiayi looked at the sky that seemed to be about to snow, and continued slowly: "This is also the respect I give to the queen mother."

She glanced at the people from Shoukang Palace who were following Madam Liu and saw that they were all well prepared, including several sturdy maids and old women.

Xie Jiayi gently stroked the hand that had slapped just now: "You have also seen that you can touch my people." At this point, the queen smiled gently and reminded: "As long as you are not afraid of death. You can consider whether you have the dignity of Madam Liu? Do you have the

identity of Chief Steward De Lu? For the sake of the Empress Dowager, I will always show mercy to these two people. " As for what would happen if others touched her people in Zhaoyang Palace – the queen smiled gently and kindly.

The stunned palace maids looked at Madam Liu who was thrown to the ground by two slaps and pressed on another palace maid. This ... this was still showing mercy ... They suddenly thought, I wonder what happened to Eunuch De Lu, whether he was also slapped by Zhaoyang Palace ...

They had heard that one should not act up in front of the people in the Princess' Mansion. The Princess' Mansion did not like to waste time talking to people, but only liked to give them a slap in the face. Today, they finally saw it in person, but no one expected that they saw it through Aunt Liu, who was the least likely to be slapped in the face .

At this time, the Queen's tone became even softer, and she spoke in a soothing tone to Matron Liu who had just been helped up: " Matron, you are so old, why do you learn to tell lies like those frivolous people? Caixing is naturally not worthy enough to argue with you about right and wrong, but Matron, don't you think about it, if you can frame others, then there is no one in this palace who can frame you? " Xie Jiayi looked at Matron Liu with the corners of her mouth raised, but there was no smile in her eyes.

The queen's meaning was clear. Who wouldn't play dirty? Don't force her, the queen, to take action personally. Just play dirty and let such a noble old lady die without a burial place for half her life.

The fight had reached such an ugly point so early, without any distinction between right and wrong, and directly falsely accused of using status to oppress others ... Xie Jiayi smiled and shook her head and sighed, looking at the people opposite: Let me ask Dayin, who can suppress her! If anyone dares to suppress her like this again, she will directly start with people with status like Liu Mama – crush them one by one!

" Mammy, do you understand? " The queen also ordered someone to give the mammy a cloak and hold her steady . After all, she was an elder in the palace and even the master had to be respected. The " Do you understand? " she asked like asking a child, gentle and patient, with a bit of helplessness and accommodation as to why the other person was so worrying.

Nanny Liu is still confused. Her already loose tooth was slapped out by the Queen with two slaps. However, she kept it in her mouth and didn't even dare to spit it out. The Queen's gentle voice made her shudder, because she clearly saw a clear warning in the Queen's eyes when she looked at her.

The Queen is not afraid of confronting Shoukang Palace, she is not even afraid of a fight to the death!

At this moment, Madam Liu even forgot about the humiliation and was only afraid. She didn't even know that she nodded ... She couldn't help shivering until she was helped to walk to Shoukang Palace. She couldn't help but look back and met the Queen's smiling eyes while she was holding the heater. She heard the Queen's gentle voice reminding her: " Madam, go slowly. The roads are slippery in winter. "

Nanny Liu's swollen face froze completely. She turned her head stiffly, not knowing where she was going. The road under her feet seemed to have suddenly become bumpy.

Soon, the rumors that the queen was disrespectful to the queen mother and was domineering spread all over the capital. The Duke of Ying was already eager to try. Their people all had a copy of the impeachment memorial to the queen, and the end of each was the same sentence: "She is not fit to be the queen." Song Ziming, who had been suppressed again and again, was even more furious. He was determined to impeach her even at the risk of his life. Anyway, he had no hope for his career, but he hated the person who ruined him and Su Yan, and he would bring him down even if he died.

Taining Hou was walking around in the hall, with the note from his beloved safely hidden in his chest. However, he thought that this move to overthrow the queen would not succeed, and they should wait for a better time. At least they should wait until next year when there are more new people in the harem and they are pregnant. At that time, the queen, who has no children but still has a son to burden her, will have a difficult time. At that time, they can seize the opportunity and act together inside and outside, and the possibility of success will be infinite.

But how could he bear to reject Mingpei? Because of the Queen, she suffered all kinds of grievances in the palace every day ... Even the position of Imperial Concubine promised by His Majesty was turned out to be a concubine like those newcomers because of the Queen's jealousy. It was so humiliating!

Memorials flew in front of the emperor's desk one after another, and that night Shoukang Palace even called several waves of imperial physicians. Under such circumstances, Emperor Jianzhao stepped into Zhaoyang Palace the next day.

## Chapter 106

When Xu Shixing entered Zhaoyang Palace, the queen was leaning against the fumigation cage and eating oranges.

"It's already this late, and you can still eat?" Xu Shixing was really surprised to see that she seemed like nothing had happened.

"Your Majesty, would you like to eat some?" Xie Jiayi handed over two orange halves from which she had carefully picked the white peel.

Xu Shixing was in no mood to eat oranges, but he still reached out to take them when he saw her face that showed no trace of worry. The oranges were warm, whether from the smoke from the fire in the smoker or from her hands. Seeing Xie Jiayi stuff another orange segment into her mouth, looking very satisfied, he put one in his mouth unconsciously. As soon as he bit into it, the juice inside rushed into his mouth. It was indeed sweet. No wonder she loved it so much. Emperor Jianzhao ate the orange with mixed feelings. He looked at Xie Jiayi, who was leaning against the smoking basket with her head down, peeling the orange peels very seriously. It seemed that nothing was more important than the orange in her hand.

"Do you know what people say about you?"

Xie Jiayi didn't even raise her head, she nodded while peeling the silk: "They are just scolding me." What else could they scold? She didn't believe that these people could come up with new ways of scolding. She had endured all kinds of scolding in those years and was used to it. When she heard it again now, she not only didn't feel upset as when she first heard it in her

previous life , but she even felt bored . It was the same scolding over and over again , it was boring.

" You! " Seeing her indifferent expression, Xu Shixing didn't know what to do with her . After a while, he said, " The Queen Mother is ill. "

" The Queen Mother has been ill all the time. " Xie Jiayi still didn't raise her head , with only the orange in her hand in her eyes.

" Zhao Zhao , I am talking to you seriously. " Xu Shixing raised his voice . Each of these was not a trivial matter , but she didn't care at all. She didn't care whether her position as queen was stable , whether she could be a good queen, whether he was embarrassed or not, or – she didn't care about him at all.

Xie Jiayi looked up into Xu Shixing's eyes and said seriously, " Your Majesty, what's so serious about this? I beat up the chief steward and the old nanny of Shoukang Palace yesterday. The Queen Mother will definitely be sick. It would be strange if she didn't. She only summoned three waves of imperial doctors. I thought we would have to go outside the palace to find a miracle doctor this time. "

" Xie Jiayi, the Queen Mother is my mother, and she is also yours! " Xu Shixing reminded her that if she really cared about him, she would not have such a disrespectful attitude towards the Queen Mother.

Xie Jiayi put the orange aside, clapped her hands, and looked at Xu Shixing, " So, Your Majesty, what do you want me to do this time? "

There was no emotion in her dark eyes, they were still clean, clear and bright, just staring at him. She should have no emotion at all, but Xu Shixing saw her grievance in them, and his voice softened, " Zhao Zhao, they are just a few servants—— "

Xie Jiayi looked at him mockingly and smiled, repeating softly, " They are just a few servants. Your Majesty is right. They are just a few servants in Shoukang Palace who are deliberately looking for trouble. I beat them, so what? Why do I have to admit my guilt and make amends to a few servants? "

Xu Shixing suddenly felt the sharp thorn in Xie Jiayi's face, as well as her unconcealable opposition.

" Zhao Zhao, I am teaching you that it is good to use a few servants to exchange for a reputation of filial piety. Do you think that if the Queen Mother has anything else, I will not protect you? " Xu Shixing asked, staring into Xie Jiayi's eyes.

Xie Jiayi also looked into his eyes: " I have already beaten him, and I have offended him a long time ago. As for how long ago I offended him, I don't even know it myself. " This made Xu Shixing's eyelids jump, and then he heard Xie Jiayi slowly ask: " What does your majesty want me to do? "

Xu Shixing felt that there were some things he shouldn't say, but he said them anyway:

" Hand over those criminal slaves in your palace, and I will pick out better ones for you. I will accompany you to apologize to Shoukang Palace and let this matter be settled. If the empress dowager embarrasses you again in the future, I will take care of it for you, okay? " It is not right to cause trouble at the end of the year when people are worshipping their ancestors and respecting their elders. It is not good for her.



Xie Jiayi looked at Xu Shixing very carefully, with a look that was both familiar and unfamiliar, which made Xu Shixing feel uneasy.

He heard Xie Jiayi's voice was very quiet and light, revealing a kind of fatigue that he could not understand: " Your Majesty can depose the queen, but I don't have any slaves here. "

This sentence made Xu Shixing suddenly clench her wrist, and with his other hand he pinched her small and fragile jaw, and his voice was filled with suppressed anger: " Zhao Zhao, you have not changed your habit of talking nonsense over the years. "

The word " deposed queen " hurt his heart directly. He had waited for all these years and did so many things to make her queen, but in her eyes, all this was not as important as the two servants in her palace.

" If she has any regard for you in her heart, would she not give in on these matters? " The Queen Mother's words were like a poisonous snake, biting his heart again, causing him panic and panic.

Xu Shixing stared into Xie Jiayi's eyes and said word by word: " Queen, I want to take those two slaves away. "

Xie Jiayi smiled, which made Xu Shixing even more nervous: " Your Majesty is always like this. "

Xie Jiayi's confident and sarcastic smile made Xu Shixing angry and aggrieved, as if she was sure that he would not protect her. Just two servants could gain the upper hand in public opinion. He didn't believe that Xie Jiayi didn't understand. But she just watched him in trouble and refused to give in for him.

He slowly loosened his grip.

Xie Jiayi seemed to understand what he was thinking, but she was unmoved. The long-ago past life reappeared in her mind, and she heard herself turn around and say to Xu Shixing with a crying voice, " I gave in. I gave in to her ten times, twenty times, I gave in, Third Brother! "

Xie Jiayi said slowly, " This time, I won't let you. Since I dared to offend Shoukang Palace, I have already prepared to be questioned. Your Majesty, I will not say anything if you depose me. But Your Majesty, you are making things difficult for me. Believe it or not, as long as Your Majesty takes the person away, Dayin's economy will inevitably collapse within half a month. "

" You threaten me! " Once again, she threatened him again! Every time, it was for others! Xu Shixing's eyes were red, this time she simply threatened him for the two servants! She had been prepared for this, she didn't believe that he would protect her at all!

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi, but this person had clearly stood by him time and time again, and promised him that no matter success or failure, life or death, she would always be by his side. It was clearly this person who stood up again and again and said to those people: " Who dares to say anything about my prince brother! " It was clearly her, leaning in his arms, saying softly and tenderly, " Grow up quickly, so that you can be with the prince brother forever. ".....

At this moment, her words were like a sharp sword piercing his waist, causing him to tremble with pain.

He looked at her and nodded slowly, " I should have known that you didn't care about the position of queen, but it was for my son. " Xu Shixing revealed an ugly smile, " You also told me that you would not give birth to a child for me, right, Zhaozhao? " He raised his pale and thin

hand and stroked the delicate skin of the person in front of him with incomparable tenderness, from her cheek to her jaw, to her fair and slender neck.

It was clearly warm, but she was so cold that he could hardly bear it.

His slender fingertips gently rubbed her neck, and finally stopped at her beating artery. His tone was still gentle and coaxing: " Zhao Zhao, give me a child. It would be great to have a child, and you would-- " Xu Shixing suddenly choked up and couldn't speak, you would be willing to stay with me forever, and never think of leaving again.

" Child? " Tears suddenly rolled down Xie Jiayi's eyes.

The burning sensation in Xu Shixing's hand made his heart shudder. Her wet, tearful eyes were filled with such intense pain and hatred that tore at Xu Shixing's heart, which he thought had long been numb.

She always found a way to make him feel more pain.

It was obviously her who didn't want to be well, but she had a way to make him suffer more! Xu Shixing really wanted to strangle her to death and put an end to it, so that he would never have to suffer this pain again. However, he would never see this person again. Just thinking about it was like the wind blowing through the empty space, with only endless and suffocating emptiness.

He pulled her into his arms and let her tears drip onto his chest.

She was clearly in his arms, beside him, but he felt that there was an abyss between them that he could never cross. Xu Shixing pursed his lips coldly, neither comforting nor giving in, letting her tears roll down. But in his heart he couldn't help calling her name: Zhaozhao, Zhaozhao, Zhaozhao ... Take half a step towards me, just half a step, let me know that you are still willing to be close to me, Zhaozhao ...

But Xie Jiayi's tears were so distant that he couldn't understand them .

He could only purse his lips in indifference and silence, and hug her even tighter. However, he stared blankly at the abyss between them growing bigger and bigger, not knowing where the future of the two of them lay.

Xu Shixing did not take away the two servants who had offended Shoukang Palace, but only confined the Empress of Zhaoyang Palace.

Three months of house arrest.

Such a punishment, even if the overwhelming memorials were given to Shoukang Palace. Naturally, no one was satisfied, but no one dared to submit memorials again, because His Majesty began to quietly find ways to demote or punish these people. Seeing that it was impossible to depose the queen, except for Song Ziming who was dissatisfied, everyone else stopped. His Majesty's toughness made them see the outcome of an egg hitting a stone. In addition, half of the court already stood on the side of the queen, but this time they were not right, and no one jumped out except Liu Shaoxian, but their secret tripping never stopped. It's clear, if you dare to scold, we will trip you to death.

The Hall of Mental Cultivation, the Shoukang Palace and the Zhaoyang Palace formed a strange indifference towards each other.

In this cold and dreadful atmosphere, spring came again. Trees were green and flowers were about to bloom. But the whole palace was still quiet. The Queen Mother's headache and His

Majesty's headache ... not only made the palace maids in these two palaces hesitant and worried, but even the doctors in the Imperial Hospital became thinner and the elderly wanted to retire immediately, but no one dared to even mention it at this time.

The Zhaoyang Palace was released from house arrest. To be more precise, only the Queen was under house arrest. During the house arrest, the palace maids in Zhaoyang Palace continued to come in and out as usual, but they were more cautious.

Everyone felt mixed emotions : they had never seen such house arrest before.

There were several young women in the harem, but Zhang Jinyu did not accept the appointment as a concubine along with these young women. She remained in Shoukang Palace, but became more gloomy. Just as everyone was eagerly waiting and speculating which young concubine would be the first to sleep with the emperor, the emperor came to Zhaoyang Palace again, making those who were waiting in the palace more certain of the queen's favor.

Countless cups and plates were broken in Shoukang Palace, and the imperial doctors came again, trembling with their medicine boxes. They wiped the sweat from their foreheads and could only comfort themselves that at least the emperor's headache seemed to have improved in the past two days with the lifting of the ban in Zhaoyang Palace.

Only Jixiang, who followed His Majesty, knew that His Majesty still came every night during the three months when the Empress of Zhaoyang Palace was confined. The affairs between His Majesty and the Empress were complicated beyond the eyes of the people watching in the palace and the newcomers who looked at Zhaoyang Palace eagerly .

Always have been.

Jixiang was standing outside at this time and realized a problem. Although His Majesty came every day, the two masters had not spoken a word in the past three months ...

## Chapter 107

With the arrival of spring , Zhaoyang Palace was completely renovated inside and out. The heavy curtains were replaced with soft gauze curtains, and the palace servants came in and out in an orderly manner. The two masters in the floor-length flower canopy were still sitting on the same long couch across the kang table . The empress, who had changed into spring clothes, was still lazy , leaning against the pillow by the window and flipping through a book , while the emperor next to her was still silently reviewing memorials.

Nanny Chen came in to help change a cup of tea and looked at the two people. They were still arguing. Nanny Chen was old and didn't need to come out to serve. If she hadn't seen that the two masters were still so indifferent and didn't even say a word after three months, she wouldn't have come here specially tonight.

The nanny's hands and feet were still steady . When she put down the teacup, she smiled and said, " I am old and can't do anything anymore . But today's tea was made by me personally . Your Majesty loved to drink it when he was still in the East Palace . After all these years , I wonder if Your Majesty is still used to it. "

A maid immediately brought an embroidered cushion to the nanny . Nanny Chen thanked her and sat on the cushion opposite.

Xu Shixing had already glanced at Xie Jiayi several times, but she seemed to be reading with great interest and never looked up . He was just thinking about how to break the situation when Nanny Chen came. The tea in her hand was as white as jade and fragrant , which reminded him of the past when Xie Jiayi went to the East Palace three times a day . Occasionally, when he went to Begonia Palace , Nanny Chen would always make tea herself . Xie Jiayi wanted to bring out all the snacks in Begonia Palace for him to taste.

Her bright eyes just looked at him, and she always asked with a smile: " Prince brother, is it delicious? " In her eyes and words, it was him and only him.

These days have passed in a flash.

Xu Shixing was holding the teacup, slightly absent-minded. Opposite him, Xie Jiayi put down her book, moved closer to the table, and also picked up the tea to drink. The fragrance of the tea filled her mouth, making her squint her eyes in comfort. " Mammy hasn't made this tea for me for a long time. "

Nanny Chen gave her a glare, and then she took the opportunity to tell His Majesty that the young master had this temper since she was a child. She loved His Majesty dearly, but if the two of them were not in harmony, she was afraid that His Majesty would really get angry with her. When they quarreled, she had to be the one who said the last word, no matter how soft or short the words were, sometimes just one word, she felt that she had the upper hand anyway. Even if she tried every means to coax him back, at that moment, in the words of the master herself, she " could not be a coward " .

Nanny Chen sighed, " This kind of good tea only tastes good when you drink it with someone else. Drinking it alone is too lonely. "

Hearing this, Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi, opened his mouth and didn't say what he had been thinking about for several days.

Nanny Chen looked at the two and stood up to leave. They were all grown up, not children anymore. Nanny came to the courtyard and looked at the sky dotted with stars, and sighed. She always thought that the princess looked like Princess Pingyang, but now she found that the princess looked more and more like Empress Xiaoyi.

The princess once asked her, Emperor Yuanhe had so many concubines and children, did Empress Xiaoyi really not care at all? Nanny Chen looked at the stars in the night sky and sighed, thinking silently, the young master should now know why Empress Xiaoyi has always been dignified and indifferent. If it weren't for the little prince, how much would her young master care? And Empress Xiaoyi was destined not to have a son from the beginning, and having a daughter was the greatest kindness of Taizu to the daughter of a meritorious official .

Although no one spoke for a while, the aroma of tea was lingering in the air, and the atmosphere was different from before. Finally, Xu Shixing pushed aside the letter, approached Xie Jiayi, and whispered in her ear: " Zhao Zhao, you still don't want to talk to me? "

Xie Jiayi was silent for a while before saying, " It's not that I ignored you, it's that I didn't know. "

" What do you want to know? "

Xie Jiayi turned to look at Xu Shixing who was very close to her, and said blankly: " Your Majesty, your words must count this time. " Don't touch others again. As long as Xu Shixing keeps his promise, her Chengji will definitely be the emperor's heir. But there are so many

variables in the middle. Sometimes Xie Jiayi even hopes that she and His Majesty will grow old together overnight, so that her Chengji will be safe.

She was clearly looking at this person, but it seemed as if she saw Xu Shixing in his previous life through this person. Will he really do what he promised me?

" I'm afraid that even though he's been dead for six years, she's still thinking about him all the time! Otherwise, how could she have planned this for her son! " The Queen Mother's sharp and piercing voice suddenly rang out again, and Xu Shixing felt as if a poisonous snake had bitten his heart again. In pain, he desperately hugged the person next to him in his arms: Obviously, now, she only has me.

Children? As long as he treated her well, she would change her mind. He would arrange for Xu Chengji, but they wanted to have a child of their own. She would agree to his request. Xu Shixing hugged Xie Jiayi in vain, avoiding the poisonous snakes that were spitting their tongues. Xu Shixing tried his best to suppress all those speculations that made him feel painful, and told himself over and over again that Xie Jiayi would never treat him like this. They knew each other when they were young, and they had been together all the way. She had loved him so much. And he, in this bloody and dark world, only wanted her. They should be like this, with only each other , hugging each other forever. As long as he didn't let go, she would not really let go and leave him alone in the endless darkness.

He tried to speak to Xie Jiayi in a joyful voice: " I have prepared something good to show you. It will be tomorrow night. I am sure you will like it. " After thinking for so long, he still couldn't find anything that could really surprise her. The report from the Imperial Observatory made him know what to give her all of a sudden. In order to ensure that those idiots in the Imperial Observatory would not make mistakes, Xu Shixing picked up astronomical calculations again in the past two months and helped the Imperial Observatory calculate the star phenomenon that would appear tomorrow night.

Emperor Yuanhe once gave this to Empress Xiaoyi, which later became a legend. Now, he also gave it to his queen, to her.

On the evening of the second day, the usually calm emperor could no longer sit still. He had already changed into a black dragon robe embroidered with gold thread, but he hesitated again. Xie Jiayi had praised him for looking good in red, and he always remembered it. Jixiang didn't know what the emperor was thinking about, so he waited quietly by the side. He knew that the emperor had been busy for a long time for this day, and spent all his lunch breaks during the day calculating and drawing. He had missed many meals in the past two months.

After a long while, His Majesty cleared his throat and said, " Bring me the crimson dragon robe to change into. "

Changing clothes right after putting them on? Jixiang was only startled for a moment, then he immediately agreed and ordered someone to fetch them. When he helped His Majesty put on the crimson dragon robe, Jixiang felt that His Majesty was like a different person: His awe-inspiring majesty had turned into a graceful demeanor. If His Majesty was not His Majesty, he should be the handsome third place winner of the imperial examination of their Dayin.

Unexpectedly, His Majesty hesitated again. Jixiang really turned all his exclamations into endless flattery, which he skillfully uttered. He knew that His Majesty was in a good mood today.

Usually, His Majesty would not have the patience to listen to his words, so his clever words and flattery were useless. When he finished praising with great joy, His Majesty seemed not to have heard him at all, and suddenly said: " It is better to change into the original clothes. "

auspicious: .....

After changing back, it was already late. His Majesty walked out in a hurry, but hesitated for a moment after leaving the Hall of Mental Cultivation.

At this time, His Majesty wanted to change back to the red dragon robe, but Jixiang was not surprised at all. Xu Shixing suddenly laughed at himself, and then he went to Zhaoyang Palace. His heart was full of hope. He knew that the gift he gave to the queen today would definitely like her. She liked everything new and exciting. She once asked to go to the night market and to see the rivers and lakes, but he did not agree. Today's rare astronomical phenomenon was only something he could give her.

The emperor and empress came together to the highest Star-Picking Tower in the imperial city. Legend has it that when the moon is closest to here, you can reach out and grab the moon and stars. It was built by the last emperor of the previous dynasty for his favorite concubine.

Although it was rebuilt in the Dayin Dynasty, it has always been a forbidden area.

At this time, the night sky was dotted with stars. From their perspective, it seemed so vast and boundless that it almost made people dazed. Xie Jiayi stared blankly at the endless starry sky and murmured, " So this is what the sky looks like here. " It was as if she was in this endless sky and the bright stars.

Xu Shixing looked at her astonished profile, illuminated by the starry sky.

Suddenly, a meteor streaked across the sky. It had no tail and was called a flying star. Xie Jiayi was surprised and said, " Look! " The emperors of Dayin were different from those of the previous dynasties. They were extremely intelligent and proficient in astronomy and mathematics. They were able to work with the Imperial Astronomical Observatory to predict celestial phenomena and considered themselves to be the true messengers who could communicate between heaven and earth. Since the reign of Emperor Yuanhe, flying stars have changed from being an ominous omen to an auspicious omen symbolizing the good stories of the emperor and empress.

Xu Shixing took in her surprises one by one, and a smile appeared on his lips. He looked at her eyes that were brighter than the starry sky and said softly: " Zhao Zhao, there are more. "

As he finished speaking, countless stars slid across the sky from the southeast and fell to the west. Some left long tails, some were short and small and disappeared in an instant, and some were just a star that slid past quickly.

" Stars are falling like rain. It turns out that I can really see it when I have black teeth and strong teeth ..." Xie Jiayi murmured softly as if in a dream. It turned out that this was what Lord Lu said about " stars are falling like rain " . Xie Jiayi was full of yearning when she heard it that night. Lord Lu was silent for a while and smiled and told her that she could see it.

But how long would it take to see such a strange astronomical phenomenon? She asked Lord Lu at that time, would he wait until his hair turned white and his teeth fell out? Lord Lu still chuckled and said affirmatively that he would not do so. He said that when the next " falling stars like rain " came, his princess should still look the same as she does today.

Xie Jiayi was overjoyed after hearing this. Lord Lu was omnipotent and naturally knew the celestial phenomena. If he said he could do it, then he could do it. Overjoyed, Xie Jiayi said to Lu Chenan, "You must tell me in advance on that day. Let's find a high place closest to the sky to watch the " falling stars like rain . " What did Lord Lu say to her? Xie Jiayi held the railing, watching the falling stars at this time, tears sliding down her cheeks.

Lord Lu did not agree to his request. He easily diverted her attention and told her about the stars in the sky. Lord Lu was the smartest person in Dayin. He had already seen through his fate from her words over the years. When he comforted her by saying, " The fate of an emperor is different from that of ordinary people , " perhaps he realized a certain inescapable fate.

Xie Jiayi pretended to watch it seriously. She leaned forward to hold onto the railing, slightly turned her back to Xu Shixing, and tried hard to look up at the sky where the stars were falling. Holding the railing tightly, his face was full of tears, but he was quiet, as if he was just mesmerized by watching the falling meteor. But the scenes of that day were all in front of him, including the poem that Lord Lu suddenly stopped talking about, " Gambling on books makes the tea fragrance disappear . " After Xie Jiayi read many books and gradually understood the poem, she understood the sadness of Lord Lu's sudden stop.

The smell of tea disappeared after gambling on books, and at that time I thought it was normal. They had so much time that night, but she only cared about looking at the stars in the sky, listening to the chirping of insects in the summer night, and asking Lord Lu to tell her interesting stories. She didn't say so many words. She thought that it was just one of their countless nights. If she could go back, Xie Jiayi looked at the stars and thought, maybe she would ask Lord Lu, " Are you afraid ?" Facing the impermanence and cruel fate: Lord Lu, are you afraid? Or she would still not ask or say anything, and would only return an equally strong hug when Lord Lu suddenly hugged her.

But it was all " at that time " .

Xie Jiayi stared at the starry sky stubbornly, neither looking back nor lowering her head. She thought that this way no one would know she was crying.

Xie Jiayi said " stars falling like rain " , the smile on Xu Shixing's lips suddenly froze. This was not something she could understand by herself. Someone must have told her in detail and predicted this " stars falling like rain " for her .

His back was extremely straight, until he even felt a little stiff. This was a " rain of falling stars " for two people , but he was not among them.

Xu Shixing stared blankly at Xie Jiayi's back, who looked so thin that she seemed to be able to fly away. He wanted to catch her and hug her. However, he did nothing because he knew she was crying. Who could hide her careful cover-up and stubbornness?

The meteors were still falling. At this moment when heaven and earth could communicate, they, as the spokespersons of heaven and earth in this world, could express their wishes to heaven and earth. Xu Shixing had expressed his wish in his heart at the very beginning. At this moment, he looked at Xie Jiayi under the starry sky and realized with fear that her wish might have nothing to do with him.

His face became paler and his hands behind his back were shaking violently.

He had calculated this grand star shower and knew that Xie Jiayi would like it.

But all this sent him into boundless fear and deeper despair, an abyss deeper and darker than he had imagined. And his Zhao Zhao, just squatted quietly on the other side, refusing to come over.

The star shower lasted for a long time, and when it ended it was already very deep at night. Xie Jiayi seemed to have never cried. She turned around and happily thanked Xu Shixing for bringing her to such a high place so that she could watch the star shower so closely. Xu Shixing also seemed to have no idea of the overwhelming sadness she felt when she looked up at the starry sky. He smiled slightly and raised his hand to help her tie her cloak tightly.

On the way back, the two seemed to be reconciled, as if a shower of stars had erased the estrangement between the emperor and the empress. Jixiang thought that the empress saw the emperor's feelings, and the emperor saw the queen's joy, so everything would be fine.

In front of Zhaoyang Palace, Xu Shixing gently touched the empress's cold face with his fingertips and said with a smile: "I won't go in with you today. There are many memorials to review."

Xie Jiayi also smiled gently and appropriately, asked His Majesty to take care of his health, and turned around and led his people into Zhaoyang Palace.

It was not until he returned to the Palace of Tranquil Longevity that Jixiang realized he was wrong.

As soon as he entered the study room of the Hall of Mental Cultivation, His Majesty seemed to have suddenly lost all his strength, and he seemed to have lost the strength to even stand. He stumbled and fell onto the imperial couch. He grasped the armrest with such force that veins bulged, and sweat was already dripping from His Majesty's face.

Jixiang was frightened and hurried forward to see what was wrong with His Majesty.

Then I heard His Majesty murmur softly: "It hurts."

"Your Majesty, where does it hurt? I'll send someone to call the imperial physician right away!" Jixiang was panicked, but he dared not move without the Majesty's order. He was anxiously waiting for the Majesty's permission.

But His Majesty only whispered in confusion: "But I don't know where it hurts this time." He showed a pale smile: "Doctor, it's useless." After saying that, he waved his hand and let Jixiang go out.

How could Jixiang feel at ease to go out at this time? However, Emperor Jianzhao never allowed anyone to disobey his orders. Under no circumstances could he do so.

Jixiang could only pace around the entrance of the Hall of Mental Cultivation like a rat on a hot pot, and from time to time he would put his ear close to listen to the noise inside, but there was no movement at all. He boldly asked through the door if His Majesty wanted tea. After a long time, he heard a voice from inside, "Shut up." Jixiang felt relieved and could continue to pace around like a rat on a hot pot.

Inside the room, the person that Xu Shixing had been trying hard to ignore now appeared very clearly in his sight.

Lu Chenan.

Lu Chenan, son of Prince Min Huai.

Xu Shixing sneered, he got his throne, but he cheated his Zhao Zhao away.



The moments between the two of them that he had seen at the palace banquet and autumn hunt slowly became clearer and clearer: the way they looked at each other, the little gestures they inadvertently revealed ... Xu Shixing found that he remembered them all clearly. He just ignored them, because once he faced them, it was so suffocating.

Where he can't see, they are the couple who got married in their youth.

The red gauze tent is warm, the spring in the north is cold, and they even have a child.

But it shouldn't be like this, Xu Shixing always felt that it shouldn't be like this.

At this moment, he curled up on the couch in the imperial study, feeling a pain in his head. He thought it would be another sleepless night. When Zhao Zhao was not around, he often endured endless headaches and spent long nights one after another.

But that night, he fell asleep in pain.

At this time, Xu Shixing didn't know that when he woke up from this ultimate pain, everything would be different.

## Chapter 108

When Jixiang came in , he saw that the emperor was awake in the half-lit study, sitting on the couch with his head bowed. Seeing someone coming in , he raised his eyes slightly and looked over . The cold and majestic look of the emperor's eyes made Jixiang tremble and kneel down.

Emperor Jianzhao looked at Jixiang who was kneeling on the ground in the dim light, then slowly turned his head and looked from the couch to the bookshelves in the study , and finally looked at Jixiang who was kneeling in front of him.

" Where is the queen? " Emperor Jianzhao's voice was hoarse and low.

Jixiang was already used to His Majesty's questions like this, and hurriedly said, " The Queen must still be resting at this time. I will go to Zhaoyang Palace and tell Her Majesty to come over for breakfast? "

But I heard His Majesty whisper: " Zhaoyang Palace ..." After a while, His Majesty said: " No need. " There was an uncontrollable tremor in his voice.

" You go down first. "

In the dim study , the emperor was the only one left again. Xu Shixing suddenly raised his hand and grabbed his collar, holding it tightly , and his other hand clasped the edge of the kang. To others , Emperor Jianzhao at this moment seemed like a trapped animal in extreme grief . He bent down and couldn't control his trembling. But the thing that made his whole heart shrink and hurt just lingered there . After a long time, Emperor Jianzhao raised his hand and touched his face , which was still dry.

He has no tears.

Emperor Jian Zhao would not cry. He once thought that it was nothing , but only those who were in great pain would know that no matter how painful it was , the whole world collapsed with the departure of a person, but he could not shed a single tear for that person. This feeling was like a punishment from heaven. In the many days and nights after she left , every place in the

huge palace that was related to her , every object she had used , could evoke this kind of punishment from heaven.

Daybreak has broken , the sun has risen, and a new day has arrived.

Emperor Jianzhao called for people, and this time when he stood in the palace and looked in the direction of Zhaoyang Palace, the suffocation that had made him feel unbearable finally subsided. He could feel the flow of air again, and it felt so good to be able to breathe calmly.

" What is the Queen doing? "

Jixiang lowered his head and replied: " The queen is still resting. "

Emperor Jianzhao took another look at Zhaoyang Palace before going to court. The court was unusually quiet. After reporting several recent major events outside, everyone lowered their heads and dared not say much. Having been in the officialdom for many years, especially as a minister under Emperor Jianzhao for the past ten years, they have developed a keen reaction to Emperor Jianzhao's emotions. Not to mention others, even a thorny censor like Song Ziming, who always impeached the empress for being unfilial in every court, did not show up today. Minister Chen, the left minister of the Ministry of Works, Lord Liang, the left minister of the Ministry of War, General Zhao, and others exchanged glances and sneered in their hearts. They had heard that the Duke of Ying wanted to intervene in the Northland. Didn't they say that they would first impeach the empress for interfering in politics and the Xie family army for monopolizing power today? Why, after being glanced at by His Majesty, they all dared not to do anything.

Several of them lowered their heads, but the looks they gave each other clearly revealed two words: coward .

It's not that Song Ziming, Duke of England and others were timid, but they were very sensitive to the confrontation. They soon noticed that Emperor Jianzhao today was different from the past, and immediately stopped all their plans. Today's Emperor Jianzhao not only had the same arbitrary and gloomy look as in the past, but also had a murderous look in his eyes, which made people shudder. They even felt that His Majesty was just sitting there, sulking in his heart, waiting for someone to bump into him so that he could vent his anger ...

After the court session, Emperor Jianzhao glanced at Jixiang when he changed out of his court robes.

Jixiang immediately said, " Your Highness has been practicing the plum blossom pole for a while, and is now reciting a book. " Then he flattered her, " Your Highness doesn't read storybooks much now, but spends more time reading these serious books. "

Xu Shixing's hand stroking his belt paused for a moment, then he slowly nodded.

" Your Majesty, are you going there? " Jixiang thought that since His Majesty had asked the Empress several times in the morning, he must go there. But His Majesty was stunned for a long time before saying, " No, let's see the memorial. "

There was even a hint of confusion in his tone that was not typical of an autocratic emperor, as if he was not sure whether he should read the memorial or not.

It was not until the sunset that Jixiang came in and saw that His Majesty had put down his pen and his eyes were on him.

Jixiang stepped forward hurriedly and said, " Your Majesty, the Queen is going to the Zhaixing Tower now. " Then he said jokingly, " I heard that she is going to watch the sunset. " He had a smile on his face, but in his heart he complained, "Your Majesty, please go with you to watch the sunset and the Queen. You are holding back like this and the entire Yangxin Palace is in trouble. We, the servants, are not afraid to breathe, we are afraid to breathe quickly.

Finally, I saw His Majesty stand up and stand for a long time before saying, " Please proceed. " The sunset that day was so bright red that the Zhaixing Tower seemed as bright as a treasure house in the sky. Xu Shixing looked up and saw the figure of a person leaning against the railing, his outline so clear and perceptible in the setting sun.

Looking at the shadow, his heart suddenly shrank, and then seemed to jump out of his chest.

The people upstairs noticed the people downstairs and turned to look down.

The room is full of beauties, and suddenly I make eye contact with her.

There are so many people in this world, but at this moment she only sees me. Xu Shixing felt that his cold, hard and dead heart was jumping with joy. He thought that it didn't matter if she liked someone else. As long as she looked at him, Xu Shixing could complete a promise made by one person.

He climbed the stairs with such a mood. As he got closer and closer to her, Xu Shixing suddenly stopped, took a long breath, and then stepped to the top. Upstairs, Xie Jiayi and her people saluted him, but he was stunned looking at her smiling face.

Then I heard Xie Jiayi say with a smile: " It turns out that watching the sunset from here is better than anywhere else. "

" Since you like it, I'll give it to you. " Xu Shixing told Jixiang, " From now on, this building belongs to the queen. Let everyone in the palace know that no one is allowed to come near here anymore. "

Xie Jiayi had seen all kinds of good things, but Xu Shixing gave her the Zhaixing Tower of the previous dynasty with just one sentence. Xie Jiayi sighed, thinking that His Majesty is His Majesty, and he is more generous than a princess like her.

In return, she showed Xu Shixing the cakes that Ruyi had sent someone to buy from outside the palace: " Your Majesty, would you like to try some? The cakes made by this family are getting better and better. Why do we always lack the taste when we try to imitate them? "

" If you like it, I'll find someone to give it to you. "

Xie Jiayi looked Xu Shixing up and down, and Xu Shixing asked nervously: " Why? Don't you like that dim sum chef? Let's call him in and ask him to make dim sum for you alone. "

Xie Jiayi saw that His Majesty didn't seem to have any problems with his mind. Why was he acting so strange today? She raised her hand and pointed to the western sky: " I also like that sunset. Would Your Majesty like to give it to me too? "

Xu Shixing turned his head to look at the sun that was about to set completely, and the two of them watched side by side as the sun sank little by little, leaving only a brilliant sunset glow like fire.

Xu Shixing whispered as if sighing: " Zhao Zhao, there is always a way. " There is always a way to give you the sunset. As long as you are well and live by my side.

When she returned home that day, Xie Jiayi was surprised to find that only the emperor had come to Zhaoyang Palace. " Where is the memorial? " Without the memorial, was Xu Shixing still Xu Shixing? She looked at Xu Shixing, who sat at the empty table on the kang, drinking tea for a long time and glancing at her silently from time to time.

" Your Majesty, where are your memorials? " Xie Jiayi wanted to say that. Without them, are you still a complete person? She had known Xu Shixing for so long. When he was young, he always had a book or a bow in his hands. He was either reciting or practicing archery. When he grew up, he finally didn't have to study and practice martial arts with his master every day. From then on, he began a new life with memorials in front of him forever.

Xu Shixing could hear Xie Jiayi's charming voice:

" There are so many memorials, can you be the only one to come? " , " These memorials ... are not prettier than mine, Third Brother, why don't you get tired of reading them? " , " Third Brother, you haven't finished reading them yet? I'm too sleepy to bear it any longer " , " I'll sleep for a while leaning against the memorials " , " I'm not waiting for you, you see I put a special book there just as if you were accompanying me "... In the end, coldly, " Your Majesty, go read the memorials, I'm tired " , and in the end, only the palace servants came and went, " The Queen has gone to bed "...

At this moment, under the candlelight, Xie Jiayi still looked so lively, staring at him with her dark eyes wide open. It seemed as if no time had ever passed, making Xu Shixing's whole body and heart soft.

Facing Xie Jiayi's surprise, Xu Shixing still said: " But wait a minute, the people below will bring it here soon. " Jixiang immediately understood, and sure enough, a large pile of memorials was delivered to Zhaoyang Palace soon.

Xie Jiayi nodded and looked at Xu Shixing who was sitting with the memorial. This was the right thing to do, otherwise it would always feel a little weird.

Xu Shixing picked up the pen, but in between reviewing the memorials, he would occasionally glance at Xie Jiayi who was flipping through a picture album beside him.

Finally, when he looked over one time, he met Xie Jiayi's gaze.

" Your Majesty, why are you always looking at me? " Xie Jiayi felt like she was getting goosebumps.

Xu Shixing didn't say anything, but just looked at her again before lowering his head to continue reviewing the memorials.

Xie Jiayi was sure that she really had goose bumps.

Just when Xie Jiayi wanted to talk to Nanny Chen about the possibility that His Majesty was possessed by an evil spirit, causing his temperament to change, she heard about another thing Xu Shixing did.

She and Caixing heard several little girls whispering, one of them couldn't hold back her voice, " Your Majesty has snatched a concubine from the Fourth Prince. " Another one covered her mouth and asked, " Is this true? Don't talk nonsense! "

Xie Jiayi felt that the second little girl had asked what was really in her mind: Is this true?!

Cai Xing shouted: " You are courting death! I think the master is too lenient with you! "

Xie Jiayi stood there with a cold face. The two little girls had already knelt down palely. She thought to herself, oh, this Cai Xing didn't even wait for the other party to answer before shouting whether it was true or not. She felt anxious when she heard half of it.

Xie Jiayi led people back to the main hall of Zhaoyang Palace, and Ruyi came to report soon. It's actually true.

Xie Jiayi felt that she should go check on him, even though she felt that there must be something fishy about this matter. However, she snorted in her heart. In this world, things that people think are impossible can happen. In the storybooks, there are things like the enemy's women are particularly fragrant, or it is the old-fashioned glaring at the beginning, but seeing that the other party is neither humble nor arrogant and wants to die or escape, it is not okay, and then it really smells good ... and life is always more exciting and more unexpected than the storybooks.

With this thought in mind, Xie Jiayi arrived at the Palace of Tranquil Longevity.

The author has something to say:

The room is full of beauties, but suddenly I make eye contact with her. – Qu Yuan

## Chapter 109

The harem was under her control . Although the Queen Mother did not give up her power, she knew that there were not only more concubines but also more palace maids in the harem . Now it seemed that if she was not in the harem , she was here with His Majesty.

Xie Jiayi felt that this matter really needed attention.

When the people in the Yangxin Palace saw the Queen coming , they all kept their mouths shut and dared not say much, but their faces relaxed a little. At least when the Queen was around, His Majesty would not beat anyone to death no matter how unhappy he was. Since the Queen entered the palace , no palace maid had been boiled again.

Xie Jiayi looked around calmly, and there were no new faces in the Yangxin Palace. She even looked carefully at a few young eunuchs who were sweeping the floor . She usually didn't pay attention , but now she looked carefully and saw that their faces were indeed unfamiliar .

However, she was also very sure that they were indeed young eunuchs , and there were no women dressed as eunuchs . She was familiar with the routines in these scripts.

Xie Jiayi was puzzled . She sat next to His Majesty and didn't beat around the bush . She went straight to the point: " Your Majesty, they said you brought someone back . Where is that person? "

Originally, she was just trying to be on the safe side , fearing that something might go wrong and disgust her , or most importantly, affect her son . However, Xie Jiayi saw that as soon as she asked this question , Xu Shixing's face froze.

He actually felt guilty! Something that could make Xu Shixing feel guilty ...

Xie Jiayi felt that there was a faint thunder on the way, and her face turned pale: " You ... you ... accepted him? " She looked at Xu Shixing without blinking, her heart beating, hoping that she would suddenly have a child like in the previous life ... Xu Shixing had a biological child, what

about her son? Can he still be adopted as an heir? Even if Xu Shixing agreed, there was a difference between relatives and strangers, and there were still ten or twenty years, so what wouldn't change ... At this moment, Xie Jiayi even figured it out – the palace had changed ... She stared at Xu Shixing, but what she thought in her heart was that whether it was money or soldiers, it would be safer to have more informed ears and eyes from outsiders ...

It took Xu Shixing a while to digest what Xie Jiayi said!

She actually suspected him so much! But suddenly, he understood that it was him who made her so suspicious until now. Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi's expression as she calmly observed him, but her hands on her knees were shaking.

He held her hand lovingly and said, "What are you thinking about? It will never happen!" Zhao Zhao, it will never happen again.

"Where is that person?" Xie Jiayi asked softly, still looking at Xu Shixing's face and expression.

The consideration and caution in her eyes made Xu Shixing feel a pang in his heart. He forced a smile and said, "He's locked up."

"Is she the fourth prince's concubine?"

"yes."

"Why did you capture his concubine from the imperial mausoleum?"

"It has been verified that she is the princess of the fallen Shu Kingdom, and she intends to rebel."

Xie Jiayi suddenly realized that it was her! She was waiting for this person to jump out. Now the Fourth Prince was imprisoned to guard the mausoleum. He had nothing in his hands. What could he do by following the Fourth Prince? Unlike in the previous life, this person could cause a lot of trouble.

She let out a long sigh.

Seeing that she was relieved, Xu Shixing didn't ask any other questions. He slowly let out a sigh of relief and held her in his arms. After a while, when he saw that she didn't mention the Southern Princess again, Xu Shixing was completely relieved.

The person was indeed locked up. But Xu Shixing didn't want Xie Jiayi to see it, because the person had already been tortured in the dungeon. This woman was indeed not simple. She had established an intelligence network in various places in the north and south. He wanted the information from her mouth. At this time, the person was probably unbearable to watch. He didn't want his Zhao Zhao to see this side of him, never wanted to.

She had been away for so many years, and Xu Shixing was obsessed with studying torture to pry open people's mouths. At least, in the case of this southern princess, his unique ideas were once again proven to be useful. There was no mouth that could not be pried open. As long as the person did not die in the first place, death would be the greatest luxury in his hands. If he was not given what he wanted to know, the greatest pain was to be unable to die. And he had a way to make the tortured people realize in despair when they felt that this pain had reached the extreme: this was just the beginning, and there was still a long time to go.

Xu Shixing gently embraced the person in his arms and patted her tense shoulders soothingly. He could only sigh in his heart, Zhaozhao, how could I let you see me like this?

In the quiet time when the two of them were hugging each other, Xu Shixing thought that the matter was over, and then he heard the person in his arms suddenly say: " Your Majesty, where is the person? I want to see him. "

Xu Shixing's heart skipped a beat.

Then he felt the person in his arms straighten up and look at him, and her hand was pressing on his beating chest.

Their eyes met.

" Your Majesty, are you nervous? "

Xu Shixing, who had just walked out of the dark sea of blood, found that his rapidly beating heart could not calm down under Xie Jiayi's gaze.

Xie Jiayi saw Xu Shixing swallowing his saliva nervously, his Adam's apple rolling. Her heart sank, so did he hide the person to give birth to a child ... Her eyes were scorching, staring at Xu Shixing, " Your Majesty, did you agree to my request? " He was going to lie to her again, and so quickly this time? Xie Jiayi gritted her teeth, stared at the man in front of her, and waited for his answer calmly.

Xu Shixing shook his head: " Zhao Zhao, it's not what you think? I promised you, I will never let you down in this life! " Facing Xie Jiayi's doubt, he felt a sense of desolation of reaping the fruits of his own labor. Trust is something that, once broken, will never be restored to its original state no matter how hard you try.

" If you insist on seeing it, I'll take you to see it. But Zhao Zhao, the means of forcing a confession are so vile, I'm afraid you won't be able to bear it. " He calmed his heartbeat, and slowly felt the soft warmth of the hand pressing on his chest, " Zhao Zhao, I didn't do that. " Xu Shixing was still tense. He was afraid that Zhao Zhao would see it and ask about the origin of these tortures. He didn't want to lie to her again. He had lied to her before. One deception, two lifetimes of regret.

Fortunately, Xie Jiayi finally believed it this time. As long as there was no child, she had no interest in the Southern Princess.

After Xie Jiayi returned to Zhaoyang Palace, she looked at Caixing who arranged for people to prepare tea and snacks, and couldn't help but say: " Caixing, you've worked so hard. " She only now realized how hard it was to be on night duty. Now it was Caixing who arranged the night duty. She had to be alert to all kinds of accidents at any time, and she had to do it every day for more than ten years without any mistakes. She was doing Caixing's job now, which was to be on duty for Xu Shixing. It hadn't even been a year yet, and it would probably take another thirty years ...

" There is no permanent solution ..." Xie Jiayi couldn't help frowning as she looked at the crabapple tree in the yard. The bird in the cage was certainly uncomfortable, and she, who was determined to be a caged person, was also uncomfortable ... But if she could succeed, she would go down this path. The other path was dangerous and unpredictable, not only was it a matter of life and death, but it would also inevitably be accompanied by the blood of innocent people.

Xie Jiayi slowly exhaled the turbid air in her chest. She thought of herself as the queen version of Caixing. Life was not easy. Who said being a queen was easy? Even the queen mother was

probably worried and had headaches every day. But don't force her to go down that path. She watched the crabapple blossom. When that day came, for her son, she crushed the bright red crabapple blossom in her hand and watched its juice soak her white fingertips.

No one noticed that a little maid who was sweeping the floor raised her eyes and gave the Queen a meaningful look.

So when an old lady came to Xie Jiayi, she was really frightened!

Have the people of Min infiltrated the palace to this extent? They can even get into Zhaoyang Palace? A chill ran up Xie Jiayi's back. The old nanny saw what the queen was thinking and said in an old voice, "Don't worry, madam. The reason I was able to stay here is that I am an old friend of mine. I haven't been removed for more than 20 years."

"What about now?" "What do you want to do?" Xie Jiayi has calmed down and looked at the other party, who is just the most inconspicuous old slave in the palace.

"The Queen doesn't want a permanent solution." The old servant handed over a porcelain bottle, and Ruyi next to her took it but did not present it to the Queen.

The old nanny smiled and said, "Your Majesty will certainly have a way to confirm what I said. This medicine can kill men, but it will not harm the body. The life and death of the young prince depends on you. No matter how worried we old people are, we will never let you worry about it."

Xie Jiayi looked at the man and sneered without saying anything.

"Your Majesty doesn't trust us? Of course, the things have been delivered, and it's up to Your Majesty whether to use them or not. I have done my duty, and I can die now." The nanny knew that if she moved, she would be dead.

The queen looked at the old man who had been trapped in the palace for his entire life, and lived his entire life on this pill. When she thought about it carefully, she was just one of the absurd people in this world. The queen seemed tired, and she waved her hand: "I will not kill you, but I definitely don't want to see you in the palace again. Go, leave the palace, and go far away." "Go and spend two days of your own life, otherwise it would be absurd for an old man and a child to end their lives so hastily."

The old nanny then dared to look up and take a closer look at the empress at the top. She knelt down and kowtowed earnestly. She kowtowed three times with indescribable solemnity. Xie Jiayi saw that at her age, her face was covered with wrinkles, but the eyes she looked at made her believe that she was once a beauty. But beauty, what does it mean in this deep palace? Together with the little maid who swept the Zhaoyang Palace, both of them were sent out of the palace.

The two turned their heads to look at the high palace walls, never thinking that they would get out alive one day. Until this moment, the old woman who had been calm and composed in the face of death began to tremble with excitement. She listened to the sounds of carriages and pedestrians around her, those carrying loads, driving horses, grinding oatmeal ... She stretched out her trembling hand, supported the little girl and said: "Let's go, let's listen to the Queen and go far away." A few days later, people's days.

Unfortunately, she didn't know that while they were happily watching this bustling world, someone had already locked onto them.



In the Yangxin Palace, Xu Shixing threw down the memorial, looked at the man in black kneeling on the ground and ordered: " Wait until we leave the capital. "

The man in black took the order.

Xu Shixing thought, since she wanted them to leave here alive, he would fulfill her wish. After leaving the capital, he would send them to death. They would be able to survive thanks to the Queen.

Jixiang, who had listened to the whole thing, turned pale. Over the years, he had seen so much bloodshed and experienced so many storms. He always thought that he was calmer than the old Gaosheng, but when he heard about this, Jixiang's knees went weak.

That's the Queen, the apple of His Majesty's eye. Not to mention such a big thing, even if the Queen lost a strand of hair, it's not a small matter for His Majesty. This has actually reached the level of a drug to make him infertile?

He was always worried. He thought that His Majesty might become furious, or even more gloomy and terrifying, or maybe ... He didn't dare to think about it any further. He didn't know how His Majesty would deal with the Queen.

But after He Sheng and the men in black had retreated for a long time, His Majesty still did not make any movement.

He quietly raised his eyes to look at the imperial desk, only to see His Majesty holding a pen, lost in thought. There was no anger, no gloom, His Majesty seemed ... For the first time in his life, Jixiang felt that His Majesty at this moment was like a wronged child. Obviously, His Majesty had no expression, but that was what he felt the moment he looked up. Jixiang felt that he was so nervous that he was about to go crazy , and he just hoped that this matter would be resolved soon.

He thought that at least for the next few days, His Majesty should not eat the food in Zhaoyang Palace. He had to think of a reason for His Majesty. After all, except for the Queen, everyone in Zhaoyang Palace was a smart person ... Just when Jixiang was thinking of a reason, he heard His Majesty say:

" Go to Zhaoyang Palace. "

Jixiang responded reflexively, and then he heard His Majesty seem to laugh. He suspected that his ears were not working well, or was it an illusion? Who could laugh at this time? But soon he heard His Majesty say:

" Tell someone to tell Zhaoyang Palace that I want to eat Zhaoyang Palace's braised mandarin fish tonight. "

Jixiang continued to respond, then realized what His Majesty had said.

Your Majesty , are you going to have dinner at Zhaoyang Palace? !

## Chapter 110

When Jixiang followed His Majesty to Zhaoyang Palace , it was dusk and all the beautiful palace lanterns in Zhaoyang Palace were lit up. Unlike the eternal silence of Yangxin Palace, the Zhaoyang Palace, which was beginning to be shrouded in darkness , was filled with the gentle laughter of the palace servants from time to time. The fragrance of flowers mixed with

the gentle laughter of the palace servants always made Jixiang and His Majesty relax. But today was different . Jixiang always felt that Ruyi and Caixing, who came to greet him, were laughing a little nervously.

The Empress stood under the palace lantern in front of the main hall, looking at the crabapple flowers under the lantern. But Jixiang was sweating on his back . The Empress rarely went outside the hall to meet the emperor. She always lay lazily in the inner room. Is the Empress really going to – He felt that he had difficulty swallowing, but His Majesty was still normal . When he saw the Empress, he reached out and held her hand.

" It's not even summer yet , and you're already wearing such light clothes . It will be uncomfortable in the night wind. " Jixiang always felt that His Majesty had become more gentle and patient with Her Majesty recently , but the tenderness and affection in His Majesty's eyes when he looked at Her Majesty tonight still shocked Jixiang who only caught a glimpse of it. He felt that perhaps he had guessed wrong , and that His Majesty was not here to expose the conspiracy.

Thinking of this, Jixiang's face turned even paler , causing Ruyi to look at him twice. Jixiang smiled as usual, but this time he really didn't have the energy to get close to Ruyi and Caixing . He just listened attentively to the movements of His Majesty and the Queen.

After a while, Miss Caixing came to say that the meal was ready and asked Your Majesty and Your Majesty to enjoy it.

The steamed fish that His Majesty wanted to eat was right next to His Majesty . Jixiang watched His Majesty pick it up and eat it slowly. He was so nervous that he could hardly swallow his saliva. He noticed that His Majesty didn't eat a single bite of the fish , and she ate very little of the dishes on the table.

But His Majesty used more on this day than on any other day. Seeing this, Jixiang felt a sour nose inexplicably . He didn't know why , but he felt so sad looking at everything that was obviously warm in front of him .

At the end, a bowl of soup was served. Jixiang watched His Majesty pick it up and drink it without leaving a drop.

The Queen Mother looked at His Majesty silently for a while and asked, " There are snacks, Your Majesty, do you want to eat? " Jixiang's heart felt like it was filled with stones. He had already eaten so much, and there was still snacks ...

Xu Shixing looked at Xie Jiayi with his dark eyes and nodded slowly: " I want to eat. "

When the snacks were served, His Majesty really took two pieces of each. When he was about to reach out for more, it was the Empress who held down His Majesty's hand that was on the snacks. The two hands, one large and one small, rested on the pale yellow pastries, and the scene was pleasing to the eye.

Beautiful hands and beautiful desserts.

Xu Shixing raised his eyes and looked at Xie Jiayi with a smile: " Queen, are you reluctant to let me go? "

Xie Jiayi moved her hand away, but Xu Shixing grabbed her fingertips. He held Xie Jiayi's fingertips tightly and looked at her with a smile.

" Your Majesty, have you encountered something unpleasant? " Xie Jiayi said very experiencedly: " It is useless to eat more at this time. " Sadness will not be swallowed with food, but will come out with food ... She has these experiences.

Xu Shixing lowered his eyes, looked at her fingertips that he was holding, and whispered: " No. " He didn't feel unhappy, he just felt extremely happy.

" Then I will accompany His Majesty for a walk. " Xie Jiayi thought, it is impossible that everyone will know tomorrow that His Majesty has vomited because of Zhaoyang Palace. Then Shoukang Palace will jump up and cause trouble again. It is annoying just thinking about it. The two walked hand in hand in the courtyard under the palace lanterns. Xu Shixing sighed, " The crabapple blossoms are so beautiful. "

" I'll go with you to see the Changzhou crabapple tree in Fanhua Garden one day. " Xu Shixing suddenly thought of the banquet in Fanhua Garden many years ago, when Xie Jiayi said to him with anger in her eyes that it was her tree and no one could touch her tree. At that time, she must have been furious when she knew that he brought Zhang Jinyu into Fanhua Garden. Unfortunately, until then, he thought Xie Jiayi was a kite that would eventually return to him.

That night, His Majesty, who usually spoke little, said a lot, while the Queen was almost silent. Finally, Xu Shixing turned around and looked at Xie Jiayi, who was staring at the crabapple flowers. He stretched out his hand and pinched her soft cheek. When she came back to her senses, he took her into his arms. Xu Shixing asked her, " Are you cold? " But what he really wanted to ask was, Zhao Zhao, are you happy? I want you to be happy.

When His Majesty returned to the Yangxin Palace that day, Jixiang was like a string about to break, serving him based on his instincts. It was not until he helped His Majesty change his boots and clothes that Jixiang asked in a trembling voice: " Your Majesty, do you want to ask Doctor Wang to come and see me? "

His Majesty only glanced at him.

He immediately shut his mouth.

Your Majesty has been a completely different person since he left Zhaoyang Palace. He has remained silent and said nothing. At this time, Your Majesty sat silently beside the dragon bed. Jixiang didn't know how long it had been. Suddenly, someone came. A dark shadow appeared in the inner bedroom like a ghost, knelt down and said:

" The medicine was destroyed by the queen. "

Just one sentence made Jixiang feel that his heart, which had been clenched, suddenly loosened. He couldn't stop smiling and looked at His Majesty happily. At this time, the ghostly black shadow had disappeared without anyone noticing. Jixiang saw His Majesty sitting on the dragon bed but he didn't smile. His Majesty seemed to want to smile, but he showed an ugly expression like crying.

He saw that His Majesty was shaking as if he couldn't control his body.

He stepped forward in shock, but heard His Majesty's hoarse voice, trying to control himself: " Get out. "

Jixiang immediately went out and leaned against the inner bedroom door, carefully listening to the movements inside, waiting for the emperor's new instructions. He heard a suppressed and low howl like that of an animal, just that one.

Everything returned to silence again.

Jixiang didn't understand. His Majesty clearly saw the Queen's feelings, and the Queen was unwilling to hurt His Majesty even for the sake of the young prince. This was such a good thing. Why did he feel that His Majesty ... His Majesty seemed to be crying ...

This thought gave Jixiang a shock, because Jixiang suddenly realized that in all these years of following His Majesty, His Majesty had never shed a tear.

Through the door, Jixiang could sense the great sorrow that His Majesty was suppressing, and he wanted to cry with him. But why? Jixiang didn't understand.

Inside Zhaoyang Palace, the palace gate was already closed. Ruyi checked around and came back to report to the empress.

Finally, Ruyi hesitated for a moment, but still whispered to his princess: " Madam, do you regret it? " Such a good opportunity, if missed, will never come again. Xie Jiayi looked at the flickering candlelight, and after a while, he slowly said: " Ruyi, do you know what I hate most about His Majesty? "

Later, she thought that what she hated most about Xu Shixing was that they had been together since childhood, married, and had a deep love for each other, but he did not give her a clear choice in life. Her previous failure was just because of unconditional trust. She trusted, gave, and then stepped on empty air and fell down. But if Xu Shixing had told her the truth about who would encounter what on that road, she would never have taken it.

Your Majesty " , there is no love between me and you, but we still have the bond of husband and wife. " A half-time husband and wife is still husband and wife, and she accepted the benefit to fulfill this bond. Not taking advantage of his trust to bully him, this is the greatest kindness she has for him.

She hated those who dared not fight her openly and honestly, but were like rats in the gutter, secretly plotting. Even if she and her son were to fight, they had to fight openly, so that no matter what the outcome, she would still be herself. Since her rebirth, she had never wanted to live like the rats hiding in the dark that she hated in her previous life. In that case, even if she survived, what would it matter?

" If the day comes when this road really becomes blocked, Ruyi, we can still fight for it. " Throughout history, there has always been a shortage of queens or empress dowagers who have undergone coups d'état.

The topic ended here. Xie Jiayi asked Ruyi: " Have the bruises on Chengji's body gone away? " Ruyi hesitated for a moment: " The injury is not that bad, but I don't know what that master used on the young master. I felt that the young master was very uncomfortable many times, but I endured it silently. "

Xie Jiayi's eyelids twitched and she clenched her fists.

She thought about her son's temper, and he probably sent the servants away, leaving the little child alone with his quilt. The next day, when she saw her, she was still well behaved and happy. He is only six years old.

But Xie Jiayi said: " Just watch. If he doesn't say anything, just pretend you don't know. " This was the path his father had once walked, and he wanted to walk it again.

The next day, when the door of the inner bedroom of the Hall of Mental Cultivation was pushed open by the tall and upright emperor, Jixiang felt as if he had seen a brand new emperor. His Majesty looked the same as usual, and he was reserved and taciturn. During the whole time he was washing and changing clothes, he only asked one question: " Has the queen woke up? " Jixiang answered, and His Majesty nodded. At this moment, his eyebrows and eyes were full of tenderness, not at all like the gloomy and taciturn emperor in everyone's mind.

" Your Majesty, are we going to Zhaoyang Palace? " Jixiang asked carefully from the side. He saw His Majesty looking at the sky outside, squinting his eyes, and said, " Go to Shoukang Palace. "

When Jixiang went in to help His Majesty tidy up the dragon bed, he was shocked to find that the black porcelain bottle there was empty. His knees weakened and his face changed: " Your Majesty? " His Majesty adjusted his sleeves, but turned around and glanced, and said lightly: " It's okay, I give in. "

Jixiang fell to his knees. Inside was the same infertility-inducing medicine that the Empress had in her hand!

He heard His Majesty chuckle: " Hurry up and serve me. It's not you who eats what I eat. Why is it so necessary to do this? "

Jixiang stepped forward, trembling so much that he almost couldn't do his job.

His Majesty actually said to him: " The medicine from Fang Zhongzi is very good and will not harm your body. " By the time Jixiang followed His Majesty to Shoukang Palace, he had already suppressed his shock and returned to normal, but Jixiang didn't understand. The more he understood between His Majesty and the Empress, the more he didn't understand. He looked at the bright blue sky above his head and thought to himself, God, it's good for me to lose this child.

This time, although he knew that the Empress Dowager was still unhappy, Emperor Jianzhao did not leave after paying his respects as he did in the past. Instead, he sent someone to inform the Empress Dowager that he wanted to see her.

Soon, the Queen Mother's voice, filled with shock and anger, could be heard from Shoukang Palace:

" Adopt a son? You're crazy! "

Although the Queen Mother quickly suppressed her voice, many people still heard it. Everyone who heard it at that moment thought the same as the Queen Mother. They had always thought that His Majesty was a little crazy, but there was no such crazy thing as adopting an heir. His Majesty is only thirty years old, in the prime of life! If His Majesty wants, there are many heirs. With such a vast country, His Majesty wants to adopt an heir?

The calmest person at this moment was Jixiang. Having accepted everything, he looked at these servants who were making a fuss with disdain.

Crazy? What kind of crazy is this?

I'm afraid that if you knew what His Majesty had done, you would be scared to death! It was him who had been brave and careful since childhood, with a strong heart and liver, and Jixiang

touched his chest. Otherwise, he might have been frightened by the crazy things His Majesty had done and couldn't stand up. He was still working and the chief steward of the Yangxin Palace ... I'm afraid he would have gone to accompany that old Gaosheng.

To serve His Majesty, one must have a strong heart. Jixiang had understood this since he was still in the East Palace.

Your Majesty is not crazy, Your Majesty has always been crazy. Jixiang stood aside, shrank his head, and waited obediently.

The empress dowager in the hall tried hard to suppress her anger, but her chest still rose and fell uncontrollably. The emperor in front of her was still sitting calmly, as if he had no idea how ridiculous what he had said was.

The Queen Mother sneered, " It's Zhaoyang Palace again, she has fascinated you to this extent! " She could even say the words of Juexian. He is not a local rich man with a few melons and two dates, he is the emperor who owns the world. They are not talking about inheriting a few bags of rice and a few boxes of gold and silver, they are talking about the heir to the Great Yin Dynasty! When the Queen Mother thought about it, the inexplicable anger that she had suppressed with great difficulty suddenly surged up.

" I've said long ago that she's just like her mother. " They're both vixen! " Emperor, don't deny it. Have you been bewitched by her? "

No one expected that Xu Shixing actually thought about it seriously and smiled. He looked up at the Queen Mother with a smile and said softly:

" My Queen Mother is right. When I think about it, it is true. " He was bewitched by her and could not get out of it.

The empress dowager really used up her lifelong self-control to not smash the teacup at her son's face, but threw it to the ground with a bang, and broken porcelain splashed everywhere. Then she heard the emperor's calmer voice:

" It is useless for the Queen Mother to be angry. I am unable to give birth and am doomed to have no offspring. "

## Chapter 111

" It is useless for the Queen Mother to be angry . I am unable to give birth and am doomed to have no offspring. "

Xu Shixing said it calmly, but everyone in Shoukang Palace was stunned! The Queen Mother's lips trembled and she couldn't ask , " Can't ... can't what ?" What exactly did the Emperor just say couldn't what? Not to mention the other people who stayed here at this time , all of them were trembling like quails waiting to be slaughtered. Knowing the emperor's privacy, can they still walk out of this room alive? At this moment, they really regretted that they had ears.

Finally understanding the meaning of the emperor's words , the queen mother fell back on the chair. At this moment, she was at a loss. That was a vast country. She had devoted so much effort to it and sacrificed her other two children. She was not only waiting to become the queen mother , but also wanted her mother's bloodline to enter the Xu imperial bloodline! She wanted

the nobility of this dynasty to be inseparable from her bloodline , and she was a part of the supreme and noble.

Then she felt a deep regret . Why did she choose this son? The uneasiness in her heart for so many years really came to an end . She had doubted countless times whether she had chosen the wrong son. It turned out to be true!

But the Queen Mother was invincible . She quickly accepted the fact and found a new opportunity: an adopted son. She could still control the adopted son and let her daughter with royal blood become the next queen. The Queen Mother's suddenly pale face slowly recovered: Yes , an adopted son! Now is not the time to be sad . She must quickly contact her father and brothers to see which child to choose for adoption . This child must be of the same mind as her and the Duke's Mansion!

Xu Shixing watched the Queen Mother quickly accept the fact and began to plan the next step. Seeing the same situation again, he still felt that people and things in this world were so absurd and not worth it. And the only thing worth it, thinking of her, Xu Shixing felt as if the tip of his heart was pierced by a needle again, and he couldn't help but feel a pain.

" Which child does your majesty value? " The Queen Mother's voice was still weak from the blow she had suffered, but there was an urgency in her tone that could not be suppressed.

Xu Shixing said calmly: " Does the Queen Mother have any ideas? "

then realized that she was a little anxious and had revealed her true colors, but – this was a matter of national importance, who wouldn't be anxious! She suppressed her emotions, " I am a woman in the harem, how can I interfere in these things? It's just that I, the Queen Mother, think that this is a matter of national importance, and we need to think it over slowly. But you must not listen to one side of the story, the Emperor! " The last warning was pointed, and she also needed time to discuss with her mother's family.

Xu Shixing smiled faintly and looked at the cup in his hand without saying a word.

The Queen Mother then realized that the Emperor's inability to have children was a difficult matter to talk about. No wonder the Emperor's harem had been in this state for so many years. She quickly said, " I'm sorry to trouble you with this matter. "

The Queen Mother had already taken out her handkerchief and was ready to cry. Thinking about her son's difficult situation, it was time for her as a mother to comfort him. However, the Emperor acted as if he was talking about a trivial matter such as whether or not to have a meal, rather than a major matter such as a man cannot have a queen. Xu Shixing said indifferently, " Your son does not feel embarrassed. "

Seeing the Queen Mother holding the handkerchief paused, she didn't know whether she should shed tears for a moment. She knew that even at this moment, her son was still so unpleasant. He had never been likable. If he had been like that back then – well, it was too late to say anything. The Queen Mother felt that it was really not easy for her. She had to bring up such a son. The sacrifices and the sadness, thinking of this, the Queen Mother's eyes moistened. The handkerchief was finally used.

Even at this time, Xu Shixing still just looked at the teacup in his hand indifferently. The empress dowager felt cold in her heart, but now it was different from the past. Being the emperor's son was not just a son after all.

In particular, the Queen Mother often felt that her son had a silent and sinister aura, which had annoyed her before and now made her feel cold.

Here, Xu Shixing put down his teacup and just left Shoukang Palace when he received a report that someone from Shoukang Palace was going to the Duke of Ying's Mansion. Xu Shixing waved his hand to let them leave, and looked up at the red walls and yellow tiles of the imperial city, feeling inexplicably funny. He laughed out loud, and told Jixiang with a smile: " Go to Zhaoyang Palace. " He wanted to tell his Zhaozhao to let her son be the crown prince, so that she would probably feel more at ease in the future.

In the spring palace, there are still rows of crabapple trees in full bloom.

In Zhaoyang Palace, Xu Shixing sat down and spoke. Sure enough, he saw Xie Jiayi's eyes wide open: " You? " Infertile! Xie Jiayi's first thought was what had Xu Shixing done in the past ten years? Her eyes suddenly became suspicious? How did this man make himself infertile? His mother couldn't have put the Hehuan in the wrong place and let him eat it too ... This had never happened in his previous life.

Xu Shixing raised his hand and tapped Xie Jiayi's forehead lightly, " What are you thinking about? " Why is her reaction always different from others? Xu Shixing looked at her, wanting to hug her and kiss her, but he did nothing. He just waited quietly for her to digest this fact, waited for her to be happy, and then feel at ease.

" Did you tell anyone? " Xie Jiayi understood from what Xu Shixing said that not only the Empress Dowager of Shoukang Palace knew about this, but many people in Shoukang Palace also knew about it.

" If we don't tell anyone about this kind of thing, won't anyone know? " Xu Shixing glanced at her.

Xie Jiayi bit her index finger joints and said after a while: " Your Majesty, if this kind of thing is known to others, many people will talk about you behind your back – you, you –" She wanted to say that you would feel very uncomfortable at that time, both embarrassed and uncomfortable. Only when you have been in that situation, you will know how terrible it is.

Men whose abilities are questioned, and women who are considered unworthy of being women because they cannot have children, are in high positions, but suddenly they fall into a situation where anyone can look down on you and pity you. They seem to have suddenly become extremely noble just because they can have children. No matter what you do, they will eventually come to the conclusion that being unable to have children is abnormal .

" There are always many confused people in this world. Even if Your Majesty hears something, you don't have to take those people's words to heart. " Thinking of all the things he heard in his previous life, Xie Jiayi said softly.

Xu Shixing was originally looking at his queen, waiting for her to feel at ease. When he heard this, his heart seemed to be pierced by a sharp sword. He almost couldn't control his trembling due to the pain. He tried to control his voice and not let himself show any abnormality: "You ——" After a pause , he finally said: " Does it make you feel uncomfortable when people say that? "

He was asking about his past life, but Xie Jiayi thought he was asking about his present life.

" I'm used to it. "



But such a casual answer tore his bleeding heart apart. What did he let his Zhaozhao go through? Obviously, he wanted to be good to her and give her the best in the world. Later, he forgot why, and just wanted her to wait, be patient, and give him more time ...

Xu Shixing stared at her blankly. The spring light outside the window fell on her. Behind her was the weeping crabapple tree in full bloom.

" Zhao Zhao, I let Cheng Ji be the crown prince, are you happy? "

Xie Jiayi was so happy! But she also felt that after all, the happiness of the two of them was based on the pain of His Majesty, so she tried to control herself, but still couldn't. This was really as happy as the surging river ... She tried to control herself.

" Your Majesty, you promised me that there would be no one else, and I would only have Chengji as my child. "

" Will Your Majesty feel better if you think this way? "

Xu Shixing looked at her as if she had unloaded some invisible burden all of a sudden, and she did not forget to comfort him, and suddenly smiled. Xie Jiayi, Xie Jiayi, why can't you hide anything on your face?

" Yeah, thinking this way really makes me feel better. "

Xie Jiayi then revealed a slightly reserved smile, her lips moved, and she felt that it was inappropriate to say anything at this time. However, without bloodshed, her Chengji would become the crown prince, he would become the heir to the throne of Dayin, the spokesperson of the imperial power, and he would escape the relentless pursuit of the elusive and extremely terrifying owl .

Everything will come to an end the moment he becomes the crown prince.

Her son can live well.

At this moment, Xie Jiayi forgave Xu Shixing. Not for anything else, just because he had saved her son this time. She stood up and threw herself into Xu Shixing's arms, resting her head on his chest, and heard his heartbeat suddenly quicken –

Boom boom boom.

The dancing confused her, but she didn't care.

Her son will always live uprightly in this bright and clear world!

The moment Xie Jiayi threw herself into his arms, Xu Shixing was stunned. His heart woke up before he did, beating rapidly. Xu Shixing's slightly trembling hands finally slowly fell on Xie Jiayi's back, and slowly held her in his arms.

This was the first time that Xie Jiayi took the initiative to hug him since the afternoon when she woke up from a nap when she was sixteen years old.

Even though he knew it was for her son.

But Xu Shixing still felt so bitter that he couldn't hold back. She had jumped into his arms time and time again. She stood among the crabapple trees and said with a smile: " Brother Crown Prince, catch me! "

But, Xu Shixing thought, he did not catch her that last time.

He took her to the highest place, but he did not catch her.

Zhao Zhao, this time, I will catch you.

Help your son to be where he belongs.

So, Zhaozhao, stay with me and be happy, okay?

At this time, Shoukang Palace and the Duke's Mansion were nervously selecting from the royal family. This was news that was bound to spread quickly once it was spoken out, not to mention that Emperor Jianzhao had no intention of hiding it from the beginning.

It was like throwing a fire into dry wood, and quickly a flame rose into the sky.

Adoption, heir ..... suddenly became the most watched event in the whole Dayin. From the royal family and nobles to the civil and military officials and peddlers, everyone was paying attention to the most important event in Dayin. No one expected that His Majesty would choose to adopt a son at the age of 30, but since the adoption was decided, the most important thing next was the selection: who would be the heir.

Once hit, it will be like the fate of the country is in danger.

Just mentioning it is enough to make people's eyes red, not to mention those involved in the game. Those who smelled the smell flocked to the Duke's Mansion through various channels, but they could not say it openly. However, if they could successfully enter the East Palace, these qualified families would almost say how much power they could give to the Duke's Mansion. Today's Duke's Mansion looks lively on the surface, but those who know the inside story know that it is more of an empty shell.

Although Emperor Jianzhao did not suppress them openly, he had been suppressing them over the years. The hereditary succession of the Duke's Mansion was taken away by the previous emperor and never returned. The original base, whether in the south or the north, has been replaced by the Princess' Mansion and the Jingbei Prince's Mansion. The Duke's Mansion, which seems to be in a turbulent situation, urgently needs to stand on the right side.

And these royal families who are expected to become the crown prince also need to rely on the Duke's Mansion and the Queen Mother to enter the Eastern Palace.

The chips given to the Duke's Mansion kept increasing, and the Duke of England felt that this was an opportunity given by God. It is really unpredictable in the world, and a blessing in disguise may turn out to be a blessing in disguise. This thing seems to be a bad thing on the surface, but it turns into a good thing in the blink of an eye.

The Empress Dowager in Shoukang Palace was becoming more and more able to accept the fact that the Emperor could not have a queen, and she even began to appreciate it. She felt more and more that her parents were right, and that this was not a bad thing. With the current confusion of His Majesty and his enthusiasm for Zhaoyang Palace, if the Empress of Zhaoyang Palace gave birth to a son, it would be a legitimate heir, the undisputed Crown Prince. By then, it would be too late, but now——, the position of Crown Prince was once again something that everyone could plan for, and the Queen would not have an advantage in winning because of her status.

It's just a matter of speed. The faster you reach a consensus and put forward a candidate, the greater your chances of winning.

But just as the secret actions were going on everywhere, a bolt from the blue suddenly struck: Prince Min Huai has an heir!

The author has something to say:

The main text will be completed tomorrow.

## Chapter 112

When Prince Minhuai had a descendant , the emperor intended to adopt him as his successor to inherit the throne and fulfill the last wish of his grandfather.

This news came like a bolt from the blue , almost turning the entire capital upside down.

" Prince Min Huai has a successor? Who? " The aging Duke of England had recently regained his vitality . Hearing this , the vitality inspired by power and great vision could not support his heavy body . He leaned on the armchair and asked anxiously who it was. If they were fast enough , they might be able to establish this line. If not, they could also destroy this line.

But the key is: who?

This was the question of everyone in the capital, except the old prince of the royal family and the imperial tutor, Lord Wang. At this moment, the two were sitting in the octagonal pavilion under the sun, watching the royal children who had just finished school . When one of the six-year-old children came out, the old prince was still sitting quietly , while Lord Wang had already stood up and leaned forward , holding the railing.

He saw the child's face.

" It's really like him. "

" picture. "

Xu Chengji, who was below, was reminded by someone and looked up at the pavilion . He respectfully and properly performed the junior's salute to the two elderly people in the pavilion , and then followed the palace servants who were serving him.

The old prince said: " Now the eight seals of the emperor are finally gathered together, and the seal of the emperor is finally back. " When he saw the mutton-fat blood jade, he knew that the lost seal of the emperor would be returned sooner or later. During that time , the eldest brother knew that his younger brother was most concerned about treasures and toys , and came to his house every day.

It was also a sunny day. The eldest brother, who was always steady and well-mannered, could not hold back his dignified steps and said happily: " Xiao Liu , I finally found something to give to the Crown Princess . It is the only one in the world! " In his hand was the piece of mutton-fat jade , which he had only slightly carved into a corner , and a peony leaf was carved into that corner. The Crown Princess of the eldest brother liked peonies, and the eldest brother smiled and said: " This will be passed down from generation to generation. Our son can continue to carve it in the future. "

When the old prince saw it, the whole piece of jade had been carved. From the eldest brother to Prince Min Huai, the jade was in the hands of the child who stayed behind. He probably thought that his blood jade would not have a chance to be passed down. The old prince thought about the mysterious organization, " Xiao " . He only knew vaguely that Emperor Yuanhe had allocated a large sum of money to build such an organization. Xiao, which was maintained by money equivalent to the tax revenue of a county, was only loyal to the supreme imperial power and had only one life, to hunt down the orphan of Prince Min Huai and fight to the death.

The old prince came back to his senses from the past, but saw that Old Master Wang was still staring blankly at the place where the child was no longer there.

" Shocked? " The old prince laughed. " I was shocked too. We old folks who have lived too long have finally seen this day. "

There was a slight tremor in Mr. Wang's voice. " Yes, I saw it. "

Empress Xiaoyi died young. Since she entered the palace, she and Old Master Wang, who was still Master Wang at the time, only said one sentence: " Master Wang, if my daughter Pingyang has a daughter in the future, it must be the one that Taizu had pointed out to the future grandson. " Empress Xiaoyi was talking about the marriage of the two children who had not yet been born. In fact, she hoped that he could carry on Taizu's will and support Prince Min Huai. Empress Xiaoyi was arranged by Taizu and was a lock that Taizu had chosen for Emperor Yuanhe. Taizu knew that Emperor Yuanhe had chosen this lock very well . He was loyal to his duties all his life, but Taizu probably didn't expect Empress Xiaoyi to die so early – gone. Empress Xiaoyi was always calm and dignified. When she smiled, everyone who saw her felt happy.

Only he knew that this was only one side of her.

Who among the talented people in the capital didn't look up to her? Many people went to those wine-drinking parties just to see her. The young Emperor Yuanhe, who had not yet ascended the throne, was one of them.

But they don't know why there are so many Qushui Liushang ceremonies.

Old Master Wang looked at the same blue sky and warm sun as decades ago, but the people around him had already changed. He gave her a song "High Mountain", and she would return it with a song of wine flowing down the river. Until the imperial decree of marriage came suddenly. And the song "Feng Qiu Luan" that he never had the courage to play was completely silent in those nights that made him regret. In those young dreams, he played not the towering "Gao Shan" but the hand-in-hand "Feng Qiu Huang" every night.

Young Master of the Capital? When Old Master Wang thought of that title, a self-deprecating smile appeared on his wrinkled face. Just as no one knew that the dignified queen was once a girl who climbed up a locust tree just to taste the top locust flowers, no one knew that the young master of the capital, who was considered arrogant and unruly, only dared to play the song "Phoenix Seeking the Phoenix" thousands of times in his heart. In this life, he never dared to really play the strings once.

" You're going back now? " The old prince asked as he watched the old man, supported by the child, stagger away. " What are you going back for? "

Mr. Wang replied: " Playing the piano. "

The old prince perked up all of a sudden, " High Mountain! " Who hasn't heard the story that the young man in the capital used to play "High Mountain" on a high hill all night long every month? " Why did you choose such a high hill? And those days? " This was what everyone wondered at the time. The high hill chosen by the young man in the capital was really not a good place to play the piano and enjoy the moon, and the days he chose were not all nights with a bright moon to enjoy.

Old Master Wang did not reply this time, because he had calculated that the wind on those days would carry the sound of the guqin from the high hill to her courtyard and boudoir.

On this day of the Great Dynasty, when a six-year-old child holding a brocade box appeared in the main hall of the Qianqing Palace, everyone's confusion did not last long before someone exclaimed: " The Seal of Acceptance! "

" The imperial seal has been returned! "

Then everyone knew the identity of the person in front of them. It turned out that the talented and brilliant Number One Scholar turned out to be the orphan of Prince Min Huai! No wonder, no wonder, such a talented person should be the orphan of Prince Minhuai!

Among the excited ministers, some of the courtiers surrounding the Duke's Mansion turned pale. In the tenth year of Jianzhao, the lost imperial seal of the Dayin Dynasty was returned to the court. Xu Chengji, the grandson of Crown Prince Minhuai, was personally appointed as his heir by Emperor Jianzhao. He chose a day to establish the crown prince and enter the East Palace to inherit the throne in the future.

The always elegant Queen Mother in Shoukang Palace almost went crazy. She couldn't accept that her son actually handed over the throne to the descendants of Princess Pingyang! She couldn't accept it. Did the emperor forget? How many humiliations she had suffered from Princess Pingyang, and Princess Pingyang just stepped on her as a matter of course ... She worked hard to support her son, not for today's ...

" Call him here! I want to ask him, I want to ask him! " She knew that her son was a rebellious person, but she always thought that she had her son firmly under her control. She sacrificed so much for him to get to where he is today, and her son knew it ... It was all because of the vixen. The late emperor was like this, and so is her son!

Heaven is so unfair!

So unfair!

When Xu Shixing entered Shoukang Palace, the Queen Mother was about to go crazy. She pointed at Xu Shixing and smiled sinisterly: " You forgot everything! "

" It was you who should have died, but it was your elder brother who saved you! " This was a story Xu Shixing had to hear every day when he was a child. In the royal family, twins were unknown, and it was impossible for twins to be crowned as the heir. The emperor must be unique!

On the day of his birth, Changchun Palace had already made thorough preparations, keeping the older one and killing the younger one, and he was the younger one. The food box for the baby's body was ready, and that was where he would end up. But when Madam Liu put her hand on his neck, the older child cried out loudly and unyieldingly, leaving everyone at a loss. In the end, he survived, and his brother went into the food box.

Later, his brother was planted under a tree, and his mother gave him the tree, so that he would remember how he survived. He was not supposed to live in this world, he could not lose, he could not cry, and he could not have desires.

" Your brother and your sister both died for you! You have forgotten everything! " He is indeed a member of the Xu family, so heartless and ruthless.

Yes, and his sister. The younger sister was less than one year old, with a pair of dark, black and bright eyes. She was the only person who would smile at him without asking him for anything. She would smile when she saw him. At that time, Xu Shixing was only five years old. The only time of the day he looked forward to was to see his sister. At that moment, there was only a smiling little baby, without gloom, scolding, or disgust.

Later, his sister also died, and his mother told him that she died for him.

He was walking on a road paved with the flesh and blood of his brothers and sisters. He should not stop for a single step but should keep going towards that location.

never cry, you should never lose, and you should never have desires.

Xu Shixing looked at his mother, whose face was now grim, and suddenly thought of the time a few days ago when Xu Chengji fell off his standing posture. His son Zhao Zhao held Xu Chengji's little arm distressedly and taught him:

" What should I do if I fall down? -- Just cry it out. "

Xu Chengji laughed.

He just looked at the mother and daughter, and at his Zhaozhao. At the beginning, she said to him, " It hurts so much, just cry it out. " Later, she knew he wouldn't cry, so every time he got hurt, she would cry and say, " Brother Crown Prince, let me cry for you. " Sometimes she wouldn't even give him any time to react, and after she finished speaking, the little girl would hug his arms and cry.

Xu Shixing's calmness made the empress dowager even more angry. She finally smashed the teacup that she had always wanted to hit Xu Shixing's face on his forehead. The blood flowed down Xu Shixing's extremely pale face, which was a shocking sight.

Nanny Liu and Jixiang, who stayed in the inner room, were terrified. With the Empress Dowager and His Majesty respectively, they dared not move at a time like this without anyone giving them orders.

Xu Shixing remained calm, letting the bright red blood flow through the corners of his eyes, winding down like a white jade Rakshasa.

He finally spoke his first words since coming in:

" Mother, they did not live in me, they died in your hands. "

" I and I both died in your hands. "

After saying this, the tall and taciturn emperor bowed to his mother and turned to leave the gorgeous and cold Shoukang Palace. Jixiang followed tremblingly, and Xu Shixing took the handkerchief to wipe off the blood and pressed his forehead.

He originally wanted to go to Zhaoyang Palace, he was eager to see her. But then he changed his mind, he was in such a state, she was such a timid person, forget it, just wait until the bleeding stopped.

The cold winter has passed, spring has brought overwhelming green, and now, the vibrant summer is coming.

The palace was full of life, and the crabapples that the queen loved were in full bloom, making them difficult to control.

Xu Shixing pressed his handkerchief against his forehead, looked at the blossoming crabapple trees, and smiled.

The adoption and crown prince ceremony were held on the same day. This was another grand ceremony in the Dayin Dynasty since the empress was enthroned. Its significance was not only that the crown prince of Dayin had been decided, but also that the disputes over legitimacy and the hidden dangers of civil unrest that had always existed in Dayin had completely disappeared on the day when Emperor Jianzhao established the crown prince. Under the tranquility of the Dayin Dynasty, the various forces that had been hiding had finally subsided.

The civil strife that the foreign races had been waiting for for a long time and would tear down Dayin and give them an opportunity to profit was thus eliminated.

criticisms about Emperor Jianzhao , his achievements in governing the country and his choice of successor are all praised by the history books. The three-generation struggle for royal orthodoxy ended with such an unexpected outcome for everyone. From then on, Dayin embarked on a truly stable and powerful path.

Just when everyone was relieved and everything was slowly getting back on track, no one expected that someone was planning a final fight to the death in the dark.

## Chapter 113

Who could have thought that the virtuous concubine who stayed in the harem and was even forgotten by people could actually join forces with the Shoukang Palace, which had fought against her for a lifetime. Whether it was the empress dowager who had controlled the harem for more than ten years in Shoukang Palace, or the virtuous concubine who almost suppressed the Defei of Changchun Palace , and Mingpei who had worked hard for many years among the lower-level palace maids and eunuchs. The queen could suppress them with thunder , but in a short period of time , it was impossible for the queen to clean up the nails they had buried in this deep palace – those ghosts that belonged to them.

, the emperor who later unified the country, learned not to trust anyone on this day. The danger he experienced when he was six years old made him realize that people can change and lie.

The eunuch who cheated him was the palace servant he trusted most before. His loyalty was true, and it was also true that he betrayed his master today for the so-called necessity.

All the earnest teachings were not as good as falling into the trap himself. In the long life that followed, Xu Chengji smiled and said countless times , " I trust you ", " I trust you "... " I trust you ", " Your loyalty , how can I not trust you ", " You are different from others , you are someone I trust "... But he never trusted anyone again, except his mother.

Xu Chengji looked at the smiling woman holding snacks in front of him — the one his mother hated , and one of the people that Eunuch Ruyi had told him to be wary of. He blinked his big black eyes , " Auntie , do you recognize me? "

" I'm lost. Aunt, please send me back . There will be a big reward for you. "

Zhang Jinyu looked at the fair and tender little boy in front of him , who was wearing a one-piece robe embroidered with a four-clawed dragon . At such a young age , he had already reached the highest position of power. This was Xie Jiayi's son!

She looked at him carefully . This little prince, who was usually well protected, had not yet realized that he was in danger. He thought he was just lost. His eyes were still rolling around, as if he had finally arrived at a new place. He looked very fresh. He was indeed as stupid as his mother.

She smiled and tried to soften her tone: " Your Highness, have some snacks. Your aunt will take you back. " Go back to where you should go, by the lotus pond, where the playful little prince fell into the water. This should be your destination.

Xu Chengji then turned his gaze from wandering around the room to two particularly beautiful light pink desserts. He tilted his head and looked at Zhang Jinyu: " Aunt, did you make these desserts yourself? The people around me don't allow me to eat anything I want! " His tone revealed dissatisfaction with being controlled.

Zhang Jinyu smiled more gently: " Don't worry, little prince, they are all made by auntie herself, they are delicious. " As expected, the little prince swallowed his saliva, and Zhang Jinyu's smile at this time became more genuine: stupidity inherited from the same lineage. The prince of the East Palace naturally could not die from poisoning, but could only die from falling into the water. This snack only made him weak all over, without even a little struggle, and fell into the water quietly and obediently.

Seeing that Xu Chengji clearly wanted to eat but was still hesitant, Zhang Jinyu tried to coax him with nice words, but she was already a little anxious. The key to this matter was to be quick! She was already a little impatient. If it didn't work, she could only force-feed him. It would melt in the mouth and take effect immediately. She went over the possibility of force-feeding in her mind and felt that it would not go wrong. Not to mention shouting it out, this place was remote and she had plenty of ways to stop such a villain from shouting it out.

Xu Chengji smiled as he watched the other person's gaze gradually become gloomy and creepy. With the gentle smile still on her face, and this room that was obviously unused for a long time, a chill climbed along his back, making him feel almost unable to control the tension in his heart.

Master said: " When death is imminent, you must not be afraid. If you are afraid, you will panic, and if you panic, you will surely die when death is imminent. " Only those who can control fear can find opportunities for life in every gap.

The strange old man said that he was familiar with all the poisons in the world. Many of the best poisons in the palace were made by him.

Xu Chengji stretched out his little hand and seemed to finally be unable to resist the temptation. He picked up a piece of dessert and smelled it carefully. Unfortunately, he was not familiar with it. It was colorless and tasteless. What was in it? He regretted that he had not worked harder. However, the only poison that is truly colorless, odorless and leaves no trace is probably the one that comes from the strange old man.

He smiled sheepishly at the person opposite him: " I'll try it, just a little bit, don't tell anyone when we get home. "

Zhang Jinyu's hand fell back as he was about to explode, and he said in a low voice: " Don't worry, young prince, no one will know. " From the beginning to the end, no one will know. The scapegoat has prepared several lines, and no one will know what happened today. As



expected, this stupid child resisted and was greedy, but in the end he couldn't resist his greed, carefully put the snack to his mouth, licked it, and his eyes lit up: " Delicious! "

He was familiar with this poison! It was indeed produced by the strange old man, and it was said to be the only poison in the world that could not be traced.

" If it's delicious, Your Highness, please eat more. " Zhang Jinyu saw that he was taking his time and really wanted to start eating, but she was cautious. If she could leave no traces, that would be the best. It would be best if the little prince ate it obediently.

" Aunt, I'll transfer you over later, and you can make snacks just for me, okay? "

Zhang Jinyu just wanted to eat quickly, but she had to suppress her anxiety: " Your Highness will think this piece is delicious after you eat it. Your aunt will make it for you every day in the future. " It's a pity that you have to go to the King of Hell's Palace, and I can't go there.

As if he had thought of something, the little prince opened his mouth to speak again.

Zhang Jinyu felt that this could not be delayed any longer, and his face darkened uncontrollably, but he still tried his best to make one last attempt, and said with a stiff smile: " Your Highness, please eat quickly. " Otherwise, I will have to help you myself.

The little prince immediately forgot what he was going to say, and happily opened his mouth to bite off half of the dessert, which really melted in his mouth.

Zhang Jinyu felt relieved at this time, and directly reached out and pressed the remaining half into his mouth.

" Aunt ... I feel weak all over. " Xu Chengji's voice became weak.

Zhang Jinyu was surprised that he could still speak, but it seemed that he would soon be done.

She approached the child to observe the effect of the medicine. The moment she approached, a white light flashed, and Zhang Jinyu felt a chill on her neck as she tilted her head. The child next to her jumped up and climbed to the high cabinet in a blink of an eye, approaching the only high air vent in the room that was not sealed. The air vent was not big, but Xu Chengji was a soft six-year-old child.

Zhang Jinyu reached out and touched her neck and saw a smattering of blood. She was horrified and panicked, and just shouted: " Someone, come quickly! "

Originally, for the sake of confidentiality, there was only one young eunuch guarding the outside, but now he was panicking when he came in. The promise is that it will melt in the mouth and take effect immediately, and then he just needs to carry the person to the lotus pond in front and throw it away, and that's it?

" Catch him! " Zhang Jinyu yelled hoarsely, her hands full of blood on her neck like a ghost, and her other hand pointing at the child on the high cabinet. Finally, something happened, but even if she was claustrophobic for the rest of her life, she still wanted the child to die. If she couldn't get it, Xie Jiayi couldn't get it either! She wants to see what Xie Jiayi can do to her then. Your Majesty will not kill her. Your Majesty owes her the lives of everyone in the Zhang family, her father, her mother, her brother—— . Your Majesty himself owes her a life! Your Majesty owes her, owes her!

Xu Chengji, who was above him, almost immediately chose to hit the air vent with his head. The old man said that he had dissected many people and the forehead was the hardest part of the human body. At this time, of course, he had to use the hardest part.

The young eunuch below was trying frantically to shake the tall cabinet, but when he failed, he went to move a stool and stepped on it to pull the man down.

Xu Chengji rushed forward as if he didn't care about his life!

" If you want to live, you must first learn to not care about your life! "

With a clang, the entire air vent window pane fell off, and Xu Chengji climbed out of the air vent. His feet were suddenly grabbed by the little eunuch's iron-like hand, and Xu Chengji almost fell back. Fortunately, the air vent was narrow, and a sudden pull made his stomach burn with pain. He clung to the tree trunk outside the wall that he could grab, and his little hands were bleeding.

" There's an assassin! There's an assassin! " The child's sharp voice echoed in this remote cold palace.

The cold palace was quiet, and the voice became clearer and clearer. Especially since it was the most sensitive warning in the palace – " There is an assassin " , it alarmed the guards who were guarding the cold palace and were gathering together to open a bet in the distance .

The person who caught him was obviously panicked when he heard this, and Xu Chengji took the opportunity to kick him, but the person underneath was an adult after all, and he was only a six-year-old child, so he couldn't break free from that hand at all.

He twisted his body desperately, and as long as he was not straight, no one could pull him in through the narrow air vent. Unless his whole body was torn apart, he could not be pulled in!

The child's shrill cry continued:

" There's an assassin! There's an assassin! " Slowly half of the palace was alarmed!

When he saw his master, Xu Chengji let go of his hand because it was in so much pain.

For more than one moment, he felt that death would be better than such severe pain. However, he did not die. Mother had lost her father, and he was the only one left.

He wants to live.

When Xie Jiayi arrived, Xu Chengji was already lying in a clean side hall. To others, the queen was always calm, and she walked calmly to where her son was. It was not until she reached the side hall door and watched the imperial doctors coming in and out that Xie Jiayi staggered, " Ruyi, help me! " Her legs were so weak that she was angry. Was this the time for her legs to be weak? But she couldn't control it.

When she finally arrived at her son's bedside, Xie Jiayi discovered that not only were her legs weak, but her hands were also shaking like a sieve.

She looked at her son's little hands, little body, and finally his little face. Xie Jiayi couldn't even ask the question, so Ruyi asked about the situation and whispered it in her ear.

Xie Jiayi just nodded. She wanted to say okay, it's ok, but she couldn't make a sound. She was seized by a huge fear.

It was not until half an hour later that Xie Jiayi regained control of her body.

This was also the first time she met Xu Chengji's master, who was also Lu Chenan's master. He should be an old man, but you can't tell his age from him. He has a very ordinary appearance, when he doesn't want to, no one will notice him, but when he wants to, anyone who has seen him will never forget him.

When he saw the queen, he did not bow, but just nodded.

The reason why he stayed here was just to meet this queen. Lu Ziyin was the most talented person he had ever met. Today, it was at this time that he finally felt a little curious and wanted to see what kind of person his genius apprentice was after. He looked at her and nodded, but she disappeared as soon as he turned around. No one knew how he left, and no one even realized that he had left.

He only left one sentence: " Ziyin died of poison, Fang Zhongzi would not let his son die of poison again. " Most of the poisons in the world are useless to Xu Chengji.

The little prince's condition finally stabilized , and Xie Jiayi helped Ruyi stand up from the bed. She is going to Shoukang Palace.

When Xu Shixing came over, he was still wearing his imperial robes. He Sheng had already told him what happened. When he saw Xie Jiayi, he paused and said nothing. Wusheng accompanied Xie Jiayi towards Shoukang Palace.

The Empress Dowager in Shoukang Palace suddenly aged ten years. How could such a thorough and meticulous plan fail?

That medicine is a secret medicine. Many people have tried it before and it works incredibly well. How come it doesn't work?

Zhang Jinyu hugged the Queen Mother's legs and cried. She thought she was not afraid of life or death, but at this moment, she realized that she wanted to live. In the face of life and death, all her future, high position, and unwillingness were gone in an instant. She just wanted to live, and it would be good to live like before.

Upon hearing that the emperor and empress were coming together, Zhang Jinyu fell to the ground and hugged the empress dowager's legs tightly: " Aunt, save me, His Majesty can't kill me, His Majesty can't kill me, right? Aunt, His Majesty won't kill me! "

This was the scene that Xie Jiayi and Xu Shixing saw when they came in.

As soon as she saw Xie Jiayi, Zhang Jinyu immediately let go of her hand, stood up, straightened her clothes, and stood next to the Queen Mother. The fear of death she had just felt was overwhelmed by her deep hatred for Xie Jiayi. It was this person who ruined her life! If it weren't for this person, how could she have ended up being laughed at by everyone in the palace!

She raised her head and looked at Xie Jiayi provocatively, then slowly said to Xu Shixing:

" Your Majesty, my mother died for your secret. All 369 members of my Zhang family died for your throne. For your Majesty, I sacrificed my favorite brother's life. "

" Jinyu knows that I have committed a heinous crime, but the prince is fine after all, and your majesty cannot kill me. " At this moment, Zhang Jinyu looked at the calm Xie Jiayi and felt very happy. He had never felt so happy in all these years:

I want to kill your son, so what? Your Majesty has a lot of blood on his body, he can't kill me!

There was dead silence in Shoukang Palace, and everyone looked at Emperor Jianzhao.

Only Xie Jiayi didn't. She just stared at Zhang Jinyu, the woman in front of her who was completely different from Concubine Zhang in her previous life, and asked Xu Shixing softly: " In front of the late emperor, I spared her life. Your Majesty, do you remember? "

Xu Shixing nodded softly.

" Just remember it. "

In a flash, Empress Xie Jiayi had already arrived in front of Zhang Jinyu, who was standing beside the Empress Dowager. Without giving anyone a chance to speak, she stabbed the man in front of her with her dagger that could cut through iron like mud into his chest:

" It's time to pay it back! "

" Your Majesty cannot kill you, but I can! "

After she finished speaking, Xie Jiayi pulled out the dagger, and blood splashed on her face. Zhang Jinyu still had a lot to say, but her life had completely gone, and she couldn't say anything.

Xie Jiayi seemed to see herself in her previous life who was in great pain. At that time, she had imagined killing this person thousands of times.

Later, she no longer cared about Xu Shixing, and in fact, she cared less and less about Zhang Jinyu.

, this person should never touch her son——

He was the only person she truly cared about in this world.

The gushing blood even splashed onto the empress dowager's robe, and she was completely stunned.

Xie Jiayi leaned over and slowly wiped the dagger clean on Zhang Jinyu's robe, then she stood up and bowed to the empress dowager: " Your Majesty, I'm sorry for the offense. " But as she bowed, she was holding the short dagger that could cut through iron like mud, looking directly into the empress dowager's terrified eyes.

Then she turned around, without even glancing at Xu Shixing standing beside her, and left Shoukang Palace at her usual pace.

But Xu Shixing was watching all the time, watching her skills getting faster and faster, watching her pierce the deadly dagger into the opponent's chest, watching her turn and pull it out without hesitation, watching her wipe the dagger on the opponent's robe as if nothing had happened, watching her salute gracefully, watching her look directly into the Queen Mother's eyes that contained the clear warning.

At that moment, Xu Shixing smelled the familiar smell of blood on his body. The dark blood that had been with him since he was born and had never left him for a day.

But this bloodiness, at this moment, is refreshing.

He saw that the most innocent and pure girl in the world was finally dragged out of her always pure and pure world by him, by them, and by this world that would not be soft-hearted to anyone, and dragged into this muddy and bloody world, but she did not fall.

He saw her achieve nirvana amidst the blood.

All of this made his heart beat fast, it was too gorgeous and brilliant.

This is the princess he has admired for his entire life, this is his Zhao Zhao.

The empress dowager was speechless for a long time, and was not able to speak again until Xie Jiayi left. " Did you see it? You saw that the queen was so bold and lawless! " The empress dowager was so excited that she choked and coughed when she said this. How dare the queen do this!

But Xu Shixing on the side remained calm. He was trying hard to suppress his heart which was amazed by his queen again.

It turns out that a person can fall in love with the same person over and over again.

At this time, Xu Shixing spoke up: " Mother, the mother of the emperor. "

" I am a filial son. Even if my mother has made a huge mistake, I cannot watch her be punished. "

The Queen Mother then stopped coughing, and she knew it.

" However, before I came here, I had already sentenced the Duke of Ying to death, father and son. "

The Queen Mother suddenly lost her color: " This whole thing has nothing to do with them! "

" I know. " Xu Shixing replied slowly. He naturally knew that they were not involved in this matter. Then he looked at the Queen Mother. His eyes were as calm as water, but they frightened the Queen Mother.

" Mother, please rest and worship Buddha in Shoukang Palace from now on. Don't meet people from outside anymore. "

" you-- ! "

" Mother, if you continue to be willful, the Wang family will be completely extinct. "

" I will take my leave. Mother, please pray to the Buddha for my brother who has never seen the light of day, for my younger sister who is not yet a full year old, and for me who has died. "

After saying this, Xu Shixing bowed to his mother earnestly, turned around and left Shoukang Palace, and told the palace servants not to neglect any supplies. The emperor was filial, and everyone knew it. Even if the queen mother had committed serious sins, she was still the mother of the emperor.

In the side hall where the little prince was, Xie Jiayi gently held her son's hand as he woke up. She suddenly leaned over and put her face on her son's small shoulder. Xu Chengji knew that this was his mother crying and she didn't want anyone to see it.

He whispered, " Mom, don't be sad. "

As soon as he woke up, someone had analyzed the whole thing to him, and he knew that the Queen Mother would be fine.

Xie Jiayi's voice was hoarse because of sobs: " You know too much. " Whether it was her parents, her brother, or her Lord Lu, and now it was her son's turn, their six-year-olds were enough to crush her sixteen-year-old.

Xu Chengji rubbed his face against his mother's soft and fragrant hair, thinking: Mother, what does the Queen Mother mean? In the future, I will make the whole world submit to me and make you the most honorable person in history. I will give you the best of the world.

He knew that his mother wanted to find a place to lie down all her life, but she never had the chance to lie down in her life.

He whispered, " Mother. "

Mother, don't be sad.

Mother, don't be afraid.

Mother, Ji'er is here.

Six years later, in the early winter of the sixteenth year of Jianzhao

The whistling wind on the mountain behind Dajue Temple blew the fiery red maple trees on the mountain behind Dajue Temple, and blew the fluff on the snow-white cloak of the woman standing in the mountain. She watched the maple leaves falling all over the mountain.

" We have finally seen the last maple leaf of this year, " she said softly.

Ruyi responded softly, " I have already put away the leaf that the Queen chose. " Unfortunately, the maple leaf that the Queen chose every year could no longer be given away. Ruyi saw the Queen looking through old books and found the maple leaf that broke when touched. The expression on the Queen's face was calm, but it made people want to cry. The Queen said: " At that time, I made him suffer so much injustice. " People like him would never say anything even if they were wronged.

" My lady, the wind is strong, let's go back. "

Xie Jiayi nodded, got on the car and left Dajue Temple. When they were on the streets of Beijing, they suddenly heard noisy shouting outside. Ruyi approached the window and said, " Nothing, just a thief who stole the buns. "

Xie Jiayi suddenly pulled open the curtain and came out: " Ruyi, let me chase him! " This time she must catch up with him!

As if by fate, the thief still escaped to Fu'anfang and chose that wall again, but it was this thief who slipped down this time. Xie Jiayi saw that the bump had broken the thief's nose, and blood was flowing out of his nose. The teenager just wiped it with his hand, " You are not as skilled as me, I will go to the authorities with you. "

The child gave up and sat down against the wall, tilting his head back in the hope of stopping his nosebleed.

" Just press it with your hand, it will be healed soon. " Xie Jiayi looked at the child and said softly. A breeze blew and the last dead leaves of the locust tree fell.

Looking at the bewildered child, she stepped forward, covered the child's eyes with a handkerchief, and pressed the acupuncture point accurately.

The nosebleed has stopped.

Ruyi had already brought people from Shuntian Prefecture behind him. The child saw that even the prefect had come, and he had only stolen two buns! He had long seen that this woman was extremely valuable, but at this moment he realized that the identity of the person in front of him was probably more valuable than he could imagine.

He was stunned.

Xie Jiayi said: " Sir, hit his hand, give him some money, and let him find a way to make a living.

" He was just a thirteen or fourteen-year-old child who stole two buns.

After saying that, he took his people away.

The governor of Shuntian Prefecture led his men to see off the phoenix carriage respectfully.

The child finally dared to breathe and asked, " Sir, this is—— "

" Your good fortune has gone! Smoke is coming out of the ancestral tomb. This is our Dayin Queen! "

The child's eyes lit up: " Sir, this is Princess Kunyi! " The story of Princess Kunyi is well known to the people of Dayin, whether it is the southern river, the Xie family army in the north, the fight against the disaster star Mars, or the execution of corrupt officials and thieves.

" It's our Queen! "

After all, this person was noticed by the queen. The prefect looked at the man in front of him and said, " Since the queen wants to give you a chance to live, what do you want to do? I will send you there and give you a chance to live ! "

" Sir, I want to join the army, the Xie Family Army in the north! "

Twenty years later, a new war god will appear in the North. But that is twenty years later, and at this time, the war god is just a thief who can only survive by stealing two buns.

At this time in the imperial palace, two figures, one big and one small, were standing on the city wall, looking towards the road back to the palace.

In the past, this was the time when the prince would pay his respects to the queen, but every year at this time, even the prince could not see the queen. The queen mother did not want to see anyone on this day, even he would be an eyesore to her. The twelve-year-old Xu Chengji was like a green bamboo, smiling when he saw someone without saying a word, and often smiled when listening to people talk, making people think that he was a prince with a good temper. The prince could always find the shining points of his subordinates, and the smile of appreciation made the subordinates want to return it immediately.

Every year at this time, Xu Chengji always felt uncomfortable when he thought about how he was an eyesore in front of his mother. So he always came to the tower. He knew that His Majesty was here, and His Majesty was an even more annoying existence to his mother today. Seeing His Majesty, who was even more annoying than himself, Xu Chengji felt much better. After the prince paid his respects, two figures, one tall and one short, stood on the city wall. Two generations of emperors stood silently high up in the imperial city. Waiting for people to return.

For more exciting and good books, please visit Qishu.com <http://www.qishu.me>